

A N

291. h. 26

ABRIDGEMENT OF THE HISTORY of ENGLAND.

BEING A
SUMMARY of Mr. RAPIN's History

A N D

Mr. TINDAL's Continuation,

From the Landing of *JULIUS CÆSAR*,
to the Death of King *GEORGE I.*

W I T H

The CHARACTERS of the Kings at large,
the State of the Public Revenues, Exchequer,
and Coins, at and after the CONQUEST;

A N D A L S O

LISTS of the Peers created in each Reign, Knights
of the Garter and Bath, Baronets, Bishops, Chan-
cellors, Chief-Justices, Judges, and Admirals, to
the Present Times.

I L L U S T R A T E D

With the HEADS and MONUMENTS of the
KINGS, QUEENS, &c.

On Seventy COPPER PLATES.

V O L. II.

L O N D O N:

Printed for JOHN and PAUL K N A P T O N, at the Crown
in Ludgate-Street. M D C C X L V I I .

A
BRIEF
MEMO
RY
OF
THE
LAW
COURTS
IN
THE
CROWN
CITY
OF
LONDON







G. Vertue Sculp

A

S U M M A R Y
 OF THE
 History of ENGLAND,
 FROM THE
 Invasion of JULIUS CÆSAR, to the
 Death of King GEORGE I.

BOOK XIII.

The Reigns of the three Kings of the House of York, EDWARD IV, EDWARD V, and RICHARD III. Containing the space of 24 years and a half.

16. EDWARD IV.

KING Edward IV. begins his Reign, being about 18 Ann. C. 1461. years of age.

Queen Margaret having raised, in the North, an army Mar. 4. Reg. 1. of 60,000 men, King Edward puts himself at the head Reg. 1. Mar. 12. of his army, and marches from London in quest of the Queen, with a resolution to fight her.

He detaches Sir John Ratcliffe to secure the pass of Fer-
ribridge upon the Aire, but Sir John is beat from thence by
the Lord Clifford, and slain.

Richard Nevil, Earl of Warwick, is alarmed at this accident, but the King showing great steadiness and resolu-
VOL. II. B on

Ann. C. on, detaches *William Nevil Lord Fauconbridge* to recover that passage, which he accordingly does; the Lord *Clifford*, and others, being slain. Whereupon King *Edward* passes his army over the *Aire*, and immediately marches in quest of the enemy.

Mar. 29. The two armies meet between *Saxton* and *Towton*, *Henry's* consisting of 60,000 men, and King *Edward's* of 48,660; and, there coming to an engagement, King *Henry's* is defeated, with the loss on both sides of 36,776 persons: And, among the rest, *Henry Percy Earl of Northumberland*, *John Nevil Earl of Westmoreland*, &c.

Thomas Courtney, Earl of Devonshire, being taken, is beheaded.

King *Edward* having caused his Father's head, and the Earl of *Salisbury's*, to be taken down from the walls of *York*, and put others in their room, returns to *London*, *June 8.*

He endeavours to raise commotions in *Scotland*, in order to prevent King *Henry's* getting any assistance from thence: And, on the other hand, proposes to conclude a truce with that Kingdom; but Queen *Margaret* breaks his measures,

Apr. 25. by surrendering *Berwick* to the *Scots*, and concluding a marriage between Prince *Edward* her son, and *Margaret*, sister of King *James*.

June 29. King *Edward* is crowned at *Westminster*.

July 22. *Charles VII*, King of *France*, dies, and is succeeded by *Lewis XI*.

Queen *Margaret*, leaving the late King her husband, and the Prince her son, in *Scotland*, goes to *France*, to desire succours.

Nov. 4. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, in which the late King *Henry VI*, Queen *Margaret*, and their chief Adherents, to the number of 140, are attainted.

John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, and *Aubrey* his son are beheaded.

1462. King *Edward* makes a treaty with the Earl of *Ross*, in *Reg. 2.* order to raise disturbances in *Scotland*.

William Nevil Lord Fauconbridge, is made High-Admiral of *England*.

Henry Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, and *Ralph Percy*, come and submit to King *Edward*, and are pardoned.

King *Edward* grants the Clergy this remarkable privilege, That for the future all Ecclesiastical persons, indicted for any crime, should be tried in the Ecclesiastical Courts, without the interposition of the King's Judges; and also, that

Book XIII. 16. EDWARD IV.

3

that they should not be liable to the penalties of the Statutes *Ann. C.* of Provisors and *Præmunire*.

The truce of commerce between *England* and the Duke *Decemb.* of *Burgundy's* Dominions, is prolonged for one year.

Queen *Margaret* having obtained of King *Lewis* an aid 1463. of five hundred men, comes to *Scotland*, and from thence *Reg. 3.* attempts to land near *Newcastle*; but she is forced to retire with precipitation, and a tempest arising, she narrowly escapes to *Berwick*: Her fleet and army being driven on the coast near *Banburgh Castle*, they burn their ships, and escape to *Lindisfarn Island*; where being assaulted by the Bastard *Ogle*, many are slain, and about 400 taken prisoners.

Soon after, Queen *Margaret*, with her husband King *Henry*, enters *England*, with a body of *Scots*, and having taken and garrisoned *Banburgh Castle*, advances into the Bishopric of *Durham*, where she is joined by the Duke of *Somerset*, Sir *Ralph Percy*, &c.

King *Edward* hearing of this invasion, prepares both by *April.* sea and land to oppose his enemies, and then comes to *York*.

He dispatches the Lord *Montacute* into *Northumberland* to *May*. raise the Militia; and, after his coming to *York*, sends a great part of his army to the said Lord; who meeting, on *Hegeley-more*, a detachment commanded by the Lords *Hungerford* and *Roos*, and Sir *Ralph Percy*, put them to rout, and *Percy* is slain.

Incouraged with this success, *Montacute* advances to *Lyvel's* plain in *Hexhamshire*, where *Henry's* army lay intrenched, and attacking them in their lines, obtains a compleat victory. *Henry Beaufort* Duke of *Somerset*, the Lords *Roos*, *Hungerford*, and *Molyns* are taken prisoners; but *Henry*, *Margaret*, and Prince *Edward* escape into *Scotland*.

The Duke of *Somerset* is beheaded at *Hexham*; the other Lords and Knights are executed at *Durham*; and 25 others at *York*.

King *Edward*, who was advanced as far as *Durham*, returns back to *York*; having sent *Richard Earl of Warwick*, and the Lord *Montacute*, to recover *Alnwick*, *Dunstanburgh*, and *Banburgh*, which they do with ease.

Information being given to King *Edward*, that preparations were making in *France*, to support the interests of *Henry* and *Margaret*, he sends for the Earl of *Warwick*, and leaves the Marquis of *Montacute* in the North, as Governor of the northern marches.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the *April 29.*

Ann. C. King 37,000*l.* to be levied in the Counties, Cities, and Towns. This Parliament is prorogued to November 4.

King Edward makes truces with *France*, with the Duke of *Burgundy*, and with *Scotland*.

Henry not being allowed to remain in *Scotland* after the truce, and fancying he could be concealed in *England*, comes to *Lancashire*; but he is apprehended at *Waddington-Hall*, by Sir *James Harrington*, and being brought to *London*, is committed to the *Tower*.

Queen *Margaret* retires to *France*, with the Prince her son: And *Edmund Duke of Somerset*, and the Duke of *Exeter* withdraw into the *Low-Countries*, where they lived in a most wretched and poor condition.

1464. King Edward issues out a proclamation, offering a pardon to all the *Lancastrians*, that would come and submit to him: And of such as refused to submit he confiscates the estates, bestowing them upon those that had served him. He also makes himself very popular.

The Earl of *Warwick* is sent Ambassador to *France*, to demand in marriage for King Edward, *Bona of Savoy*, sister to the Queen of *France*; and the marriage is accordingly concluded.

But King Edward renders all these Negotiations ineffectual, by falling in love with *Elizabeth*, daughter of Sir *Richard Widville*, Baron *Rivers*, and widow of Sir *John Grey of Groby*, whom he marries privately at *Grafton*.

May 1. King Edward concludes a sea-truce with *France*, from *Oct. 27.* May 20, till October 1; one with *Scotland* for 15 years; *Nov. 1.* and one with the Duke of *Bretagne* for one year.

1465. Honours and favours are heaped upon the *Widville* family, at which the rest of the Nobility are highly disgusted. The Earl of *Warwick*, in particular, returns to *England*, with a heart full of hatred and revenge, but however conceals his sentiments, till a proper opportunity.

Jan. 26. The Parliament, after several prorogations, meets again at *Westminster*; and grants the King, for life, tunnage and poundage; of every *English Merchant*, for every sack of wool, 1*l. 13*s.* 4*d.**; of every 240 *wool-fells*, the same; and of every last of hides, 3*l. 6*s.* 8*d.**. And of *Merchant-Strangers*, for every sack of wool, and every 240 *wool-fells*, 3*l. 6*s.* 8*d.**; and of every last of hides, 3*l. 13*s.* 4*d.**.

Reg. 5. The league of the Public Good is formed in *France* against *Lewis XI.*

The truce between *England* and *Scotland* is prolonged till October 31, 1519.

Book XIII. 16. EDWARD IV.

5

Queen Elizabeth is crowned at Westminster.

Ann. C.

The Duke of Bretagne and Earl of Charolois endeavour May 26.
to conclude an Alliance with King Edward.

Elizabeth, the King's eldest daughter, is born.

1466.

King Edward keeps fair with the King of France, and Feb. 11.
the Dukes of Berry and Bretagne; and concludes a short Reg. 6.
truce with Bretagne, and another with France: As also Apr. 30.
an Alliance with the King of Denmark. June 7.

A marriage is set on foot between the Earl of Charolois
and Margaret King Edward's sister; and a treaty of per- Oct. 23.
sonal Alliance and Friendship is signed between the said
Earl and King Edward:

Who also makes an Alliance with the King of Castile.

King Edward being courted by the King of France, and 1467.
the Duke of Burgundy, has several Negotiations with those Feb. &c.
two Princes.

Reg. 7.

A Parliament meets at Westminster, wherein the King re-June 3.
sumes all the grants he had made during his Reign.

Philip the Good, Duke of Burgundy, dies, and is suc- July 15.
ceeded by his son Charles Earl of Charolois, who ratifies
his Alliance with King Edward.

The Queen's relations are loaded with honours and pre-
ferments, whilst the Earl of Warwick and his Friends are
neglected. Richard, Earl Rivers, the Queen's father,
being made Lord-Treasurer, and High-Constable, the Earl
of Warwick withdraws from Court, full of resentment; and
going to France secures King Lewis's protection, and con-
certs measures with him.

The Parliament meeting again, according to its adjourn- 1468.
ment, at Westminster, grants the King two tenths, and Reg. 8.
two fifteenths. May 12.

After several Negotiations, the marriage between the
Princess Margaret and the Duke of Burgundy is concluded,
and she is conducted to Bruges, where the marriage was June.
soon after solemnized. July 9.

The truce of commerce between England and the Duke
of Burgundy's Dominions is prolonged for 30 years.

King Edward concludes a treaty with the Duke of Bre-August.
tagne (who was hard pressed by the King of France) whereby he engages to send him an aid of 3000 archers. And they depart, not long after, under the command of An-October.
Anthony Widville, Lord Scales.

Lewis XI, having concluded a treaty with the Duke of Burgundy, goes and confers with him; but the Duke discovering his insincerity, makes him prisoner; and Lewis is

forced

Ann. C. forced to submit to hard terms, in order to regain his liberty.

Oz. 20. King *Edward* renews the ancient Alliance between *England* and *Arragon*; and gives a licence for transporting some *Cotswold* sheep to *Spain*, which proves prejudicial to the English wool-trade.

Reg. 9. *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Warwick*, having formed the design of endeavouring to dethrone King *Edward*, draws into his plot his brothers, *John*, Marquis of *Montacute*, and *George*, Archbishop of *York*; as also *George*, Duke of *Clarence*, the King's brother, to whom he gives his eldest daughter, *Isabella*, in marriage.

The Earl and Duke go to *Calais*, where the marriage is solemnized.

Aug. 17. King *Edward*, ignorant of the Earl of *Warwick*'s designs, makes him Justiciary and Chamberlain of *South-Wales*, &c.

By the secret practices of the Marquis of *Montacute* and Archbishop of *York*, an insurrection happens in *Yorkshire*; but it is suppressed by the Marquis of *Montacute*, who causes their leader, *Robert Hulden*, to be beheaded.

The Malecontents, not discouraged at this, take up arms again, under the command of *Henry*, son of the Lord *Fitz-Hugh*, Sir *Henry Nevil*, the Lord *Latimer*'s son, and Sir *John Coniers*, and not being able to make themselves masters of *York*, march towards *London*.

King *Edward*, upon the receipt of this news, orders *William Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*, to raise an army in *Wales*; who having drawn together about 7000 men, and being joined by the Lord *Strafford* with 800 archers, they go in quest of the enemy.

The Lord *Stafford* and Sir *Richard Herbert* go with a detachment of 2000 horse to view the enemy, and falling upon their rear, are defeated.

After this small advantage, the seditious, afraid of the King's increasing forces, resolve to retire to *Warwick*, and to wait for assistance from the Earl, who was lately come over from *Calais*, and was raising forces; but being met by the Earl of *Pembroke*, near *Banbury*, both armies come to an engagement, wherein the Earl of *Pembroke* is defeated; and being taken prisoner, is beheaded with his brothers, in revenge for the death of Sir *Henry Nevil*, who was slain the day before.

Some seditious in *Northamptonshire* assemble in great numbers, and chusing one *Robert Hilliard*, or *Robin of Riddisdale*, for their leader, go and seize *Richard*, Earl of *Rivers*,

Book XIII. 16. EDWARD IV.

9

Rivers, and his son, Sir *John Widville*, at *Grafton*, and be-*Ann. C.*
head them, without any form of law.

The Lord *Stafford* having deserted the Earl of *Pembroke*
the night before the battle of *Banbury*, on account of a
quarrel between them about a strumpet, the King orders
him to be beheaded.

Lewis XI. sends Ambassadors to *England*, under pretence *Aug. 17.*
of renewing the truce. *1470.*
Reg. 10.

John Tiptoft, Earl of *Worcester*, is made High-Constable *Mar. 14.*
of *England*, in the Earl of *Rivers*'s room ; and, soon after,
Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

The Earl of *Warwick* and Duke of *Clarence* declare for *March*.
the Rebels, and levy troops ; the King, on his part, raises
also forces, and advances against his enemies, who stood
ready for battle, at *Wolney* in *Warwickshire*.

In the mean time, an accommodation being set on foot,
the King, who was extremely desirous of it, and did not
doubt of the success, neglects to secure his camp ; of
which the Earl of *Warwick* being informed, he attacks the
King, unawares, in the night, and taking him prisoner,
causes him to be conducted to *Warwick*, and then to *Middleham* Castle, where he is put under the custody of *George Nevil*, Archbishop of *York*. After which the Malecontents
disband most of their forces.

The King having obtained leave from the Archbishop to
hunt now and then in *Middleham-Park* with a small guard,
finds means to escape ; and repairing to *York*, where he stays
but two days, he takes a compass through *Lancashire*, and
so comes to *London*.

The Earl of *Warwick* re-assembles his dispersed troops,
and the King does the same.

Through the persuasions of some peaceable Lords, a Con-
ference is held at *Westminster*, between the King and the
Chiefs of the opposite party ; but nothing being done, the
King retires to *Canterbury*, and the Malecontents to *War-
wick*.

Sir *Robert Wells* having levied troops in *Lincolnshire* for
the Earl of *Warwick*, the King sends for his father, *Richard*,
Lord Wells, to Court, and commands him, upon pain of
death, to order his son to dismiss his troops ; but the son
refusing, the King orders the *Lord Wells* (with *Sir Thomas
Dimock*) to be beheaded.

Incensed at this, Sir *Robert Wells* waits, near *Stamford*, *May*.
for the King's coming, when he might have easily retired ;
and the two armies coming there to an engagement, the

Anno. C. King obtains a compleat victory, 10,000 of the enemies being slain. *Wells* is taken, and beheaded. This was called the *Battle of Lose-Coat-Field*.

This defeat breaking all the measures of the Duke of *Clarence*, and Earl of *Warwick*, they embark at *Dartmouth*, and attempt to land at *Calais*; but being repulsed by the Lieutenant-Governor, they go and land at *Dieppe*, and thence repair to *Lewis XI*, at *Amboise*, who promises them assistance.

Queen *Margaret* comes to them there, and, being reconciled to them, concert proper measures with them.

The Duke of *Burgundy* warns King *Edward* of what was contriving against him, but he remains unconcerned.

King *Edward* gains his brother, the Duke of *Clarence*, by means of one of his Duchess's women; and he promises to declare for him, when he could do it with safety.

Sept. 13. The Earl of *Warwick* returns to *England*, landing at *Dartmouth*, with money and troops, furnished him by *Lewis XI*; whilst King *Edward* remains in an ill-grounded security.

But the Earl of *Warwick*'s army soon increasing to 60,000 men, and he causing *Henry VI.* to be proclaimed, King *Edward* raises forces, and advances towards *Nottingham*; but hearing, by the way, that the Marquis of *Montacute* who commanded in the North, had declared against him, he comes and incamps near *Lynn*, in *Norfolk*.

OCT. 3. The enemies approaching, and the name of King *Henry* being resounded every where, and even in King *Edward*'s army, he embarks, with about 500 men, on board three small vessels: In his passage, he is pursued by some Easterling Pirates, but he escapes into *Alemar Road*, and is delivered by the Lord *Gruthuse*, Governor of *Holland*.

OCTOBER. The Queen, in the mean time, takes sanctuary in *Westminster-Abbey*, with several others, and is there delivered of

Nov. 4. Prince *Edward*.

OCTOBER. The Duke of *Clarence* and Earl of *Warwick* enter *London* — 12. in triumph; and going to the *Tower*, release King *Henry*, who had been prisoner 6 years.

Mean while, the populace of *Kent* flock to *London* in great numbers, with design to plunder that City, but they are dispersed by the Earl of *Warwick*.

— 25. King *Henry VI.* rides in procession from the *Tower* to *St. Paul's*, and resumes the Royal Dignity: Being thus restored to the Throne by *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Warwick*, who was thence surnamed *The King-Maker*.

THE Marquis of Montacute is restored to his Government of the northern Counties, which King Edward had taken from him, and given to his brother, Richard, Duke of York.

A Parliament meets at Westminster, which adjudges King Edward to be a Traitor, and an Usurper of the Realm; confiscates all his paternal estates; revokes the Statutes made in his Reign; and settles the Crown upon King Henry VI. and his heirs male, and in default of such heirs, upon George Duke of Clarence, and his heirs male.

King Edward's Adherents are also declared Traitors and Rebels; and it is enacted, That such as should be apprehended, or were in captivity upon his account, should be extremely punished.

Accordingly John Tiptoft Earl of Worcester, Governor of Ireland, and High-Constable of England, being found hid in a hollow-tree, is brought to London, and beheaded.

Jasper Tudor, Earl of Pembroke, and John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, who were attainted under King Edward, are restored to their honours and rights.

The Duke of Clarence and Earl of Warwick are appointed Governors of the Realm.

In the mean time, the Duke of Burgundy was in great perplexity about King Edward's coming into his Dominions; being afraid, if he protected him, of exasperating the Earl of Warwick, and engaging him to join Lewis XI, who had declared war against the said Duke. However, resolving at last to assist him privately, he hires for him 14 ships of the Easterlings, and furnishes him with 50,000 florins.

Jasper Earl of Pembroke brings his nephew Henry (afterwards King Henry VII.) to Court, out of Wales, where he was privately educated.

News being received in England, of King Edward's preparations in the Low-Countries, the Earl of Warwick Jan. 2. is made High-Admiral, and the Duke of Clarence commissioned to raise an army.

A ten years truce is concluded between England and France. Feb. 16.

George Duke of Clarence is constituted Governor of Ireland; and several grants are made to him, as also to the Marquis of Montacute, and the Earl of Pembroke.

King Edward having got all things ready, embarks at Flushing, with 2000 men, and attempts to land at Cromer Reg. II. in Mar. II.

Ann. C. in *Norfolk*; but those parts being too well guarded by the
 — 12. Earl of *Oxford*, he sails northwards, and lands, two days
 — 14. after, at *Ravenspur*, and places adjoining, in *Yorkshire*.

Not being received with such acclamations as he expected, he pretends, That he came only to recover the Duchy of *York*, which was his inheritance.

Whereupon several repairing to him, he marches towards *York*, giving *Henry* the title of King, and styling himself only Duke.

The Court having notice of *Edward's* being landed, the Duke of *Clarence* and Earl of *Warwick* depart from *London* to levy forces. At the same time, the Magistrates of that City are ordered to shut their gates upon the enemy; and the Marquis of *Montacute*, who was at *Pontefract* with 4000 men, receives orders to fight *Edward*, or to stop him; but he remains in his post, without making any motion.

Mar. 18. King *Edward*, upon his approach to *York*, is desired by the Magistrates to march another way; but he answering, That he was not come to take the Crown from the King, but to recover his paternal Estate, his Adherents, and the People in that City, oblige the Magistrates to admit him; whereupon, Deputies being sent to him, he swears, To be faithful and obedient to King *Henry*: And, borrowing money of the Citizens, and leaving a garrison, he sets out for *London*.

The Duke of *Clarence*, and Earl of *Warwick*, go and assemble their forces, intending to join them into one body, and to set at their head *Edward*, son of *Henry VI*, who was expected from *France*.

But being disappointed in their measures, by the Marquis of *Montacute's* suffering King *Edward* to pass without opposition, the Earl of *Warwick* orders them to come and join him, and resolves to incamp near *Coventry*, and there expect *Edward*.

The Marquis begins his march, and the Duke of *Clarence* likewise advances, keeping within distance, as if he intended to join *Warwick*.

Mar. 29. King *Edward* coming before *Coventry*, in which the Earl of *Warwick* was shut up, with about 7000 men, endeavours to provoke him to come out and fight, but the Earl keeps himself shut up.

The King therefore advances to *Warwick*, where the Duke of *Clarence* comes, and was reconciled with him. He endeavours

Book XII. 15. HENRY VI.

II

endeavours to make peace between King Edward and the Earl of Warwick, but the Earl rejects his mediation.

King Edward marches towards London, and is received with great acclamations by the Citizens, notwithstanding all the endeavours of the Duke of Somerset, and the Archbishop of York.

King Henry being delivered to Edward, by the Archbishop of York, who had made his peace with him, is again imprisoned in the Tower, from whence he had been taken seven months before, to remount the Throne.

Continuation of the Reign of EDWARD IV.

KING Edward departs from London, to put himself at the head of his army, hearing the Earl of Warwick was advanced to St. Albans.

The two armies meeting at Barnet, a terrible battle is fought there, wherein the Earl of Warwick and the Marquis of Montacute are defeated and slain, with the loss of about 10,000 men on both sides.

Such was the end of the famous Richard Nevil Earl of Warwick, and of his brother John Marquis of Montacute. They were both buried in Bisham Abbey.

John Earl of Oxford, and Edmund Duke of Somerset escape into Wales, to the Earl of Pembroke, who was levying troops for the Earl of Warwick. And Henry Duke of Exeter, being left for dead among the slain, is carried to London, and takes sanctuary in Westminster-Abbey.

King Edward, having thus obtained a compleat victory, returns to London the same day: And, not long after, grants a pardon to the Archbishop of York.

In the mean while, Queen Margaret, and the Prince her son, embarking on March 24, land at Weymouth, April 14, and receiving, two days after, the sorrowful news of the defeat and death of the Earl of Warwick, the Queen swoons, and She and the Prince her son take sanctuary in Beaulieu Abbey.

The Duke of Somerset, the Earls of Pembroke, and Devonshire, &c. repair to her there, and exhort her to try her fortune once more: She proposes the sending her son into France, in order to put him out of danger, but the Duke of Somerset prevails upon her not to do it; and her friends speedily raise an army, out of the Counties of Somerset, Dorset, Wilts, Devon, and Cornwall.

King

Ann. C. King Edward sets out from *London*, in order to put himself at the head of his army, and go in quest of the enemy's forces : He comes up with them about the beginning of *May*.

Apr. 27. In his march, he puts out a Proclamation, wherein he declared Queen *Margaret*, and her Adherents, Traitors and Rebels.

He uses the utmost expedition, in order to come up with the enemies, and give them battle, before they were joined by the Earl of *Pembroke*, and the *Welshmen*.

The Queen, hearing of his approach, removes from *Bath* to *Bristol*, intending to pass the *Severn* at *Gloucester*, and so retire into *Wales*; but finding it unsafe to venture through *Gloucester*, she goes to *Tewksbury*, and would fain have passed the *Severn* there, and fled into *Wales*, but the Duke of *Somerset* strenuously opposes it, and intrenches himself in a Park near that Town.

May 4. King Edward resolves to force those entrenchments, before the Earl of *Pembroke*'s arrival ; and accordingly attacking them, he draws the enemy out of their lines, by a sham retreat, and totally defeats them, with the loss of 3000 men : Among which, was *Thomas Courtney*, Earl of *Devonshire*.

Such was the issue of the battle of *Tewksbury*, being the twelfth that was fought between the Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*.

Queen *Margaret* is taken, and conducted to the *Tower*, where she remained a prisoner till 1475, when she was ransomed by her Father.

Prince *Edward* is also taken, and brought to the King, by whom being asked, How he durst so presumptuously enter his Realm ? And replying, That he was come to recover his Father's Kingdom, to him lineally devolved : The King strikes him on the face with his gauntlet, and he is murdered in cold blood. His body was buried at the *Black-Friars* in *Tewksbury*.

May 6. Edmund Beaufort Duke of *Somerset*, and others that were made prisoners, are beheaded in the market-place at *Tewksbury*.

Some people raise an insurrection in the North, but it is soon appeased.

May 12. Thomas Nevil, bastard son of Thomas Lord Fauconbridge, who had been appointed by the Earl of *Warwick* Vice-Admiral, lands in *Kent*; and being joined by several *Kentish* — 14. and *Essex* men, to the number of 17,000, marches towards *London*,

London, with a design to plunder that City, though pretending, that he came only to deliver King *Henry VI.* out of captivity. He makes himself master of *Southwark*, and attacks *London*; but being repulsed by the Citizens, he retires, and fortifies himself at *Sandwich*; where being followed by King *Edward*, he submits, is pardoned, knighted, and made again Vice-Admiral: But soon after he is beheaded.

King *Edward* arrives at *London*, and grants a pardon to *William of Wainfleet*, Bishop of *Winchester*, founder of *Magdalen College, Oxon*: And also, to the Bishops of *London, Lichfield and Coventry, Hereford, St. Asaph, Llandaff, and Bath and Wells*.

King *Henry VI.* is murdered in the *Tower* (by *Richard Duke of York*, as was reported) and buried in *Chersey Monastery, in Surrey*; but afterwards removed into the Collegiate Church of *Windfor*. — He founded, in 1440, *Eaton-College*, and *King's College in Cambridge*.

Jasper Tudor, Earl of *Pembroke*, hearing of the *Lancastrians* defeat at *Tewksbury*, dismisses the troops he had raised, and keeps in *Wales* with his nephew *Henry Earl of Richmond*. — King *Edward* sends one *Roger Vaughan* to seize or kill them; but the Earl of *Pembroke*, discovering his intentions, cuts his head off, and then imbarks at *Tenby*, with his nephew, for *France*: But being unhappily driven by a storm on the coast of *Bretagne*, they are detained by the Duke.

Prince *Edward* is created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *La-
caster*, and Earl of *Cornwal*; and the King, assembling the — 3.
Lords Spiritual and Temporal at *Westminster*, causes them to take the oath to the said Prince.

A truce is concluded between *England* and *France*, from Sept. 5.
September 1, to May 1 following.

A Congress is held at *Alnwick* between the Commissioners of *England* and *Scotland*. — 24.

The 30 years truce with *Bretagne* is confirmed. — 30.
A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein the Lords Octob. 6.
Spiritual and Temporal grant the King a tenth, towards the maintenance of 14,000 archers, that were appointed to serve the King at their own charge.

Anne, the King's sister, is divorced from her husband, Nov. 12.
Henry Holland, Duke of Exeter.

The Parliament meeting again, according to its proration, the Commons grant the King one tenth and one Feb. 8.
fifteenth.

Ann. C. *George Nevil*, Archbishop of *York*, is apprehended by the King's order, and sent prisoner to the Castle of *Guisnes*.

His effects, that were then seized, amounted to the value of 20,000*l.*

Reg. 12. *John de Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, who had escaped after the battle of *Barnet*, and soon after seized *St. Michael's Mount* in *Cornwal*, surrenders to the King; but all his estate is confiscated, and he is sent prisoner to the Castle of *Hammes*, where he remained 12 years.

King *Edward* persecutes the *Lancastrians*.

He sends Ambassadors to the Duke of *Bretagne*, to demand the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Richmond*, but the Duke refuses to deliver them up: However, he promises to guard them carefully, and upon that consideration *Edward* allows him yearly a large pension.

1473. Some differences that subsisted between King *Edward* and *Reg. 13.* the *Hanse Towns*, are decided at the Congress of *Utrecht*.

Sept. 19. By a treaty concluded at *Alnwick*, the truce with *Scotland* *Sept. 28.* is confirmed.

The Alliance between *England* and *Denmark* is renewed.

1474. The Duke of *Burgundy* engages King *Edward* to join in a league with him against *France*; and accordingly they sign several treaties for that purpose, in *July* this year.

Jan. 23. The Parliament meeting again, after several prorogations, at *Westminster*, grants the King a tenth and a fifteenth, and 51,170*l. 4s. 7d. ¼.* for the payment of the 14,000 archers, mentioned before.—It grants afterwards, moreover, one tenth and one fifteenth, and three parts of either of them.

Reg. 14. King *Edward* issues out Commissions to levy troops, and sends Ambassadors to the Emperor *Frederic*, to the Kings of *Hungary*, *Sicily*, &c. to engage them to enter into the league, or to endeavour to hinder their union with *France*.

July 30. And to secure himself against any diversions from the *Scots*, he concludes a marriage between his daughter *Cecily*, and *James*, the King of *Scotland*'s eldest son.

Henry Holland, Duke of *Exeter*, is found drowned on the coast of *Kent*.

1475. King *Edward* raises money for his expedition into *France*, *Reg. 15.* by way of benevolence.

He sends 3000 men to the Duke of *Bretagne*.

June. Having got all things in a readiness, he embarks at *Sandwich*, with a large army, and comes to *Calais*.

Before his departure from *England*, he sends *Garter* to King *Lewis*, to summon him to restore the whole Kingdom of

of *France*; and, in case of refusal, to proclaim war against *Ann. C.* him. *Lewis* receives the Herald kindly, and makes him a present, telling him, That his Master was come to make war, only by the instigation of the Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Constable de *St. Pol*.

King *Edward* advances into *Picardy*, expecting to meet the Duke of *Burgundy*, which not doing, he sends the Lord *Scales* to him, to know the reason.

The Duke leaves the siege of *Nuz*, and comes with a small train, to make his excuses to *Edward*.

The Constable de *St. Pol*, who commanded in *St. Quentin*, and had promised to deliver up that place to the *English*, does not stand to his engagement; and the Duke of *Burgundy* leaving King *Edward*, he finds himself greatly embarrassed.

In that juncture, *Lewis* offering *Edward* a peace, he accepts of it, and sends his Ambassadors to treat with those of *France*, near *Amiens*, or *Pequigny*.

There, a treaty of peace is concluded between *England* Aug. 28, and *France*; whereby *Lewis* engages himself to pay King 29. *Edward* 50,000 crowns, yearly, as long as he lived.

The Duke of *Burgundy* endeavours to prevent the conclusion of this treaty; but finding the truce signed, he bitterly reproaches King *Edward*, and they part in extreme anger.

The Kings of *England* and *France* have an interview upon Aug. 29. *Pequigny* bridge.

King *Lewis* gives pensions to the chief Courtiers and Favourites of King *Edward*, to the amount of 16,000 crowns.

King *Edward* returns to *London*, where he is received Sept. 28. with great joy.

The Duke of *Burgundy* refuses to be included in the truce made by King *Edward*, but at last, accepts of a separate truce for nine years, offered him by the King of *France*. And, the Constable de *St. Pol* being delivered to King *Lewis*, he causes him to be beheaded.

King *Edward* renews the truce with *Bretagne*, and orders 1476. his Ambassadors to demand of the Duke of *Bretagne* *Henry*, Jan. 22. Earl of *Richmond*; the Duke accordingly gives him up, Mar. 16. but, repenting of it, upon the representation of one of his Reg. 16. Counsellors, he finds means to get him again out of the hands of the Ambassadors.

The Duke of *Burgundy* conquers *Lorrain*, and attacks the *Swiss*, but is defeated by them at *Granson*, and at *Morat*.

Soon after, his army is entirely routed, in a battle fought 1477. with the Duke of *Lorrain*, before *Nanci*, and himself slain, Jan. 5. in

Ann. C. in the 46th year of his age. His death causes a great alteration in the affairs of Europe.

Reg. 17. daughter, of Burgundy, and the towns upon the Somme, and even forms the project of dispossessing her of the rest of her Dominions. She applies to King Edward for assistance, but his Council being bribed by France, he refuses to grant her any. Soon after, she marries Prince Maximilian of Austria.

1478. Richard, Duke of York, the King's second son, marries *Jan. 15.* Ann, daughter and sole heir of John Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, and is created Duke of York and Norfolk, Earl-Marshal, Warren, and Nottingham.

Jan. 16. A Parliament meets at Westminster, wherein George, Duke of Clarence, the King's brother, is attainted of treason:

Feb. 18. And he is, soon after, drowned in a butt of malmsey.

Reg. 18. Prince Maximilian having entered Burgundy, and taken several places, Lewis, in order to attach King Edward to his interest, sends Ambassadors to prolong the truce for 100 years after their deaths, and to pay a pension of 50,000 crowns, during the continuance of the truce. But Edward pressing the marriage of his daughter Elizabeth with the Dauphin, King Lewis puts him off, and offers to divide with him the Duchies of Burgundy's Dominions, allowing him for his share Flanders and Brabant. Edward is so weak as to embrace this proposal.

1479. He abandons himself to his pleasures, and raises money by illegal means, particularly by forfeitures upon penal laws, and by having the rich accused of treason, in order to confiscate their estates, or exact large sums for their pardon.

Feb. 13. The Alliance between England and Denmark is confirmed and renewed, the English engaging not to set foot in Iceland, — 15. without a passport from the King of Denmark.

Reg. 19. A treaty of friendship is signed between England and France, but Lewis never ratifies it.

Prince Maximilian proposes a marriage between his son Philip, and Ann, King Edward's third daughter, in order to gain him to his interests.

A marriage is also set on foot, between Catharine, King Edward's fourth daughter, and John, Infante of Castile and Arragon.

King Lewis delaying the conclusion of the Dauphin's marriage with the Princess Elizabeth, Edward sends Ambassadors to him, to demand the performance of his promise,

mise, and the ratification of the late treaty ; but *Lewis Ann. C.* amuses him.

And, moreover, he sollicits *James III*, King of *Scotland*, to break the truce with *England*, which opens *Edward's* eyes, and convinces him of the King of *France's* insincerity.

King *Edward*, fully bent upon revenge, secures the 1480. King of *Castile* to his side, ratifies the treaty with the King *Reg. 20.* of *Denmark*, and, equipping a fleet, sends it to Prince *Maximilian's* assistance, with 6000 men.

Meantime, the King of *Scotland* continuing his preparations for war, King *Edward* prepares for his defence, *Reg. 21.* and appoints *Richard, Duke of York*, General of his army.

The *Scots* make an irruption into the borders, and carry *June.* away some booty ; but King *Edward* was more intent upon the war with *France*, than upon that with *Scotland*.

He renews his Alliance with the Duke of *Bretagne*, and concludes the marriage of his son, the Prince of *Wales*, with *Ann*, eldest daughter of that Duke ; or, in case she died, with her youngest sister, *Isabella*.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein the Commons, with the assent of the Bishops and Lords, grant the 1482. *Jan. 20.* King a tenth and a fifteenth, to be levied on the Laity ; and also a yearly subsidy, to be levied of all Strangers. They moreover allow a yearly rent out of the customs, and other revenues, to defray the King's household expences, amounting to 11,000*l.*

King *Edward* renews his Alliance with *Portugal*. *Reg. 22.*

Alexander, Duke of Albany, the King of *Scotland's* brother, escapes out of prison, wherein he had been thrown by his brother, and coming by sea to *England*, concludes a treaty with King *Edward*, in order to dethrone King *June 10.* *James III.*

In pursuance of this treaty, King *Edward* sends a fleet *May.* against *Scotland*, commanded by *Robert Ratcliffe* ; and an *July.* army of 22,500 men, which takes *Berwick* and *Edinburgh*, *August.* King *James* retires to the Castle of *Edinburgh*, *August.* wherin he keeps himself shut up.

A peace is concluded between the two Nations, by the Aug. 4. Duke of *Albany's* mediation, who is appointed Regent of *Scotland*.

The Duke of *Albany* relinquishes the project of placing himself on the Throne, and restores the King his brother to his former estate.

But King *James* resuming his former course of life, and his enmity to the Duke of *Albany*, resolves to dispatch him

Ann. C. out of the way ; whereupon the Duke withdrawing to the Castle of *Dunbar*, sends some persons into *England*, to renew his treaty with King *Edward* ; which is accordingly confirmed, with additional articles. And the Duke of *Albany*, having delivered *Dunbar* to the *English*, retires into *France*.

Maria, Duchess of *Burgundy*, being killed by a fall from her horse, in 1481, leaves, among other children, a daughter, called *Margaret*, which King *Lewis XI.* obtains in marriage for his son, the Dauphin, with the Earldoms of *Artois*, *Burgundy*, *Maconnais*, *Auxerre*, and *Charolois* ; notwithstanding, the Dauphin was contracted to *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter of King *Edward*.

Reg. 23. Incensed at this outrageous affront, *Edward* bends all his thoughts to war and revenge, though he was without any considerable Ally, not being able to depend upon the assistance of the *Flemings*, *Bretons*, or *Scots*.

However, he assembles all the Nobility that were in or near *London* ; and representing to them the grievous affronts put upon him by the King of *France*, they promise to serve him with their lives and fortunes.

Apr. 9. But in the midst of the great preparations for this war, King *Edward* dies of a fever, in the 42d year of his age, after a Reign of 22 years, one month, and five days :

And was buried at *Windſor*, in the New Chapel which he built.

The Character of EDWARD IV.

When *Edward* ascended the Throne, he was one of the handsomest men in *England*, and perhaps in *Europe*. This is acknowledged by all. His noble mien, his free and easy air, his affable carriage, prepossessed every one in his favour. These qualities, joined to an undaunted courage, gained him among the people, an esteem and affection, extremely serviceable to him, in many circumstances of his life. *Philip de Commines* affirms, he owed his restoration, to the inclination, the principal *London* Ladies had for him. But that would have been inconsiderable, had he not likewise acquired the affection of their husbands, and, in general, of most part of the *English*. If he had not depended upon the hearts of the people, he would never have ventured to attempt the recovery of the Throne, with the help of two thousand men, who were mostly foreigners. For some time, he was exceeding liberal, but at last be-

came covetous, not so much from his natural temper, as from a necessity to supply the immoderate expences, into which he was thrown by his pleasures. Though he had a great extent of wit, and a solid judgment, he committed, however, several very great errors: The first was, when he suffered himself to be surprized by the Earl of *Warwick*. But that fault was in great measure repaired, by the dexterity and readiness wherewith he freed himself from the *Archbishop of York*. The second was, to trust such persons as betrayed him, and were sold to *France*. The third, to suffer himself to be so long deceived by *Lewis XI*, who was universally proclaimed against for his ill faith. Most Historians have extremely aggravated this error, as being ignorant, that from the year 1480, he began to take measures to make war upon *Lewis*, as appears in what has been quoted from the *Collection of the Public Acts*. Two other errors are also ascribed to him, which may be more easily excused. The first is, his breaking off the war with *France* for an inconsiderable sum, at a time when he might have flattered himself with the hopes of success. But if the circumstances of this affair be well examined, it will be easily seen, that being forsaken by the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretagne*, his Allies, it would have been very rash to pursue with his own forces alone, the execution of so great an enterprize, which, probably, would have proved unsuccessful. Another error laid to his charge, is, his not joining with the Heiress of *Burgundy*, to stop the progress of the King of *France*. I own (says *Rapin*) that was a real fault: However, it may be considerably lessened, by the examples of several Princes, eminent for their abilities, who observed the same conduct, on the like occasions. Uncertain of the events, Princes often imagine they shall be great gainers by setting their neighbours at variance, in hopes of their weakening one another. But the success sometimes happens not to answer their expectations. It is certain, if *Maria of Burgundy*, and afterwards the Archduke, her husband, had more vigorously resisted the attacks of *Lewis XI*, nothing was more capable to render *Edward the Umpire of Europe*, than the mutual weakening of these two powers. By this conduct it was that he made himself courted by the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Burgundy*, because he was always in condition to make the balance incline to one side. He hoped, perhaps, it would be always the same; but he had to deal with a more artful Prince than himself.

These are properly political faults, which are often considered as such, only because of the events which are not in man's power. But the crimes *Edward* is more justly charged with, are his cruelty, perjury, and incontinence. The first appears in the great number of Princes and Lords, whom, after taking them prisoners, he put to death on the scaffold. If ever there was room to exercise mercy in case of Rebellion, it was at that fatal time when it was almost impossible to stand neuter, and so difficult to chuse the justest side between the two Houses, that were contending for the Crown. And yet, we don't find, *Edward* had ever any regard to that consideration. The death of the Prince of *Wales*, son of *Henry VI*, murdered almost in his presence; and that of *Henry* himself, notwithstanding his innocence, may perhaps be justified in some measure, by those who think nothing unlawful when a Throne is in question; but they will never be excused by those who have any tincture of Religion. As for the death of the Duke of *Clarence*, I don't know whether it would be possible to find the least softening, if it be true, as it is very probable, that he was innocent.

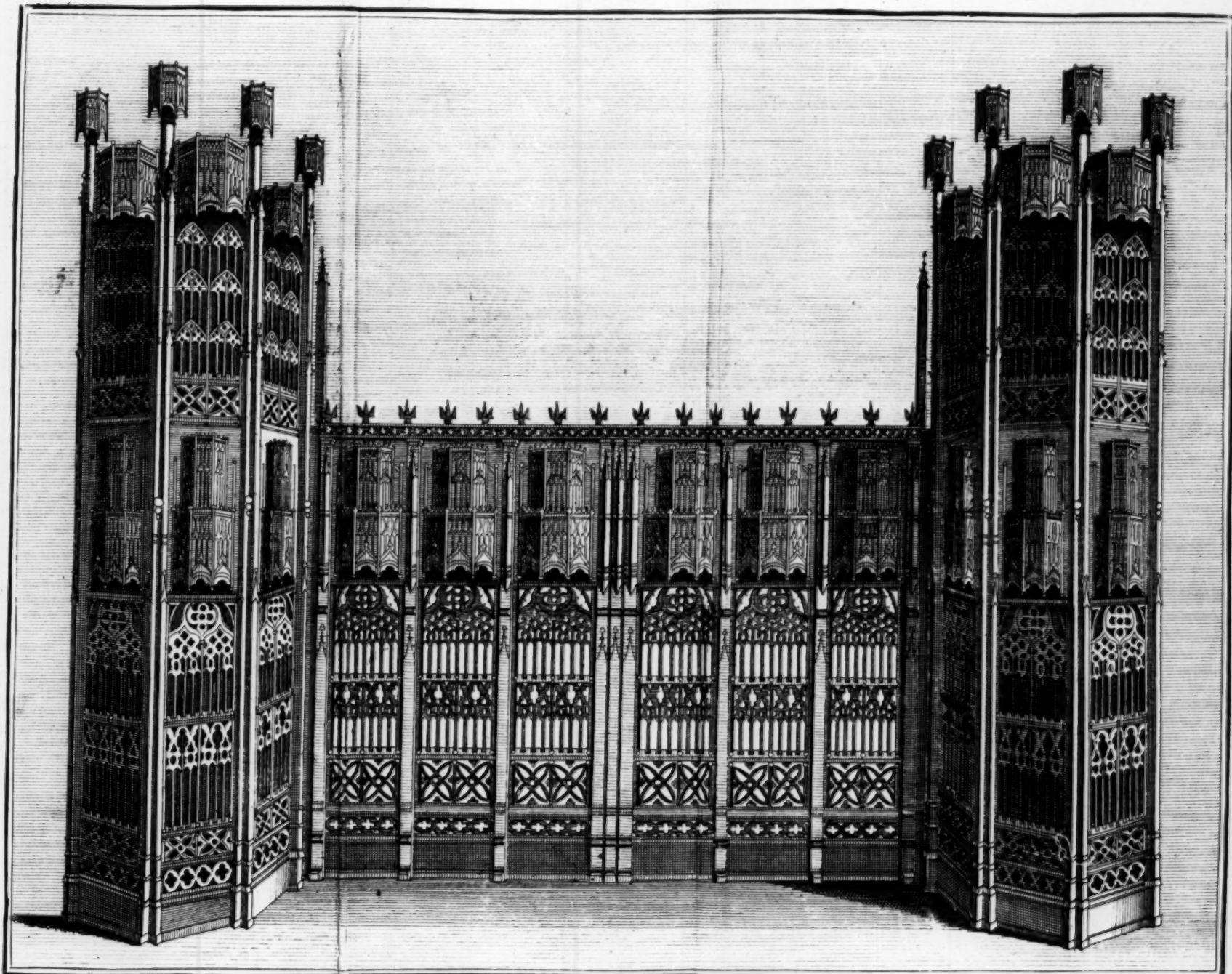
Edward's breach of faith was visible, in the unjust punishment of the Lord *Wells* and his brother-in-law, after drawing them out of sanctuary by a safe-conduct; in that of the bastard of *Fauconbridge*, whose crime he had pardoned: And lastly, in his oath at *York*, taken even with intention to break it. All these actions are of the number of those, that can be excused only by reasons of State; weak excuse in things where Honour and Religion are concerned.

As for *Edward's* incontinency, his whole life may be said to be one continued scene of lust. He had many concubines, but especially three, of whom he said, *One was the merriest, the other the wittiest, and the third the holiest in the world, for she was always in a Church, but when he sent for her.* He had, however, but two natural children, both by *Elizabeth Lucy* (to whom he is said to have been contracted before his marriage) *Arthur*, surnamed *Plantagenet*, created Viscount *L'Isle*, by *Henry VIII*, and *Elizabeth*, wife of Sir *Thomas Lumley*. I shall say nothing of *Edward's* Religion, since Historians mention it only in relating his death-bed discourses.

What is most surprising in the life of this Prince, is his good fortune, which seemed to be almost miraculous. He was raised to the Throne after the loss of two battles, the first by the Duke his father, the other by the Earl of *Warwick*,

Moor.

Hall.
Stow.Hall.
Stow.
Hollingsh.



The Monument of K. EDWARD IV in the Royal CHAPEL of WINDSOR .

J. Mynde sc.

wick, then devoted to the House of York. The head of the father was still upon the walls of York, when the son was proclaimed at London. Edward escaped, as it were by miracle, out of his confinement at Middleham. He was restored to the Throne, or at least received into London at his return from Holland, before he had vanquished, and whilst his fortune yet depended upon the decision of a battle, which the Earl of Warwick was ready to give. In a word, he was ever victorious in all the battles where he was present.

By his Queen Elizabeth Widville, King Edward had the following children: I. 1. *Edward*, born November 4, 1470, who succeeded him. 2. *Richard*, Duke of York and Norfolk, and Earl Warren. 3. *George*, Duke of Bedford, who died young.

II. 4. *Elizabeth*, born February 11, 1466, who married King Henry VII. 5. *Cecily*, wife, first of John Lord Wells, and then of one —— Kyme. 6. *Ann*, wife of Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk, and Earl-Marshal. 7. *Bridget*, born November 10, 1480, was a Nun at Dartford. 8. *Mary*, who died in 1482. 9. *Margaret*, born April 19, 1472, died young. 10. *Catharine*, married William Courtney, Earl of Devonshire.

A Description of the Monument of E D W A R D IV.

His monument is in the new chapel of Windsor, founded by himself. It is composed of steel polished and gilt, representing a pair of gates between two towers of curious workmanship after the Gothic manner. This tomb is fronted with touchstone, and stands in the north arch near the high altar. His epitaph is in monkish Latin verses; as it is not inscribed on the tomb, and has nothing in it besides some low-strained encomiums, which argue the barbarous taste of the age in which it was wrote, we shall leave as we find, without a translation. It was registered in a book in the college of arms, and is as follows:

Carmina que letus cecini, cano tristia mestus,
Heu pater, heu pastor, heu her, heu bellicus armis,
Heu doctus Salomon, Jonachas, Archurus in hoste,
Heu vere legis custos, heu gloria plebis,
Edwardus quartus Anglis her, & decus orbis,
Collitur a nobis Rosa mundi solq; triumphi,
Absalom in vuln, Salomon tristi quasi cultu,

Templi fundator, castri novus & recreator,
 At nobis natis qui sit iam queso beatus,
 Gallus obedit ejus vultu, luctusq; subegit,
 Protector Christi fidei, victus nece trilli;
 Cella petens astri, jacuit iam colmina castri.
 Sol lacet obscurus, gravibus dolet Anglia curis
 Castra choris plena placentum sunt peramena,
 Olim iam flentum, vir verba referre volentum:
 Luce migrat celis nona Rex noster Aprilis,
 Edwardi, Christi matri, precibusq; Georgii,
 M. semel. C. quater octo decies tribus annis;
 Tristis sed Regni vicenus trinus annus;
 Natus quo mense necat hunc mors illius esse.
 Anglia plange parens Regis, sic Henetria nutrit,
 Rex tuus et jure moritur cur Gallia conflet;
 Regem nunc Reges plangent, genti genitores,
 Princeps Durq; comes genitrix Regina proles,
 Spiritus ercent Reges petat alta Polozum,
 Omnes Angligene quia Rex & tutor eorum.

An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture of the 4th of *Edward IV*, a pound-weight of gold, of the old standard, was to make by tale twenty pounds, sixteen shillings, and eight-pence; and a pound-weight of silver, old Sterling, was to make thirty-seven shillings and six-pence. By other Indentures of the 5th, 8th, 11th, 16, and 22d of the same King, a pound-weight of gold of the old standard, was to make forty-five Nobles, going for ten shillings a-piece, or ninety Half-Nobles, or one hundred and eighty Quarter-Nobles, or sixty-seven and a half of the pieces impressed with Angels, going for six shillings and eight-pence each, and consequently was coined into twenty-two pounds, ten shillings, by tale; and the silver moneys were shorn at thirty-seven shillings and six-pence the pound-weight, Troy. These Indentures were made between the King and the Lord *Hastings*, his Chamberlain, Master, Worker, and Warden, of all his Exchanges and Outchanges in *England* and *Calais*. King *Edward* the Fourth's monies are distinguished from those of *Edward III*, by the form of the letters, particularly Ω which is not made like an H, as in those of *Edward III*; as also by the weight, his Groats being above twenty grains lighter: moreover, the title of *Ireland* is wanting on his Coins. The outer circle on the Groats is wanting, leaving

ing the letters extended to the very edge, and generally worn part away; in other respects, like his Predecessors; and of several mints, as *London*, *York*, *Canterbury*, *Bristol*; some of them, besides the name of the place of mintage on the reverse, have the initial letters E. C. B. on the King's breast. (Fig. 1.) The *Irish* Groats have the King's head within a rose, and generally make no mention at all of *England*, with the place of coinage on the reverse, as *Dublin*, *Drogheda*, *Waterford*; the power of coining money



1



2



3

being taken from other places. These fall short of the *English* Groats near ten grains; the first difference betwixt the standards of the *English* and *Irish* money beginning in this Reign. Of this *Irish* money there is one piece having on the reverse, CIVITAS. DVBLINIE. with a large Star, that fills the whole Area: This is reckoned a great curiosity. (Fig. 2.) There is another in Speed, having on one side the arms of *France* and *England*, quartered, inscribed, REX. ANGLI. Z. FRANCIE. Reverse, three Crowns, denoting the three Kingdoms, DOMINVS. HIBERNIE. (Fig. 3.) The Ryal is like Henry the Fifth's

Rose-Noble, only here is added a flag at the stern of the ship, wherein is the letter E. EDWARD. DI. GRA. REX. ANG. Z. FRANC. DNS. IB. Reverse, IHS. AVT. TRANSIENS. PER MEDIVM. ILLORV. IBAT. Instead of a Cross there is a Rose in the Center, with Rays, like a Sun, extending to the Lions and Fleurs-de-lis, interchangeably. The Angel is exactly like that of Henry VI.

The NOBILITY, created within this period, was as follows:

Ann. C.

- 1461. *Richard Plantagenet, Earl of Carlisle; and Duke of Gloucester, afterwards King Richard III.*
- 1461. *George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence.*
- 1472. —— *Earl of Salisbury and Warwick.*
- Mar. 25.*
- June 30. *Henry Bourchier (Earl of Ewe) Earl of Essex.*
William Nevil, Earl of Kent.
- Nov. 4. *William Herbert, Baron Herbert (of Ragland, Chepstow, and Gower in Wales.)*
John VVenlok, Baron VVenlok.
VWilliam Hastings, Baron Hastings.
- 1463. *John Nevil, Earl of Northumberland.* But in 1470, re-
- May 23.* signing that title, he was created
- 1470. —— *Marquis of Montague.*
- Mar. 25.*
- 1465. *Edmund Grey, Earl of Kent.*
- May 23.*
- June 20. *VValter Blount, Baron Montjoy.*
- 1466.
- May 24.* *Richard VVidville, Earl of Rivers.*
- 1467.
- Mar. 13.* *John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln.*
- 1468.
- May 27.* *VWilliam Herbert, Earl of Pembroke.*
- 1469.
- May 7.* *Humphrey Stafford, Earl of Devonshire.*
- 1470.
- Jan. 5.* *John Stafford, Earl of Wiltshire.*
- 1471.
- Aug. 24.* *Thomas Grey, Earl of Huntingdon.*
- 1475.
- Apr. 18.* —— *Marquis of Dorset.*

	Ann. C.
<i>Lewis de Bruges, Earl of Winchester.</i>	1472.
<i>John Howard, Baron Howard.</i>	<i>Oz. 13.</i>
<i>Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York.</i>	<i>Oz. 15.</i>
— Earl of Nottingham.	1474. <i>May 28.</i>
— Earl of Warren and Surrey, and Duke of Norfolk.	1477. <i>Feb. 7.</i>
<i>Edmund Plantagenet, Earl of Salisbury.</i>	1477. <i>Feb. 15.</i>
— Earl of March and Pembroke.	1479. <i>July 8.</i>
<i>William Herbert (in lieu of the Earldom of Pembroke resigned) Earl of Huntingdon.</i>	1479. <i>July 4.</i>
<i>Maurice Berkley, Viscount Berkley.</i>	1481. <i>Apr. 21.</i>
<i>Francis Lovell, Viscount Lovell.</i>	1482. <i>Jan. 4.</i>

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
EDWARD IV.

<i>George, Duke of Clarence.</i>
<i>Sir William Chamberlayne, Knight.</i>
<i>John Tiptoft, Earl of Worcester, afterwards High-Constable of England.</i>
<i>John Nevil, Lord Montague, afterwards Earl of Northumberland, and Marquis of Montague.</i>
<i>William Herbert, Lord Herbert, afterwards Earl of Pembroke.</i>
<i>William Hastings, Lord Hastings.</i>
<i>John Scrope, Lord Scrope of Bolton.</i>
<i>Sir John Astley, Knight.</i>
<i>Ferdinand, King of Naples, son of Alfonius King of Aragon.</i>
<i>Francis Sforza, Duke of Milan.</i>
<i>James, Earl of Douglas.</i>
<i>Gaillard de Duras, Lord of Duras.</i>
<i>Sir Robert Harcourt, Knight.</i>
<i>Anthony Widvile, Lord Scales and Nucells, afterwards Earl Rivers.</i>
<i>Richard, Duke of Gloucester, afterwards King of England, of that name the Third.</i>

—Lord

— Lord Mountgryson in Apulia.
John Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk.
John de la Pole, Duke of Suffolk.
William Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel.
John Strafford, Earl of Wiltshire.
John Howard, Lord Howard, afterwards Duke of Norfolk.
Walter Devereux, Lord Ferrers of Chartley.
Master Blount, Lord Mountjoy.
Charles, Duke of Burgundy.
Henry Stafford, Duke of Buckingham.
Thomas Fitz-Alan, Lord Maltravers, afterwards Earl of Arundel.
Sir William Parr, of Kendal, Knight.
Frederick, Duke of Urbino.
Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
Edward, Prince of Wales.
Richard, Duke of York, second son to King Edward IV.
Thomas Grey, Marquis of Dorset, and Earl of Huntingdon.
Sir Thomas Montgomery, Knight.
Ferdinand, King of Castile and Leon.
Hercules d'Este, Duke of Ferrara.
John, King of Portugal, Son to Alfonso V.

17. EDWARD V.

EDWARD V. is proclaimed King, being between Ann. C. twelve and thirteen years of age.

1483. Apr. 9. Reg. I. He was then at Ludlow, in Shropshire, where he was sent by his father, in order to compose by his presence the disorders of the Welsh, who were grown unruly and disobedient to their Governors.

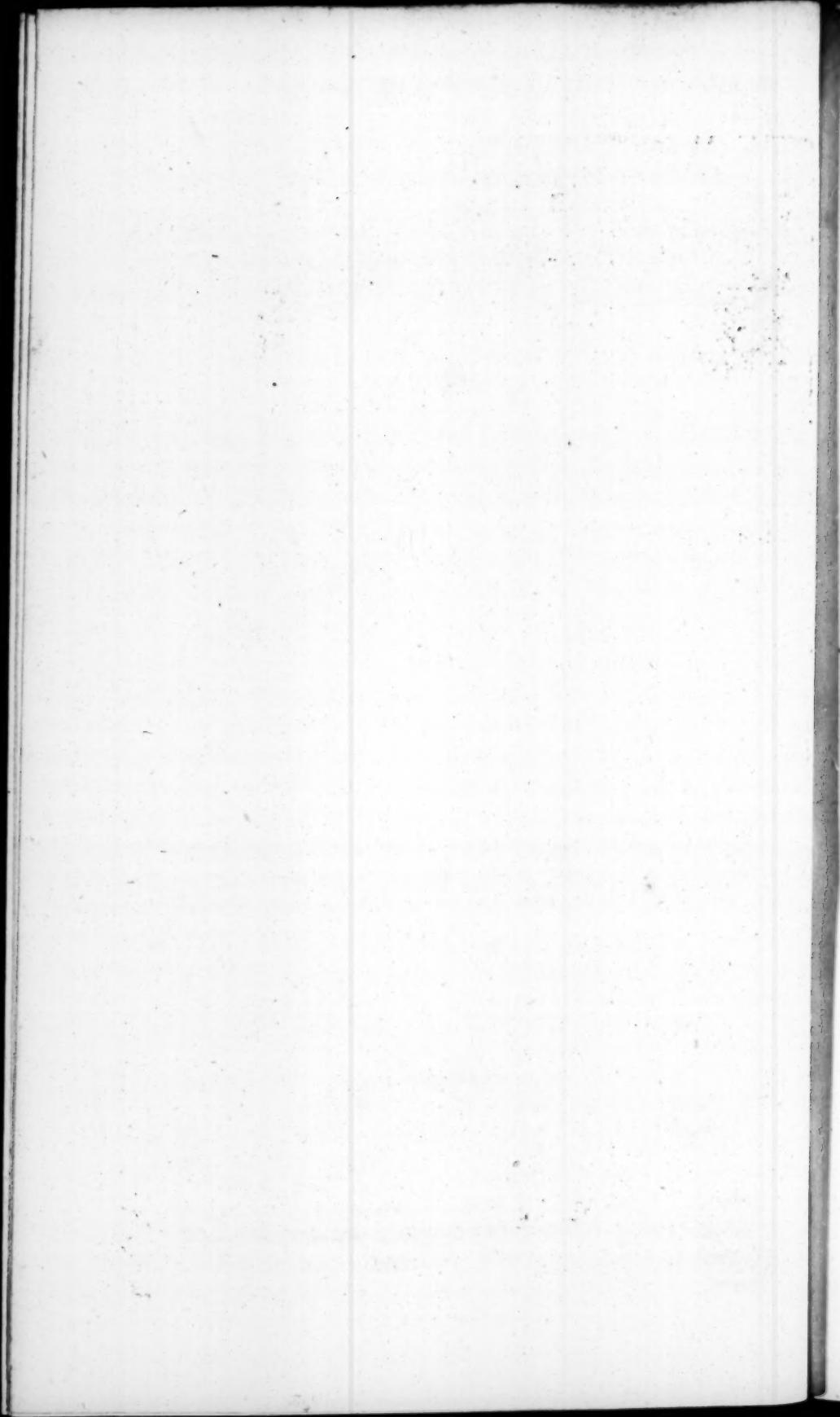
There were at that time two parties at Court, the Old and the New Nobility; the latter of which sided with, and was supported by the Queen; to the great discontent of the Old Nobility: But the King takes care to get them reconciled before his death.

Richard Duke of York, being a great dissembler, resolves to make his Court publicly to the Queen; but in private, joins with *Henry Stafford Duke of Buckingham*, *William Lord Hastings*, and *Thomas Lord Stanley*, three Lords of the Old Nobility, in order to hinder the Queen from having the Government of the Kingdom.

Both parties take measures to seize the Government. And the Queen orders her brother, *Anthony Earl Rivers*, to



G. Vertue Sc.



to raise forces in *Wales*, and conduct the King up to *London*. *Ann. C. don*, in order to his Coronation.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, and Lord *Hastings*, send an express to the Duke of *Gloucester*, who was then at *York*, to inform him of the Queen's measures; and they three meeting soon after at *Northampton*, agree, to persuade the Queen to dismiss the forces lately raised in *Wales*, that the Duke of *Gloucester* might the more easily seize the Government.

The Queen falling into the snare laid for her, writes to the Earl *Rivers* to dismiss those forces, which he accordingly does; and keeping only the King's domestics, begins his journey with the King for *London*.

As the King was approaching *Northampton*, the Dukes of *Gloucester* and *Buckingham* go out and meet him, and advise the Earl *Rivers* to conduct him as far as *Stony-Stratford*; and then they persuade that Earl, to go and spend the night with them at *Northampton*, which he does.

They care for him very much, but the next morning arrest him; as also *Richard Lord Grey*, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and Sir *Richard Hawe*: And, instead of proceeding to *London*, carry the King back to *Northampton*.

The Queen informed of this goes and takes sanctuary in *Westminster-Abbey*, at midnight, with her Children.

Dr. *Thomas Rotherham*, Archbishop of *York*, and Lord Chancellor, goes and comforts the Queen there, and leaves the Great Seal with her, but sends for it again as soon as he comes home.

An insurrection happens in *London*, but it is appeased by *May 4. Lord Hastings*.

The King is brought to *London*, attended by a great number of Lords, particularly by the Duke of *Gloucester*, who does him homage in the Bishop of *London's* palace.

A great Council is called, by which *Richard Duke of Gloucester* is declared Protector of the King and Kingdom.

As soon as he is declared Protector, he takes the Great Seal from Archbishop *Rotherham*, and gives it to *John Russell*, Bishop of *Lincoln*; and also makes other alterations at Court.

He proposes in the Council, to take *Richard Duke of York* from the Queen his mother by force, if she would not quietly part with him: Cardinal *Thomas Bourchier*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, is commissioned by the Council to go and persuade the Queen to deliver him up; who, receiving

ceiving the Prince from the Queen, brings him to the Protector.

A few days after, the Protector, still feigning to be making preparations for his Nephew's Coronation, causes the two Princes to be removed to the Tower, the usual place from whence the procession at Coronations began.

Then he imparts his project of seizing the Crown to the Duke of Buckingham; with whom and other his trusty friends, he concert, to engage proper persons in that plot; to keep it secret; to prove Edward IVth's children illegitimate; and, either to gain or dispatch the Lord Hastings out of the way.

He gains Sir Edmund Shaw, Mayor of London, his brother Dr. John Shaw, and one Pinker: To whom he joins Richard Catesby, a Lawyer, and a Confident of the Lord Hastings, whom he betrayed.

A report is spread, by their means, that the late King Edward IV. and his brother, the Duke of Clarence, were not sons of the Duke of York; and that King Edward IVth's children were all bastards, on account of his pretended marriage-contract with Elizabeth Lucy. Consequently, that Richard Duke of Gloucester was the only lawful son and heir of the Duke of York.

The Protector erects two Councils; one whereof met at Baynard's-Castle, and the other at Crosby's-Place. The former was to regulate the preparations for Edward's pretended Coronation, but all their orders were retarded.

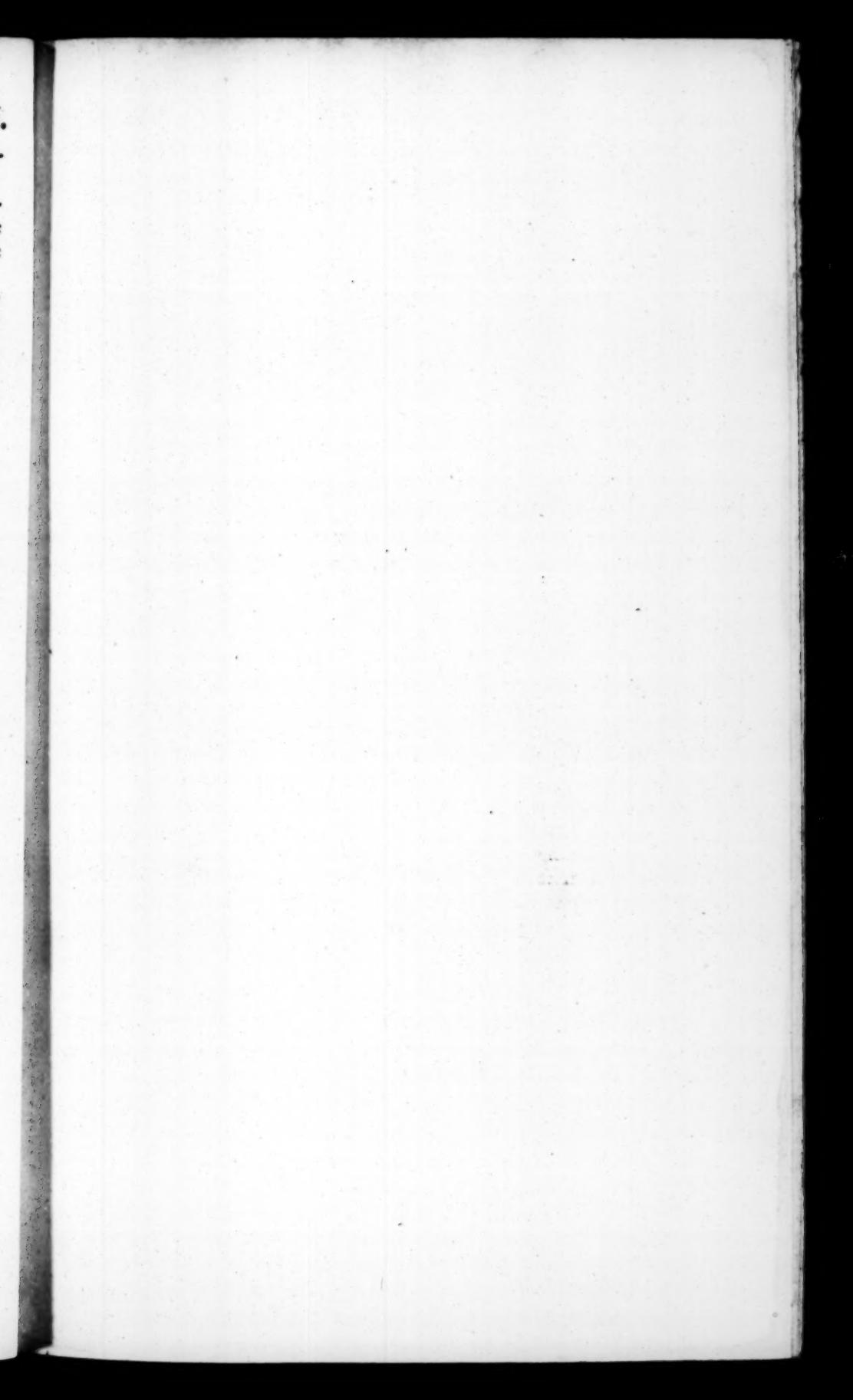
The Lord Stanley discovers his fears of the Protector's ill designs against the King; but the Lord Hastings confidently affirming those suspicions were groundless, the King's friends take no measures to stop the Protector's progress, as they might easily have done.

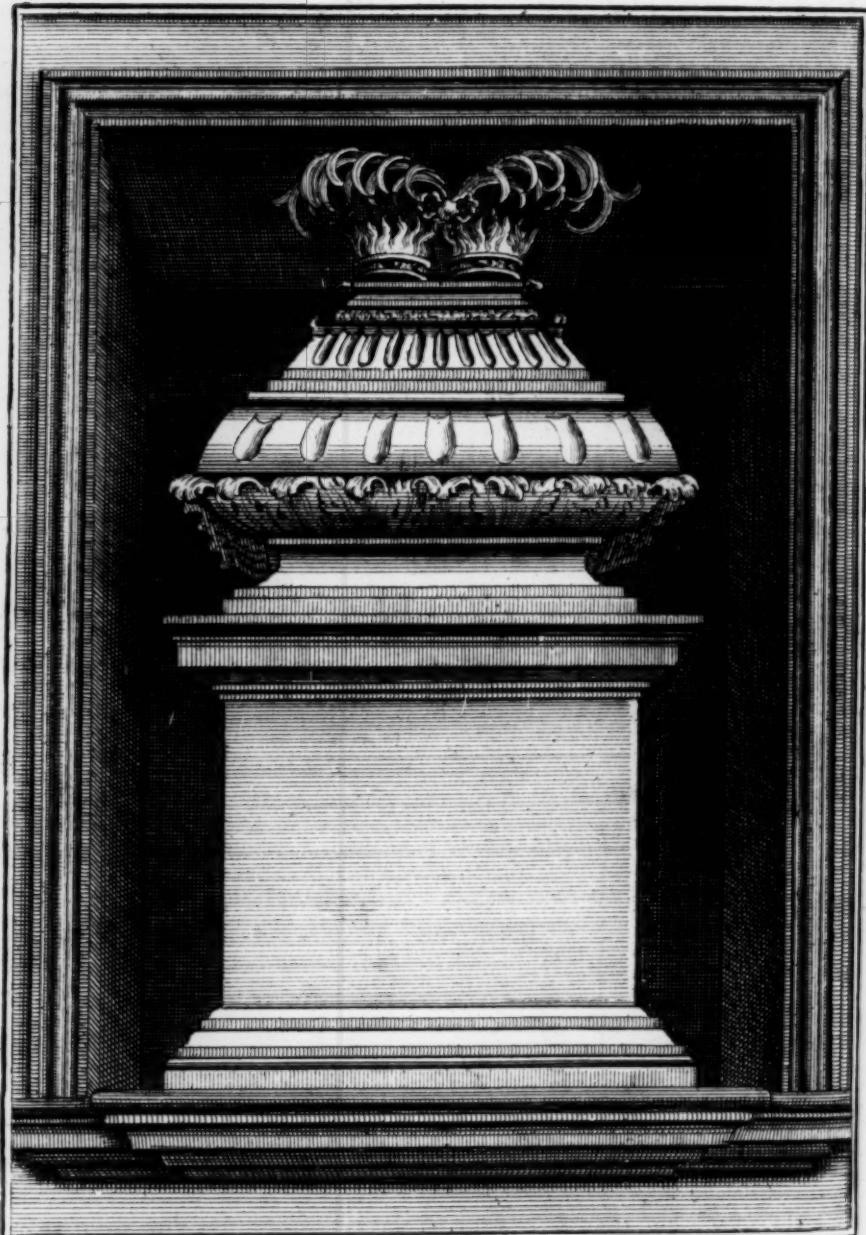
The Duke of Gloucester employs Catesby to sound the Lord Hastings, who discovering the Lord Stanley's suspicions, and expressing an inviolable attachment to the King's person, the Duke resolves to dispatch him out of the way; and accordingly calling a Council in the Tower, arrests him, and causes him to be immediately executed.

The Lord Stanley (who is wounded in the scuffle) Rotherham Archbishop of York, and John Morton Bishop of Ely, are also arrested.

Anthony Earl Rivers, Richard Lord Grey, Sir Thomas Vaughan, and Sir Richard Hawe, who were prisoners at Ponifraet, are executed the same day.

The Protector sends for the Mayor and Aldermen, to whom





The Monument of K. EDWARD & his Brother
RICHARD in Westminster Abbey.

whom he justifies the Lord Hastings's illegal execution ; and *Ann. C.* publishes a proclamation to the same purpose.

Jane Shore, the Lord Hastings's mistress, being accused as one of his accomplices, is arrested and examined : But being found innocent, the Protector causes her to be sued for incontinency ; and she does public penance at *St. Paul's* for the same.

These violent proceedings opening people's eyes, the Protector and the Duke of *Buckingham* resolve to discover their designs ; and employ Dr. *Shaw* to preach at *Paul's-Cross*, upon the illegitimacy of King *Edward IV*, and his children, and of his brother the Duke of *Clarence*.

But, this Sermon not being received with the desired ac- *June 17.* clamations, the Duke of *Buckingham* harangues the Mayor, Aldermen, and principal Citizens at *Guildhall*, upon the same subject ; and they not answering with, a *Long live King Richard*, as he expected, he repeats his speech, but to no purpose.

Whereupon he orders the Recorder to speak to the people ; and some of the Duke of *Buckingham's* domestics, that were in the crowd, crying, *King Richard !* and being seconded by the rabble, the Duke pretends, that it was a general approbation.

The next day, the Duke, attended by the Mayor, *Al-* *June 18.* dermen, and the rest of the cabal, waits upon the Protector at *Baynard's-Castle*, and offers him the Crown. The Protector, seemingly surprised, refuses it at first, but the Duke of *Buckingham* threatening to give the Crown to another, the Protector accepts of it, with a feigned reluctance.

And thus ended the Reign of King *Edward V*, after it had lasted only two months and ten days.

A Description of the Monument of EDWARD V, and RICHARD Duke of York.

The bones of these two Princes, by the order of CHARLES II, in whose time they were found, were put into a marble urn, and deposited among the monuments of the Royal Family, in the Chapel of HENRY VII, with a Latin monumental inscription upon it ; which is as follows :

H. S. S.

RELIQUIÆ

EDWARDI VI. Regis Anglie, et RICHARDI Ducis Eboracensis. Hos fratres germanos tubre Londiniⁱ. conclusos

clusos injectisq; culcitris suffocatos abditè, et inhonestè tumulari jussit patrvus RICHARD US perfidus regni prædo ossa desideratorum, diu et multum quæsita post annos cxc & i. scalarum in ruderibus (scalæ istæ ad facellum turris albæ nuper ducebant) alte defossa, indiciis certissimis sunt reperta xvii die Julii A. D. M DC LXXIIL CAROLUS II. Rex clementissimus, acerbam fortem miseratus, inter avita monumenta, principibus infelicissimis justa persolvit. Anno Dom. 1678. Annoq; Regni sui 30.

In English:

Here lie the remains of EDWARD V, King of England, and of RICHARD, Duke of York. These unhappy brothers, who were shut up in the Tower, and there smothered with pillows, by order of their perfidious uncle, RICHARD, the usurper of the Throne, were privately and indecently buried. Their much desired bones, diligently and often sought for, in vain, July 17, 1674, one hundred and ninety-one years after their death, were dug up in the ruins of a stair-case, that formerly led to the Chapel of the white tower, and known by most undoubted tokens. The most compassionate King CHARLES II, pitying their severe fate, thought fit to order those most unfortunate Princes this place amongst the monuments of their forefathers, in the year of our Lord 1678, and the thirtieth of his reign.

18. RICHARD III. surnamed Crook-back.

Ann. C.

1483.

June 19.

— 20.

Reg. I.

— 27.

— 27.

— 28.

KING Richard begins his Reign, and is proclaimed the next day, by the name of Richard III.

He sends for 5000 men out of the North, because he did not entirely confide in the Citizens of London.

Sir Robert Brackenbury is appointed Constable of the Tower.

John Russel Bishop of Lincoln is made Lord-Chancellor; and John Lord Howard is created Duke of Norfolk, and Earl-Marshall.

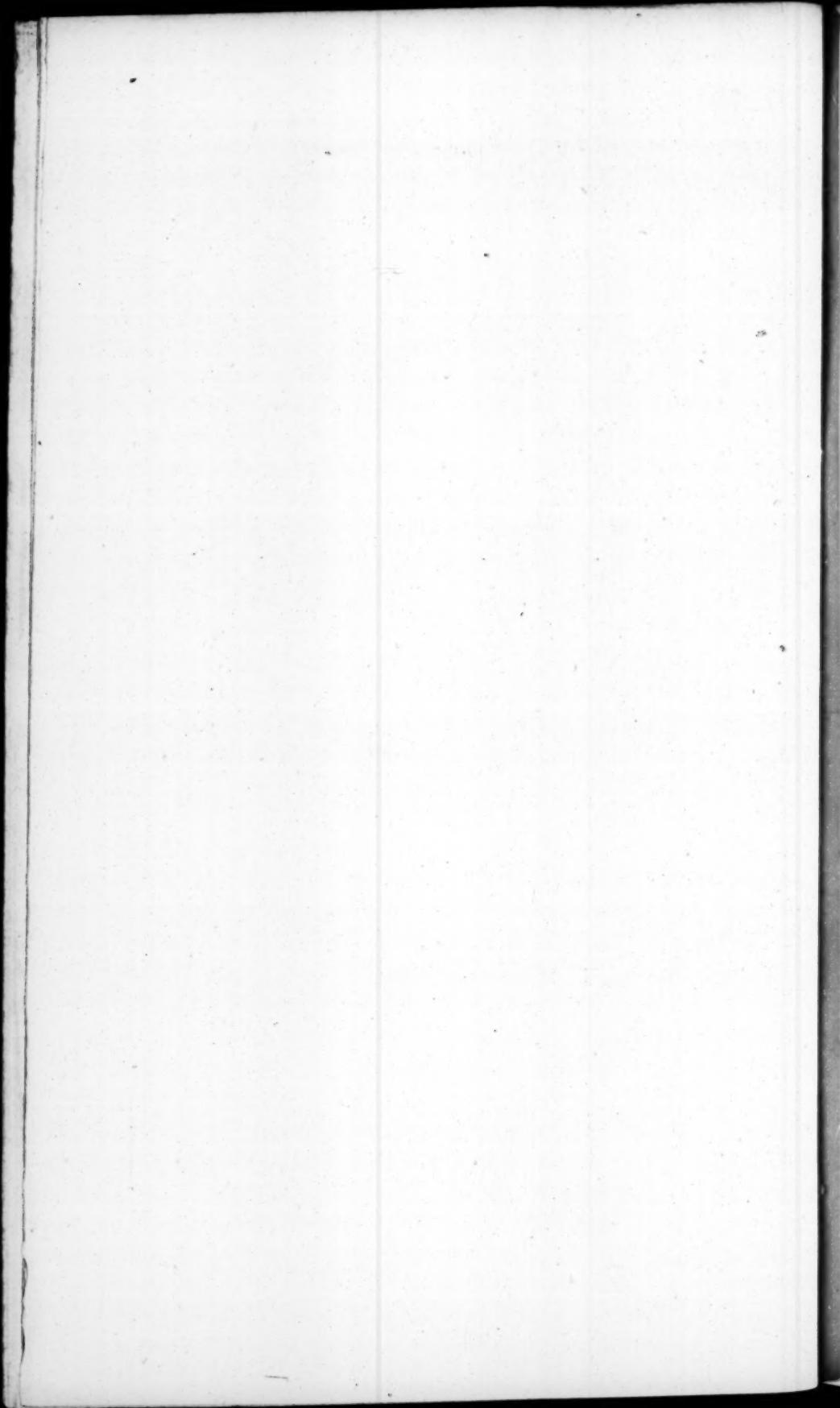
Thomas Rotherham, Archbishop of York, and the Lord Thomas Stanley are released; but Dr. Morton Bishop of Ely is committed to the Duke of Buckingham's custody, who sends him to his castle of Brecknock in Wales.

King



K. RICHARD III.

g. Vertue Sc.



King *Richard III.* and his Queen, *Ann*, are crowned. *Ann. C.*

The Usurper, in order to secure himself on the Throne, *July 7.*
sends Ambassadors to *Castile*, *Bretagne*, and *France*, to re-*July.*
new the Alliances, or prolong the truces subsisting between *August.*
those Courts and the Crown of *England*.

Moreover, he resolves to dispatch his two nephews, King *Edward V.* and *Richard Duke of York*, out of the way : And Sir *Robert Brackenburgh* refusing to be the instrument of the King's cruelty, the two Princes are smothered in the *Tower* by Sir *James Tyrrell*, made, for one night, Constable of the place for that very purpose, assisted by *Miles Forest* and *John Dighton*. — Their bones, as it is supposed, being found in 1674, were removed into *Henry VII*'s Chapel, at *Westminster*.

The King takes, in the mean time, a progress into the *North*; and coming to *York*, is there crowned a second time : The same day, he creates *Edward* his son Prince of *Wales*.

Lewis XI. King of *France* dies, and is succeeded by his *Aug. 30.* son *Charles VIII.*

Henry Stafford, Duke of *Buckingham* being disgusted with the King, leaves him at *Gloucester*; and retiring to his Castle of *Brecknock*, consults there with Bishop *Morton*, how to dethrone the King, and place the Crown on the head of *Henry Earl of Richmond*.

Matters being concerted between them, they find means to inform of their design *Margaret*, Countess of *Richmond*, who was married to the Lord *Stanley*; and she enters into the plot.

In the mean time, Bishop *Morton* takes an opportunity to escape out of the Duke of *Buckingham*'s custody, and retires to *Ely*, from whence he flies into *Flanders*.

The Countess of *Richmond* imparts the design to the Queen-Dowager, who was still in her sanctuary at *Westminster*; and makes overtures to her of a marriage between the Princess *Elizabeth* and the Earl of *Richmond*; which the Queen approves of, and promises to forward the undertaking with all her power and interest.

Matters being thus settled between the Queen-Dowager, the Countess of *Richmond*, and the Duke of *Buckingham*, they endeavour to ingage their most trusty friends in the plot, who likewise draw in others.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, in order to execute his designs, secures first some friends in *Wales*, who undertake to list soldiers privately; and then settles a correspondence with some

Ann. C. some Gentlemen of *Dorsetshire*, *Devonshire*, and *Cornwall*, who promise to raise forces, which the Duke intended to join with his *Welshmen*, and so receive the Earl of *Richmond* at his arrival : At the same time, several Lords and Gentlemen were to rise in other Counties.

Septemb. The Countess of *Richmond* sends two expresses, different ways, to the Earl her son ; and he, being informed of what was resolved in his favour, imparts the secret to the Duke of *Bretagne*, who willingly engages to supply him with men and ships : Whereupon he sends back the expresses to acquaint his friends, that he hoped to be ready by the beginning of *October*, and desired them to prepare all things by that time.

King *Richard* receiving a confused account of the Conspiracy, advances towards the center of the Kingdom, and suspecting the Duke of *Buckingham*, orders him to Court ; but the Duke refuses to come, and drawing together his forces, begins to march towards the western Counties.

The King, in the mean time, assembles his forces, and appoints the rendezvous at *Leicester*, where he repairs himself, with a resolution to give his enemies battle.

Oct. 12. The Duke of *Buckingham* advances by long marches to *Gloucester*, where he intended to pass the *Severn*; but being hindered from doing it by a very great inundation, which lasted six days, his army disperses, and he hides himself at the house of one *Ralph Banister*, who had been his servant ; and by whom being betrayed, for 1000*l.* reward that was offered, he is beheaded at *Shrewsbury*, without any legal process.

The Conspirators thereupon disperse themselves, and many sail over to the Earl of *Richmond*, among whom was the Marquis of *Dorset*.

Oct. 12. Mean while, the Earl of *Richmond*, ignorant of what passed in *England*, sails from *St. Malo's* with 5000 men, and 40 ships, and comes over-against *Poole*, in *Dorsetshire* ; but finding the Militia there ready to oppose his landing, he retires to *Normandy*, and returns to *Bretagne*.

Not despairing of better success another time, he resolves to make a second attempt, and solemnly swears to marry the Princess *Elizabeth*. Many of the *English* resort to him.

Oct. 24. King *Richard* appoints Sir *Ralph Asthon*, Vice-Constable, to try the Conspirators, several of whom are executed.

Jan. 23. 1484. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which passes an act of attainder against the Earl of *Richmond* and his Adherents ; declares the late King *Edward's* marriage with *Elizabeth*

Elizabeth Widville void, and his issue illegitimate ; and confirms King Richard's title, asserting, There was none other person living, but him only, that could claim the Crown and Dignity Royal, by way of inheritance. *Ann. C.*

The King, after this, lays a great tax and tallage upon the people.

Though the Countess of Richmond was concerned in the plot, yet it was not discovered ; however, the King suspecting her, he orders the Lord Stanley, her husband, to keep her confined, and confers on him the office of High-Constable.

King Richard being informed, that some of the Conspirators were still stirring in Bretagne ; in order to secure himself, he confirms the Alliance with Portugal, and makes April. or renews truces with Bretagne, France, the Archduke Septemb. Maximilian, and Scotland ; and sends an Ambassy of ob^e Reg. 2. dience to the Pope.

He has also private Negotiations with Peter Landais, the Duke of Bretagne's Prime-Minister, whom he endeavours to persuade to deliver up the Earl of Richmond ; but he being apprized of his danger by Morton, Bishop of Ely, escapes into France, where he is honourably received by King Charles VIII.

Edward, Prince of Wales dying, the King declares his April. nephew, John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln, his presumptive Heir.

John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, escapes out of his confinement at Hammes, and repairs to the Earl of Richmond ; as do also several other Lords and Gentlemen from England.

The King, suspecting the Lord Stanley, obliges him to leave his son, George, Lord Strange, in hostage.

And, discovering the project of the Earl of Richmond's marriage with his niece, the Princess Elizabeth, he resolves to marry her himself ; for which purpose, he gets her, and the rest of her sisters, out of the Queen-Dowager's hands ; and his Queen dying soon after, he makes his addresses to the Princess Elizabeth, but she absolutely refuses him.

King Richard fits out a fleet to oppose the Earl of Richmond's landing, in case he endeavoured to make another attempt upon England, but apprehending no danger from him, he lays it up in the spring. *1485.*

The Earl, encouraged hereby, sollicits the Court of France for aid, and having obtained from it 2000 men, with ships to transport them, and a sum of money, for which he left the Marquis of Dorset and Sir John Bourchier in hostag^e Reg. 3.

Ann. C. *July.* tage, he repairs to *Roan*, where the troops were to assemble.

Here receiving the disagreeable news of the Queen's death, and of *Richard*'s intending to marry the Princess *Elizabeth*, he resolves, in order to gain Sir *Walter Herbert*, to offer to marry his younger sister, and dispatches a messenger to Sir *Walter* for that purpose; but the roads being narrowly watched, the messenger durst not pursue his journey.

July. In the mean time, the Earl of *Richmond* being invited over to *England* by his Friends, embarks at *Harfleur*, and setting sail *July 31*, lands on the 6th of *August* at *Milford-haven*; from whence he proceeds, the next day, to *Haverford*, where he was joyfully received.

From hence he sends an express to the Countess, his mother, to inform her of his arrival, and design to march to *London*; and immediately marches quite through *Wales* to *Shrewsbury*, being joined in his march by Sir *Rice ap Thomas*, and others, and meeting with no opposition from Sir *Walter Herbert*, who had been ordered by King *Richard* to stop his progress.

The Lord *Stanley*, and his brother, Sir *William*, raise 5000 men, as if it had been for the King, though it was really for the Earl of *Richmond*'s service, and go and post themselves at *Litchfield*.

The King, who was at *Nottingham*, hearing of the enemies landing, resolves to wait for them between *Leicester* and *Coventry*, and give them battle; but there was a great desertion in his army.

The Earl of *Richmond*, eager to engage the King, advances to *Litchfield*, and then to *Tamworth*, in his way to which last place he had like to be lost: He has a private Conference, during his march with the Lord *Stanley*, and his brother, Sir *William*.

Aug. 22. The two armies meeting near *Bosworth*, draw up in order of battle, the King's consisting of between 12 and 13,000 men, and the Earl of *Richmond*'s of 5000; and, coming here to an engagement, the King's army was totally defeated, and himself slain, with the loss of 1000 or 1200 men; whereas the Earl of *Richmond* did not lose above 100.

The most considerable persons that fell on the King's side, were, *John Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*, *Walter*, Lord *Ferrers*, Sir *Richard Ratcliffe*, *Robert Brackenbury*, &c. and on the Earl's side, the only person of note slain, was Sir *William Brandon*, his Standard-bearer.

The Lord *Stanley* and his brother Sir *William* contributed greatly to this victory, by standing neuter before the fight,

and

and then falling furiously upon the King's troops, during the *Ann. C.* heat of the engagement.

Richard's Crown being found by a Soldier, is brought to the Lord *Stanley*, who places it on the Earl of *Richmond*'s head, saluting him King.

The late King *Richard*'s body is found among the slain, stark naked, covered with blood and dirt; and in that condition thrown across a horse, behind *Blanc Sanglier*, a Pursuivant at Arms, and carried to *Leicester*; where it was buried in St. *Mary*'s Church, belonging to the *Grey-Friers*.

Thus fell King *Richard* III. in the 34th year of his age, after a short Reign of two years, two months, and two days.

The Character of RICHARD III.

Richard III. was surnamed *Crook-back'd*, because he was so in reality. Moreover, one of his arms was almost withered, receiving but little or no nourishment. As to the defects of his mind, if we believe most Historians, they were so great and so numerous, that it would be difficult to find in History a Prince of so ill a character. It is certain, he had a boundless ambition, which often caused him to commit actions unbecoming a Christian Prince. To this passion alone must be ascribed his treachery and cruelty, since he was treacherous and cruel only with respect to the acquisition or preservation of the Crown. He has not been the sole Prince whom ambition has led into the like excesses. The Historians who writ in the Reigns of *Henry VII* and *Henry VIII*, have so aggravated the heinousness of his actions, that one cannot help observing in their writings, a strong desire to please the Monarchs then on the Throne. Nay, very probably, they have ascribed to him some actions upon no very good foundation; for instance, his murdering with his own hand, *Henry VI*, and the Prince of *Wales*. Their desire to say a great deal of ill of this Prince, made them overlook his good qualities, which ought not to have been passed over in silence. Be this as it will, without pretending either to justify him upon what he did of ill, or condemn him generally upon all, as some have done. I shall content myself (*says Rapin*) with blaming what was blame-worthy, and acknowledging withal what deserved condemnation. The crimes he was guilty of in procuring or keeping the Crown, are, as I said, effects and consequences of his immoderate ambition, by which he suffered himself to be blinded. But their being produced by that passion, does not in the least lessen their heinousness. As to

Buck.

the rest, he had a great deal of sense, and a very solid judgment, Qualities that might have been an honour to him, had they been used to better purposes. We may judge of his good sense and penetration, by his precautions to secure himself from the assaults of his enemies. These precautions could not be more just, if Divine Providence had not been pleased to render them fruitless, as it sometimes does, with respect to seemingly the best concerted designs. On several occasions he shewed an uncommon valour, and particularly in the battle where he was slain. This cannot be denied him, without injustice. He expressed great concern, that justice should be impartially ministred to all his subjects, without distinction, provided the preservation of his Crown was not concerned; for, in that respect, he made no scruple to trample upon all the rules of right and equity. This natural inclination for justice, but combated by his ambition, may afford some occasion to presume, he would, perhaps, have proved a good King, had he been able to fix himself so firmly in the Throne as to have feared no revolution. At least, this cannot be said to be improbable. The Emperor *Augustus*, who was guilty of so many cruelties to arrive at the Empire, affords a memorable and well-known instance of such a change, and it would not be impossible to find other examples. But as *Richard* was taken out of the world before he had given signs of any amendment, his ill actions absorbed whatever there might be commendable in him. There is one Historian, however, who has endeavoured to vindicate this Prince: But as he has set no bounds to this vindication, and laboured to make him entirely innocent, he has not acquired much credit, especially as he was often obliged, in order to attain his ends, to advance facts not strictly true. He has, however, a place in the collection of the *English* Historians; but no modern Author has thought fit to take him for guide.

By his Queen, *Anne* (second daughter and coheir of *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Warwick* and *Salisbury*, and widow of *Edward* son of King *Henry VI.*) he had only one son, who died in 1484. But he had two natural children; *John* surnamed of *Gloucester*; and *Catharine* married to *William* Earl of *Huntington*.

With *Richard III.*, ended the *Angevin* Kings, surnamed *Plantagenets*; who, since *Henry II.*, the first of this race, had possessed the Crown of *England* from father to son, during the space of 330 years. *Richard* was the last King

of this House; but not the last male, as some have affirmed, since the Earl of *Warwick*, his nephew, son of the Duke of *Clarence*, his brother, was still alive. This young Prince was the sole branch of the male issue of *Edward III*, which had been so numerous, but was almost entirely destroyed by the late Civil war. This war commenced thirty years before, was, at length, ended by the battle of *Bosworth*, after destroying above one hundred thousand *Englishmen*, and a great number of Princes of the two contending Houses. *Philip de Comines* mounts the number to fourscore; but it is a mistake or exaggeration of that Author, as it is easy to see by the Genealogical Table of the posterity of *Edward III*.

A Brief Recapitulation of the History of the Plantagenets.

HE *HENRY II*, the first King of this house, was the greatest of all the English Monarchs with respect to extent of dominion. Besides the Kingdom of *England*, he possessed in *France*, *Guienne*, *Poitou*, *Saintonge*, *Auvergne*, *Limousin*, *Perigord*, *Angoumois*, *Touraine*, *Anjou*, *Maine*, *Normandy*, to which he joined also *Bretagne* by the marriage of one of his sons with the Heiress of that Duchy; and lastly crowned all with the conquest of *Ireland*. But with all this grandeur he was ever unhappy. His contest with *Becket*, the vexatious persecutions from Pope *Alexander III*, the rebellion of his Queen and Sons, and the unfortunate success of his last war with *France*, suffered him not to enjoy a moment's repose.

RICHARD I, rendered his name famous in the East, by the conquest of the Isle of *Cyprus*, by the taking of *Acra*, and by a great victory over the Saracens. But the fame he acquired in that expedition was a dear purchase to *Christendom*, and particularly to *England*, by the prodigious quantity of men and money, exported from thence, without the Christians of *Palestine* reaping any great advantages. *Richard* himself at his return into *Europe*, underwent the rigours of a grievous and long imprisonment, from which he could not be freed without an exorbitant ransom which quite drained his Kingdom. In short, after a several years struggle with *Philip Augustus* to very little purpose, he unfortunately perished by an arrow at the siege of *Chaluz*, undertaken from his greedy desire of money.

JOHN Lack-land enjoyed not a moment's happiness during his whole Reign. Persecuted by the King of *France*, then by Pope *Innocent III*, and lastly, by his own subjects, his Reign was nothing but a continual train of misfortunes. He lost first all the provinces possessed by his Ancestors in *France*. After which, *Innocent III*. deprived him of his Crown, and restored it to him upon shameful and dishonourable terms. In fine, he had the great mortification to see his Barons in arms against him, and to die at a time when all *England* was paying allegiance to a foreign Prince.

HENRY III, a Prince of a very mean spirit, lived in a continual state of subjection, though seated on a throne ; one while a slave to his favourites and ministers, another while to the imperious will of the Popes. At length, stripped of all his authority by his own subjects, he remained some time captive to his greatest enemies. And he was entirely indebted to a victory fortunately gained by the Prince his Son, for his restoration, and the tranquillity he enjoyed the two last years of his life.

EDWARD I, rendered his name famous by the conquest of *Scotland*. But after shedding torrents of blood in that unjust quarrel, he had the mortification to lose that acquisition, and to die before he had recovered it. His conquest of *Wales* was the most real advantage procured for the Kingdom by any King of *England*.

The Reign of *EDWARD II*, is remarkable only for that Prince's ill-conduct and misfortunes. He is the first instance of a King of *England* deposed by authority of Parliament. Happy, if the fury of his enemies had stopped there ! but, with an unparalleled barbarity, he was made to suffer the most cruel death that could possibly be devised, and which bore no proportion to the indiscretions he was guilty of.

EDWARD III, was one of the most illustrious Kings of *England*, as well for his personal qualities as for his victories in *France*, and the famous treaty of *Bretagne*, which restored to him with interest the Provinces, *John Lack-land* had suffered to be lost. But his Reign, though glorious was not free from misfortunes. His minority was fulfilled by the tragical death of *Edward II*. his father, and of the Earl of *Kent* his uncle. To punish these horrid outrages, he was forced to keep his own mother in prison as long as she lived. Towards the end of his days he had the mortification to see himself strip of all he had re-conquered

quered upon *France*, without hopes of recovery. In a word, he ruined, as I may say, his own reputation, and died at a time when his subjects began to lose their former esteem for him.

Thus far it is easy to see that the race of the *Plantagenets* had enjoyed no great share of happiness. But their misfortunes, which were blended with some prosperities, were very inconsiderable in comparison of what that race afterwards underwent. When a man takes a view of what happened to the posterity of *Edward III*, he sees nothing but disasters, tragical or untimely deaths, hatred, animosity, revenge, civil wars, cruelties unheard of, among Princes sprung from the same stock. *England* had never seen so terrible a destruction of her inhabitants, nor had the scaffold been ever died with so much noble and royal blood as during the hundred years between the death of *Edward III*, and that of *Richard III*. Let us briefly run over the several branches of *Edward* the third's family, in order to see their calamities.

EDWARD the *Black Prince*, one of the most accomplished Princes that ever was born, died in the forty-sixth year of his age, having first buried his eldest son *Edward*, but seven years old.

RICHARD II, his other son, who mounted the Throne after his Grandfather, was deposed, imprisoned, and barbarously murdered.

LIONEL, Duke of *Clarence*, third son of *Edward III*, died in a foreign Country, in the flower of his age. He left but one daughter, whose marriage into the House of *March* was the occasion of all the calamities *England* was afflicted with for thirty years together.

The posterity of *John of Gaunt*, *Edward*'s fourth son, were far from being happy. *HENRY IV*, Successor of *Richard II*, passed his whole Reign under continual apprehensions of losing a Crown acquired by extraordinary methods, and preserved by the violent death of *Richard II*, whom he caused to be murdered in prison.

HENRY V, one of the most illustrious Kings of *England*, after so great a progress in *France*, as to be declared Regent and Heir of that Kingdom, enjoyed that considerable advantage but two years, or rather, had only a foretaste of what he had so eagerly desired. He died in the flower of his age, leaving a son, nine months old, who afterwards proved very unfit to compleat the work, his illustrious Father had so gloriously begun.

The Dukes of Clarence, Bedford, and Gloucester, died all three without issue : Gloucester was long exposed to the fury of his enemies, and, at last, sacrificed to their vengeance.

HENRY VI., Son of *Henry V.*, lost all that the King his Father had acquired in *France*. After which, he was stript of his Royalty, imprisoned, restored for a short space, and at last murdered by a Prince sprung from the same stock with himself.

EDWARD his son, Prince of *Wales*, died after the same manner, and by the same hand.

In surveying the other branch of the House of *Lancaster*, namely, that of *Beaufort-Somerset*, hardly shall we find a Prince but what lost his life in a battle, or on the scaffold.

The House of *York*, of whom *Edmund de Langley*, fifth son of *Edward III.*, was head, was still less favoured. Some unfortunate stars seemed to be continually shedding their malignant influences upon that family. Excepting *Edmund de Langley* himself, the first Duke of *York*, all the Princes, his descendants, died a violent or untimely death.

EDWARD, Duke of *York*, his eldest son, was slain at the battle of *Azincourt*.

RICHARD, Earl of *Cambridge*, lost his head on a scaffold.

RICHARD, third Duke of *York*, and his son *EDMUND*, Earl of *Rothesay*, perished in the battle of *Wakefield*.

GEORGE, Duke of *Clarence*, was afterwards condemned to die in a butt of *Malmsey*.

EDWARD IV., after enjoying the Crown of *England* some years, to which he had a better title than the House of *Lancaster*, died indeed a natural death, but in the two and fortieth year of his age.

EDWARD V., and *RICHARD*, his brother, were smothered in their bed.

EDWARD, Prince of *Wales*, son of *Richard III.*, was taken out of the world in the eleventh year of his age.

RICHARD III. was killed at the battle of *Bosworth*.

In fine, we shall see, in the course of the History, *EDWARD*, Earl of *Warwick*, son of the unfortunate Duke of *Clarence*, and the only surviving male of the House of *York*, end his days by the hand of the executioner.

Nothing more remains to complete the account of the disasters that happened to the posterity of *Edward III.*; but to take notice, that *THOMAS* of *Woodstock*, Earl of *Gloucester*,

Book XIII. 18. RICHARD III.

41

Gloucester, seventh son of that Monarch, died a violent death, in prison, at *Calais*.

Were not all these misfortunes which fell on *Edward the Third's Postterity* the effects of the Divine Vengeance extended to the fourth Generation, for the barbarous murder committed on the person of *Edward II*? At least, it is difficult not to see, in these events, the tragical death of *Edward II*, revenged upon *Richard II*; that of *Richard* upon *Henry VI*; that of *Henry* upon *Edward V*; and that of *Edward* upon *Richard III*.

An account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

That *Richard III.* coined money, appears by an Indenture, whereby he contracts with *Robert Brackenbury* for the coinage both of gold and silver, of the same value and denomination with the money of the fifth of *Edward IV*. Dr. *Nicolson* describes one of his Groats, as inscribed with characters of the like shape with those of *Henry VI.* and *Edward IV.* weighing about two penny weights three grains, which was the exact standard of *Richard III's* Groats. Others in the possession of the late Archbishop of *York* and Mr. *Thoresby*, in which the face side wants the outer circle, the letters of the inscription which reach to the extremity of the coin be-



ing generally imperfect, so that there was reason for the provision made by Act of Parliament in the next Reign, that the new money should have a circle about the outermost parts. That coin which *Speed* gives of *Richard II.* is thought rather to belong to this King, by the word *AGLIÆ* instead of *ANGLIÆ*, in whose Reign that way of writing was used. The Author of *Num. Brit. Hist.* has two pieces of this King inscribed, *RICHARDUS. REX. ANGLI.* Reverse, *CIVITAS EBORACI.* Another, *RICARDUS. REX.*

18. RICHARD III. Vol. II.

REX. ANGL. Reverse, CIVITAS. LONDON. The shortness of this King's Reign makes his coin so very rare, that *Thoresby* observes, he had seen a series of antient monies from *Edward the Confessor* to the present times, *Richard III.* excepted, which he had not chanced to light upon. *Speed's* case was the same, so that he was forced to leave a blank for this King's money.

The NOBILITY created by King RICHARD III.
was as follows:

Ann. C.

1483.

June 28.

John Howard, Duke of Norfolk.
William Berkley, Earl of Nottingham.
Edward Grey, Viscount Lisle.
Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
RICHARD III.

Sir *John Conyers*, Knight.

Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey, afterwards Lord Treasurer of England, and Duke of Norfolk.

Francis Lovel, Viscount Lovel.

Sir Richard Ratcliff, Knight.

Sir Thomas Burgh, Knight, afterwards Lord Burgh.

Thomas Stanley, Lord Stanley, afterwards Earl of Derby.

Sir Richard Tunstall, Knight.

BOOK XIV.

Containing the Reign of HENRY VII. With
the State of the Church from 1399, to 1509.

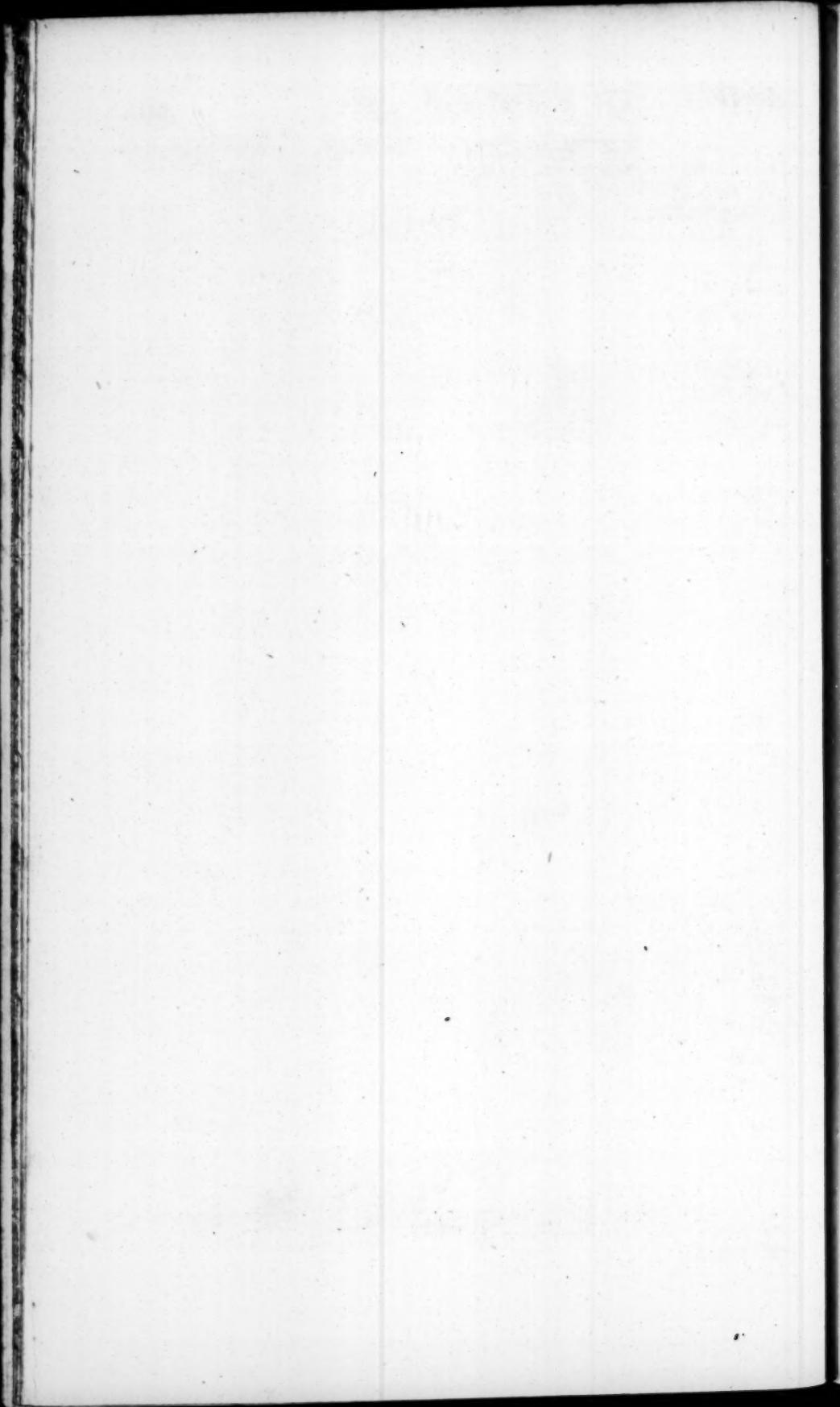
19. HENRY VII.

1485. *HENRY*, having obtained the victory at *Bosworth*,
Reg. 1. causes *Te Deum* to be sung upon the place, and is pre-
August. sently after proclaimed King by his army.
Having three foundations whereon to build his right; namely, 1. Conquest; 2. His intending to marry the Princess *Elizabeth* heir of the House of York; and 3. His descent from the House of *Lancaster* by his mother's side; he resolves



K. HENRY VII

G. Vertue Sculp:



resolves to rest upon the title of *Lancaster*, and to use the other two only as supporters.

But still distrusting that title in his own mind, he is all his life afraid of the House of *York*; and upon this account, causes *Edward Plantagenet*, son of the late Duke of *Clarence* to be removed from *Sheriff-button Castle* to the *Tower of London*, where he is closely confined.

The Princess *Elizabeth*, who was confined in the same Castle, comes to *London*.

King *Henry* makes his entry into *London*; and causes King *Richard's* three standards taken at *Bosworth*, to be brought into *St. Paul's Church*. Aug. 27.

He assembles his Council, and other principal persons, before whom he renews his promise to marry the Princess *Elizabeth*.

The sweating sickness rages in *London*, and other parts of the Kingdom. Sep. 21.
October.

John de Vere, Earl of *Oxford*, is made Constable of the Tower.

A truce for one year is concluded between *England* and *France*.

King *Henry* is crowned at *Westminster*, and on the same day institutes a guard of fifty Archers, known by the name of Yeomen of the Guard. Oct. 30.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which entails the Crown upon King *Henry*, in these words, *That the inheritance of the Crown should rest, remain, and abide in the King and the Heirs of his body, perpetually so to endure, and in none other.* Nov. 7.

The attainders formerly passed against King *Henry*, whilst Earl of *Richmond*, and his Friends, are reversed; and the late King *Richard* and his Adherents are attainted.

This Parliament granted the King Tunnage; which was 3*s.* on every tun of wine, of Denizens, and 6*s.* of Aliens. Poundage, or one shilling in the pound, of all merchandises imported or exported, except tin, for which Aliens were to pay two shillings. The subsidy of wools and wool-fells, namely 33*s.* and 4*d.* of Denizens, and of Aliens 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* for every sack of wool, and for 240 wool-fells. And for every last of hides, of Denizens 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* and of Aliens 3*l.* 13*s.* and 4*d.* — The Clergy also granted a tenth.

A Proclamation is published, wherein the King offered a pardon to such as submitted by such a day, and took the oaths to him.

King

Ann. C. King Henry borrows 2000*l.* of the City of London, and repays the King of France the Money he had borrowed of him.

John Morton Bishop of Ely, and Richard Fox, are made Privy-Counsellors.

Edward Stafford, son of the late Duke of Buckingham, is restored in blood.

1486. The King raises a great deal of money by forfeitures and *Jan. 17.* confiscations.

Jan. 18. A three years truce is concluded between *England* and *France*

Mar. 10. King Henry celebrates his nuptials with the Princess *Elizabeth*: But his extreme hatred for the whole House of *— 13.* York inspires him with a great coldness for that Prince.

July. He gets a dispensation from the Pope's Legate for his marriage, and afterwards two dispensations from the Pope himself for the same: Together with a Bull, confirming the *Act of Settlement*.

April, &c. Perceiving that the northern Counties were best affected to the House of York, he takes a progress thither, in order to ingratiate himself with the inhabitants by some acts of grace and favour.

While he was at *Lincoln*, he receives information of a Rebellion headed by the Lord *Lovel*, and *Humphrey* and *Thomas Stafford*; but his uncle, *Jasper Tudor Duke of Bedford*, marching against the Rebels, and offering them a pardon, they submit: The Lord *Lovel* escapes into *Flanders*, and *Humphrey Stafford* is executed.

July 3. A three years truce is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*.

— 22. Cardinal *Bourchier*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, dies, and *Reg. 2.* is succeeded by *John Morton Bishop of Ely*.

Sept. 20. The truce between *England* and *Bretagne* is prolonged. *Arthur*, the King's eldest son, is born at *Winchester*.

The people being highly discontented with the King, because he deferred the Queen's Coronation, some malicious persons spread a report, That the King intended to put the Earl of *Warwick* to death: And, That one of *Edward* the fourth's sons was still alive.

Richard Simon, a Priest of *Oxford*, instructs one *Lambert Simnel*, a Baker's son, and makes him pass for *Edward Earl of Warwick*; and then has him conveyed to *Ireland*, where he is proclaimed King of *England*, and Lord of *Ireland*, by the name of *Edward VI*.

King Henry alarmed at this, calls a secret Council; after which

which he confines the Queen Dowager to *Bermonsey*, Mo-
nastery, as if she had been the author of the whole contri-
vance, and seizes her estate.

Moreover, on purpose to undeceive the people, he shows
the Earl of *Warwick* in public about *London*.

And also proclaims a pardon to all that would quit the
Rebels; promises a reward to such as should discover the
secret of the plot; and orders the ports to be guarded.

John de la Pole, Earl of *Lincoln*, who had been declared
by King *Richard III.* presumptive heir of the Crown, open-
ly espouses *Simnel's* interest; and goes over to *Margaret*
Duchess Dowager of Burgundy, who was sister of the late
King *Edward IV.* With her he concert measures how to
dethrone King *Henry*; and she promises him to send into
Ireland 2000 veteran *German* Soldiers, under the command
of *Martin Swart*.

A treaty of commerce is concluded between *England* and *the Low-Countries*. 1487.
Jan. 2.

Richard Fox, Keeper of the Privy-Seal, is made Bishop
of *Exeter*.

King *Henry* taking measures to oppose his enemies, levies
two armies, under the command of the Duke of *Bedford*
and the Earl of *Oxford*, to oppose the descent of the *Flem-
ings* and *Irish*. In the mean time, he takes a progress into
Suffolk and *Norfolk*, and returns to *London* by the way of
Cambridge.

The Earl of *Lincoln*, and Lord *Lovel*, arrive in *Ireland* May.
with the 2000 *Germans*; and, after *Simnel's* Coronation
that was performed at *Dublin*, pass over into *Lancashire*; June.
whence they advance towards *Newark*, with a resolution to
fight; their army consisting of 8000 men.

King *Henry*, who had assembled his forces at *Coventry*,
marches towards *Nottingham*, with a design to intercept the
Rebels.

Both armies meeting at a village called *Stoke*, come there June 16.
to a sharp engagement, where King *Henry* gets the victory,
with the loss of half his first line: But of the Rebels were
slain, the Earl of *Lincoln*, *Martin Swart*, and above 4000
more; most of the *Germans* being killed or wounded.

Lambert Simnel being taken, is made a Turn-spit in the
King's kitchen, and afterwards one of his Faulconers. As
for *Simon the Priest*, he is committed close prisoner, and
heard of no more. The Lord *Lovel* also disappears.

After this victory, King *Henry* marches to *Lincoln*, and June.
then July.

Ann. C. then to *York*, and in his way severely fines those who had held intelligence with the Rebels.

Aug. 5. He procures a commission from the Pope to absolve the Rebels from the penalty of excommunication ; and a Bull to restrain the privileges of sanctuary.

Reg. 3. *Charles VIII*, King of *France*, having formed the design of conquering the Duchy of *Bretagne*, King *Henry*, instead of sending powerful succours to the Duke, to whom he had the greatest obligations, does, out of covetousness, offer only his mediation to the two contending parties, not willing to be at the charge of raising forces.

And yet he makes that a handle to demand a subsidy from the Parliament, for the defence of *Bretagne*. This Parliament, which met *November 9*, grants the King the tenth penny of every man's goods and lands in the Kingdom for the war in *Bretagne*.

Notwithstanding which, King *Henry* puts that money in his coffers, and resumes the way of Negotiation with *France*, whereas he ought to have sent a good body of troops to defend *Bretagne*.

Nov. 25. The Queen is crowned, with the usual solemnity.

— 28. A treaty is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*, and several matches are agreed upon.

King *Henry* sends an Ambassy to the Pope.

1488. The rigorous exacting of the tax granted by the last Parliament occasions an insurrection in *Yorkshire* and *Durham* : The Mutineers murder *Henry Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, President of the North ; and setting Sir *John Egerton* at their head, declare they were marching to *London* to give the King battle, but they are dispersed by *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Surrey*.

The King coming to *York*, causes *John à Chamber*, the chief Incendiary, to be hanged, with 12 of his Accomplices.

June. *James III*, King of *Scotland*, is slain at the battle of *Bannocks-bourn*, and succeeded by his son, *James IV*, who confirms the truce with *England*.

July. A new truce is concluded between *England* and *France*, till *January 17*, 1490.

— 28. The battle of *St. Aubin* is fought, between the *French* and the *Bretons*, wherein the latter are defeated ; the Lord *Widville* being slain, with most of the 400 *English* he had carried over.

Sept. 9. *Francis II*, Duke of *Bretagne*, dies ; whereupon King *Henry* seems to prepare in earnest to assist the young Duchess his

his daughter, and sends Ambassadors to several Courts, as *Ann. C.* if he was forming a league against *France*.

His Ambassadors conclude a treaty at *Redon* with the *1489.* Duchess, whereby he ingages to send into *Bretagne* an aid Feb. 10. of 6000 men.

Those succours arrive accordingly into *Bretagne*, and are *March.* followed by a reinforcement,

A treaty is concluded at *Francfort* between *France* and *Reg. 5.* *Bretagne*, but it is not executed.

Ann, Duchess of *Bretagne*, is married by proxy to *Maximilian*, King of the *Romans*; which marriage is not made public till *March, 1491.*

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein several use- *Jan. 13.* ful statutes are enacted. *February.*

The Duchess of *Bretagne* sends an Ambassador to King *Henry*, to desire him to send her fresh succours.

But instead of treating with her Ambassadors, he sends Bishop *Fox* and others, to *France*, to treat with King *Charles* concerning all his differences with the Duchess of *Bretagne*; and to demand, at the same time, 125,000 crowns, being the arrears of the pension due from *Lewis XI.* to King *Edward IV*, by the treaty of *Pequigny*.

At length he appoints Commissioners to treat with the Duchess's, but it was only with a view to secure the money he had disbursed upon her account.

The *Flemings*, spirited up and assisted by the King of *France*, revolt against the Emperor, take *Ipre* and *Sluys*, and besiege *Dixmude*; but King *Henry* sends 1000 men over to *Flanders*, by whose assistance the *Flemings* and *July 16.* French are totally defeated. — *26.*

The Duchess of *Bretagne*'s Ambassadors enter into fresh *Reg. 6.* engagements with King *Henry*, to reimburse all his charges, &c. upon the hopes of an aid, which he never intended to give.

King *Henry* makes Alliances with *Spain*, *Portugal*, *Den- Septemb.* *mark*, *Maximilian*, King of the *Romans*, the Duke of *October.* *Milan*, &c.

A marriage is concluded between *Arthur*, Prince of *Wales*, and *Catharine*, third daughter of *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, King and Queen of *Spain*.

The King of *France*, uneasy at the forementioned Alli- *Decemb.* ances, sends Ambassadors to *England*, to discover King *Henry*'s intentions.

Henry, in order to frighten King *Charles*, declares to his Ambassadors, that he designed to try to recover *France*, which,

Ann. C. which, of right, belonged to him, though nothing was really further from his thoughts.

The Duchess of *Bretagne* sends an Ambassy to *England*, to desire aid, and to notify at the same time her marriage to the King.

1491. King *Henry* sends Ambassadors to *France* to treat of all his differences with that Crown, particularly concerning a sum of money; and also of the affair between *Charles* and the Duchess of *Bretagne*.

April.
— 17. He foments the troubles in *Scotland*; and bribes the Lord *Bothwel* and Sir *Thomas Tod*, to deliver into his hands *James IV.* King of *Scotland*, and his brother the Duke of *Ros*.

May 23. The King of *France* hearing of the Duchess of *Bretagne*'s marriage with *Maximilian*, resolves to make himself master of the rest of her Dominions, and lays siege to *Rennes*: The Duchess being hard pressed, sends two Ambassies to King *Henry* to desire assistance; but he makes use of that only for a pretence to borrow money of his subjects for a war with *France*: This he carefully collects, but gives no orders for raising forces.

June 3. *Henry*, the King's second son, is born.

The league between King *Henry*, *Ferdinand*, and *Maximilian* is renewed, and they agree to enter *France*, each at the head of an army, in *May* or *June* the next year.

Reg. 7. *Charles VIII.* King of *France* bribes the Duchess of *Bretagne*'s counsellors, who advise her to break off her marriage with *Maximilian*, and take *Charles* for a husband: The Duchess courageously refuses a good while, but is prevailed upon at last, and the marriage is concluded *December 16*. — By this means *Bretagne* came to be a Province of *France*.

Decemb. The English Ambassadors finding themselves amused, return home, and King *Henry* makes great preparations for a war with *France*: As doth also *Maximilian*.

A truce is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*.

1492. King *Henry* assembles a Parliament, to which having communicated his design to carry war into *France*, they grant him a Benevolence.

He sends 2500 men, and twelve ships, to succour the Archduke *Philip*, against the *Gantois* who had revolted.

Feb. 5. An Ambassy arrives from *France*, which lays the first foundations of the subsequent peace; and King *Henry* sends an Ambassy thither to confirm and promote it.

He summons *Maximilian* and *Ferdinand* to enter *France*, pursuant

pursuant to the treaty between them; but they were un- *Ann. C.*
prepared.

Christopher Columbus sails the first time from *Port Palos* in *Aug. 3.*
Andaluzia, with King *Ferdinand's* license, in quest of the *Reg. 8.*
new world.

King *Henry* issues out orders for the levying a greater *August.*
number of forces; and appoints Commissioners to confer—*22.*
with those of *Scotland*; and all only to delay his expedition.

At last embarking at *Dover* with 25,000 foot, and 1600 *OCT. 6.*
horse he arrives at *Calais* the same day.

Before he embarks, he receives a letter from the Marshal
Desquerdes, offering a negotiation of peace; so, hearing that
Maximilian was unprepared to act in concert with him,
and that *Ferdinand King of Spain* had concluded a peace
with *France*, he appoints Ambassadors to treat with *Des-*
querdes.

In the mean time, he lays siege to *Boulogne*.

OCT. 19.

A treaty of peace is signed at *Estaples*, between *England Nov. 3.*
and *France*; whereby King *Charles* engages to pay King
Henry the arrears of a pension granted to *Edward IV.*, at
50,000 livres a year.

The King of *France* assigns pensions to all King *Henry's*
principal Counsellors and Ministers.

King *Henry* returns to *London*.

The Duchess Dowager of *Burgundy* labours to raise King *Dec. 17.*
Henry troubles at home, by setting up *Perkin Warbeck*, to
personate *Richard Duke of York*, second son of King *Ed-*
ward IV. And, after having instructed him, sends him for
a year into *Portugal*, that he might not first appear in the
Low Countries, and so cause her to be suspected.

Upon appearance of war between *England* and *France*,
she orders him to repair to *Ireland*; from whence King
Charles sends for him to *Paris*, and treats him as Duke of
York, but dismisses him, when sure of a peace with *Eng-*
land.

Perkin hereupon retires to the Duchess of *Burgundy*, who
at first feigning not to have seen him before, treats him as
an impostor, but afterwards owns him for her nephew the
Duke of *York*.

News of this being brought to *England*, it is believed by *1493.*
abundance of people, and causes great motions in the King-
dom; which convinces the King of his great danger from
the *Yorkists*.

A treaty of perpetual peace and amity is concluded be- *Mar. 8.*
tween King *Henry* and *Ferdinand* and *Isabella King and*

Ann. C. Queen of Arragon : In this treaty the marriage articles between Prince Arthur and the Princess Catharine are renewed and confirmed.

A Conspiracy is formed against the King, headed by Sir William Stanley Lord Chamberlain, John Ratcliffe Lord Fitz-walter, Sir Robert Clifford, &c. Clifford being sent to Flanders, to concert measures with the Duchess of Burgundy, and Warbeck, sends word, That the Duke of York was alive, and that he knew him perfectly well ; which serves to inflame the Conspirators.

King Henry, in order to undeceive the people, orders Sir James Tyrrel, and Dighton, the murderers of the Duke of York, to be examined, and publishes their depositions.

Moreover, he sends spies into Flanders, whom he causes to be excommunicated every Sunday the better to conceal them ; and having learnt from them the whole story of Perkin Warbeck, makes it public.

August. The Emperor Frederic IV. dies, and is succeeded by his son Maximilian.

— 21. *Reg. 9.* John Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury is made Cardinal of St. Anastasius.

A seven years truce is concluded between England and Scotland till April 30, 1501.

King Henry having received full information of whatever relates to Warbeck, desires the Archduke Philip to deliver him up ; who refusing, Henry breaks off all commerce with him, and banishes the Flemings out of his Dominions ; appointing the mart at Calais. The Archduke banishes also all the English, who were in Flanders.

Sir Robert Clifford being gained by Henry, discovers to him all Warbeck's and the Duchess of Burgundy's secrets, with their correspondents in England. Whereupon John Ratcliff Lord Fitzwalter, and several other persons are apprehended in one day. The Lord Fitzwalter is sent prisoner to Calais ; but Sir Simon Montfort, Sir Robert Ratcliff, and William Daubeney are executed : The rest were pardoned.

1494. *Reg. 10.* King Henry hearing that Warbeck had many Adherents in Ireland, he appoints his second son Henry Lieutenant of Ireland ; giving him for Deputy Sir Edward Poynings, who goes over to take care of that Kingdom, and calling a Parliament, causes Poynings's law to be made.

Nov. 1. Prince Henry is created Duke of York.
Richard Fox is made Bishop of Durham.

King

King *Henry* extorts large sums from his subjects, by *forfeitures* upon penal laws. *Ann. C.*

Sir *William Stanley*, Lord Chamberlain, being accused by 1495. Sir *Robert Clifford* of holding intelligence with *Warbeck*, is *January*. beheaded. This occasions a great terror in *England*; and *Feb. 16.* several libels were published, for which five persons are executed.

This year *Charles VIII.* King of *France* conquers *Naples*, May 2. but loses it again immediately.

Henry, Duke of *York*, is made President of the northern marches, and the Earl of *Surrey* is ordered to levy troops for the defence of the North, against the *Scots*.

Cecily, Duchess of *York*, mother of King *Edward IV.* May 31. and *Richard III.*, dies.

King *Henry* takes a progress in *Lancashire* to visit the *June*. Countess, his mother, at *Lathom*.

In the mean time, *Perkin Warbeck* arrives upon the *July 3.* coast of *Kent*, near *Sandwich*, and lands some of his men; *Reg. 11.* but they being cut off by the inhabitants, he returns to *Flanders*.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein it is enacted, Oct. 13. That no person that shall attend upon the King, for the time being, and do him true service, shall be attainted of High-treason, or forfeit any thing for the same.

And also, That poor persons shall be admitted to sue *in formâ pauperis*.

Mean while, *Perkin Warbeck* lands in *Ireland*, but not finding the inhabitants disposed to favour his designs, he goes to *Scotland*, where the King receives him as Duke of *York*, and gives him in marriage *Catharine Gordon*, daughter of the Earl of *Huntley*.

The great treaty of commerce, called by the *Flemings* 1496. *intercurfus magnus*, is concluded between *England* and the *Feb. 24.* Archduke *Philip*, Governor of the *Low-Countries*.

The King grants a patent to *John Cabott*, to go in quest *Mar. 5.* of new lands, with *English* colours.

James IV., King of *Scotland*, undertakes to place *Warbeck* on the Throne of *England*, and for that purpose enters *Northumberland* at the head of an army, and disperses *Reg. 12.* *Perkin's Proclamation*; but this expedition ends only with the ravaging *Northumberland*, where the *Scots* get a great booty.

Charles VIII., King of *France*, causes the peace, concluded at *Estatles* with *England*, to be confirmed by the *States*.

Ann. C. But, notwithstanding that, King *Henry* enters into the
Septemb. League of *Italy*, against *France*, which League consisted of
 Pope *Alexander VI*, the Emperor *Maximilian*, the King
 and Queen of *Spain*, the Doge of *Venice*, the Duke of
Milan, and King *Henry*.

Dec. 21. *Jasper Tudor*, Duke of *Bedford*, dies, without legitimate
 issue.

1497. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the
Jan. 16. King 120,000*l.* and two fifteenths, for the war with
Scotland.

The rigour used in collecting this subsidy occasions a
 rebellion in *Cornwall*, which was headed by *Michael Joseph*
 and *Thomas Flammock*.

The Rebels march into *Devonshire* and *Somersetshire*; and
 at *Wells*, being headed by *James Tucket*, Lord *Audley*, ad-
 vance to *Winchester*, and into *Kent*, and then come and
 incamp on *Black-Heath*, being 16,000 in number.

June 22. King *Henry* having sent the Earl of *Surrey* into the North
 to oppose the incursions of the *Scots*, attacks and defeats
 the Rebels on *Black-Heath*, 2000 whereof are slain, and
 but 300 of the King's army. The Lord *Audley*, *Flammock*,
 and *Joseph* are executed.

In the mean time, the *Scots* make a second irruption into
England, and lay siege to *Norham Castle*; but the *English*
 oblige them to retire into their own Country, and pursuing
 them there, take the town of *Aton*.

July 18. King *Henry* ratifies the marriage-articles between his
Reg. 13. eldest son *Arthur* and *Catharine of Arragon*. This mar-
 riage had been concluded in 1491, and confirmed Octob. 1,
 1496.

Septemb. Through the *Spanish Ambassador's* mediation, a peace is
 concluded between *England* and *Scotland*, and *Perkin War-
 beck* is sent away by King *James* into *Ireland*.

A marriage is proposed between *James IV*, King of
Scotland, and *Margaret*, eldest daughter of King *Henry*.

The passage to the *East-Indies* round the *Cape of Good-
 Hope*, is discovered.

1498. Charles VIII, King of *France*, dies, and is succeeded by
Reg. 14. Lewis XII.

A new insurrection breaks out in *Cornwall*, and the Rebels
 sending for *Warbeck* out of *Ireland*, set him at their head.

Sept. 7. He lands at *Whitsand-Bay*, and repairs to *Padmin*, after
 having assembled about 3000 men, he publishes a Procla-
 mation, wherein he assumes the name of *Richard IV*,

King

King of England: And then goes and besieges *Exeter*, but *Ann. C.* is repulsed.

King *Henry*, and several of the Nobility who had raised forces, march against *Perkin*, who thereupon flies to *Taunton*, and afterwards takes sanctuary in *Bewly Abbey*, where he is invested by the Lord *D'aubency*. His army, to the number of 6000 men, submits to the King's mercy.

Perkin's wife is seized in *St. Michael's Mount*, and brought to the King, who uses her well.

Henry comes to *Exeter*, and, examining into the origin of the Rebellion, causes some of the Rebels to be executed, and others to be severely fined.

Perkin accepting of a pardon, offered him by the King, voluntarily surrenders, and is brought to Court, where, though he seemed to be at liberty, yet he was very narrowly watched.

He is carried twice on horseback through the City of *London*, that people might have time and opportunity to view him well, and then is confined in the *Tower*.

Soon after, he is privately examined, and his confession published, giving an account of his life and actions.

This year *Shene Palace* was burnt down; but the King Dec. 21. rebuilt it, and gave it the name of *Richmond*.

The peace between *England* and *Scotland* is broke by a quarrel, which happened between some *English* and *Scots*, at *Norham*; but, however, the truce is renewed soon after.

Warbeck escapes out of the *Tower*, and goes into *Kent*, from whence he designed to convey himself out of the Kingdom; but missing his aim, he flies for sanctuary to *Bethlehem Monastery*.

Upon promise of having his life granted him, he submits to the King's mercy, and after having been set two whole days in the stocks, is confined again in the *Tower*.

Wilford, a Shoemaker's son, pretending to be the Earl of *Warwick*, is apprehended, and hanged.

Prince *Arthur*'s marriage with *Catharine*, daughter of *May* 19. *Ferdinand V*, King of *Spain*, is solemnized by proxy.

Perkin Warbeck gains four servants belonging to the Reg. 15. Lieutenant of the *Tower*, with whom he conspires, to kill their master, seize the keys of the *Tower*, and escape with the Earl of *Warwick*, who had been drawn into the plot.

This conspiracy being discovered, *Perkin Warbeck* is condemned, and hanged soon after. — 23.

Edward Plantagenet, Earl of *Warwick*, is also condemned, — 28.

Ann. C. and beheaded for the same. He was the last male-heir of the House of York.

1500. The Spiritual Jurisdiction of the Isles of Jersey, Guernsey, &c. is transferred, by a bull of Pope Alexander VI, from the Bishop of Coutance, to the Bishop of Winchester.

This same Pope makes use of a jubilee he had published, and of an intended crusade against the Turks, to raise money in England.

May 8. King Henry goes to Calais, on account of the plague in England, and has an interview with the Archduke Philip; where overtures are made of cross-marriages between Henry Duke of York, and Margaret, sister of Philip, and between Charles, son of Philip, and Mary, King Henry's second daughter.

June. The King returns to England.

Commissioners are appointed to search after, and fine the Adherents of Michael the Farrier, and Warbeck, in the West of England.

Reg. 16. John Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Rotherham, Archbishop of York, John Alcock, Bishop of Ely, and Founder of Jesus College, and Thomas Langton, Bishop of Winchester, died this year. Langton was succeeded by the famous Richard Fox.

1501. Edmund de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, and nephew of King Edward IV, flies into Flanders, which gives King Henry uneasiness; but he returns, and is pardoned.

The Palace at Shene being finished this year, the King gives it the name of Richmond.

Oz. 2. The Princess Catharine arrives in England, and is soon after married to Arthur, Prince of Wales.

Nov. 14. A contract of marriage between James IV, King of Scotland, and Margaret, eldest daughter of King Henry, is signed.

As also two treaties, the one of perpetual peace, and the other concerning the outrages that might be committed on both sides.

April 2. Arthur, Prince of Wales, dies, at Ludlow Castle, and was buried in the Cathedral Church at Worcester.

Reg. 18. Henry, Duke of York, is created Prince of Wales, and Earl of Chester and Flint.

The Emperor Maximilian concludes a treaty of Commerce, and another of Friendship and Alliance with King Henry.

Dec. 9. The King grants a patent to James Elliot, Thomas Asturft, John

Book XIV. 19. H E N R Y VII.

55

*John Gonzalez, and Francis Fernandez, to go in quest of Ann. C.
unknown Countries.*

Three men, brought from the New World by *Sebastian Cabot*, come to *England*. 1533.

The first stone of King *Henry* the VIIth's Chapel, adjoining to *Westminster Abbey*, was laid. That Chapel cost Jan. 24.
Feb. 11.
14,000 l. building.

Elizabeth, King *Henry*'s Queen, dies in child-bed, and Feb. 16. was buried in *Westminster Abbey*.

Henry Dean, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, dies, and was succeeded by *William Warham*, Bishop of *London*.

A Parliament is held, in which the Lords and Clergy grant the King a subsidy.

The King being now at peace abroad, and without troubles at home, oppresses his subjects several ways, by means of Sir *Richard Empson* and Edmund *Dudley*, in order to heap up money.

The King's oppressions breeding great discontents in the Kingdom, the Earl of *Suffolk* takes hold of that to assert his right to the Crown, as being descended from the House of *York*, by his mother, and retires into *Planders*.

But King *Henry* having discovered his secrets, by the assistance of Sir *Robert Curzon*, causes Sir *William Courtney*, *William de la Pole*, Sir *James Tyrrel*, Sir *John Winabam*, and the rest of his Accomplices, to be apprehended : *Tyrrel* and *Windham* are soon after beheaded.

Prince *Henry* is contracted in marriage to *Catharine* Prin-June 25. cess Dowager of *Wales*, and Pope *Julius II.* grants them a *Reg. 19.* dispensation. Dec. 26.

James IV. King of *Scotland* consummates his marriage Aug. 8. with the Princess *Margaret*.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the 1504. King a subsidy for his eldest daughter's marriage. Jan. 25.

Notwithstanding which, he soon after raises a great deal of money, by way of benevolence.

In this Parliament a new coin was appointed. Reg. 20.

King *Henry* thinks of having *Henry VI.* canonized : But, finding that too chargeable, he only obtains a bull to remove his body from *Chertsey* to *Westminster-Abbey*.

He builds three Houses for *Franciscans*, called Observants, at *Richmond*, *Greenwich*, and *Newark*; and three more for Conventuals, at *Canterbury*, *Newcastle*, and *Southampton*. He also turned the *Savoy* into an Hospital.

King *Henry* sends three trusty persons into *Italy* and 1505. *Spain*, to be informed of the person and condition of the *Reg. 21.* young

Ann. C. young Queen of *Naples*, whom he had projected to marry ; and to enquire into the affairs and designs of *Ferdinand King of Castile* and *Arragon*.

Dec. 30. A treaty of Alliance is concluded between King *Henry* and *George Duke of Saxony*.

1506. The Archduke *Philip*, and his wife *Jane*, Queen of *January*. *Castile*, are driven by a storm (which lasted from *January 11*, to 26) on the coast of *England*, and land at *Weymouth*; where being detained till the King's pleasure was known, they come to the King at *Windsoe*.

The treaty of commerce between *England* and the *Low-Countries* is renewed, to the advantage of the *English*, on which account that treaty was called *Intercursus malus*.

Mar. 20. A marriage is concluded between King *Henry* and *Margaret* sister of the Archduke *Philip*, and widow of the Duke of *Savoy*.

King *Henry* demands the Earl of *Suffolk* of the Archduke *Philip*, who refuses to deliver him up ; but at last complies, upon condition King *Henry* should not put him to death.

— 24. The Earl accordingly comes to *England*, and is conveyed to the *Tower*.

April. 23. *Philip* and his Queen depart from *England* for *Spain*.

Reg. 22. The Archduke *Philip* dies, and is succeeded by his sister *Sept. 25. Margaret* in the Government of the *Low-Countries*.

1507. She makes a provisional treaty of commerce with King *Reg. 23. Henry*.

June 5. A marriage is concluded between *Charles*, Archduke of *Dec. 21. Austria*, and the Princess *Mary* King *Henry*'s third daughter.

Henry being seized in 1506, with the gout, it now turns to a pifcic, which makes him believe his end was near.

Notwithstanding which he permits *Empson* and *Dudley* to continue their exactions, with all imaginable rigour.

They prosecute and condemn, in large fines, Sir *William Capel*, Sir *Thomas Knesworth*, and Sir *Laurence Aylmer*, late Mayors of *London*, for neglect in their offices.

By such oppressive means, the King heaps up 180,000*l.* which he mostly had in secret places at *Richmond*, in his own keeping.

1508. The marriage between the Archduke *Charles* and the *Reg. 24. Princess Mary* is solemnized by proxy.

Dec. 17. The Archduke pawns to King *Henry* a jewel called the rich *Flower-de-Luce* for 50,000 crowns.

1509. The King finding he daily grew worse, grants a general pardon ; discharges all prisoners in and about *London* that lay for fees, or for debts of 40*s.* and under ; and even some that

that lay for 10*l.* or larger sums : And, making his will, *Ann. C.* orders his Heir to make restitution of whatever his Officers and Ministers had unjustly taken from his subjects.

King Henry dies at *Richmond*, in the 53d year of his age, after a Reign of 23 years and eight months :

And was buried at *Westminster* in his new Chapel ; where he rests, under a stately monument, which was finished in 1519, and cost 1000*l.*

The Character of HENRY VII.

If the History of this reign be read with never so little Bacon. attention, it will easily be perceived, that *Henry's views Hall.* were but two. The first was to keep the Crown, acquired by extraordinary good fortune, and perpaps unthought of, before he was invited into *England* by the Duke of *Buckingham*. The other was to accumulate riches. As he never suffered himself to be diverted by other thoughts, his whole application centered upon one single object, namely, upon thoroughly examining every thing that could have any relation to the two ends he had propos'd. Ambition, honour, glory, love, pleasures, and all the other passions which generally disquiet the hearts of Princes, made but little impression upon his. Content with enjoying his Crown, he thought neither of new acquisitions, nor of rendering his name illustrious by great actions. All his thoughts were confined to prevent or defeat the designs of his domestick enemies, or to well fill his coffers. He had a wonderful sagacity, to discover in the affairs that occurred, the side from whence some advantage could be drawn. This is what he plainly shewed in the affair of *Bretagne*, in his pretended wars with *France* and *Scotland*, and even in his domestick troubles, which by his address, turned all to his profit.

Though he was sometimes forced to take arms, never Prince loved peace more than he. As he had no ambition, he saw no advantage for him in war. On the contrary, he considered that all the events of a war, whether foreign or domestick, were against him. The former could at most but procure him some glory and acquisitions abroad, of which he was not very fond ; and by the latter he might be a great loser. Besides, a time of commotions afforded no opportunities to accumulate riches. So laying down this fixed principle of his policy, not to engage in any war without

an absolute necessity, he never swerved from it. It is this that made him unconcernedly behold the loss of *Bretagne*, and without resentment suffer the insults of the King of *Scotland*, because it was not from the war that he intended to reap any advantage, but only from the preparations that were to be made to support it. However, this policy would have been unseasonable when it was attacked by domestick enemies, whose aim was to rob him of his Crown. As his all was then at stake, he chearfully faced the danger, though with all the precautions possible not to run any hazard. He won two battles upon the Rebels, one at *Stoke*, the other at *Black-Heath*. But in both he was very superior in number of troops, and fought against Persons ill armed and unskilled in the art of war. So, it cannot be said what he would have done, had he been opposed with equal forces. It is no less difficult to know, whether it was owing to his courage that he headed his armies in person, or to his distrust of those that served him. However this be, he was always fortunate in his domestick wars, and thereby gained so great a reputation, that all the Princes of *Europe* earnestly courted his Alliance. On the other hand, (says *Rapin*) the esteem Foreigners expressed for him, did not a little contribute to render him formidable to his subjects. I say, formidable, for it is certain, he was never beloved. In a word, his method of governing which approached to arbitrary power, especially towards the end of his Reign, his insatiable avarice, his haughtiness, his pride and his dark and reserved temper, were no proper qualities to win the affections of his people.

He never opened his mind to any man, except perhaps to one or two of his Ministers. As for the rest, he set them to work without their knowing themselves the motives of their own proceedings. The world was so persuaded, he had always some hidden design even in his most indifferent actions, that what was only a pure effect of chance, was often ascribed to his policy.

His spies in foreign Courts gave him an extensive knowledge of all that passed there. On the other hand, his Ambassadors were always charged to inform themselves by all sorts of ways, of the secrets of the Princes to whom they were sent. Very often this was the principal article of their instructions. By this means he made such discoveries as enabled him to convince the foreign ministers, residing at his Court, of his great insight into their Master's affairs. Hence he reaped many considerable advantages, chiefly in that

that the Princes of *Europe* fearing his abilities, were very forward to live in good understanding with him. His strict friendship with *Ferdinand King of Arragon*, a Prince of much the same character, was extremely useful to him. Probably it hindered the Court of *France* from interposing more in the affairs of *England*, and was one of the principal causes of his constant peace with his neighbours.

Instead of increasing the credit of the Nobility, he took all possible care to lessen it. His Council was almost wholly composed of Churchmen and Lawyers, who being devoted to him, and aiming only to please him, never opposed his will. This unlimited compliance of his Council, was the cause of his entirely addicting himself to his natural passion of heaping up money, there being no person about him, that had boldness or conscience enough to give him good advice upon that head. This conduct drew upon him the hatred of the *English*, which at first made him something uneasy, but when he had surmounted all his troubles, he regarded it not. On the contrary, he affected to rule with an absolute power, making of his Council a Court of justice, where all the pleas of the Crown were decided, which had never been seen before.

He has been extremely praised for the good laws made in his Reign, as if he had been the sole Legislator, and his Parliament no ways concerned. Hence perhaps was given him the glorious name of the *Solomon of England*, though he much more resembled that Prince in the heavy yoke he laid on his people. But if these laws are carefully examined, it will doubtless be found that the King's interest was the true motive, though in appearance they seemed to be made for the good of the people. Thus did *William the Conqueror* formerly act, whom our *Henry* resembled in so many things, that they may be very justly compared. In short, *Henry*'s most distinguishing character was, that he lived entirely for himself, considered things only with respect to his own private interest, and regarded not any affairs where that was not concerned. Indeed, such a character is not uncommon among Princes. But he had this in particular, that whereas the interest of other Princes is usually divided into several branches, *Henry*'s was in a manner contained in one single branch, namely, to have always full coffers.

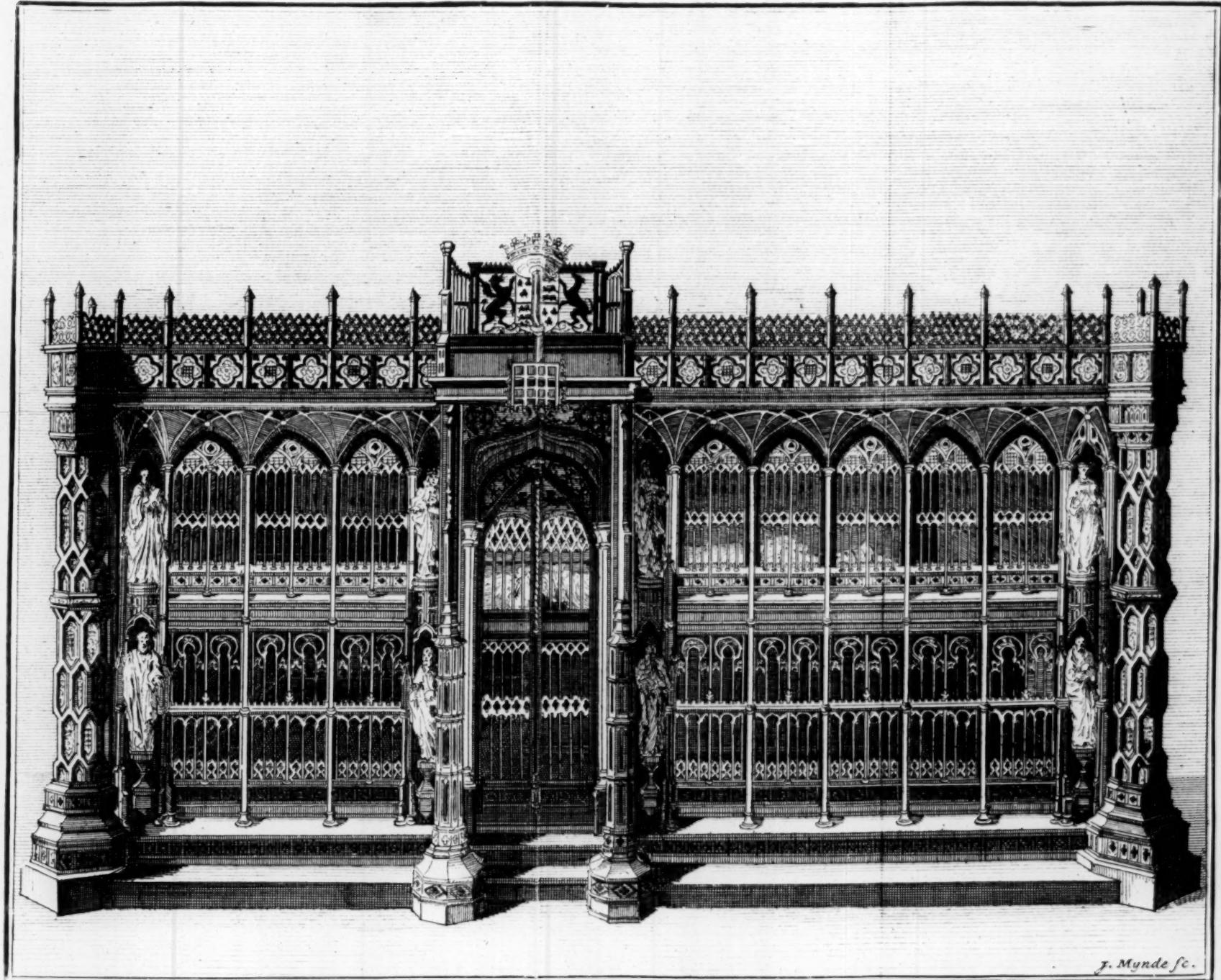
He was extremely suspicious, as are generally those who act by secret ways, because they think all the world like themselves. The House of *York*'s title, and the people's opinion concerning it, filled his mind with fears and sus-

picious, with which he was continually racked. It is true he took great care to conceal his uneasiness. But his conduct and precautions plainly demonstrated, his mind was not as he would have had it thought to be, at rest. This perpetual distrust led him incessantly to seek means to prevent the dangers, in which he was not always successful. Witness the report he caused to be spread that the Duke of York was alive, which had a quite contrary effect to what he expected. His genius was but mean. He saw better near than at a distance, and his wisdom consisted more in extricating himself out of difficulties, than in finding means to avoid them. The chief troubles of his Reign may be said to happen by his fault. However, he acquired, by a long experience, qualities which by nature he had not.

It is not surprizing that a Prince always intent upon preventing the Rebellion of his subjects, and continually employed in heaping up money, should have performed nothing glorious for himself or the Kingdom. Conquerors do not always make the greatest Kings. On the contrary, peace would have been very advantageous to the English, had it rendered them happy. But it was still more fatal to them than war itself, since the King's insatiable avarice incessantly carried him to devise means to accumulate riches, which could be done only at their expence. There are Princes that heap up money solely to disperse it; but *Henry* kept it carefully in his coffers, without any communication. Liberality was a virtue he did not pretend to. If he made any presents, it was only to spies or informers.

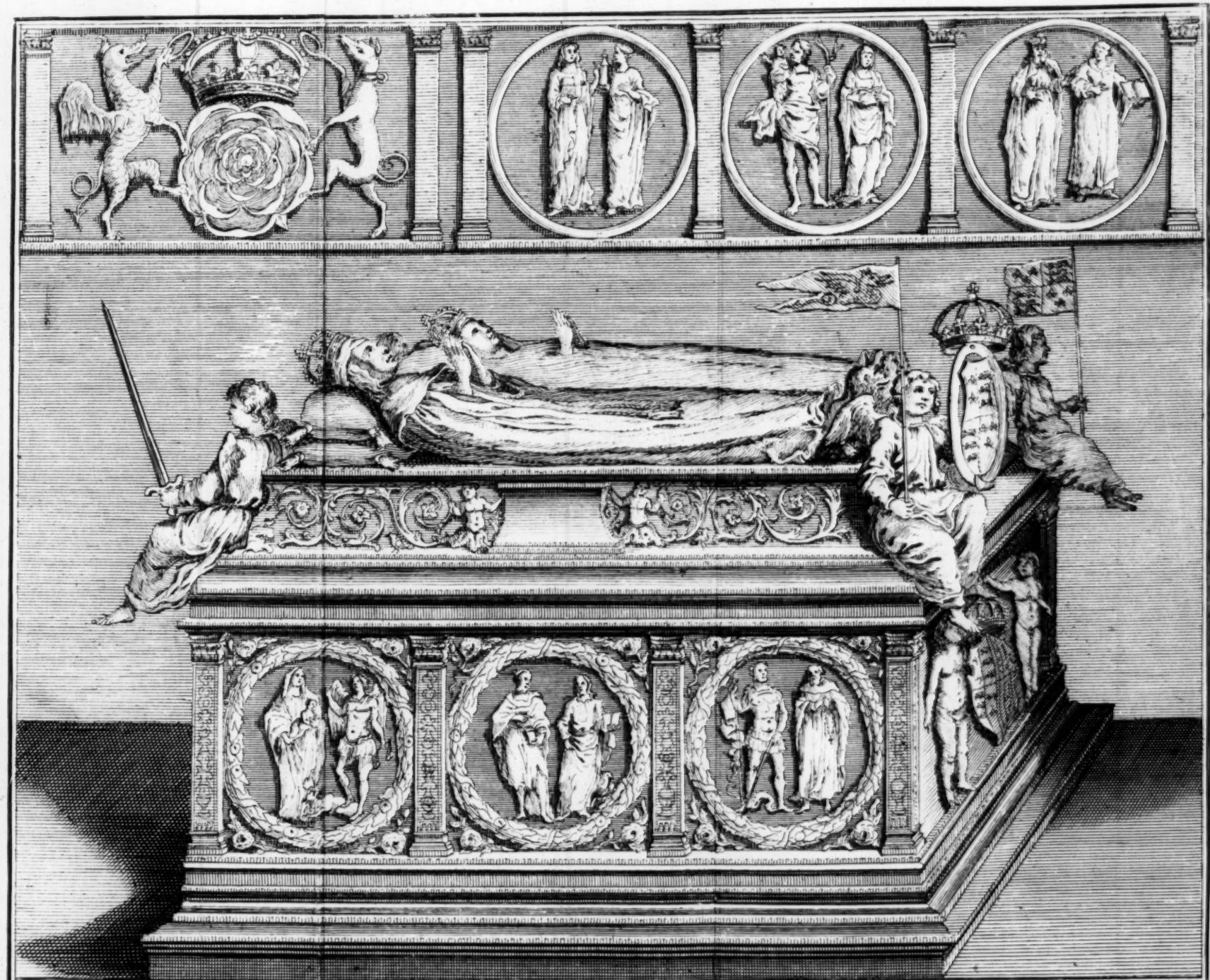
As for his Religion and Morals, nothing certain can be affirmed, by reason of the contrarieties which met in him. He was chaste, temperate, an enemy to open and scandalous vices, constant in the exercises of devotion, and observing strict justice where his interest was not concerned. But on the other hand, his extreme avarice made him commit many injustices, and the fear of losing his Crown, caused him to consider as lawful, all means which could free him from that danger, how unjust soever they might be in other respects. The Earl of *Warwick*'s death will be an everlasting stain to his memory. His making a jest of Religion, in causing a solemn procession to be made on purpose to shew that Prince to the people, and the excommunications he ordered to be pronounced against his own spies, are clear evidences that his Religion was not proof against his interest.

In general, it cannot be denied, this Prince had great abilities.



J. Mynde sc.

The Stately Monument of K. HENRY VII and his QUEEN in his Chappel in Westminster Abbey.



The Monument of K. HENRY VII in Westminster Abbey.

J. Mynde sc.

abilities. But as these abilities centered only in himself, they would have been more valuable in a private person than a great Monarch. Though all his projects were crowned with success, his Reign cannot be said to be happy, either for himself or for *England*. He lived under continual fears and suspicions, and his subjects were always exposed either to domestic troubles or oppression. One thing rendered this Reign remarkable, namely, that by *Henry's* abilities, the civil wars, which had so long afflicted *England*, were at length happily ended. I say happily, since it was very indifferent, with respect to the welfare of the *English*, whether the Kingdom was governed by a Prince of the House of *Lancaster*, or a Prince of the House of *York*.

Henry VII. was of a serious temper, ever thoughtful and intent upon his affairs, without being diverted by his pleasures, to which he was little addicted. He had a book wherein he marked down with his own hand, the qualities and characters of the persons he knew, in order to employ them upon occasion. A Monkey that he kept in his chamber, having one day tore this note-book all to pieces, he appeared grieved as at some very great loss.

He was of stature taller than the common sort. His face was long, thin, and lean, like the rest of his body, but withal very grave, which made people speak to him with fear. He could however be affable when his affairs required it. He was rather studious than learned. What he read in his leisure hours was generally in *French*, though he understood *Latin* too.

By his Queen, *Elizabeth of York*, eldest daughter of King *Edward IV*, *Henry* had, four sons; 1. *Arthur*, born September 20, 1486. He died April 2, 1502. 2. *Henry*, born June 28, 1491, who succeeded him. 3. *Edmund*, born February 21, 1498; he departed this life, in 1499. 4. *Edward*, born February 1500, who died young. He had also four daughters; 1. *Margaret* born November 29, 1489, married, in 1503, to *James IV.* King of *Scotland*. 2. *Elizabeth*, born July 2, 1492; she died September 14, 1495. 3. *Mary*, born in 1498, married *Lewis XII.* King of *France*. 4. *Catharine*, born February 2, 1503, died soon after.

A Description of the Monument of HENRY VII.

His monument is a most magnificent mausoleum, erected in the fine chapel, which he added to Westminster-abbey.

It

It was made by Peter, a Florentine, for one thousand pounds sterling, and is all of wrought copper, which the artist obliged himself to find. It is allowed to be one of the finest pieces of workmanship in the world; as Lord Bacon confirms in his history of this Prince's reign, where he says,

“ That he lieth buried at Westminster, in one of the state-
“ lieft and daintiest monuments of Europe, both for the cha-
“ pel and for the sepulchre; so that he dwelleth more richly
“ dead in the monument of his tomb, than he did alive in
“ Richmond, or any of his palaces.”

On the south side of this tomb, towards the top, and near the King's effigies, is this inscription:

Hic jacet Henricus ejus nominis septimus, Angliae quon-
dam Rex, Edmundi Richmondiæ comitis filius, qui
die xxii. Augusti Rex creatus, statim post apud West-
monasterium die xxx Octobris coronatur, Anno
Dominii 1485. Moritur deinde xxi die Aprilis Anno
ætatis LIII. Regnavit annos XXIIII. Menses VIII minus
uno die.

In English :

Here lies HENRY the seventh of that name, King of England, son of EDMUND Earl of Richmond, who being created King, August 22, was crowned the 30th of October following, in the year of our Lord 1485. He died April 21, in the fifty third year of his age, and reigned twenty three years and eight months, wanting one day.

On the north side of this monument on the left hand of this Prince's effigies, lies that of ELIZABETH his Queen, under which in a square tablature is this epitaph :

Hic jacet Regina ELIZABETHA, EDWARDI quarti
quondam Regis filia, EDWARDI quanti Regis quon-
dam nominati soror, HENRICI septimi olim Regis
conjux, atque HENRICI octavi Regis mater inclyta.
Obiit autem suum diem in turrim Londoniarum,
Die 11. Feb. Anno Domini 1502. 38 Annorum
ætate functa.

In English :

Here lies Queen ELIZABETH, daughter of King ED-
WARD IV, sister of King EDWARD V, wife of
King HENRY VII, and renowned mother of King
HEN-

HENRY VIII. She died Feb. 11. 1502, in the Tower of London, having compleated her thirty eighth year.

On the freeze of this monument beginning on the south side, at the head, are these Latin verses:

Septimus hic situs est Henricus, gloria Regum
Cunctorum, ipsius qui tempestate fuerunt.
Ingenio atque opibus, gestarum & nomine rerum,
Accessere quibus naturae dona benignae:
Frontis honos, facies augusta, heroica forma.
Juncta que ei suavis conjux, per pulchra, pudica,
Et fæcunda fuit: Fælices prole parentes,
Henricum quibus octavum terra Anglia debes.

In English:

Here lies HENRY the seventh, the glory of the Kings of his time, for wisdom, riches, and the fame of his great actions. To which nature had bounteously added her choicest gifts; elevation of aspect, majesty of feature, and dignity of form. He was joined in marriage to a consort equally affectionate, beautiful, chaste and fruitful. Happy parents in their offspring; to whom, England, you owe an HENRY VIII.

And about the Sacellum both within and without, are embossed these verses in old English characters:

Septimus Henricus tumulo requiescit in isto,
Qui Regum splendor, lumen & orbis erat;
Ter vigil, & sapiens, comis virtutis amator,
Egregius forma, strenuus atque potens:
Qui peperit pacem regno, qui bella peregit
Plurima, qui victor semper ab hoste redit;
Qui natus binis conjunctis regibus ambas,
Regibus & cunctis federe junctus erat:
Qui lacrum hoc strupit templum, statuit que sepulchrum
Pro se, poque sua conjugi, prole, domo.
Lutra decem atque annos tres plus compleverat annis,
Nam tribus octenis regia Sceptra culit.
Quindies Domini centenus fluixerat annus,
Curebat nonus, cum venit atra dies.
Septima ter mensis lux tum fulgebat Aprilis,
Cum clausit summum tanta corona diem.
Nulla dedere prius tantum tibi secula regem
Anglia, vix similem posteriora dabunt.

In English :

In this tomb rests HENRY VII, who was the glory of Kings, and the light of the world. A vigilant and wise Prince, a lover of wholesome virtue, egregious for beauty, strength, and resolution. Who restored the kingdom's peace, terminated many wars, and always returned victorious from his enemies. Who married his two daughters to two, and was in alliance with all, Kings. Who founded this holy chapel, and erected this sepulchre for himself, his consort, issue, and family. He lived fifty-three years, and reigned near twenty four. He died April 21. 1509. England, no former ages have given thee so great a King, future will scarce give thee his equal.

An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

It appears, by an Indenture of the 9th of Henry VII, that a pound-weight of gold, of the old standard, was coined into as many, and the same pieces, as in the 5th of Edward IV. (See the Coin-Note at the end of that King's Reign.) The gold Coins of Henry VII. were a Sovereign, Half-Sovereign; Ryal, Half-Ryal, and Quarter-Ryal; Angel, and Half-Angel. His silver money was, Groats, Half-Groffes, or Two Penny Pieces, Pennies, Half-Pence, and Farthings. Those old Pennies that bore divers Spurs, or the Mullet betwixt the Bars of the Cross, were to go only for Half-Pennies. To avoid clipping, for the future, the King caused new Groats and Two-pences to be coined, having a Circle round the outer part; and ordered, that the Gold hereafter to be coined, should have the whole Scripture, or Inscription, about every piece. See Statut. 19 Henry VII. c. 5. He was the first that, after Henry III, added the Number to his Name. He left off the Rose that used to surround the King's Head, and, instead thereof, gives his Head, with a Side-Face, which was used before only on the Coins of William Rufus; but was continued by all his Successors, except on the bad Money of Henry VIII, and best of Edward VI, and likewise crowned with an arched Crown; having this Inscription, HENRIC. VII. D^I. GRA. REX. ANG. Z. FR. leaving out, on the smaller Monies, the Title of France. On the Reverte, instead of the inner Circle, with the place of Courage, and the Peacock, he placed the Lions of France and England, quartered, with

he, the first of our *English* Monarchs, used constantly, but retained the outer Circle and Motto, POSVI DEV. ADIVTORE MEV. except on the small Coins, whereon, sometimes, is the place of Coinage. Of these, the Pennies exhibit the King in his Robes, upon the Throne, with Crown, Sceptre, and Ball: Reverse, the Keys, which discover it to be of the Archbishop's coining. These are the only Pieces



that have not the number, and are inscribed HENRIC. DI. GRA. REX. ANG. In his 20th year, there were some-few Shillings coined, and they (being only forty in a pound of silver) were fair and large Pieces, a full third heavier than ours at this day. They are now choice Rarities in the Cabinets of the Curious. He is likewise said to have coined small Pieces, called *Dandy-Prats*, but of what metal, value, or fashion, is unknown. *Num. Brit. Hist.*

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

Ann. C.

Jasper Tudor, Duke of Bedford.	1485.
Edward Courtney, Earl of Devonshire.	Oct. 27.
Thomas Stanley, Earl of Derby.	Oct. 26.
Edward Hastings, Baron Hastings, restored.	Oct. 27.
Philip de Shaunde, Earl of Bath.	Nov. 22.
Giles d'Aubeny, Baron d'Aubeny.	1486.
John Cheney, Baron Cheney.	Jan. 6.
Thomas Burgh, Baron Burgh.	Mar. 12.
John Welles, Viscount Welles.	1487.
Maurice Berkley, Marquis of Berkley.	Sept. 1.
Henry Tudor, Duke of York, afterwards King.	Sept. 29.
Edmund Tudor, Duke of Somerset.	1489.
	1495.
	June.
	1498.

Ann. C.

1505. *Robert Fitzwalter, Baron Fitzwalter, restored.*
 Nov. 3.
 1506. *Charles Somerset, Baron Herbert of Gower.*
 Nov. 26.
 1507. *William Conyers, Baron Conyers.*

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
HENRY VII.

- John Vere, Earl of Oxford.*
Sir Giles d'Aubenay, afterwards Lord d'Aubenay (or d'Aubigny.)
Thomas Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel.
George Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury.
John Wells, Viscount Wells.
George Stanley, Lord Strange.
Sir Edward Wydevil, Knight Banneret.
John Dynham (or Dinant) Lord Dynham, Lord Treasurer of England.
Maximilian, King of the Romans, afterwards Emperor of Germany.
Sir John Savage, Knight.
Sir William Stanley, Knight, Lord Chamberlain.
Sir John Cheney, Knight Banneret.
Alfonsus, Duke of Calabria and Naples, King of Sicily and Jerusalem.
Arthur, Prince of Wales.
Thomas Grey, Marquis of Dorset.
Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
Henry Bourchier, Earl of Essex.
Sir Charles Somerset, Knight Banneret, afterwards Earl of Worcester, and Lord Herbert.
Robert Villoughby, Lord Brook.
Sir Edward Poynings, Knight.
Sir Gilbert Talbot of Grafton, Knight Banneret.
Sir Richard Poole.
Edward Strafford, Duke of Buckingham.
Henry, Duke of York, afterwards King of England of that name the VIIIth.
Edward Courtney, Earl of Devonshire.
Sir Richard Guilford, Knight Banneret.
Edmund de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk.
Sir Thomas Lovell, Knight Banneret.
Sir Reginald Bray, Knight Banneret.

John

Ann. C.

*John, King of Denmark.**Guido Ubaldo, Duke of Urbino.**Gerald Fitz-Gerald, Earl of Kildare.**Henry Strafford, Lord Strafford, afterwards Earl of Wiltshire.**Richard Grey, Earl of Kent.**Sir Rys ap Thomas, Knight Banneret.**Philip, King of Castile.**Sir Thomas Branden, Knight Banneret.**Charles, Arch-Duke of Austria, Prince of Spain, afterwards Emperor of Germany.**The State of the Church of the fifteenth Century.*

IN the fifteenth century, the ignorance of all orders of men was extreme.

And the Clergy's chief care was to support themselves in that height of grandeur and power they were arrived to.

The learning, then in vogue, was principally School-Divinity, and the knowledge of the Canon-Law.

The English Nation in general passionately wished for a reformation of sundry abuses crept into the Church.

King Henry IV. and V. proceed with great severity against the *Lollards*. But the generality of the Nation were, notwithstanding, great admirers of *John Wycliff's* opinions.

A statute is passed, enacting, That all persons, who purchased or put in execution any bulls to be discharged from the payment of tythes, should incur the penalties contained in the statute of Provisors.

And another, That if any person should accept a provision granted by the Pope, to be exempt from the jurisdiction or obedience of the Bishops, he should be within the danger of the statute of Provisors.

Pope Martin V. writes a severe letter to *Henry Chicheley* Archbishop of Canterbury, commanding him to use his utmost endeavours, that the statute of *Præmunire* might be repealed. He writes also to King Henry VI. and the Parliament to the same purpose.

Pope Nicholas V. demanding an extraordinary subsidy of the Clergy of England, for the use of the Holy See, King Henry VI. orders it not to be paid.

King Edward IV. grants the Clergy a charter, prohibiting the Judges to meddle with criminal matters where the Clergy were concerned.

1400.

1426.

Ann. C. The Popes assume the power of bestowing Archbishoprics, Bishoprics, and other benefices in this Kingdom, by way of provision, which was a great grievance.

Within this century, were held the following Councils; That of *Pisa*, in 1409; that of *Constance*, in 1414; and that of *Basil*, in 1431.

The most considerable English Historians within this period, were:

Thomas de Walsingham; whose *Chronica*, or *Historia Brevis*, reaches from the year 1273, to 1422, and his *Topidigma Neustriæ*, from the irruption of the *Normans* into *France* to the year 1418. He flourished about the year 1440.

John Harding; his two books of Chronicle in English rhyme were printed at *London* in 1543, 8°. They extend from *Brute* to the Reign of King *Edward IV*.

John Roffe, or *Rous*, whose Chronicle was published by *T. Hearne*, in 1716, 8°.

BOOK XV.

*The Reign of King HENRY VIII; containing
the space of 37 years, 9 months.*

20. HENRY VIII.

1509. April 22. KING Henry VIII. succeeds his Father, King *Henry VII*, at the age of 18 years, 10 months, and 6 days.

Reg. 1. Having in his younger years been designed for the Church, he was, for that reason, learned above the usual rate of persons of his high birth;

He was very handsome, and delighted in tournaments, and other bodily exercises, wherein he consumed a great deal of time and money.

April 25. He confirms the pardon granted by his Father before his decease: But, two days before, *Empson* and *Dudley* had been impeached, and committed to the *Tower*.

May 10. The body of King *Henry VII*. is interred in his own magnificent Chapel, adjoining to *Westminster Abbey*:

June 7. King *Henry* espouses *Catharine of Arragon*, his brother's widow; in virtue of the Pope's dispensation, though *William Warham*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, opposed it.

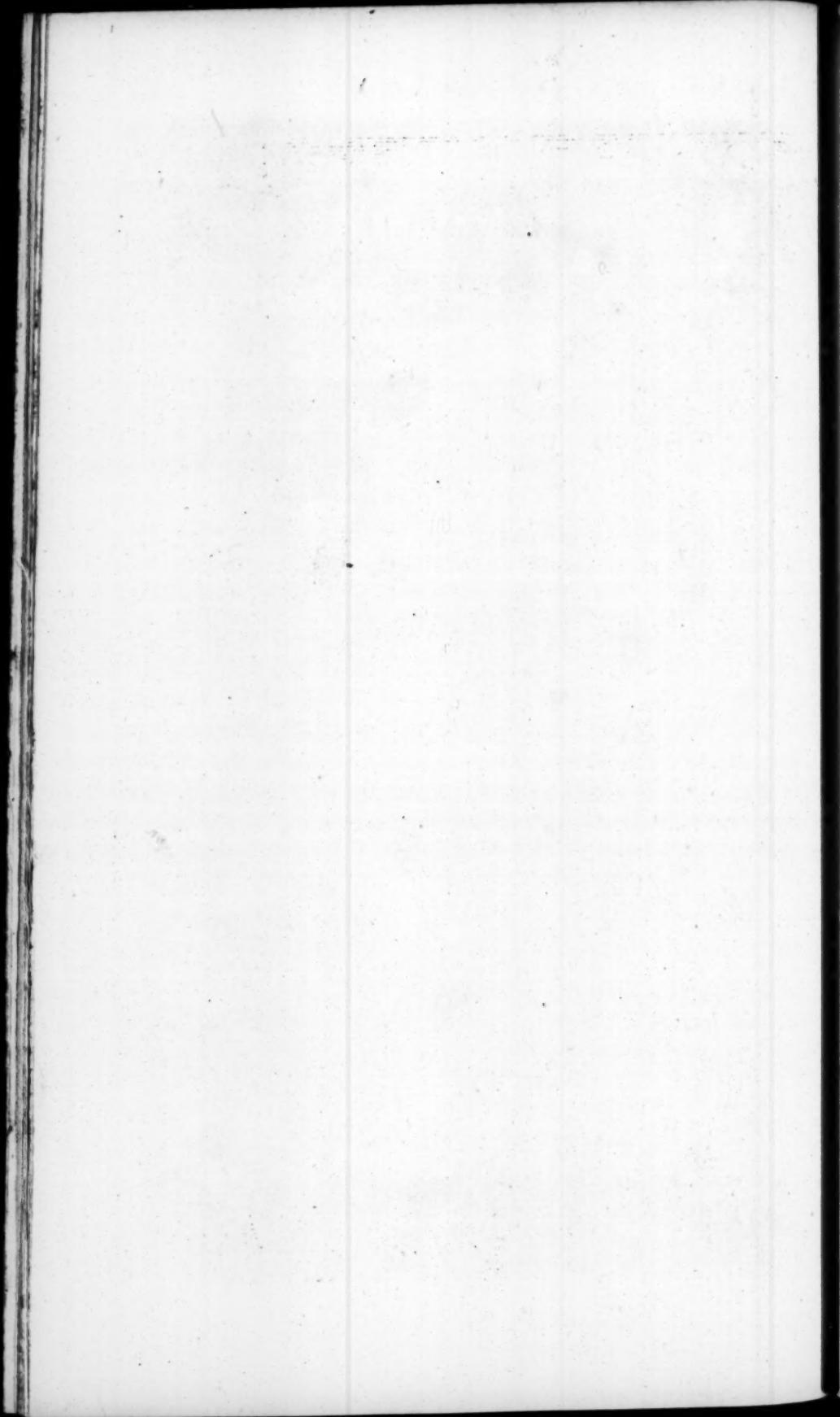
— 24. The King and Queen are crowned.

Margaret,



K. HENRY VIII

Vertue Sculp.



Margaret, Countess of Richmond and Derby, mother of Ann. C. King Henry VII, and Foundress of Christ's and St. John's — 29. Colleges at Cambridge, dies.

Richard Fox, Bishop of Winchester, introduces Thomas Wolsey to Court, with a view to supplant his rival Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey, then Lord-Treasurer.

King Henry confirms the treaties with Scotland and the Emperor.

Christopher Bainbridge, Archbishop of York, is commissioned by the King to act as his Ambassador at Rome.

The Venetians are defeated at the battle of Agnadel, and Pope Julius II. makes a peace with them, not long after.

This year the plague raged in England.

King Henry the Seventh's Executors make restitution of many great sums of money, extorted from several persons by Empson and Dudley.

Edmund Dudley, Esq; being accused of High-treason, is July 16. tried at Guild-Hall, in London, and found guilty.

Sir Richard Empson, being likewise tried for the same, at Oct. 1. Northampton, is condemned.

A Parliament meets at Westminster, wherein Empson and 1510. Dudley are attainted : Jan. 21.

And the benefit of forfeitures, for penal laws, is reduced to the term of three years next preceding.

A new treaty of Alliance is concluded between England Mar. 23. and France.

Pope Julius sends King Henry a consecrated rose. April 10.

Ferdinand, King of Arragon, falls off from the league Reg. 2. of Cambray, and concludes a treaty of Alliance with King May 24. Henry, wherein the latter is over-reached.

Empson and Dudley are beheaded on Tower-Hill. Aug. 17.

The Queen is brought to bed of a Prince, that was named 1511. Henry, but he died the 22d of February following. Jan. 1.

King Ferdinand engages King Henry in the league he was making with the Pope against France :

And obtains of him 1000 archers, under pretence of employing them against the Moors. March 8.

Christopher Bainbridge, Archbishop of York, is made a — 11. Cardinal for his pains, in endeavouring to set King Henry against France.

The Duchess of Savoy, Governess of the Low-Countries, Reg. 3. desires of King Henry an aid of 1500 archers, to be employed against the Duke of Gelders, which are accordingly sent over. July.

Commissioners are appointed to repair all the outrages

F 3 committed

Ann. C. committed between *England* and *Scotland*, since the last peace :

But this good correspondence is soon broken off, by means of one *Andrew Barton*, a *Scottish* subject, who, having committed hostilities in the Narrow Seas, is pursued and taken by two *English* ships ; whereupon the King of *Scotland* sends to demand restitution.

King *Henry* enters into a league with Pope *Julius II*, *Ferdinand*, King of *Arragon*, and the *Venetians*, against *France*.

Nov. 17. Shortly after, he concludes a private league with King *Ferdinand* for the conquest of *Guienne*, which was a foolish project.

1512. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein the King obtains two fifteenths from the Temporality, and two tenths from the Clergy, for the war with *France*.

Feb. 4. At this Parliament *John Dudley*, son and heir of *Edmund Dudley*, lately attainted, is restored in blood.

— 9. The King sends *Silvester*, Bishop of *Worcester*, and Sir *Robert Wingfield*, as his Ambassadors to the Council of *Lateran*.

Reg. 4. He sends also a fleet and an army to join King *Ferdinand* in the pretended conquest of *Guienne* : But *Ferdinand* makes use of them to conquer *Navarre* for himself, contrary to the design of the league.

— 22. *James IV*, King of *Scotland*, concludes a league with *France* against King *Henry*, and assembles an army on purpose to invade *England* ; whereupon King *Henry* raises forces in the northern parts, for the Kingdom's defence.

Nov. 4. He also calls a Parliament, which, meeting on *Nov. 4*, grants him two fifteenths, and four demies, and a poll-tax, being ten marks on every Duke, and the rest in proportion.

Decemb. The *English* fleet and army return from *Spain*, highly dissatisfied with *Ferdinand*'s proceedings.

1513. Pope *Julius II*. dies, and is succeeded by *Leo X*.

Feb. 21. Hostilities against *France* having been commenced, the year foregoing, by making a descent on *Bretagne*, they are renewed, in the beginning of this, by making an unsuccessful attempt upon the *French* fleet in the port of *Brest*, wherein Sir *Edward Howard*, the *English* Admiral, is drowned.

Soon after, the *French*, on their part, land in *Suffex*, and burn a few cottages.

— 5. A league is formed at *Mechlin* between Pope *Leo*, the Emperor *Maximilian*, King *Ferdinand*, and King *Henry* ; whereon

wherein they agree to attack *France*, at once, from several *Ann. C.* quarters ; but the aim of the three former was only to impose upon *Henry*, and make him subservient to their designs.

For, at the same time, *Ferdinand* concludes a one year's truce with *France*, wherein he includes *Henry*, without his knowledge : The Pope does not ratify the treaty in time : And *Maximilian* excuses himself from leading an army into *Burgundy*, according to his engagement ; so that *Henry* is Reg. 5. forced to act alone against *France*.

Notwithstanding, he makes great preparations for passing into *France*, with a numerous army.

But before his going over, he causes *Edmund de la Pole*, — 30. Earl of *Suffolk*, who was then a prisoner in the *Tower*, to be beheaded.

About this time, *Thomas Wolsey* becomes the King's Prime-Minister.

King Henry causes the best part of his army to pass over *May*. to *Calais*.

They go and lay siege to *Terouenne*.

June 22.

The King goes over to *Calais*, with the rest of his army : — 30.

And repairs to the siege before *Terouenne*.

Aug. 4.

The Emperor *Maximilian* comes and serves as a volunteer under him, receiving 100 crowns a day for his pay.

The French are routed at the skirmish of *Guinegaoste*, or — 16. Battle of the Spurs.

Terouenne, despairing of relief, surrenders, and, two days — 22. after, King *Henry* and the Emperor make their entrance in it.

King *Henry* delivers it to the Emperor, who immediately causes the greatest part of it, with the fortifications, to be demolished.

In the mean time, *James IV*, King of *Scotland*, having sent King *Henry* a defiance, enters *England*, and takes *Norham*, and several other places.

He is defeated, and slain, at the battle of *Floddon-field*, Sept. 9. or *Bramstone*, and his body is conveyed to *Shene*, or *Richmond* in *Surrey*.

Henry, having thus made himself master of *Terouenne*, goes and lays siege to *Tournay*, which capitulates, the 22d — 15. of the same month. The King resolves to keep it.

A treaty is signed at *Lille*, between King *Henry*, Mar. 15. *Garet*, daughter of the Emperor *Maximilian*, Duchess Dowager of *Savoy*, and Governess of the *Netherlands*, and the Archduke, *Charles*, afterwards Emperor, by the name of *Charles V*.

- Ann. C.* King *Henry* sets out from *Lille*, and arrives *Oktob.* 24,
— 17. at his Palace at *Richmond*.
King Lewis XII. concludes a peace with Pope *Leo X.*
1514. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, but did nothing remarkable.
Jan. 3.
Feb. 6. *Thomas Wolsey* is nominated Bishop of *Lincoln*; and translated, the 1st of *October* following, to the Archbishopsric of *York*, upon the death of *Christopher Bambridge*. He is also constituted Administrator of the See of *Tournay*.
James V, not quite two years old, is acknowledged King of *Scotland*, and his mother, *Margaret*, sister to King *Henry VIII*, declared Regent whilst she remained a widow: But soon after, she marrying again *Archibald Douglas* Earl of *Angus*, the Scots chuse *John Stewart* Duke of *Albany* Regent.
Reg. 6.
May 19. King *Henry* receives a consecrated sword, and cap of maintenance, sent him by the Pope.
Aug. 7. Three several treaties are concluded between *England* and *France*: 1. One of peace: 2. Another, concerning the marriage of *Lewis XII.* with *Mary*, third sister to King *Henry VIII*: 3. And a third, whereby King *Lewis* engaged to pay King *Henry* a million of crowns yearly.
The Pope and King *Ferdinand* opposed those treaties.
The Princess *Mary* having been pre-engaged to the Archduke *Charles* of *Austria*, she protests against that engagement, before the signing of the second treaty.
Oct. 9. The marriage between her and King *Lewis XII.* is consummated.
Nov. 5. She is crowned Queen of *France*. One of her maids and attendants was Mrs *Anne Boleyn*, afterwards Queen of *England*.
1515. *Lewis*, King of *France*, dies, and is succeeded by *François I.*
Jan. 1.
Feb. 5. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein, among other statutes, one was enacted against exporting unwrought wool out of the Kingdom.
April 5. The Alliance between *England* and *France* is confirmed by a new treaty, in which the *Scots* are included.
Reg. 7. *Mary*, Queen-Dowager of *France*, having been privately married to *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, is publicly married to him.
May 13. *Thomas Wolsey* endeavours to cause King *Henry* to enter into a new league against *France*, out of revenge, because the Administration of the See of *Tournay* was taken from him by the King of *France's* means.

But

But this King, to content him, promises to procure him, *Ann. C.* if possible, a Cardinal's Hat.

Wolsey is accordingly made a Cardinal.

Septemb.

King *Henry* renews the Alliance between *England* and *Spain*, and resolves privately to assist the Emperor and Duke of *Milan* against *France*.

The Parliament meets at *Westminster*: And, in a Synod *Nov. 12.* held about the same time, the Clergy excuse themselves from granting an extraordinary subsidy, demanded by the Pope.

William Warham, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, resigns the *Dec. 22.* Great Seal. It is given to Cardinal *Wolsey*, whose extreme pride gives great offence: The King loads him with favours.

Ferdinand, King of *Arragon*, dies, and is succeeded by *1516.* *Charles*, Archduke of *Austria*. *Ferdinand* left the title of *February*. Catholic to his Successors.

The Princess *Mary*, afterwards Queen of *England*, is — *18.* born.

King *Henry* tries to have the Duke of *Albany* removed from the Regency of *Scotland*, and claims it, as uncle to the young King.

Reg. 8.

But this project, as also that of bringing the young King into *England*, miscarrying, King *Henry* is satisfied with concluding a truce with *Scotland*.

June.

The Emperor pretends to be willing to resign the Empire to King *Henry*, in order to attach him to his interest; but *Henry* desires him to put it off, till the *French* were expelled out of *Italy*.

A defensive league is concluded at *London*, between the *Oct. 29.* Emperor and the Kings of *England* and *Spain*.

The Council of *Lateran* undertakes to reform the Calendar.

The Emperor *Maximilian* concludes a league with the *1517.* Kings of *France* and *Spain*, against the *Turks*.

Pope *Leo X.* sets up a mart for indulgences, under pretence of the war with the *Turks*, but really to enrich himself.

Martin Luther, an *Augustin* Frier, at *Wirtemberg*, preaches against those indulgences, which gives the first rise to the Reformation.

The Pope demands of King *Henry* 200,000 ducats for the pretended war against the Infidels, which the King refused to grant him; but he levies a tenth upon the Clergy.

Maximi-

Ann. C. Maximilian feigns again to be willing to resign the Empire to King Henry.

This year there was a great drought, from the beginning of September, till the middle of May following.

And the sweating-sickness raged also in England.

1518. Negotiations are carried on between King Francis I. and Cardinal *VWolfsey*, about the restoring of *Tournay* to France: And it was accordingly restored the 8th of February following.

Reg. 9. *May.* The Pope sends Cardinal *Campejus* as his Legate à latere into England, to sollicit King Henry to a war against the Turk. Cardinal *VWolfsey* gets himself joined in the Legateship. And

Oct. 2. A league is concluded between England and France against the Turks.

Oct. 14. Four treaties are signed between England and France: By the 1st, the Princess Mary was to be married to the Dauphin, as soon as he was 14 years old. The 2d was about the restitution of *Tournay*, &c.

Dec. 21. The Princess Mary is affianced to the Dauphin.

— 31. Pope Leo ratifies the league entered into by the Emperor and the Kings of France and Spain, against the Turk.

This year the College of Physicians in London was founded.

1519. Maximilian I, Emperor of Germany, dies.

Jan. 12. King Francis I. and Henry VIII. are Competitors for

Reg. 10. the Empire: But Charles V, King of Spain, is chosen.

June 28. Jealousies and disputes arise between Charles and Francis, which occasion afterwards bloody wars. Each of them endeavours to gain King Henry to their interest, through *VWolfsey's* means, whom they caress extremely.

VWolfsey causes *Campejus* to be recalled, and himself appointed sole Legate, with power to visit the Clergy and Monasteries. He erects also the Legate's Court:

Nay, he has the confidence to aspire to the Papacy, through the Emperor's interest, who promises it him.

King Francis makes a private treaty with King Henry, wherein he engages to detain in France the Duke of Albany Regent of Scotland.

This year, Mexico and New Spain were discovered by Hernando Cortes.

1520. The King of France makes an overture to Cardinal *VWolfsey*, about the restoring of Calais, and the other towns in the English pale, for a sum of money. But *VWolfsey* dares not propose the affair to the King his Master.

Reg. 11. *May 26.* The Emperor Charles V. arrives unexpectedly at Dover: King

King *Henry* meets him there, and promises him not to enter into any engagement with the King of *France* to his prejudice. The treaty of commerce between *England* and *Germany* is also now renewed.

Charles embarks for *Flanders*.

— 30.

King *Henry* passes over to *Calais*: And hath an interview with the King of *France*, between *May 31.* *Ardres* and *Guisnes*.

June 4.

A treaty relating to the Princess *Mary* is concluded between those two Princes.

— 24.

— 6.

King *Henry* pays the Emperor a visit at *Graveling*: *July 10.* Which the Emperor returns the next day, at *Calais*.

The Pope grants Cardinal *Wolsey* a pension upon the *Bishopric of Palencia*, and constitutes him perpetual Administrator of the See of *Badajos*, in *Spain*.

Charles V, Emperor of *Germany*, is crowned.

Oct. 21.

The truce between *England* and *Scotland* is prolonged to the 9th of *April* following.

Pope *Leo* excommunicates *Luther*, who appeals again to a Council. Thereupon, the Pope desires the Elector of *Saxony* to put him to death, or send him to *Rome*, but the Elector refuses it.

The Emperor assembles a Diet at *Vormes*, to which *Luther* was summoned, and appears; but refusing to retract his opinions, he is proscribed.

1521.

Apr. 16.

May 8.

Reg. 12.

King *Francis* seizes *Navarre*, but is again soon dispossessed of it. However, he raises the Emperor several enemies in the *Low-Countries*, and *Italy*.

Thereupon *Charles* requires King *Henry* to assist him against the *French*, in pursuance of the league of *London*.

Cardinal *Wolsey*'s Legateship is prolonged for two years: *April.* And he gets the Abbey of *St. Albans* in commendam. He also procures a bull from the Pope, empowering him to make Knights, Count Palatines, &c. legitimate Bastards, give Degrees, &c.

By his procurement, *Edward Stafford*, Duke of *Buckingham*, is committed to the *Tower*, for High-treason:

Apr. 16.

And beheaded.

May. 17.

King *Henry* writes his book *Of the seven Sacraments* against *Luther*: For which the Pope confers on him the title of *Defender of the Faith*.

The Emperor preparing to attack *France* from several quarters, King *Francis* makes a representation of his case to King *Henry*, who does not chuse to act for either, otherwise than as Umpire.

His

Ann. C. His mediation being accepted, a Congress is appointed at
July 20. *Calais*, where Cardinal *Wolsey* goes on the behalf of his
Aug. 4. Master the King of *England*.

But he does not act as an impartial Mediator; for, eight
— 32. days after the opening of the Congress, he goes to *Bruges*,
 where he joins in a league between the Pope, the Emperor,
 and the King of *England*, against *France*. And the Prince of
Mary (though before engaged to the Dauphin) is promised
 to the Emperor.

Septemb. An insignificant treaty is concluded between *England* and
October. *France*.

Oct. 30. The Duke of *Albany* is permitted by the King of *France*
 to return to *Scotland* after a four years absence, and resumes
 the Regency.

Nov. 24. The league between the Pope, Emperor, and King *Henry*,
 is finally agreed upon.

— 27. Cardinal *Wolsey* returns to *England*.

This year, in the wars between the *French* and Imperi-
 alists, musquets were first used.

Dec. 1. Pope *Leo X.* dies; whereupon *Wolsey* (relying upon the
 Emperor's promise) uses his utmost endeavours to succeed

1522. him. But, notwithstanding, *Adrian VI.* is chosen through
Jan. 9. the Emperor's interest, to whom he had been Preceptor.

Feb. 2. The King's title of *Defender of the Faith* is made public.

February. King *Henry* endeavours to force the Duke of *Albany* out
 of *Scotland*, wherein he succeeds at length, and concludes
 a truce with that Kingdom.

March. Then he declares war against *France*: And puts out a
April. strong fleet to sea, to secure the trade.

Reg. 14. For the support of this war, a loan of the tenth part of
 lands, stocks, moveables, and money, is exacted from the
 Laity; and a fourth from the Clergy: Besides 20,000*l.*
 borrowed of the City of *London*. But the *London* Mer-
 chants oppose this tax.

May 26. The Emperor, in his way to *Spain*, arrives at *Dover*,

June 6. and comes to *London*, where he is received with great re-
 spect.

— 19. He is installed, in person, Knight of the Garter, at
Windſor. His brother *Ferdinand*, afterwards Emperor,
 was elected into the same noble Order, the 23d of *April*
 foregoing.

Charles and *Henry* swear to observe the league of *Bruges*:
 And *Henry* lends *Charles* a great sum of money.

— 8. The Earl of *Surrey* is constituted the Emperor's Admiral:

He

II.
at
his
ght
es,
or,
eis
sed
nd
ce
es
y,
e
d
h
t
s
a
n
e
d
h
t
s

Book XV. 20. HENRY VIII.

77

He lands twice in *Bretagne*, burns *Morlaix*, and brings *Ann. C.*
away great booty. *June.*

The Emperor embarks at *Southampton*, in his way to *July*.
Spain. — 6.

The English forces go and join the Emperor's, in the *August.*
Netherlands, but do nothing considerable. *Septemb.*

Rhodes is taken by the *Turks*. *October.*

Cardinal *Wolsey* obtains the Bishopric of *Durham*, vacant *Dec. 25.*
by the death of *T. Ruthal*, and resigns the See of *Bath* and *1523.*
Wells: His Legateship is also prolonged. *Mar. 24.*

A Parliament meets at the *Black-Friars*, which grants *April 15.*
the King a subsidy of 2*s.* in the pound (for four years) from *Reg. 15.*
every man worth 20*l.* a year, and so downwards, in pro-
portion: But those of 50*l.* and upwards, were to pay 3*s.*
in the pound.

The Convocation, which met at the same time, grants
also a subsidy of one half of their annual revenues, payable
in five years.

An act of attainder is passed against the late Duke of
Buckingham, but his son, *Henry Stafford*, is restored in
blood.

Christiern II, King of *Denmark* and *Sweden*, being ex-
pelled his Dominions, arrives in *England*, and the Alliance *June 15.*
between this Kingdom and *Denmark* is renewed.

The English take *Fedworb*, and make frequent incursions
in *Scotland*. King *Henry* endeavours at the same time to
have the Duke of *Albany* removed, and his sister, the Queen
Dowager, made Regent.

To disengage the *Scots* from *France*, he promises to give
his daughter *Mary* in marriage to their young King.

An English army, commanded by the Duke of *Suffolk*, *Aug. 24.*
passes over to *Calais*, and takes several places in *France*.

Charles, Duke of *Bourbon*, Constable of *France*, being *Septemb.*
disgusted, espouses the Emperor's interest, and takes the
command of one of his armies.

Pope *Adrian VI.* dies. Cardinal *Wolsey* endeavours again *Sept. 14.*
to obtain the Papacy; but *Julio de Medici*, who took the
name of *Clement VII*, is chosen, *Nov. 19.*

The Duke of *Albany* lands in *Scotland*, and invades *Eng.* — 21.
land; but a truce is concluded soon after.

King *Henry* causes the subsidy lately granted him, and *October.*
payable in four years, to be paid at once.

Cardinal *Wolsey* forms, this year, the design of founding
Christ-Church College in *Oxford*, and another College at
Ipswich, his native place.

Luther

- Ann. C.* Luther answers King Henry's book, and the Reformation makes a great progres in *Germany*.
1524. Pope Clement VII. confirms King Henry's title of *Defender of the Faith*.
March 5.
- Reg. 16.* The Duke of *Bourbon* swears to acknowledge Henry King of *France*.
- July 2.* He enters *Provence*, and takes several places; King Henry furnishing him with 124,000 crowns a month, till he acted himself in *Picardy*.
- 29. James V, King of *Scotland*, takes the reins of the Government, and the Earls of *Angus*, *Lenox*, and *Argile*, are constituted Regents under him.
- The truce between *England* and *Scotland* is prolonged to the 26th of *January*, 1525.
- Aug. 21.* A bull is granted to Cardinal *Wolsey*, empowering him to visit all the Religious Houses, notwithstanding their immunities.
- Sept. 11.* By another, he is authorized to suppress small Monasteries, to the yearly value of 3000 ducats, and to endow his two Colleges with their revenues.
- King Henry begins to alter his measures, through *Wolsey's* persuasion, and to join with *France* against the Emperor.
- Turkeys, Carps, Hops, Pickarel, and Beer,
 Were first brought into *England*, this year.
1525. King *Francis I.* is defeated before *Pavia*, and taken
Feb. 24. prisoner. He is carried to *Madrid*, and imprisoned in the Castle there.
- March.* There being a treaty of marriage on foot between the King of *Scotland* and the Princess *Mary*, the Emperor, to whom she was promised before, sends to demand her, with her dowry; but is refused.
- Reg. 17.* King Henry being determined to break with the Emperor, and save *France* from certain ruin, sends Ambassadors to *Spain*, to make several extraordinary demands upon the Emperor, which he was pretty sure would not be granted.
- To support the charge of a war with the Emperor, Cardinal *Wolsey* sends Commissions, and appoints Commissioners, in every Shire, to levy the sixth part of every Lay-man's goods, and the fourth of the Clergy's.
- But these being strongly opposed, as illegal, the King disavows them, and demands a benevolence, which occasions an insurrection in *Suffolk*; however, it is soon appeased: But so many complaints were brought against *Wolsey*, that he was very near being disgraced.

Notwith-

Notwithstanding, he finds means to appease the King, *Ann. C.* and makes him a present of his stately Palace at *Hampton-Court*.

Five treaties are signed at *Moore*, between *England* and *France*, including a defensive league between those two Kingdoms. *Aug. 30.*

Peru is discovered by *Francisco Picarro*.

M. Luther sends an apology to King *Henry*, for his disrespectful answer to that King's book.

A treaty is concluded, at *Madrid*, between the Emperor *1526.* and the King of *France*.

King *Francis* is released, but does not perform the treaty *Jan. 14.* *Mar. 10.* of *Madrid*, being dispensed by the Pope : On the contrary, *Reg. 18.* he enters into a league, at *Cognac*, with the Pope, the Duke *May 22.* of *Milan*, and the *Venetians*, against the Emperor.

He ratifies the treaty of *Moore*, as soon as he is at liberty: *Aug. 8.*

And concludes another private treaty with King *Henry*.

The Pope and the *Venetians*, relying on the assistance of *England* and *France*, take the field against the Emperor; but the family of *Colonna* declaring against the Pope, enter *Rome*, sack part of it, and oblige the Pope to shut himself *Sept. 19,* up in the Castle of *St. Angelo*. *20.*

Whereupon the Pope makes a truce with the Emperor, and pretends to go to *Spain*, in order to procure the peace of *Europe*; but, to divert him from that journey, King *Henry* sends him a sum of money.

King *Francis* deceives the Pope and the *Venetians*, as well as the Emperor, who calls him knave and villain.

Lewis II., King of *Hungary*, is defeated at the battle of *Mohatz*, by *Soliman*, Emperor of the *Turks*.

Cardinal *WVolsey* obtains a grant of several small Monasteries, to be suppressed, and the revenues applied to his Colleges.

This year, the New Testament was first published in *English*, by *W. Tyndall*.

The Kings of *England* and *France* do not perform their *1527-* part, as stipulated by the league of *Cognac*; but endeavour to throw the whole burden of the war upon the Pope and the *Venetians*.

Whereupon the Pope concludes a truce with the Viceroy of *Naples*, who was making war upon him; and disbands *Reg. 19.* two armies which he had on foot.

King *Henry* makes a league offensive and defensive with *April 30.* *France*, comprised in three treaties.

The

- Ann. C.* The Duke of *Bourbon* comes before *Rome*, and attacks
May 5. that City; but is slain, in the beginning of the assault.
 — *12.* However, his army continuing the attack, enter *Rome*, which they ravage and plunder for about seven days, in a barbarous and merciless manner.
- The Pope retires to the Castle of *St. Angelo*, where he is kept prisoner.
- During his imprisonment there, King *Henry* began to have uneasy scruples about his marriage with *Catharine of Arragon*; suggested to him by *Gabriel d'Aigremont*, Bishop of *Tarbe*, one of the *French Plenipotentiaries* for the league concluded in *April* this year.
- June 6.* Pope *Clement* capitulates with the Imperial army. King *Henry* being determined to proclaim war against the Emperor, sends to demand of him half of the booty taken at *Pavia*, &c.
- July.* Cardinal *Wolsey* goes and confers with King *Francis* at *Amiens*:
- Aug. 18.* And signs with him three treaties, being supplements or explanations of the foregoing ones.
- Dr. *William Knight*, Secretary of State, is sent to *Rome*, to sue for the King's divorce. The Pope promises him to do what *Henry* desired; but he finds means to delay the performance of his promise, and to gain time.
- Sept. 24.* The Pope and Cardinals, confined in the Castle of *St. Angelo*, write to King *Henry*, and desire his protection and assistance for their release.
- Cardinal *Wolsey* returns to *England* from *Amiens*.
- The Emperor tries to set the Kings of *England* and *France* at variance.
- October.* King *Henry* sends *Francis* the order of the Garter, as *Francis* had sent him before the order of *St. Michael*.
- Novemb.*
- Okt. 31.* A treaty is concluded for the Pope's liberty:
- Dec. 9.* But the night before he was to be released, he escapes in disguise, and goes and shuts himself up in *Orvieto*.
- 1528.* The Kings of *England* and *France* declare war against the Emperor; but the Pope refuses to join with them.
- Jan. 22.*
- Mar. 28.* *Francis* sends the Emperor a challenge, wherein he gives him the lie in form, though dissuaded from it by our King:
- Reg. 20.* In *June* following, the Emperor sends a sharp reply to *Francis's* challenge.
- April.* The declaration of war against the Emperor, occasions a mutiny among the clothiers, who were great losers by the war; but they are made easy, by a truce between *England* and the *Low-Countries*, signed *June 8*, this year.
- May.*

Pope *Clement* grants Cardinal *Wolsey* a Commission to determine the King's divorce; with a bull decretal pronouncing the marriage void; and a dispensation for *Henry* to marry again. *Ann. C.*

But the Commission being null, because dated whilst the Pope was a prisoner, King *Henry* sends *Stephen Gardiner*, *April*, then *Wolsey's* Secretary, and *Edward Fox* to *Rome*, to obtain new bulls. *March.*

The Pope, between the fear of disobliging the Emperor and King *Henry*, knows not how to act.

At length he signs a bull, appointing *Wolsey* judge of — 13. the cause, jointly with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, or any other Prelate.

The King desiring another Legate to be joined in the Commission with *Wolsey*, *Lorenzo Campegio*, Cardinal Bishop of *Salisbury*, is accordingly appointed. *June 6.*

By many artful delays, he does not arrive in *England* till *October*.

In the mean time, the Emperor's Agents at *Rome* raise a fresh obstacle to the divorce, by producing a forged brief of Pope *Julius II.*

Pope *Clement* being then negotiating a treaty with the Emperor, sends orders to *Campegio* to burn a bull decretal he had given him, and to defer the sentence of the divorce as long as possible.

King *Henry* tired with repeated delays, dispatches Sir *Francis Brian* and *Peter Vannes* to *Rome*, to discover the true cause.

They threaten the Pope, That if he did not give King *Henry* the satisfaction he desired, *England* would be lost to him: And send the King word, That nothing was to be expected from the Pope, and the only way was to cause the Legates to give a speedy sentence.

A five years truce between *England* and *Scotland* is Dec. 14. signed.

The name of Protestant was first used this year.

Pope *Clement* falling ill, Cardinal *Wolsey* makes great interest for the Papacy, and is supported by the Kings of *England* and *France*: But *Clement* recovers. *1529.*

He makes use of several devices to put off the affair of the divorce, till he had concluded a peace with the Emperor. And particularly gives King *Henry* hope, that the matter should be decided in *England*, by a sentence of the Legates, which he would himself confirm. He engages also not to revoke the powers given to the Legates. *Reg. 21.*

Ann. C. *VWolfey* obtains the Bishopric of *VVinchester*, vacant by the death of *Richard Fox*.

May 15. The Emperor, *Charles V*, protests, in Queen *Catherine's* name, against whatever should be done in *England*, in the affair of the divorce.

King *Henry* being afraid the proces should be removed to *Rome*, comes to a resolution to have the affair determined before the Legates.

— *31.* For that purpose, he grants them a license to execute the Pope's Commission.

They meet the same day, and adjourn to the 18th of *June*, when the King and Queen are cited to appear.

June. The whole Proces is carried on before them, in about *July.* the space of five weeks.

June 25. The Queen, instead of appearing, appeals to the Pope.

In the mean time, the Emperor's Ministers were pressing the Pope to avocate the cause to *Rome*; and *Henry's*, soliciting him to the contrary.

— *29.* At length, *Clement* having received advice of the conclusion of the treaty between the Emperor and himself, signs the bull of avocation, and, three days after, sends it into *England*.

— *23.* Cardinal *Campegio*, instead of pronouncing the sentence of divorce, at the end of the proces, adjourns the Court to the 1st of *October* following.

Aug. 4. The bull of avocation arrives in *England*, wherein King *Henry* was cited to appear at *Rome*, within 40 days; and censures were denounced against him, if he did not comply.

— *5.* A treaty of peace is signed at *Cambray*, between the Emperor *Charles V.* and King *Francis I.*

Cardinal *VWolfey* not having pushed on the affair of the divorce so warmly as the King could have wished, his Majesty takes thence a prejudice against him, which proved, soon after, the cause of his ruin.

Full of uneasiness at the repeated delays he met with in his divorce, King *Henry* takes a progres in some Counties: During which, *Thomas Cranmer* suggests to some of his attendants the expedient, of procuring in writing the opinions of all the Universities in *Europe*, and of the most eminent Divines and Civilians.

From that time, *Cranmer* is taken into the King's favour, and ordered to follow the Court.

Cardinal *Campegio* returns to *Rome*: Before he imarks, his baggage is searched, for which he complains in vain.

Oct. 9. Cardinal *VWolfey* is indicted upon the statute of 16 *Richard II,*

II, for obtaining bulls from Pope *Clement VII*, by which *Ann. C.* he exercised jurisdiction and authority Legatine, to the deprivation of the King's power established in the Courts of Justice :—And for assuming to himself thereupon the dignity and jurisdiction of *Legatus de latere*.

This being proved, the Court declares, that the Cardinal was out of the King's protection, and his lands and chattels forfeited, and that he might be imprisoned.—28.

The Great Seal is taken from him, and given to Sir—18.
Thomas More.

He is ordered to leave *York-place*, and retires to his house at *Esher* in *Surrey*; and an inventory is taken of his goods, which are seized.

He is condemned in the Star-Chamber, by a Council of the Nobility.

A Parliament meets at the *Black-Friers*, wherein 44 ar. Nov. 3. articles are exhibited against *WWolsey*: When they were sent down to the Commons, the Cardinal's Servant, *Thomas Cromwell*, then a Member of that House, and afterwards Earl of *Essex*, cleared his Master of the Treason, in so handsome and able a manner, that this was one of the principal causes of his future advancement.

Notwithstanding *WWolsey*'s disgrace, the King grants him—17. his protection, and leaves him the Archbischopric of *York*, and the See of *WWinchester*.

He sends him likewise, at two different times, gracious messages, and two rings.

WWolsey's misfortunes throw him into a violent illness; at which the King is so moved, that he sends him several tokens, as doth likewise Mrs. *Ann Boleyn*.

King *Henry* seals a general pardon for him, and sends 1530. Feb. 12. him money, plate, and a great deal of rich furniture.

He restores also to him the Archbischopric of *York*, by Letters Patents: But reserves to himself the See of *Winchester*, and the Abbey of *St. Albans*, allowing the Cardinal out of the former 1000 marks *per annum*, and the use of *Richmond Palace*.

Wolsey used his utmost endeavours to save his two Colleges, but the King takes possession of the lands belonging to them: And orders him to repair to his Diocese of *York*.

The Emperor *Charles V.* receives the Imperial Crown—24. from the Pope's hands, at *Bologna*.

He sets out from thence for *Germany*, in order to take Mar. 22. Reg. 22. measures against the Protestants.

Ann. C. King Francis's two sons, who were hostages in *Spain*,
June 1. are released by the Emperor.

King Henry pursues at *Rome* the business of the Divorce.

Thomas Cranmer writes about it, and goes with the King's Ambassadors to the Pope, who makes him his Penitentiary in *England*.

Most of the Universities in *Europe* being consulted about it, decide in favour of the King. *Oxford* and *Cambridge* make the greatest scruple.

July 13. Several of the Nobility and Gentry write a letter to the Pope, wherein they represent to him, That if he did not annul the King's former marriage, they would take care of themselves, and subtract their obedience from him.

Thereupon, *Clement* proposes, to give the King a dispensation to marry two wives : But *Henry* rejects that proposal, and determines to bring the affair before the Parliament and Convocation, and after gaining their consent, to cause it to be decided in *England*.

Sept. 19. He issues out a Proclamation, forbidding to receive any bull from *Rome*, contrary to the prerogatives of the Crown.

He publishes his reasons for the divorce.

Septemb. Cardinal *Wolfey*, in compliance with the King's orders, retires to his Diocese of *York*, and comes to *Cawood* about the end of *September*.

But having, during his disgrace, written letters to the Pope and other Princes, reflecting on King *Henry* and stirring them to revenge ;

Nov. 4. He is therefore arrested for High-Treason :

And conducted by easy journeys towards *London*. But being seized, by the way, with a dysentery and fever,

— 29. He dies in *Leicester-Abbey*.

And was buried in the Chapel of that Monastery, which is now totally demolished.

The King expresses a great concern for his death.

The Emperor holds this year a Diet at *Augsburg*, wherein he takes measures for destroying the Protestants :

Dec. 22. But they conclude a defensive league, at *Smalcald*, against all who should attack them on account of religion.

1531. The Parliament, which had been prorogued, meets again.

The whole Clergy being fallen into a *Præmunire* for acknowledging and supporting Cardinal *Wolfey*'s legatine authority, an information is, for the same, exhibited in the King's Bench against the Spiritual Lords.

But before their day of appearance, the Convocation a-

grees to present an humble submission in writing to the King, wherein they give him the title of *Protector and supreme Head of the Church and Clergy of England, quantum per Christi legem licet.* — And offer him 100,000*l.* of the Province of *Canterbury* (18,840*l.* being afterwards given by the Province *York*) for a pardon, by Act of Parliament, of all offences touching the *Præmunire.* Which the Clergy accordingly obtain.

The King grants likewise the Laity a pardon for all offences against the statutes of Provisors, Provisions, and *Præmunire*, as he had done to the Clergy.

But the Colleges and Monasteries not being included in the pardons, are forced to compound with the King.

King *Henry* communicates to the Parliament the determinations of the Universities concerning his divorce, and above 100 treatises upon the same subject. *Mar. 30.*

The determinations are published soon after.

The Convocation declares, That the King's marriage *Reg. 23.* was contrary to the law of God.

The King sends some Lords of his Council to the Queen, *May 31.* to ask her, Whether she would, for the quietness of the King's conscience, leave the matter to four Bishops, and four Temporal Lords of this Realm, or abide by her appeal: She chuses the latter.

King *Henry* takes leave of her at *Windfor*, and never sees her more. *July 14.*

Pope *Clement* is at a loss how to act at this juncture, but dissembles his sentiments.

Two Protestants, namely, *Thomas Bilney*, B. L. and *Aug. 19.*
— *Bayfield*, are burnt in *Smithfield*. *Nov. 27.*

King *Henry* sends 50,000 crowns to *Germany*, to assist the Protestant league.

This year, he takes into his hands the Hospital of *St. James*, and builds there a Palace; inclosing also round it a Park, which served both for that Palace and that of *Whitehall*.

The Parliament meets again; and the Commons complain of the oath *Ex Officio*, and other grievances from the Pope and his *Votaries* here. *Jan. 15.*

Pope *Clement* writes a letter to King *Henry*, to persuade him to take Queen *Catharine* again. — *25.*

The King sends Sir *Edward Karne* to *Rome* as his Exculpator. *February,*

In this Parliament it is enacted, That no person in orders, convict of murther, &c. shall make his purgation before

Ann. C. before the Ordinary, without being bound with good securities for his good behaviour :

That feofments of lands to the use of Parish Churches,
Reg. 24. Sc. should be void :

That annates, or first-fruits, should be no longer paid to the Pope.

This Parliament grants the King a fifteenth ; and then is prorogued to the 4th of February following.

May 16. Sir Thomas More, uneasy at the proceedings against the Court of Rome, resigns the Great Seal.

June 4. Thomas Audley, Speaker of the House of Commons, is knighted, and made Keeper of the Great Seal ; and the 26th of January following constituted Lord Chancellor.

July. The Priory of the Holy Trinity, or Christ's Church in London, is suppressed by the King, and their plate and lands given to Sir Thomas Audley ; the Canons being sent to other Priories.

Aug. 23. William Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies ; and the eminent Thomas Cranmer is nominated to succeed him.

Anne Boleyn is created Marchioness of Pembroke : The King gives her 1000*l.* a year, out of the Bishopric of Durham.

Oct. 4. King Henry is cited to appear at Rome, either in person or by proxy, but Sir Edward Karne solemnly protests against the citation : He makes the Pope three offers, which are rejected.

A league having been concluded, in June last, between King Henry and King Francis, they resolve to have an interview between Calais and Boulogne.

Oct. 11. For that purpose Henry goes over to Calais : And hath accordingly an interview with the King of France ; of which the only end was to terrify the Emperor and the Pope.

Francis advises Henry, to marry Anne Boleyn, without staying for the Pope's dispensation.

— 30. The two Kings part, and King Henry returns to England, November 14.

Nov. 15. Pope Clement publishes a brief, in which he exhorts King Henry to take again Queen Catharine, and put away Anne Boleyn.

The Emperor and Pope have an interview at Bologna.

This year, the Pope impowers King Henry, by a bull, to erect six new Bishoprics, and to endow them with the revenues of some Monasteries that were to be suppressed.

King *Henry* marries *Anne Boleyn* privately : Though, according to others, it was on the 14th of November before. 1533.

A Parliament meets again, and passes a statute, forbidding all appeals to the See of *Rome*. Jan. 25. Feb. 4.

Dr. *Thomas Cranmer* is consecrated Archbishop of *Canterbury*, but refuses to take the usual oath to the Pope, without having first made a protestation against it. Mar. 30.

The Convocations of *Canterbury* and *York* deliver it as their opinion, That the Pope had not power to dispense contrary to the laws of God ; and, That the consummation of Prince *Arthur's* marriage was proved.

King *Henry* discovers his second marriage to the King of *France's* Envoy, though he intended to keep it private some time longer, but it is shortly after made public.

Henry writes a treatise upon the incroachments of the Bishops of *Rome*, and the prerogatives of Sovereign Princes.

He tries several times, in vain, to persuade the Queen to consent to the divorce.

At length, being able to prevail neither with her, nor the Pope, and *Anne Boleyn* being with child, he resolves to have the business of the divorce determined by Archbishop *Cranmer*. Accordingly, Reg. 25.

Queen *Catharine* is cited to appear at *Dunstable*; but May 10. she, refusing, is declared contumacious : Whereupon, the Archbishop pronounces her marriage with King *Henry* null : — 23.

And confirms his marriage with *Anne Boleyn*. — 28.

But, *Catharine* not submitting to that sentence, and still referring herself to the Pope, King *Henry* orders, she should be called no more Queen, but only Princess Dowager, and widow of Prince *Arthur*.

Henry notifies his divorce, and new marriage, to the Emperor, and to all the other Sovereigns.

When Pope *Clement* heard of it, he nulled Archbishop *Cranmer's* sentence, and threatened the King with excommunication.

Queen *Anne Boleyn* is crowned. June 1.

Mary, Queen Dowager of *France*, and wife of *Charles* — 24. Brandon, Duke of *Suffolk*, dies, and was buried at *St. Edmundsbury*.

The Princess *Elizabeth*, afterwards Queen, was born. Sept. 7.

Stephen *Gardiner*, Sir John *Wallop*, Sir Francis *Brian*, and Septemb. Edmund *Bonner*, are sent by our King to an interview at *Marseilles*, between the Pope and the King of *France*.

King *Francis* makes the Pope promise, he would give King *Henry* satisfaction, with regard to his divorce.

Ann. C. But all that is marred again, by Bonner's notifying to the Nov. 7. Pope King Henry's and Cranmer's appeals to the next general Council.

John de Bellay, Bishop of Paris, comes to England to make this proposal to King Henry, That the cause should be judged at Cambray, by such as he could have no just exception against.

Henry approving of the proposal, the Bishop goes and carries the news of it to the Pope, who desires to have it under the King's hand, that he approved of that proposal; and, to avoid all delays and evasions, fixes the day for the return of the Courier (with the King's approbation) from England.

The Courier not returning by the time appointed, the Emperor's Agents are so urgent with the Pope, That he declares Henry's marriage with Catharine good and lawful, and requires him to take his wife again, denouncing severe censures against him, in case of disobedience.

Two days after sentence, the Courier comes, but the Pope refuses to revoke what he had done: And thus England came to be released from all dependence upon the See of Rome.

1534. Jan. 15. The Parliament meets, and enacts several statutes against the See of Rome. Particularly,

That the Convocations of the Clergy ought to be assembled only by the King's Writ, and enact no constitutions without the King's assent; and that no appeals should be made to Rome.

That the first-fruits should no longer be paid to the Pope, nor Peter-pence, and Procurations, nor any sums of money for Dispensations.

By another act, the Succession to the Crown is settled upon the issue of Queen Anne Boleyn, and Henry's marriage with the Lady Catharine declared void.

The statute of 2 Henry IV, for imprisoning of Heretics, without their being first presented, or indicted by two lawful witnesses, is also repealed.

Elizabeth Barton, the Holy Maid of Kent, who, under pretence of Revelations, had impugned and slandered the King's divorce, and his second marriage, is attainted, with her Accomplices.

April 20. They are hanged and quartered.

Reg. 26. Commissioners are sent throughout the Kingdom, to administer the oath of Succession.

John Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, and Sir Thomas More, refusing

refusing to take it, in its full latitude, are committed to the *Ann. C.*
Tower.

The Convocation of *York* declare, That the Pope had no more power in *England*, than any other Bishop.

King *Henry* sends *Catharine* notice of the act whereby her marriage was declared void; but she persists in assuming the name of Queen.

A twelve months truce, concluded the last year between *May 11.* *England* and *Scotland*, is now turned into a peace, to last till the death of one of the two Kings.

The Reformation gains ground in *England*, being supported by the Queen, by *Cranmer*, and by *Thomas Cromwell*, who was made, *April 12*, this year, Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, and, *Sept. 21*, Master of the Rolls.

Francis I, King of *France*, seemed also to favour the Reformation.

John Fritb and *Andrew Hewet*, two Protestants, are *July 22.* burned in *Smithfield*.

Pope *Clement VII.* dies;

And was succeeded by Pope *Paul III.*

Sept. 26.

The Parliament meets again; and enacts,

Oct. 12.

That the King (and his Successors) shall be the only supreme Head, in earth, of the Church of *England*.

Nov. 3.

They also grant the King the first-fruits and tenths of all spiritual preferments.

And make a statute, For nomination of Suffragans, and consecration of them.

As also, That no offenders, in any kinds of treasons, shall have the benefit of sanctuary.

This Parliament grants his Majesty a tenth and a fifteenth.

The King issues out a Proclamation, forbidding to give the Bishop of *Rome* the name of Pope, and commanding that name to be razed out of all books.

The Bishops renounce the Pope's authority.

The acts against the Papal power set the whole body of *1535.* the Monks, and other Dependents on the Court of *Rome*, against the King; and he, on his part, entertains the utmost aversion for them.

Reg. 27.

John, Prior of the *Charter-House*, *London*, and other *May 4.* Priors and Ecclesiastics, are executed as Traitors, for denying *June 18.* the King's Supremacy.

John Fisher, Bishop of *Rochester*, just before created a — *22.* Cardinal; and

Sir Thomas More, are also beheaded, for the same. *July 6.*

Pope Paul III. draws up, and signs a bull, wherein he *Aug. 30.* excom-

Ann. C. excommunicates King *Henry*, absolves his subjects from their oath of allegiance, puts the Kingdom under an interdict, &c. But he defers the publication of this bull to a more convenient season.

King *Henry*, thereupon, resolves to join with the Protestants in *Germany*, and keep the Emperor employed there; for which purpose he sends an Ambassador to the league of *Smalcald*.

Moreover, he determines to dissolve the Monasteries: And, in order to that, appoints a general Visitation of them; of which the management was left to *Thomas Cromwell*, by the name of Visitor-General. He is also constituted the King's Vicegerent in all Ecclesiastical matters.

The account of the Visitation is published.

Several Abbots and Priors, terrified by the Visitors, surrender their Houses:

Nov. 13. Of which the first was the Priory of *Langdon* in *Kent*.

Nicholas Shaxton is made Bishop of *Salisbury*, *Hugh Latimer* of *Worcester*, and *John Hilsey* of *Rochester*; being all promoters of the Reformation.

King *Henry* endeavours to persuade his nephew *James King of Scotland* to cast off the Pope; but in vain.

This year, *Wales* was incorporated with, and for ever annexed to *England*:

And brass-cannon were first cast in this Kingdom, by one *John Owen*.

1536. Queen *Catharine of Arragon* dies, and was buried at *Peterburgh*.

Feb. 4. The Parliament meets again: And grants to the King, and his Heirs, all such Monasteries and other Religious Houses, as had not a clear yearly revenue of 200*l.* and above.

The Court of Augmentations of the King's revenue is erected.

King *Henry* negotiates with the league of *Smalcald*, on purpose to engage the Protestants to make a diversion in *Germany*, that the Emperor might not attempt any thing against *England*.

The Convocation petitions the King, That there might be a new Translation of the Bible, to be set up in Churches.

The Parliament is dissolved, after having sat six years; which was longer than any before, since the beginning of the Monarchy.

Reg. 28. King *Henry* falls in love with *Jane Seymour*, daughter of *Sir John Seymour* of *Wolf-Hall* in *Wiltshire*.

George

George Boleyn Viscount Rochford, and Henry Norris, are Ann. C. committed to the Tower, on a charge of adultery with May 2. Queen Anne Boleyn.

The Queen herself is conveyed to the Tower, the same day.

William Brereton, Sir Francis Weston, and Mark Smeton are also imprisoned for the same.

The Queen is tried, and condemned : As was also the Lord Rochford ; and Norris, Smeton, Weston, and Brereton.

— 15.

The five latter are beheaded.

The same day, the Queen is divorced from the King, — 17. and her daughter Elizabeth declared illegitimate.

Queen Anne Boleyn is beheaded, and buried in the Chapel — 19. within the Tower.

The King marries the Lady Jane Seymour.

— 20.

Princess Mary is reconciled to the King her Father.

A new Parliament meets : And, after repealing the former act concerning the succession to the Crown, declaring the issue of the King's two first marriages illegitimate, and disabled from inheriting the Crown ; confirming Anne Boleyn's sentence, &c. They give the King power to declare the succession to the Crown, either by his Letters Patents, under the Great Seal, or by his last Will, signed with his hand.

They likewise enacted, That if any person extolled the Pope's authority, he should incur the penalty of *Præmunire* : That every ecclesiastical and lay officer should be sworn to renounce the Pope, and his authority : And the refusing of such oath was made High-treason.

The Convocation confirms the unlawfulness of the King's marriage with Anne Boleyn.

The Lower House of Convocation sends to the Upper 67 articles, condemning, chiefly, the opinions of the Reformers.

They publish 10 articles devised by the King's Highness, &c. wherein some Popish corruptions are retrenched, and only three Sacraments mentioned.

King Henry being summoned to a Council that was to meet at Mantua, protests against that Council.

Reginald Pole falls out with the King, and publishes his book, *De Unitate Ecclesiastica*.

Thomas Cromwell, Secretary to the King, and Master of the Rolls, is made Lord Privy-Seal.

He is knighted, and constituted Vicar-General over all July 18. the Spirituality, under the King, and sat divers times in the Convocation among the Bishops, as head over them.

Three

Ann. C. Three hundred and seventy-six of the lesser Monasteries
August. are suppressed ; the lands wherewith they were endowed
 being valued at 32,000*l.* and the goods, &c. though sold
 very cheap, amounted to above 100,000*l.*

The King publisheth, in his Vicegerent *Cromwell's* name,
 injunctions to the Clergy ; wherein they are enjoined, to
 teach in all places of Preaching, the King's Supremacy, &c.
 to admonish parents to teach their children the *Pater-noster*,
 the articles of our Faith, and the Ten Commandments, in
 their mother-tongue, &c.

October. These injunctions, together with the suppression of the
 Monasteries, and the levying of a subsidy, occasion an insur-
 rection in *Lincolnshire* : But the Rebels accept of a par-
 don offered them by the King, and disperse.

Dec. 9. A more dangerous insurrection breaks out at the same
 time in *Yorkshire* ; but the Rebels likewise accept of a par-
 don, and return to their homes : However, the chief of
 their leaders, *Robert Aske, Thomas, Lord Darcy*, and the
Lord Hussey, entering into a fresh conspiracy, are after-
 wards treacherously executed, namely, in *June*, the follow-
 ing year.

1537. *James V*, King of *Scotland*, espouscs *Magdalen*, third
Jan. 1. daughter of *Francis I*, King of *France* ; but she dies in the
July following.

Feb. 3. *Thomas Fitz-gerald, Earl of Kildare*, and five of his uncles,
 are drawn and quartered at *London*, for having endeavoured
 to cause a Rebellion in *Ireland*.

A new insurrection breaks out in the North of *England* :
 The Rioters besiege *Carlisle*, but are repulsed, and 75 of
 them hanged.

Some also attempt to seize *Hull*, but are taken, and ex-
 ecuted.

March. The Abbots of *Whalley, Woborne, and Sawley*, and many
 — 10. other Monks and Laymen, are executed in several parts of
 — 13. *England*.

— 29. *April.* The Lords *Darcy* and *Hussey*, above-mentioned, Sir *Ro-*
bert Constable, Sir *Thomas Percy*, Sir *Francis Bigot*, and
Reg. 29. many other persons of quality and fashion, are executed, in
June. divers places, for real, or pretended conspiracies.

King *Henry* considering the Monks as the chief authors
 of the late insurrections, resolves to suppress all the Monas-
 teries ; and for that purpose, appoints a very strict visitation
 of them.

Aug. 26. *Thomas, Lord Cromwell*, is made Knight of the Garter.
 Prince

Prince *Edward*, afterwards King *Edward VI*, is born at *Ann. C.*
Hampton-Court.

Okt. 12

His mother, Queen *Jane*, dies (though, according to — 14.
others, it was *Oktob. 24.*) and was buried at *Windsor*.

The divisions in *Germany*, between the Protestants and
Papists, are fomented by the Emperor.

This year, pipes of lead, for conveyance of water under-
ground, were first invented by *Robert Brock*, one of the
King's Chaplains.

King *Henry* publishes the Report of the last visitation of 1538.
the Monasteries; and some of the most considerable in
England are suppressed; particularly, those of *Abyngdon*,
Berks; *St. Augustin's, Canterbury*; *St. Mary's of Goggeshall*,
of *Stratford Langthorn*, and of *Walden*, in *Essex*, &c.

Dr. *John Forest*, a Frier Observant, is burnt in *Smith-Reg. 30.*
field, for denying the King's Supremacy.

May.

James V, King of *Scotland*, marries *Mary*, sister to the *August.*
Duke of Guise and the *Cardinal of Lorrain*.

The Vicegerent, *Cromwell*, puts out Injunctions in the
King's name, wherein all Incumbents were enjoined to set
up in Churches *English* Bibles (of which a new Translation *Septemb.*
was then just published) and also to instruct the people in
the Principles of Religion, by teaching them the Creed, the
Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments, in *English*; and to keep a register of baptisms, weddings, and burials, &c.

King *Henry* orders St. *Thomas [Becket]* of *Canterbury's*
bones to be dispersed, or burnt, and seizes his rich shrines.

The images of our Lady of *Walsingham*, *Ipswich*, &c.
to which pilgrimages and offerings were wont to be made,
are taken away.

Stephen *Gardiner*, Bishop of *Winchester*, puts the King
upon persecuting the Reformed.

John *Nicolson*, alias *Lambert*, being informed against as *Novemb.*
a Sacramentarian, King *Henry* publicly disputes with him;
but *Lambert* not being convinced by the King's arguments,
is burnt in *Smithfield*.

Cardinal *Pole* having written bitterly against the King, — 3.
several of his friends and relations are committed to the
Tower, for keeping correspondence with him.

The interest of the Reformers declining, at Court, *Cran-*
mer and *Cromwell* project to marry the King with a Protes-
tant, and accordingly cast their eyes upon *Anne*, sister to
the Duke of *Cleves* and Duchess of *Saxony*.

Pope *Paul III.* publishes the bull of excommunication a- *Dec. 17.*
gainst

Ann. C. gainst King *Henry*, which had been drawn and signed ever since the year 1535.

King *Henry* enters into Negotiations with the Protestants in *Germany*, in order to raise the Emperor troubles in his own Dominions ; but these Negotiations come to nothing.

Several Suffragan Bishops are appointed ; and a new oath is required from all religious persons.

— 31.

Some of the Cardinal *Pole*'s friends and relations above-mentioned, namely, *Henry Courtney Earl of Devonshire*, and *Marquis of Exeter*, son of *Catharine*, daughter to King *Edward IV*, and *Henry Pole Lord Montacute*, the Cardinal's brother, are arraigned, and beheaded the 9th of *January* following.

1539.
Jan. 9.

As is also Sir *Edward Neville* ; who had been tried the 3d of *January* with other inferior persons : But these latter were hanged and quartered at *Tyburn*. And all for holding correspondence with Cardinal *Pole*.

Mar. 3.

Sir *Nicholas Carew*, Knight of the Garter, and Master of the King's horse, is also beheaded for the same.

Reg. 31.

Above a hundred of the richest Monasteries are suppressed, or surrendered, within the course of this year.

King *Henr.*, apprehensive of an invasion, visits the coasts of the Kingdom, commands forts and redoubts to be built in several places, fits out a fleet, and orders the militia to be mustered.

April 28.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster* ; which grants the King and his Heirs and Successors, all the Monasteries in *England* and *Wales*, with their whole revenues : Which, as given in, amounted to 152,517 l. 18 s. and 10 d. per ann.

They pass an act, for abolishing of diversity of opinions in certain articles concerning the Christian Religion ; generally called *the six articles*, or *the bloody statute*.

The Author of it was *Stephen Gardiner* : But *Archbishop Cranmer* argues much against it before it passed ; notwithstanding which, the King assures him of his constant kindness, and orders him to set down his reasons in writing.

An extraordinary act also is passed, importing, That the King, with the advice of his Council, might set forth Proclamations, which should be observed as though they were made by act of Parliament.

Margaret Countess of Salisbury mother to Cardinal *Pole*, the Cardinal himself, the Marchioness of *Exeter*, and others are attainted, unheard, by Parliament.

July 1.

N. Shaxton Bishop of Salisbury, and *H. Latimer Bishop of*

of Worcester, resign their Sees on account of the bloody *Ann. C.* statute.

A strict inquiry is made in every County after those who rejected that statute : Many are imprisoned ; but the King pardons them all.

Edmund Bonner is translated from the See of Hereford to October. that of London, vacant by the death of Dr. John Stokeley.

King Henry endeavours to join with the Smalcaldic league, but *Gardiner* diverts him from it.

Bibles are set up in Churches, and the people are also allowed to have them in their houses.

Hugh Feringdon, Abbot of Reading, *Richard Whiting*, Novemb. Abbot of Glastonbury, and *John Beche*, Abbot of St. John's Colchester, are hanged and quartered for denying the King's Supremacy, or rather, for refusing to surrender up their Monasteries.

The King's guard, of 50 Gentlemen Pensioners, is re-Dec. 25. stored again.

Anne, of Cleves, arrives in England ; but the King does — 27. not like her.

However, for some political reason, he marries her ; 1540. but is said not to consummate his marriage.

Thomas Cromwell is created Earl of Essex, and made Great Jan. 6. Chamberlain of England. April 18.

A Parliament meeting at the same time, grants the King April 18. four fifteenths, and a subsidy of 2*s.* of lands, and 1*s.* of according goods, towards the charge of bulwarks ; the Convocation to others grants him, moreover, a subsidy of 4*s.* in the pound. 12 or 28.

In this Parliament was an act made, for the true payment Reg. 32. of tithes and offerings.

And the Court of wards, and of first-fruits and tenths, were appointed by statute.

The two Hospitals of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, in England and Ireland, are suppressed, and their possessions granted to the King.

Commissioners are appointed to examine the controverted points of Religion ; and all the decrees and ordinances they should make, are confirmed by Parliament, provided they were not repugnant to the laws of the Realm.

King Henry not liking his Queen, *Anne* of Cleves, he is July 6, divorced from her, with her own consent. &c.

She is ordered to be thenceforth called only the King's adopted sister.

Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, being disgraced by the July 9. Duke of Norfolk's and *Gardiner*'s procurement, is committed to the Tower. I He

- Ann. C.* He is attainted of heresy and treason, without being admitted to make his defence.
- 19. — 28. He is beheaded.
- 30. Three Protestants, *viz.* Dr. Robert Barnes, &c. are burnt in Smithfield ; and three Papists are executed in the same place, about the Supremacy ; as are six more, a few days after.
- Aug. 6. — 3. King Henry takes to his fifth wife the Lady Catharine Howard, daughter of Sir Edmund Howard, brother to the Duke of Norfolk.
- The Papists, encouraged by this match, endeavour to ruin Archbishop Cranmer.
- A necessary doctrine and erudition for any Christian man is published, and the Missals are reformed.
- Decemb. King Francis I. orders a fortress and a bridge to be built at Ardres, near Calais, which occasions a quarrel between England and France.
- Several Monasteries are suppressed in the course of this year : The number of Monasteries, first and last suppressed in England and Wales, were 645 ; together with 96 Colleges, 2374 Chantries and Free-Chapels, and 110 Hospitals.
- 17. The Abbey of Westminster is converted into a Bishop's See.
1541. The Interim is granted to the Protestants in Germany.
- April. An insurrection breaks out in Yorkshire, which is soon quelled.
- Reg. 33. Margaret, Countess-Dowager of Salisbury, who had been attainted two years before, is executed : She was daughter of George, Duke of Clarence, and the last of the Plantagenet Family.
- King Henry appoints an interview with his nephew, the King of Scotland, in order to engage him into his interest, and to persuade him to renounce the Pope.
- He goes to York for that purpose, and in his way thither receives presents and submissions from the places he passed through. But his nephew, King James, does not come ; at which Henry is highly provoked.
- Aug. 4. The Bishoprics of Chester, Gloucester, and Peterborough Sept 3, 4. are founded.
- Novemb. Queen Catharine's leudness is discovered to the King by Archbishop Cranmer.
- She is examined, and confesses her guilt.
1542. The affair being brought before the Parliament, which Jan. 21. met January 16, the Queen and her Accomplices (particularly Elizabeth [Howard] widow and relief of Thomas Boleyn,

Boleyn, Viscount *Rochford*, who had been the cause of that *Ann. C.* Lord's, and Queen *Anne Boleyn's*, death) are attainted.

Queen *Catharine Howard*, and the Lady *Rochford*, are Feb. 13. beheaded.

Ireland is erected into a Kingdom : Our Kings, before Jan. 23. that time, were called only Lords of *Ireland*.

All the local statutes of Colleges and Hospitals are annulled by Parliament, in order to make way for their dissolution.

The King grants *Antony Marlar* a privilege, to print the *Mar. 12.* Bible in *English*.
Reg. 34.

He takes a loan of money of all such as were valued at 50*l.* in the subsidy-book.

Pope *Paul III.* calls a Council at *Trent*, for the No- *May 22.* vember following.

King *Henry* being determined to enter into a war with *Scotland*, endeavours to hinder the King of *France* by some treaty from assisting the King of *Scots*.

He revives the old pretensions of the Kings of *England* to the Sovereignty of *Scotland*, and publishes a declaration upon that head.

The Duke of *Norfolk* enters *Scotland* at the head of the *Oct. 21.* *English* army, and burns several towns and villages : They stay there till about the middle of *November*, and then return to *Berwick*.

Immediately after, 15,000 *Scots* make an irruption into *England*; but they are totally defeated, and above 800 of them taken prisoners.

Nov. 25.

The Princess *Mary*, afterwards Queen of *Scots*, is born. *Dec. 7.*

Her father, King *James V*, dies for grief, at the late — 14. defeat of his army.

King *Henry* forms the project of uniting *Scotland* to *England*, by marrying his son *Edward* to the new Queen of *Scotland*.

The Parliament meets again at *Westminster*, and grants 1543. the King a very large subsidy, for his intended war with *Jan. - 2.* *France*. The Clergy also grant him a subsidy of 6*s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years.

An act is passed, whereby people were allowed to keep in their houses Bibles that were not of *Tindal's* translation : And spiritual persons were not to be burnt for Heresy till after the third offence : Nor was the punishment of the Laity, for the same, to be any more than perpetual imprisonment.

- Ann. C.* King Henry concludes a league with the Emperor *Charles*
- Feb. 11.* V. against *France*. Cardinal Beaton forges a will for the late King of *Scotland*, wherein he appointed himself Regent during the Queen's minority.
- March.* But notwithstanding that, *James Hamilton Earl of Arran* is declared Regent.
- Re. 35.* King Henry sends an Ambassador to *Scotland*, to propose a marriage between their young Queen and his son *Prince Edward*.
- July 1.* A treaty is accordingly concluded for that purpose, and another for a firm peace between the two Kingdoms : But Cardinal Beaton renders these measures ineffectual.
- He, and the Queen-Dowager, send for *Matthew Stewart*, Earl of *Lenox*, out of *France*, in order to oppose him to the Regent. But, to countermine their designs, the Regent throws himself into their arms, and abjures the Protestant Religion.
- Thereupon, the Queen-Dowager and the Cardinal try to send back the Earl of *Lenox* to *France*; he takes up arms, but being soon after forced to make peace, the Cardinal obtains all the power under the Regent's name.
- 12. King Henry takes to his sixth wife *Catharine Parr*, daughter of Sir *Thomas Parr* of *Kendal*, and widow of *John Neville Lord Latimer*.
- 28. Three Protestants are burnt at *Windſor*.
- Aug. 3.* War is proclaimed between *England* and *France*, and the Emperor.
- 21. *Mary Queen of Scots* is crowned.
- A plot is formed against *Cranmer* by the enemies of the Reformation, in order to ruin him, but the King protects him, and shews him great marks of his esteem.
- This year, mortar-pieces and bombs were first made in *England*, by *Peter Baud*, *Ralph Hoge*, and *Peter van Colen*.
1544. The Parliament meets again at *Westminster* (being the *Jan. 14.* third Session) and settles the Succession to the Crown, first, on Prince *Edward* and his issue; and in failure of that, upon the Lady *Mary*, and the Lady *Elizabeth*, and the respective heirs of their bodies, lawfully begotten. But in case they should all die without issue, the King was empowered to dispose of the Crown by his Letters Patents under the Great Seal, or by his last Will made in writing, and signed with his hand.
- By another act, the Lords and Commons remitted to the King

King all such sums of money as he had borrowed of them *Ann. C.*
since January 1, anno 33, of his Reign.

King Henry sends a great army, commanded by *Edward March.*
Seymour Earl of *Hertford*, and a numerous fleet under the
command of *John Dudley* Lord Viscount *Lisle*, to invade
Scotland.

Thomas Lord Audley dies, and is succeeded in his office of *Reg. 36.*
Lord Chancellor by *Thomas Lord Wriothesley*. *April 30.*

The English army landing in *Scotland*, take *Leith*, plunder *May*,
and burn *Edinburgh*, and many other Towns and Villages.

The Earl of *Lenox* joins with the English, and concludes — 17.
a treaty with King *Henry*.

The English return to *Berwick*: But some of them, — 18.
shortly after, invading *Scotland* again, take *Fedburgh*, *Kelsoe*,
and *Coldingham*.

The Diet of *Spire* decrees, That the Protestants in *Germany*
should not be disturbed in the exercise of their Religion.

The Litany is put out in English, and ordered by the *June.*
King to be generally used in every Church.

According to the treaty with the Emperor, King *Henry*
sends an army to *Calais*, commanded by the Duke of *Nor-*
folk; who, with one of the Emperor's Generals, goes and
lays siege to *Monstreuil*.

Henry himself goes over with the rest of his army, and *July 14.*
finding the Emperor did not act sincerely with him, he lays
siege to *Boulogne*: *— 26.*

Which capitulates, after a long siege.

Sept. 14.

In the mean time, the Emperor *Charles V.* concludes a *Sept. 18.*
separate peace with *France*, without including King *Henry*,
or even acquainting him with it.

He returns to *England*, and most of his troops come back — 30.
to *Calais*.

The French attempt to surprize *Boulogne*, but are disapp- *October.*
pointed.

King *Henry* fortifies *Gravesend*, *Tilbury*, *Dover*, *Port-*
smouth, and other maritime places.

Most part of the Colleges, Collegiate-Churches, and
Hospitals, are surrendered to him.

The King exacts a benevolence of all his subjects, for
his wars in *France* and *Scotland*.

The French make a second attempt upon *Boulogne*, and *1545.*
are repulsed. *Jan. 26.*

A body of English make an irruption into *Scotland*, but

Ann. C. their Commander, *Ralph Lord Eure*, and many others are
Reg. 37. slain.

France makes great preparations against England.
July 19, The French land on the coast of *Suffex*, and in the Isle
&c. of *Wight*, but are soon beaten back. They have likewise
a short engagement with the English fleet, without much
loss on either side.

A body of French is sent into *Scotland*, in order to make
a diversion on that side into *England*: They do nothing
considerable; and the Earl of *Hertford*, entering *Scotland*
with 12,000 men, ravages several places.

Aug. 24. *Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolk*, a friend to the Reformers,
dies.

All the designs of the French against *Boulogne*, *Guisnes*,
and *Calais* prove abortive.

Sept. 9. The English land at *Treport* in *Normandy*, and burn that
town, and some adjacent villages.

King *Francis* endeavours to make peace with *England*,
through the mediation of the Princes of the *Smalcaldic*
league.

Archbishop *Cranmer* procures some vacant Bishoprics for
his friends, and obtains a few alterations advantageous to Religion.

Nov. 23. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the
King a subsidy of 4*s.* in the pound of lands, and 2*s.* and
8*d.* of goods, to be paid in two years. The Clergy con-
tinue also for two years the subsidy of 6*s.* in the pound,
granted before.

This Parliament grants to the King the Colleges, Chan-
tries, Hospitals, Guilds, &c. in the Kingdom, with their
lands and revenues.

Dec. 13. The Council of *Trent* is opened.

1546. The Emperor *Charles V.* having entered into a league
with the Pope, and preparing to attack the Protestants in
Germany, they apply to King *Henry* for assistance, which
they do not obtain.

Reg. 38. A persecution is carried on in *Scotland* against the Re-
formed, by Cardinal *Beaton* and the Earl of *Arran*, and se-
veral are martyred, particularly *George Wishart*; but the
Cardinal is soon after murdered.

King *Henry* and King *Francis*, both out of fear for the
Emperor, are inclined to a peace; accordingly, a peace is
concluded between *England* and *France*.

King *Francis* pretends to be disposed to promote the Re-
formation; and his Ambassador agrees with King *Henry*,
That

Book XV. 20. HENRY VIII.

101

That, both in *England* and *France*, the Mass should be *An. C.* changed into a Communion. *Cranmer* is ordered to draw a form of it, but this comes to nothing.

Henry, who was now grown monstrously corpulent and troubled with a sore leg, grows excessively foward and cruel, and renewes the persecution against the Protestants. Accordingly,

N. Shaxton, late Bishop of *Salisbury*, who had been long a prisoner, is condemned to the flames: But he abjures, *July 9.* — 16. and is pardoned.

Mrs. Anne Ayscough, and four other Protestants, are burnt in *Smithfield*.

Designs are also formed against Archbishop *Cranmer*: However, the King gives him a sensible mark of his affection, and severely rebukes his enemies and accusers.

Nay, *Gardiner*, and some others, contrive the ruin of the Queen, and draw up articles against her, but she escapes.

Immediately after, the fickle King begins to hate the enemies of the Reformation; particularly Bishop *Gardiner*, whom he excludes out of his Council, &c.

The two Universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge* are pre-*October*. served, notwithstanding the general surrender of all the Colleges.

King *Henry* founds a new *Christ's-Church* College in *Nov. 4.* *Oxford*, and removes the See thither from *Osney*.

He also founds *Trinity College* in *Cambridge*, the 19th of *December* following.

Thomas Howard Duke of *Norfolk*, and his son *Henry Dec. 12.* Earl of *Surrey*, are committed to the *Tower* for High-treason.

King *Henry* makes his will. — 30.

He gives to the City of *London* St. *Bartholomew's Hospital* in *Smithfield*, the late dissolved Monastery of the *Jan. 3.* *Grey-friars*, with the Parish-Churches of *St. Nicholas* in the *Shambles*, and *St. Ewine* in *Newgate-market* (now *Christ-Church-Parish*) for the relief of the poor: And grants, for the support of this foundation, a yearly revenue of 500 marks for ever. — 13.

Henry Earl of Surrey is tried at *Guildhall*, and condemned. — 10.

He is beheaded. — 18—24.

His father, *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*, is attainted by the Parliament, which met at that time.

Archbishop *Cranmer* was all the while at *Croydon*.

A warrant is signed, by Commissioners appointed under

the Great Seal, for the beheading of the Duke on *January 29*. But the King's death was his safety.

The Character of HENRY VIII.

A little before the King's death, his illness continually increased, and no man dared to warn him of his approaching end. Every one was afraid that a Prince who was always approached with trembling, would look upon this charitable warning as a crime, and punish it according to an Act of Parliament, by which those who should dare to foretell the King's death, were adjudged traitors. But at last Sir *Anthony Denny*, one of his Privy-Counsellors, had the courage and charity to warn him that he had but a few hours to live. The King thanked him, and expressed his great grief and horror for all the sins of his past life. Whereupon, *Denny* asked him if any Clergyman should be sent for, and he said, if any, it should be the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. But *Cranmer*, being then at *Croydon*, could not come till the King was speechless. He had but just time to desire him to give some sign of his dying in the faith of Christ. The King squeezed his hand, and presently after expired in the night between the 28th and 29th of *January 1546-7*, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, having reigned thirty-seven years and nine months. His death was kept private three days. Probably the Council took time to consult whether the Duke of *Norfolk* should be executed. At last, after three days, the Lord Chancellor signified to both Houses, that the King was dead and the Parliament thereby dissolved.

The reader may see *Henry's* character drawn at length by the Lord *Herbert*. But as his life and actions sufficiently make him known, I shall only add what Bishop *Burnet* says of him at the end of his first volume of the History of the Reformation. King *Henry VIII.* is rather to be reckoned among the great than the good Princes. He exercised so much severity on men of both persuasions, that the writers of both sides have laid open his faults, and taxed his cruelty. But as neither of them were much obliged to him, so none have taken so much care to set forth his good qualities, as his enemies have done to enlarge on his vices. I do not deny that he is to be numbered among the ill Princes, yet I cannot rank him with the worst.—King *Henry's* body lies buried at *Windſor*, under a most stately tomb, begun in copper and gilt, but not finished.

I. By Queen *Catharine of Arragon* he had, 1. two sons, who lived but a very little while. 2. *Mary*, born Feb. 8, 1515. She was afterwards Queen of England. II. By *Anne Boleyn* he had, 1. *Elizabeth*, born Sept. 7, 1533, who succeeded her sister Queen *Mary*. 2. A son still-born, Febr. 29, 1535. III. He had by *Jane Seymour* Prince *Edward*, born Oct. 12, 1537. He succeeded his father by the title of King *Edward VI*. —— King *Henry* had no issue by his three last Queens, *Anne of Cleves*, *Catharine Howard*, and *Catharine Parr*.

But by *Elizabeth*, daughter of Sir *John Blount*, Kt. and widow of Sir *Gilbert Tailbois*, he had a natural son, named *Henry Fitzroy*, whom he made Earl of *Nottingham*, Duke of *Richmond*, High-Admiral, Lieutenant of *Ireland*, &c. and who died July 24, 1536, aged 17 years.

An account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By Indenture of the 1st. and 23d. of *Henry VIII*, a pound-weight of gold of the old standard, was to be coined into twenty-seven pounds, by tale; viz. into twenty-four Sovereigns, at 22s. 6d. a-piece, or forty-eight Rials at 11s. 3d. a-piece, or seventy-two Angels at 7s. 6d. a-piece, or eighty-one George-Nobles at 6s. 8d. a-piece, or one hundred and forty-four Half-Angels at 3s. 9d. a-piece, or one hundred and sixty-two Forty-penny Pieces at 3s. 4d. a-piece; and a pound-weight of gold, of the fineness of twenty-two Carats only, was to be coined into one hundred Crowns and a half of the double Rose, or two hundred and one Half-crowns, making by tale twenty-five pounds two shillings and sixpence; and a pound-weight of silver of the old sterling, was coined into one hundred and thirty-five Goats, or two hundred and seventy Half-groats, or five hundred and forty Stirlings (or Pence) or one thousand and eighty Half-pence, or two thousand one hundred and sixty Farthings; so that every pound-weight of sterling-silver was coined into forty-five shillings by tale. —— In the 34th of this Reign, a pound-weight of gold, of twenty-three Carats, fine, and one Carat, alloy, was coined into twenty-eight pounds sixteen shillings, by tale; by which Indenture there were coined Sovereigns at 20s. a-piece, Half-Sovereigns at 10s. Angels at 8s. and Quarter-Angelets at 2s. a-piece; and a pound-weight of silver of ten ounces fine, and two ounces alloy, was coined into forty-eight shillings by tale, namely, into T

toons (which were 12 d. a-piece) Groats, Half-Groats, Pence, Half-pence, and Farthings.—In the 36th of *Henry VIII*, a pound weight of gold, of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was coined into thirty pounds by tale; *viz.* into thirty Sovereigns at 20 s. a-piece, or sixty Half-Sovereigns at 10 s. a-piece, or one hundred and twenty Crowns at 5 s. a-piece, or two hundred and forty Half-Crowns: And the King had two Carats of fine gold for coinage, which yielded him fifty shillings. Silver was coined by the same Indenture, of six ounces fine, and six ounces allay, into forty-eight shillings by tale. It was coined into Testoons, Groats, Half-Groats, Pence, Half-pence, and Farthings.—In the 37th of this Reign, a pound-weight of gold of twenty Carats fine, and four Carats allay, was coined into thirty pounds by tale, as in the last; and the King had four Carats, which yielded him five pounds two shillings: And a pound weight of silver, of four ounces fine, and eight ounces allay was coined into forty-eight shillings by tale, which raised the pound-weight of fine gold to thirty-six pounds; and the pound-weight of fine silver to seven pounds four shillings.

The Gold Coins of *Henry VIII*. are Sovereigns, Rials, Half-Sovereigns, Angels, George-Nobles, Half and Quarter-Angels, Forty-penny Pieces, Crowns, and Half-Crowns: And the Silver Coins, Testoons, Groats, Half-Groats, Sterlings.



2



3



4

 line
C
D
hi
B
su
SI
A
th
V
fi
R
ve
C
D



lings, Half-pence, Farthings; to which may be added Crown-Pieces of silver, which were first coined by this King. Henry's Sovereign has on one side HENRIC. 8. D. G. AGL. FRANCIE Z. HIB. REX. the King in his Robes, crowned upon his Throne, with the Scepter and Ball. Reverse, the arms of *France* and *England* quarterly, supported by a Lion and a Dragon, IHS. AVTE. TRANSIENS PER MED. ILLOR. IBAT. (Fig. 5.) The Angel of this King is like his Father's; a Half-Angel has this Inscription on the reverse, CRVX. AVE. SPES. VNICA. The Crown and Half-Crown of gold, have on one side a large Rose and Crown betwixt H. I. crowned, HENRIC. VIII. RVTILANS. ROSA SIN. SPINA. Reverse, the Arms of *France* and *England* quartered under a Crown; and H. I.—DEI. G. R. ANGLIE Z. FRA. DNS. HIBERNIE. (Fig. 6.) As for the Silver Coins,

there

there were two sorts of Testoons or Shillings. That of fine silver exhibits the King half-faced, whereof one has CIVITAS EBORACI. The other Shilling, called the broad-faced Shilling, of a baser alloy, has on one side HENRIC. VIII. DI. GRA. AGL. FRA. Z. HIB. REX. Reverse, POSVI, &c. a Rose crowned, with H. R. likewise crowned. (Fig. 1.) The Groat has his head with the side-face, HENRIC. VIII. DI. GR. AGL. Z. FRANC. Reverse, the arms, POSVI, &c. (Fig. 3.) Another has HENRIC. VIII. DI. GRA. REX. ANGLIE. Reverse FRANCIE. ET. HIBERNIE REX. a crowned Harp between the letters H. and R. crowned (Fig. 7.) Some coined by Cardinal *Wolsey* at York, have a Cardinal's Hat under the Arms. His Pence and Half-pence give him seated on a Throne, with (and sometimes without) the Globe and Scepter. H. D. G. ROSA SINE SPIA. (Fig. 2.) The Farthing has on one side a Portcullice (whereby it is distinguished from Half-pence, which it was not before,) and a Cross and Pellets on the other. (Fig. 4.)

Ann. C. The N O B I L I T Y, created by Patent in H E N R Y VIII's Reign, was as follows.

- 1509. Henry Stafford, Earl of *Wiltshire*.
- 1513. May 15. Charles Brandon, Viscount of *Lisle*.
- 1 Feb. following. ——— Duke of *Suffolk*.
- 7 Nov. Margaret Plantagenet, Countess of *Salisbury*.
- 1513-14. 1 Feb. Charles Somerset, Earl of *Worcester*.
- 1523. Henry Marney, Baron *Marney*.
- 1525. 18 June. Henry Fitz-Roy, Earl of *Nottingham*; and Duke of *Ribmond*, and *Somerset*.
- Henry Brandon, Earl of *Lincoln*.
- Thomas Manners, Earl of *Rutland*.
- Henry Clifford, Earl of *Cumberland*.
- Thomas Boleyn, Viscount *Rothsford*.
- Robert Ratcliffe, Viscount *Fitz-Walter*.
- 1524. 27 April. Nicholas Vaux, Baron of *Harrowden*.
- 1533. 26 April. Arthur Plantagenet, Viscount *Lisle*.
- 1 Sept. Anne Boleyn, Marchioness of *Pembroke*.
- 1536. 3 June. Edward Seymour, Viscount *Beauchamp*.

Book XV. 20. HENRY VIII.

107

— Earl of *Hertford.*

Ann. C.

John Bourchier, Earl of Bath.

1537.

Thomas Cromwell, Baron of Oakham.

9. July.

— Earl of *Effex.*

1540.

Gregory Cromwell, the son, Baron Cromwell.

7 April.

Thomas Audley, Baron Audley of Walden.

1538.

William Pawlet, Baron St. John of Basing.

29 Nov.

John Russel, Baron Russel.

1538-9.

William Parr, Baron Parr of Kendall.

9 Mar.

— Earl of *Effex.*

1543.

23 Dec.

Henry D'aubeny, Earl of Bridgwater.

1539.

20 July.

John Dudley, Baron Somerai Basset and Teyes, and Viscount Lisle,

1542.

15 Mar.

William Parr, Baron Parr of Horton.

1543.

23 Dec.

Thomas Wriothesley, Baron Wriothesley.

1 Jan.

William Eure, Baron Eure.

24 Feb.

Thomas Poynings, Baron Poynings.

1544.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
HENRY VIII.

Thomas Darcy, Lord Darcy.

Edward Sutton, Lord Dudley.

Emanuel, King of Portugal.

Thomas Howard, Lord Howard, eldest son to Thomas, Duke of Norfolk, afterwards Earl of Surrey, and second Duke of Norfolk.

Thomas West, Lord La Ware.

Sir Henry Marney, Knight, afterwards Lord Marney.

George Nevil, Lord Abergavenny.

Sir Edward Howard, Knight, second son to Thomas Duke of Norfolk, second Duke of that family.

Sir Charles Brandon, afterwards Duke of Suffolk.

Julian de Medicis, brother to Pope Leo X.

Edward Stanley, Lord Monteagle, second son to the Earl of Derby.

Thomas Dacres, Lord Dacres of Gillesland.

Sir William Sandys, afterwards Lord Sandys.

Henry

- Henry Courtney, Earl of Devonshire.*
Ferdinand, Prince and Infant of Spain, Archduke of Austria, afterwards Emperor of Germany.
Sir Richard Wingfield, Knight.
Sir Thomas Bullen, Knight, afterwards Viscount Rochford, and Earl of Wiltshire and Ormond.
Walter d'Evereux, Lord Ferrers of Chartley, afterwards Viscount Hereford.
Arthur Plantagenet, Viscount Lisle.
Robert Ratcliff, Viscount Fitz-Walter, afterwards Earl of Sussex.
William Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel.
Thomas Manners, Lord Roos, afterwards Earl of Rutland.
Henry Fitz-Roy, afterwards Earl of Nottingham, and Duke of Richmond and Somerset.
Ralph Nevil, Earl of Westmorland.
William Blount, Lord Mountjoy.
Sir William Fitz-William, Knight, afterwards Earl of Southampton.
Sir Henry Giford, Knight.
Francis I. King of France.
John Vere, Earl of Oxford.
Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
Anthony Montmorency, Duke of Montmorency.
Philip Chabot, Earl of Newblanch.
James V. King of Scotland.
Sir Nicholas Carew, Knight.
Henry Clifford, Earl of Cumberland.
Thomas Cromwell, Lord Cromwell, afterwards Earl of Essex.
John Russel, Lord Russel, afterwards Earl of Bedford.
Sir Thomas Cheney, Knight.
Sir William Kingston, Knight.
Thomas Audley, Lord Audley of Walden, and Lord Chancellor of England.
Sir Anthony Brown, Knight.
Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford, afterwards Duke of Somerset.
Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey.
Sir John Gage, Knight.
Sir Anthony Wingfield, Knight.
John Sutton (alias Dudley) Viscount Lisle, afterwards Earl of Warwick, and Duke of Northumberland.
William Paulet, Lord St. John of Basng, afterwards Earl of Wiltshire, and Marquiss of Winchester.

William

i
f
e
of
of
an-
of
Earl
Earl
iam



K EDWARD VI

G. Vertue Sculp.

William Parr, Lord Parr of Kendal, afterwards Earl of Essex, and Marquis of Northampton.

Sir John Wallop, Knight.

Henry Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel.

Sir Anthony St. Leger, Knight.

Francis Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury.

Thomas Wriothesley, Lord Wriothesley, afterward Earl of Southampton.

BOOK XVI.

The Reigns of EDWARD VI, and Queen MARY;
Containing the space of about twelve years.

21. EDWARD VI.

EDWARD VI. succeeds the King, his Father, being *Ann. C.*
but nine years and three months old; but he was a ^{1547.}
person of excellent qualities. He is proclaimed.

King *Henry VIII*th's will is opened; and it is there ^{Reg. I.} *Jan. 29.*
found, that he had nominated 16 persons to be his Execu- ^{— 31.}
tors, Regents of the Kingdom, and Governors to his son. ^{Feb. 1.}
*Besides these, King *Henry* had appointed a Privy-Council
 of 12 persons to be assiting to the Regents.*

Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford, is chosen Protector,
and made Duke of Somerset.

About 5 or 6000*l.* a year, of the lands belonging to the
 Chantryes, are alienated to find the revenues and salaries
 assinged to the new created Lords.

The Protector procures to himself the offices of *Lord-Treasurer, and Earl-Marshall*, vacant by the attainer of ^{Feb. 10.}
Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk.

His brother, *Thomas Seymour*, is made High-Admiral, and
 created Baron of Sudley.

King *Henry VIII.* is buried at *Windsor.*

King *Edward VI.* is crowned.

— 16.

— 20.

A general pardon is published, with a few exceptions.

The Lord Chancellor *Wriothesley*, created, a few days before,
 Earl of *Southampton*, is confined to his house, for op-
 posing the Reformation, and the Protector's designs.

The Great Seal is taken from him, and given to Sir *Wil- liam Paulet, Lord St. John*, Master of the King's House-
 hold.

The

Mar. 6.

Ann. C. The Protector is confirmed in his office by Letters Patent under the Great Seal.

— 11. Two new treaties are signed between *England* and *France*; but, before their ratification, *Francis I*, King of *France*, dies; and *Henry II*, who succeeded him, refuses to ratify them.

Fifty thousand crowns are privately given by the *English* Council to the Princes of the Protestant League in *Germany*.

April 11. The Service begins to be read in *English* in the King's Chapel; and the Protector and the Council resolve to push the Reformation; for which end they appoint a general visitation of all the Churches; and, soon after, Images are taken out of the Churches.

The Protector prepares to carry the war into *Scotland*.

Aug. 4. Conferences are, in the mean time, set on foot for a

Sept. 3. peace, but they proving ineffectual, the Protector enters *Scotland*, and takes some Castles.

He offers a peace to the Regent of *Scotland*, who rejects his offer.

The *English* army moves forward, and approaches the *Sept. 10. Scots*; whereupon, they coming to an engagement, the *Scots* are defeated, near *Pinkie*, or *Musselburgh*; in which 18,000 of them are slain, and 1500 taken prisoners.

— 18. The Protector, being informed that his brother, the Admiral, was caballing against him, returns in great haste to *England*, having employed but 16 days in his expedition.

— 11. *Edmund Bonner*, Bishop of *London*, and *Stephen Gardiner*, Bishop of *Winchester*, are committed to the Fleet.

The Princess *Mary* complains of the progress of the Reformation.

Richard, Lord Rich, is made High-Chancellor.

Oct. 24. The Protector is invested with new privileges.

Nov. 3. The Parliament meets at *Westminster*, and grants the

— 4. King tunnage and poundage, for life, together with the subsidy of wools and wool-fells.

In this Parliament a statute is enacted, repealing several others, passed in the late, and some former Reigns, and confirming the order of Succession, as settled by *Henry VIII*.

The law of the six articles is therein repealed; and likewise statute 5 *Richard II*, and 2 *Henry V*, against the *Lollards*.

Private Masses are abolished, and the Cup in the Communion restored to the People.

Power is given to the King to nominate to the vacant Bishoprics, by his Letters Patents.

A very

Ann. C.

A very remarkable act is passed against Vagabonds.

All the lands designed for the maintenance of Chantries, Chapels, and Colleges, &c. and all revenues for Obits, Anniversaries, Lights in Churches, together with all Guild-lands, are given to the King.

A general pardon is granted, in which were excepted the prisoners in the Tower: And therefore Gardiner has the benefit of it.

The Admiral cabals against the Protector, his brother. He makes his addresses to the Princess Elizabeth, where, not meeting with success, he courts and marries Catharine Parr, the Queen Dowager.

The Emperor, Charles V, defeats, and takes prisoner, John Frederic, Elector of Saxony.

He also causes the Landgrave of Hesse to be detained prisoner, through an abominable fraud.

The Protestant party grows hereby very weak in Germany.

Peter Martyr, Bucer, Ochimis, Fagius, and several other foreign Protestants come to England.

The Protector, upon a complaint from the King of France, orders the fortifications of Bullenbergh to be discontinued.

A great progress is made in the Reformation; and the Council forbids the carrying of candles on Candlemas-Day, January. and other superstitious usages. About this time also the February book of Homilies is drawn up.

Reg. 2.

Stephen Gardiner is sent to the Tower for opposing the Reformation.

The Protector tries in vain to make a truce with Scotland, and appoints Francis Talbot Earl of Shrewsbury to be his Lieutenant in the war with Scotland.

The Regent of Scotland besieges Broughty Castle, but is not able to take it: In the mean time, the English become masters of Haddington and Lauder Castles.

The Scots, having received from France an aid of 6000 men, besiege Haddington.

Mary Queen of Scotland is sent to France, for fear she should be forced to be delivered to the English.

The Earl of Shrewsbury raises the siege of Haddington, and retires to England, after having offered the Scots battle.

Défè Despanvilliers, General of the French succours, attempts to surprize Haddington, but without success; whereupon he makes an inroad into England, as far as Newcastle.

Défè, using the Scots ill, is recalled, and De Thermes sent to command in his room.

Queen

Ann. C. Queen Catharine Parr dies in child-bed.

The Emperor and the Pope quarrel about the translation of the Council of Trent to Bologna.

An Interim is granted to the Protestants in Germany.

Maurice is invested with the Electorate of Saxony, of which John Frederic had been deprived, for being a Protestant.

Nov. 24. The Parliament, after several prorogations, meets again, and forwards the Reformation.

The Liturgy, which had been newly compiled, is now confirmed by the Act of Uniformity, and every Parson, &c. ordered to use it.

By another act, all positive laws, made against the marriage of Priests, are taken away.

An act is also made for the payment of tithes. Another for the true making of malt, &c.

This Session, a relief granted to the King, was confirmed : As was also a subsidy of 6s. in the pound, given by the Clergy, to be paid in three years.

1549. The Admiral (*Thomas Seymour*) continues his practices against the Protector, and endeavours to supplant him.

Reg. 3. His wife, the Queen-Dowager, dying, as is said above, he renews his addresses to the Princess *Elizabeth*, but in vain.

Jan. 19. He is sent to the Tower, and, refusing to answer, is attainted by the Parliament, and beheaded ; for which his

Feb. 25. brother, the Protector, is severely censured.

Mar. 20. The new Liturgy is established in all the Churches : The Princess *Mary* refuses to comply with it.

April 12. *Joan Boucher*, an Anabaptist, is condemned to be burnt ; but the King signed the warrant for her execution with great reluctance.

May. The people being discontented at the suppression of the Monasteries, and many ways oppressed by the Rich, take occasion, from a proclamation for inclosures, to commit many riots in *Somersetshire*, *Lincolnshire*, *Kent*, *Essex*, *Suffolk*, and *Norfolk*, and other Counties, and to pull down inclosures.

The Protector publishes thereupon a proclamation against all new inclosures, and grants a general pardon :

June 10. But the proclamation not being duly executed, the Malecontents gather together in *Devonshire* and *Cornwall*, to the number of 10,000, and set *Humphrey Arundel* at their head. *John Lord Ruffel* being sent out against them with a few forces, they send him their demands, which are rejected ; whereupon they besiege *Exeter*, but the Lord

Ruffel

Ruffel beats them, relieves *Exeter*, and puts an end to the *Ann. C.*
insurrection in *Devonshire*. Aug. 6.

Arundel, and *Boyer Mayor of Bodmin*, are hanged.

The Malecontents in *Norfolk* flock together to the number of 20,000, headed by one *Robert Kett* a Tanner, of great substance.

William Parr, Marquis of *Northampton*, is sent against *July 31.* them, with 1100 men; he marches to *Norwich*, and is driven out thence, with the loss of 130 of his men.

John Dudley, Earl of *Warwick*, marches against them, *Aug. 27.* with the army designed for *Scotland*, and disperses the Rebels: *Kett* their Captain is taken, and hanged.

An insurrection breaks out at the same time in *Yorkshire*, but the Rebels accept of a pardon: Some of the Ringleaders, renewing afterwards the sedition, are executed.

The Protector grants a general pardon for all offences committed before the 21st of *August*, at which the Nobility are offended.

During these troubles, the Lords Lieutenants of Counties were first appointed.

Henry II., King of *France*, enters the territory of *Boulogne*, without declaring war: His troops are repulsed at the attack of *Bullenberg*. *August.*

The French and English fleets have an engagement near *Sept. 8.* *Jersey* and *Guernsey*, which Islands the French attempted to seize.

Henry II. besieges *Boulogne*, but is forced to turn the siege into a blockade.

De Thermes takes *Broughty Castle* from the English.

The Protector causes *Haddington* to be demolished.

— 15.

He proposes to the Council the restoring *Boulogne* to *France*; which proposal is received with indignation.

William Paget is sent Ambassador to the Emperor *Charles V.*, to try to make an Alliance with him for the security of *Boulogne*.

Edmund Bonner, Bishop of *London*, is committed to the — 21. *Marshalsea* for a Sermon preached on the 1st of this month, and deprived the first of *October*.

The Lord *St. John*, President of the Council, and eight *Oct. 6.* of the Counsellors, separate from the rest, and (as the King's Council) meet at *Ely-House* in *Holborn*, where they lay the blame of all miscarriages on the Protector, and contrive his ruin.

The Protector removes the King from *Hampton-Court* — 7. to *Windsor*, and causes proclamation to be made in several

Ann. C. ral towns near *Windfor*, for men to come and defend the King, pretending he was in danger.

Seven Counsellors more go and join those at *Ely-House*.

— 8. They win the Common-Council of *London* to their side, who grant them an aid of 500 men.

— 9. Five Counsellors more forsake the Protector; whereupon, he is declared, by the majority of the Council, unworthy of being Protector.

The Council publish a proclamation, and write to the King to inform him of their proceedings: The King approves their conduct.

— 11. The Protector is taken into custody.

— 12. The Counsellors, who were the Protector's enemies, go in a body to the King at *Windfor*.

Ost. 14. The Duke of *Somerset* is accused before them of several crimes, and sent to the *Tower*.

Thereupon, six Lords are appointed Governors of the King's person; but *John Dudley*, Earl of *Warwick*, who was the chief author of the Duke of *Somerset*'s ruin, takes upon him the principal administration of the Government.

Thomas Wriothesley, Earl of *Southampton*, withdraws from Court, and dies the 3rd of July following.

— 18. A second Ambassy is sent to the Emperor *Charles V*, to persuade him to take *Boulogne* into his protection: His answer determines the Council to make peace with *France*.

— 28. The Earl of *Warwick* is made High-Admiral, and Great Master of the King's Household.

Nov. 4. A new Parliament meets, which makes a severe act against unlawful Assemblies; but repeals part of the act against Vagabonds.

By this Parliament, the relief, granted to the King out of sheep and clothes, was released, and the relief for goods continued: And a subsidy was granted to his Majesty of 1*s.* in the pound of goods, from Denizens, and of every Alien 2*s.* in the pound.

A Form for consecrating Archbishops, Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, was now appointed.

— 10. Pope *Paul III.* dies; in his room is chosen Cardinal *Pole*, who loses the Pontificate by a piece of nicety.

1550. An act of attainder is passed against *Edward Seymour*, Duke of *Somerset*, grounded upon his confession, subscribed with his own hand, in the *Tower*: And he is fined, and condemned to lose all his places.

Jan. 2. An act is passed, confirming the new Liturgy, and ordering, That all Mass-books whatsoever, and Images, shall be utterly abolished.

7 he

Ann. C.

The Parliament is prorogued.

During this Session, the eldest sons of Peers were first — 2. permitted to sit in the House of Commons.

Julius III. is chosen Pope.

The Earl of *Warwick* resolves to give up *Boulogne*, and employs *Guidotti*, an Italian Merchant, in transacting that affair.

Both Courts agree to send Plenipotentiaries to some place in *Picardy*; accordingly, Conferences for a peace are held at *Boulogne*.

The treaty between the two Crowns is signed; but the Earl of *Warwick* avoids signing the ratification of it, in order to escape the public odium. *Mar. 24.*

However, the people are extremely enraged at the restitution of *Boulogne*; but, in order to divert them, the Earl of *Warwick* calls to a strict account all those that had managed the King's money.

The Duke of *Somerset* is admitted again into the Privy-Council. *Apr. 18.*

Polydore Virgil, Author of the *History of England*, retires into *Italy*.

The Emperor, *Charles V*, tries to force all the Protestants to submit to the determinations of the Council of *Trent*.

This year, the City of *London* purchased of the King all the Liberties of *Southwark*: And the Bishopric of *Westminster* was united to that of *London*.

Stephen *Gardiner*, Bishop of *Winchester*, is deprived. *1551.*

A *Confession of Faith*, comprised in XLII Articles, is drawn up. *Reg. 5.* The Princess *Mary* refuses to submit to them, *Feb. 13.* and would have gone out of the Kingdom, but is prevented.

The Sweating-sickness rages in *England*, from April till October. Henry and Charles, sons of *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk* die of it.

The Earl of *Warwick* forms the project of marrying the Princess *Elizabeth* to some foreign Prince, of excluding *Mary* from the Succession, and of marrying one of his sons to *Jane Grey*, eldest daughter of *Henry Grey Marquis of Dorset*, by *Frances Brandon*, who was the next in Succession after *Henry VIII*'s two daughters.

King Edward sends an Ambassay to *Henry II*, to carry him the order of the Garter, and to propose a marriage between Himself and the Princess *Elizabeth* *Henry II*'s daughter.

Maurice Elector of *Saxony*, intending to free *Germany* from the Emperor *Charles the Fifth*'s yoke, sends Ambassadors

Ann. C. dors to *England*, to know what assistance he might expect from thence: But not meeting with sufficient encouragement, he breaks up his army, after having made himself master of *Magdeburgh*.

May. The Council is removed back to *Trent*, where it was first opened.

July 19. A treaty about King *Edward's* marriage is signed at *Angers*.

Oct. 10. *George Day* Bishop of *Chichester*, and *Nicholas Heath*, Bishop of *Worcester*, are deprived, for not complying with the Reformation.

Oct. 17. The ruin of the Duke of *Somerset* being determined, evil reports are spread of him, whereby the King becomes prejudiced against him: And he is sent to the *Tower*.

Dec. 1. He is brought to his trial before his Peers, and is acquitted by them of treason, but condemned to die for felony.

21. The Great Seal is taken from the Lord-Chancellor *Rich*, on account of his acting privately in behalf of the Duke of *Somerset*.

1552. The Duke of *Somerset* is beheaded on *Tower-Hill*.

Jan. 22. His pretended accomplices, Sir *Ralph Vane*, Sir *Miles*

Reg. 6. *Partridge*, Sir *Michael Stanhope*, and Sir *Thomas Arundel*,

Feb. 26. are also put to death.

Maurice Elector of *Saxony* secretly negotiates a league with *France*, and the Protestant Princes of *Germany*.

Jan. 23. The Parliament, after several prorogations, meets again; and therein the following acts are passed: For the uniformity of Service, and administration of the Sacraments throughout the realm: For the keeping Holidays and Fasting-days; declaring which should be such. By another, the marriage of Priests is declared valid, and their children legitimated. And another enacts, That the poor shall be relieved with that which every parishioner of his charitable devotion will give.

The Parliament is dissolved.

An alteration is made in the Bishops Patents, constituting them only, as long as they behaved well.

A strict inquiry is made after those who had been enriched by the Chantry lands, and many are severely fined. The Lord *Paget* in particular is fined 6000*l.* and, under pretence he was no Gentleman, degraded from the order of the Garter.

The Company of *German* Merchants in the *Still-yard* is dissolved: And a project is set on foot to make *Hull* and *Southampton* free Mart-towns.

Cardan comes to England.

Ann. C.

The King falls ill of the small-pox and measles, which *April 2.* bring him afterwards into a consumption.

James Hamilton Earl of Arran, and Duke of Chatelerault, resigns the Regency of Scotland to *Mary of Guise*, the Queen Dowager.

Maurice Elector of Saxony declares against *Charles V*, and thereby obliges him to grant the Protestants the edict of *Passau*.

A new Parliament meets.

1553.

The King is seized with a violent cough, which ends in *January.* a consumption.

Reg. 7.

The Commons grant the King two fifteenths and tenths, *Mar. 1.* and a subsidy, being 4*s.* in the pound of lands, and 2*s.* and 8*d.* of goods, paid in two years. And the Clergy grant 6*s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years.

Cuthbert Tonstal Bishop of Durham having been deprived, *August 14, 1552*, the See of *Durham* is now suppressed, and two others founded; one at *Durham*, the other at *Newcastle*. But the temporalities of the Bishopric of *Durham* are turned into a County Palatine, and given to the Duke of *Northumberland*.

The Parliament is dissolved.

The King finding his end approaching, expresses great *Mar. 31.* concern about the state of Religion under his sister Queen *Mary*, which was to succeed him.

He gives to the City of *London* his Palace of *Bridewell*; *April 10.* as he had done, the year foregoing, the *Grey-Friers* or *Chriſt's Church*, and *St. Thomas's Hospital*.

The Church-plate is called in, and the money made of it distributed chiefly among the greedy Courtiers.

Gulford Dudley the Duke of *Northumberland's* fourth son, *May.* marries *Jane Grey*, and the Duke persuades the King to settle the Crown on her.

The Judges refuse to draw the Act of Settlement; but at *June 15.* length they are compelled to do it; and all set their hands *21.* to it, except *James Hales*, one of the Justices of the Common Pleas: It is signed likewise by the whole Privy-Council.

The Duke of *Northumberland* is suspected of being the cause of the King's illness, and grows extremely odious upon that account.

King *Edward VI.* dies, after having reigned six years, *July 6.* five months, and nine days: And was buried, the 8th of

now still wing, in Henry the VIIth's Chapel at Westmⁿster, where his monument was erected to him.

time of his decease, the Duke of Northumberland, to get the Princesses Mary and Eliza-

The Character of EDWARD VI.

The following Character is given by *Cardan*, a famous Italian, who writ it, after the death of *Edward*, and in Italy, where this Prince was deemed an Heretic; and when he could not expect any thing by flattering him.

" All the graces were in him. He had many tongues
 " when he was yet but a child: Together with the English
 " his natural tongue, he had both Latin and French: Nor
 " was he ignorant, as I hear, of the Greek, Italian, and
 " Spanish, and perhaps some more. But for the English,
 " French and Latin, he was exact in them; and apt to
 " learn every thing. Nor was he ignorant of Logic, of the
 " principles of natural Philosophy, nor of Musick. The
 " sweetness of his temper was such as become a mortal, his
 " gravity becoming the Majesty of a King, and his dispo-
 " sition suitable to his high degree. In sum, that child was
 " so bred, had such parts, was of such expectation, that he
 " looked like a miracle of a man. These things are not
 " spoken Rhetorically, and beyond the truth, but are in-
 " deed short of it. And afterwards he adds, He was a
 " marvellous boy: When I was with him, he was in the
 " 15th year of his age, in which he spake Latin as polite-
 " ly and as promptly as I did: He asked me what was the
 " subject of my books, *de rerum varietate*, which I had de-
 " dicated to him? I answered, That in the first chapter
 " I gave the true cause of Comets, which had been long
 " enquired into, but was never found out before. What is
 " it, said he? I said, it was the concourse of the light of
 " wandering stars. He answered, How can that be, since
 " the stars move in different motions? How comes it that
 " the comets are not soon dissipated, or do not move after
 " them according to their motions? To this I answered,
 " They do move after them, but much quicker than they,
 " by reason of the different aspect, as we see in a christal,
 " or when a rain-bow rebounds from the wall: For a little
 " change makes a great difference of place. But the King
 " said, How can that be, where there is no subject to re-
 " ceive that light, as the wall is the subject for the rain-
 " bow?

“ bow? To this I answered, That this was as in the milky-way, or where many candles were lighted, the middle place where their shining met was white and clear. From this little taste it may be imagined what he was. And indeed the ingenuity and sweetness of his disposition had raised in all good and learned men the greatest expectation of him possible. He began to love the liberal arts before he knew them, and to know them before he could use them: And in him there was such an attempt of nature, that not only *England*, but the world has reason to lament his being so early snatched away. How truly was it said of such extraordinary persons, That their lives are short, and seldom do they come to be old? He gave us an essay of virtue, though he did not live to give a pattern of it. When the gravity of a King was needful, he carried himself like an old man; and yet he was always affable and gentle, as became his age. He played on the lute: He meddled in affairs of state: And for bounty, he did in that emulate his father; though he even, when he endeavoured to be too good, might appear to have been bad: But there was no ground of suspecting any such thing in the son, whose mind was cultivated by the study of Philosophy.”

It is said, King *Edward* was in body beautiful, of a sweet aspect, and especially in his eyes, which seemed to have a starry liveliness and lustre in them. He kept a book, in which he writ the characters of all the chief men of the nation, all the Judges, Lord-Lieutenants, and Justices of the Peace over *England*, marking down their way of living, and their zeal for Religion. He had studied the busines of the mint, with the exchange and value of money. He also understood fortification, and designed well. He knew all the Harbours and Ports in his Dominions, as also in *Scotland* and *France*, with the depth of water, and way of coming into them. He had acquired so great knowledge in foreign affairs, that the Ambassadors who were sent into *England* published very extraordinary things of him, in all the Courts of *Europe*. He took notes of almost every thing he heard, which he writ first in *Greek* characters, that those about him might not understand them, and afterwards copied out fair in the journal or diary that he kept. This Journal, written with his own hand, is still preserved in Sir *John Cotton's* famous library. In it the most considerable transactions in this Reign are perhaps as well regulated (says Bishop *Nicholson*) by the young King himself, as by any other Historian.

A Description of the Monument of EDWARD VI.

He was buried under the fine altar at the head of Henry VII's Mousoleum. It was destroyed in the civil wars. This exceeding curious piece of work seems to have been executed by the same artist that performed the other admirable brafs works in this chapel.

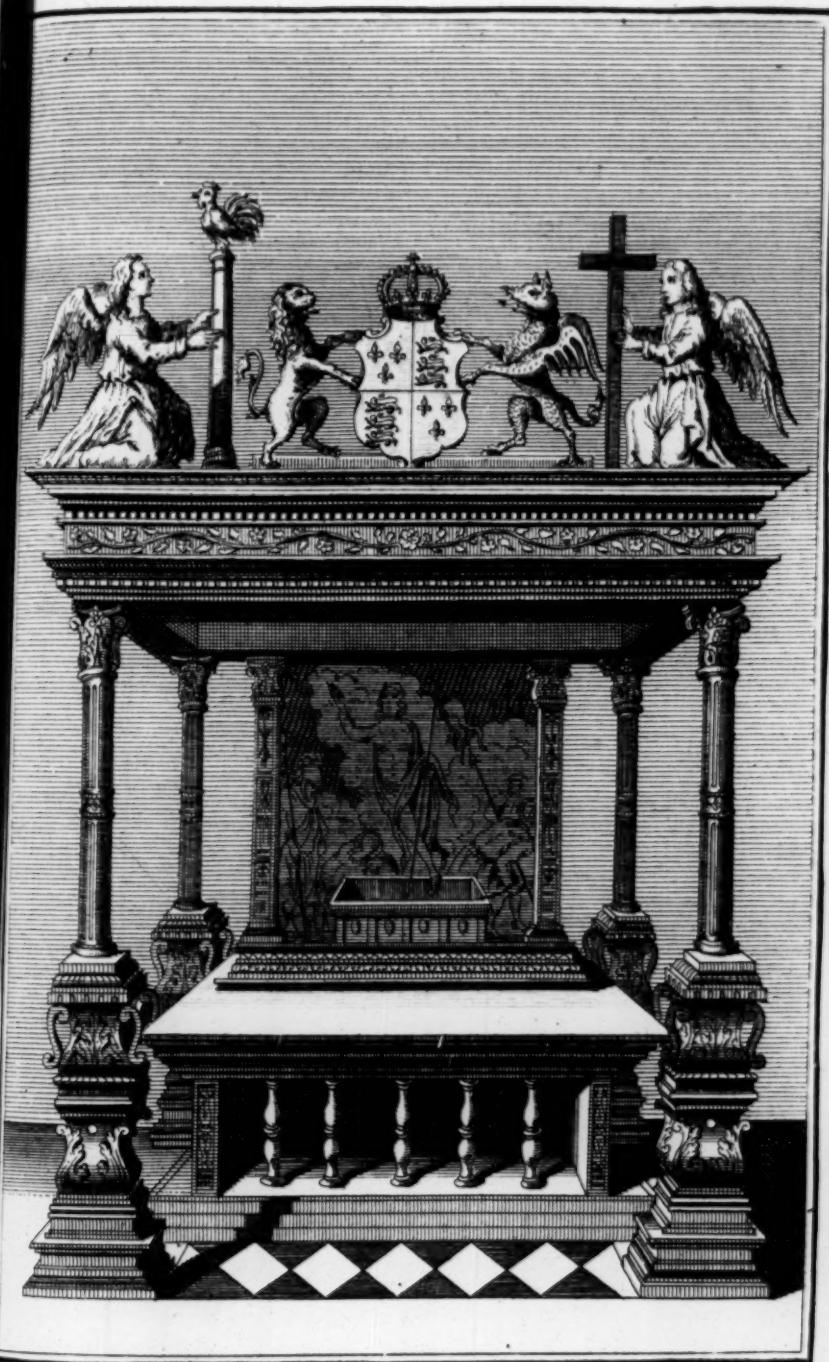
Flete nefas magnum, sed toto flebitis orbe,
 Mortales; vester corruit omnis honor.
 Nam Regum decus, Juvenum flos, spesq; bonorum,
 Delitiae sécli, & gloria gentis erat.
 Dignus Apollineis lachrimis doctæq; minervæ:
 Flosculus heu miserè concidit ante diem.
 Te tumulo dabimus Musæ, supremaq; flentes
 Munera, Melpomene tristia fata canet.

The above epitaph was wrote by Jerome Cardan, and with some liberty is rendered in English:

Let the whole world their common loss deplore,
 For EDWARD dies, and glory is no more.
 He was the good man's hope, youth's brightest flower,
 Joy of the age, and pride of sovereign power:
 For him Apollo and Minerva moan,
 Their blooming hope untimely dead and gone.
 Whilst these last gifts the weeping nine bestow,
 Melpomene laments in strains of woe,
 And hails thee fleeting to the shades below.

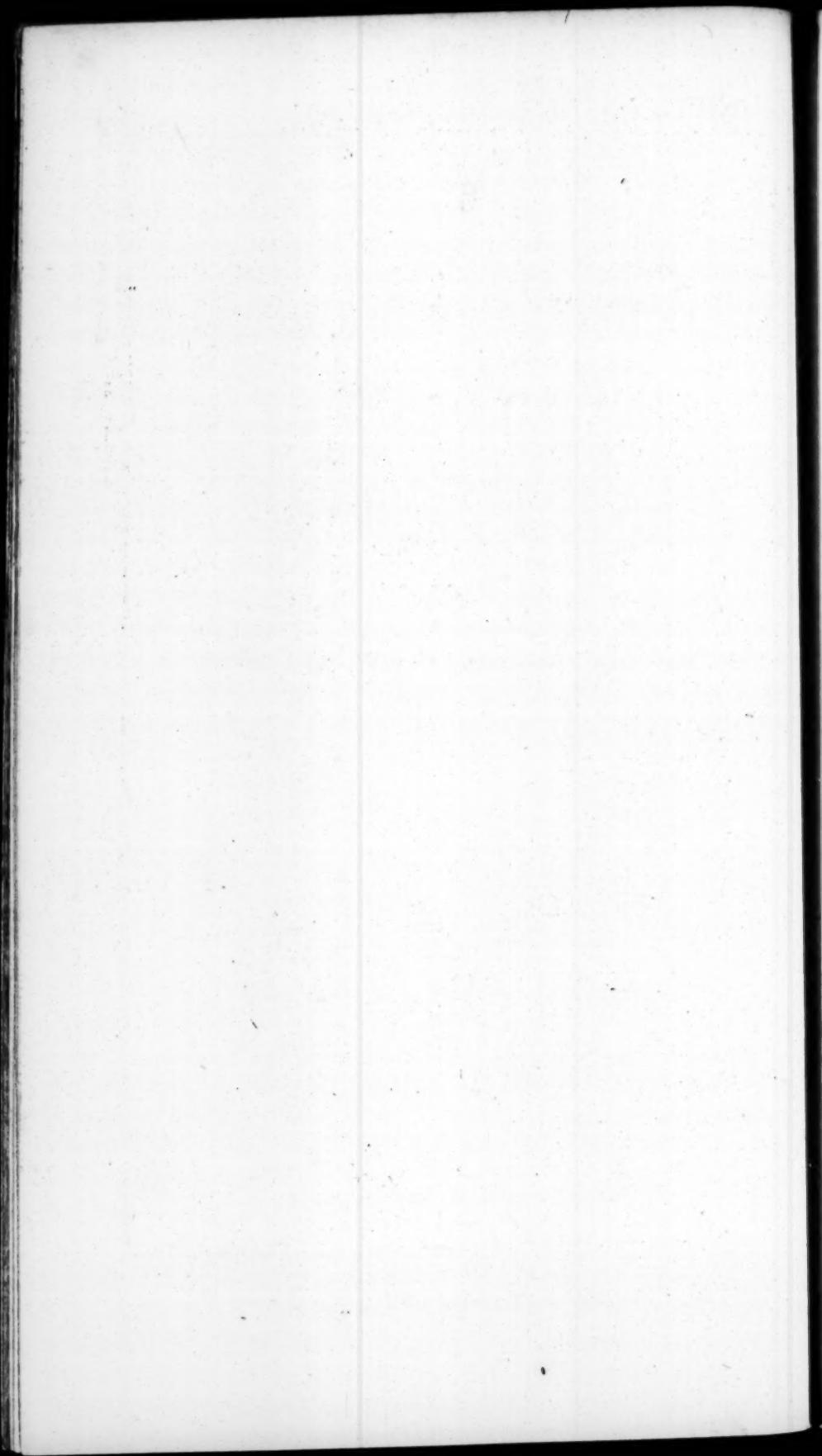
An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By Indentures of the 1st and 2d of Edward VI, a pound-weight of gold, of twenty Carats fine, and four Carats allay, was coined into thirty pounds by tale, out of which the King had a great profit; and a pound of silver of four ounces fine, and eight ounces allay, was coined into forty-eight shillings; after which rate, every pound of fine silver made in current money seven pounds four shillings; and the King's profit on every pound-weight was four pounds four shillings.— In the 3d year of this King, a pound-weight of Gold of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was to be coined into thirty-four pounds by tale, into Sovereigns at 20 s. a-piece, Half-Sovereigns at 10 s. a-piece, Crowns at 5 s. and Half-Crowns at 2 s. 6 d. a-piece: And a pound-weight of Silver of six ounces fine, and six ounces allay,



J. Mynde sc.

The Monument of K. EDWARD VI.



allay, was to be coined into seventy-two shillings, which were to go for 12*d.* a-piece by tale; of which the Merchant, for every pound-weight of fine Silver, received three pounds four shillings, and the King above four pounds gain.—In the 4th year of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold of the old standard, of twenty-three Carats, and three grains and a half fine, was coined into twenty-eight



pounds sixteen shillings by tale; namely, into Sovereigns, at 2*s.* a-piece, Half-Sovereigns at 12*s.* Angels at 8*s.* and Half-Angels at 4*s.* a-piece.—In the 5th of this Reign, a pound-weight of Silver of three ounces fine, and nine ounces allay, was coined into seventy-two shillings, at 12*d.* a-piece; and the Merchant received for every ounce of fine

Silver

Silver, which he should bring to the Mint, ten shillings of such money ; by which means twelve ounces of fine Silver was exorbitantly raised to fourteen pounds eighteen shillings.— In the 6th of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold, of the old standard, aforesaid, was coined into thirty-six pounds by tale ; namely, twenty-four Sovereigns at 30*s.* a-piece, seventy-two Angels at 10*s.* a-piece, or one hundred and forty-four Half-Angels : And a pound-weight of Crown Gold of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats alloy, was coined into thirty-three pounds by tale ; namely, thirty-three Sovereigns at 20*s.* a-piece, or sixty-six Half-Sovereigns at 10*s.* a-piece, or one hundred and thirty-two Crowns, or two hundred and sixty-four Half-Crowns : And a pound-weight of Silver, consisting of eleven ounces, one penny-weight fine, and nineteen penny-weight alloy, was coined into three pounds by tale ; namely, twelve Crowns, or twenty-four Half-Crowns, or sixty Shillings, or one hundred and twenty Six-pences, or two hundred and forty Three-pences, or seven hundred and twenty Pence, or one thousand four hundred and forty Half-pence, or two thousand eight hundred and eighty Farthings.

- Ann. C.* The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows :
- 1546-7. *Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford* — Baron *Seymour*,
 - 15, 16. *and Duke of Somerset.*
 - 16 Feb. *William Parr, Earl of Essex* — Marquis of *Northampton*.
John Dudley, Viscount Lisle — Earl of *Warwick*.
Thomas Seymour, Baron Seymour of Sudley-Castle.
Edmund Sheffield, Baron Sheffield of Butterwike.
Richard Rich, Baron Rich.
William Willoughby, Baron Willoughby of Parham.
Thomas Baron Wriothesley — Earl of *Southampton*.
 - 1548-9. *George Darcy, Baron Darcy of Aston*, restored by patent.
 - 23 Jan. *William Paulet, Earl of Wiltshire*.
 - 1549. — Marquis of *Winchester*.
 - 19 Jan. *John Baron Russel, Earl of Bedford*.
 - 1551. *Walter Devereux, Baron Ferrers of Chartley*, Viscount *Hereford*.
 - 2 Feb. *William Paget, Baron Paget of Beauchamp*.
 - 1550. *Thomas*
 - 3 Dec. *Thomas*

II.
of
ver
il-
of
y-
s.
red
wn
was
y-
re-
wo
s :
es,
y,
lve
gs,
nd
ce,
wo

:
ur,

an.

nt.

unt

mas



G. Vertue Sculp.

Ann. C.

1551.

5 April.

*Thomas Darcy, Baron Darcy of Chiche.**William Herbert, Baron Herbert of Caerdiffi, next day, 10 Oct.**Earl of Pembroke.**Henry Grey, Duke of Suffolk.**John Dudley, Earl of Warwick — Duke of Northum-
berland.*

11 Oct.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
 EDWARD VI.

*Henry Grey, Marquis of Dorset, afterwards Duke of
 Suffolk.*

*Edward Stanley, Earl of Derby.**Thomas Seymour, Lord Seymour of Sudley.**Sir William Paget, Knight, afterwards Lord Paget.**Francis Hastings, Earl of Huntingdon.**George Brooke, Lord Cobham.**Thomas West, Lord la Ware.*

*Sir William Herbert, Knight, afterwards Lord Herbert
 of Cardiff, and Earl of Pembroke.*

Henry II. King of France.

*Edward Clinton, alias Fines, Lord Clinton, afterwards Earl
 of Lincoln.*

*Thomas Darcy, Lord Darcy of Chiche.**Henry Nevil, Earl of Westmoreland.**Sir Andrew Dudley, Knight.*

22. M A R Y.

*MARY, Elizabeth, Mary Queen of Scotland, and 1553.
 Jane Grey, pretend all four to the Crown, but Mary Reg. 1.
 and Jane Grey remain the only competitors.*

*Mary being at Hedesdon in her way to London, and hearing
 of the King's death, and of the Duke of Northumber-
 land's design to secure her, withdraws to Keninghall in Suf-
 folk; from whence she writes a letter to the Privy Council, July 9.
 and claims the Crown.*

*But not thinking herself quite safe there, she retires to
 Framlingham-Castle nearer the sea, from whence she might
 upon occasion escape out of the Kingdom, and takes the
 title of Queen; shortly after, she is proclaimed at Norwich,
 and sends a circular letter to all the Nobility requiring their
 assistance.*

13.

John

- Anno 6.* John Dudley Duke of Northumberland, and Henry Grey Duke of Suffolk, give Jane notice of her being Queen; she accepts the Crown with reluctance, and withdraws to the Tower, with the Council.
9. The Council returns no favourable answer to Mary's letter, insisting much upon her illegitimacy
10. Jane is proclaimed: The people express no joy at it, The Counties of Norfolk and Suffolk declare for Mary; and desire her not to alter the Religion her brother had established: She positively promises them to leave Religion in the same state she found it
11. Jane sends Richard Shelley Ambassador to the Emperor, who refuses him audience.
- The Council raises troops to oppose Mary.
- Henry Fitz Alan, Earl of Arundel, breaks the Duke of Northumberland's measures, by persuading Queen Jane to put him at the head of her troops, instead of her father, the Duke of Suffolk.
14. The Duke of Northumberland goes from London to head 6000 men, who were assembled at Newmarket: He marches to Cambridge, and from thence to St. Edmundsbury; but his army is much diminished by desertions.
16. Bishop Ridley preaches at St. Paul's in favour of Jane, and shews the danger the Reformation would undergo under Queen Mary's Administration.
- Sir Edward Hastings declares for Mary, with 4000 men, and gets her proclaimed at Buckingham.
- Six men of war declare likewise for her, at Yarmouth.
18. The Duke of Northumberland, after advancing as far as St. Edmundsbury, returns to Cambridge, from whence he sends to the Council for a speedy supply.
- July 19.* Some of the Counsellors find means to get out of the Tower; and assembling at Baynard's Castle, they declare for Mary, and get her proclaimed at London: Henry Grey, Duke of Suffolk, delivers up the Tower to them.
- Jane lays down her Dignity, after having enjoyed it about nine days.
- The Duke of Northumberland is ordered to dismiss his army; but he prevents the orders, and proclaims Queen Mary at Cambridge.
20. He is apprehended by the Earl of Arundel, and carried to the Tower, with three of his sons, and several others: Whereupon, the whole Kingdom declares for Mary.
21. 25. Jane Grey, the Duke of Suffolk, Bishop Ridley, and several others, are made prisoners in the Tower; but the Duke of

of *Suffolk* is released, being looked upon as uncapable of *Ann. C.*
creating any disturbance.

Queen *Mary* makes her entry into *London*.

31.

Aug. 3.

Thomas Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*, Bishop *Gardiner*, and
Bonner, the Duchess of *Somerset*, and the Lord *Courtney*,
are released out of the *Tower*, and the latter made, shortly
after, Earl of *Devonshire*.

5.

The Queen being determined to restore *Papacy*, resolves
to send for *Cardinal Pole*, as Legate, to reconcile *England*
to the Pope : But *Gardiner* opposes it, and gets the Emperor
to dissuade Queen *Mary* from that resolution. The Queen
gives him the Great Seal.

23.

King *Edward's* funeral is solemnized.

16.

Queen *Mary* declares, that she would not force men's
consciences in matters of Religion.

12.

Bourn, Bishop *Bonner's* Chaplain, is like to be murdered
by the People, for reflecting, in a Sermon of his, upon the
memory of King *Edward VI*. He is rescued by *Bradford*
and *Rogers*, two Protestant Ministers.

13.

The Queen issues out a Proclamation, which discovers *Aug. 18.*
her intentions, with regard to Religion ; forbidding all
assemblies of the people, and preaching without her special
license.

18.

John Dudley, Duke of *Northumberland*, *William Parr*,
Marquis of *Northampton*, *Ambrose Dudley*, Earl of *War-*
wick, *Sir Andrew Dudley*, *Sir John*, and *Sir Henry Gates*,
and *Sir Thomas Palmer*, are brought to their trials, and
condemned.

19.

The Duke of *Northumberland*, *Sir John Gates*, and *Sir*
Thomas Palmer, are executed.

22.

Deputies from *Suffolk*, who came to petition the Queen
on account of her late Proclamation, are ill received at
Court, and *Dobbe*, one of them, is set in the pillory, for
having spoken too freely of the Queen's promise, Not to
alter Religion.

Bradford and *Rogers*, the two Ministers that had rescued
Bourn, are imprisoned.

The Bishops deposed in King *Edward's* time, viz. *Bonner*,
Gardiner, *Tonstal*, *Day*, and *Heath*, are restored.

Many Protestant Clergymen are imprisoned, and the
Mass is restored in several places.

Sir James Hales, one of the Justices of the Common-
Pleas, above-mentioned, is imprisoned for charging the
Justices of Peace, in one of the circuits, to see to the exec-
ution of King *Edward's* laws ; and the apprehension of
further

Ann. C. further punishment renders him melancholy, so that he afterwards drowns himself.

Peter Martyr, being insulted by the Popish party at Oxford, leaves that place, and retires to Archbishop Cranmer, at Lambeth.

Sept. 12. Cranmer is cited into the Star Chamber, for a writing, wherein he declares, he had no intention of abjuring his Religion; and is dismissed, without punishment.

14. He is summoned before the Council, accused of High-treason, and sent to the Tower, with Latimer.

15. The Reformed, who were Strangers, are permitted to leave the Kingdom; but the English are not.

The Queen rewards her friends, particularly Henry Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel, Sir Edward Hastings, and Henry Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex.

Oct. 1. Queen Mary is crowned.

An Act of Grace is published, but clogged with many exceptions.

4. The Queen remits to her subjects the subsidy granted by the last Parliament of King Edward VI.

Robert Holgate, Archbishop of York, is sent to the Tower, on a general accusation. And, six days before that, John Vesey, Bishop of Exeter, is restored to his See, of which he had been deprived in the last Reign.

The Court finds means of getting a Parliament at their devotion, by all sorts of unfair dealing, and violence.

5. John Taylor, Bishop of Lincoln, and John Harley, Bishop of Hereford, are expelled the House of Lords for refusing to kneel at the Mass.

5. The Parliament meets, and passes an act, limiting Treason, to what was declared to be such, by statute 25 Edward III. but doth not meddle with Religion.

21. It is prorogued, till the 24th of October.

24. In their second Session, the divorce between King Henry VIII, and Catherine of Arragon, is repealed.

And likewise all the statutes of King Edward VI, which established the Reformation: And the Mass is ordered to be used throughout the Realm, after December 20.

By another act, molesting or disturbing a Minister in the Church, is made imprisonment.

And another confirms the College of Physicians, in London.

Nov. 13. Jane Grey, Guilford Dudley, her husband, Ambrose, another son of the late Duke of Northumberland, and Arch-bishop

bishop *Cranmer*, are brought to their trials, at *Guildhall*, Ann. C. and condemned as Traitors.

The attainder of *Thomas Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*, is reversed ; but that of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, and of his three sons, Sir *John*, *Ambrose*, and *Andrew*, Knights, and of Archbishop *Cranmer*, *William*, Marquis of *Northampton*, and Sir *John Gates* and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, Knights, is confirmed.

Commendone is sent to *England* by Cardinal *Dandini*, the Pope's Legate at *Brussels*. The Queen desires him to intercede with the Pope to send over Cardinal *Pole*, as his Legate ; but *Gardiner* opposes it, for his own ends.

The Emperor, *Charles V*, proposes to Queen *Mary* a marriage between her and his son, *Philip*, Prince of *Spain* : The Queen approves of it.

Cardinal *Pole* is detained in *Germany*, for fear he should obstruct the marriage.

The House of Commons petitions the Queen not to marry a foreign Prince ; whereupon she dissolves the Parliament.

The Convocation of the Clergy establishes Transubstantiation. A public Disputation is held upon it, between the Popish and Protestant Clergy.

Dec. 6.

The Mass begins again to be sung in *Latin*, throughout *England*.

The Emperor sends an Ambassy to *London*, to conclude the marriage.

1554.
January.

The treaty for it is signed.

William Parr, Marquis of *Northampton*, is pardoned.

Robert Dudley, fifth son of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, is arraigned and condemned for High-treason.

The Queen suspends the act against the *German* Merchants, in the *Still-Yard*, to please the Emperor.

The people murmur against her marriage ; and *Henry Grey*, Duke of *Suffolk*, in *Kent*, Sir *Thomas Wyat*, in *Warwickshire*, and Sir *Peter Carew*, in *Cornwall*, form the design of causing a general insurrection, to hinder that marriage.

Carew is discovered, and flies into *France*.

Wyat repairs to *Maidstone*, and thence to *Rochester*, with a handful of men ; and refuses to lay down his arms.

Five hundred of the City Trained-bands, commanded by *Alexander Bret*, which the Duke of *Norfolk* was leading against *Wyat*, desert the Duke, and join *Wyat*, who advances as far as *Deptford*.

25.

31.

The

- Ann. C.* The Queen dispatches two messengers to him : He makes them unreasonable demands, which are rejected.
- Feb. 3.* He comes to *Southwark*; but finding the bridge guarded against him, he went and passed the *Thames* at *Kingston*, and thence marched to *London*.
6. He enters *Westminster*, and advances towards the City; but finding *Ludgate* shut against him, he surrenders, and is sent to prison.
11. The Duke of *Suffolk*, having been betrayed and taken, is brought to the *Tower*.
12. *Jane Grey*, and *Guilford Dudley*, her husband, are executed.
- 14, 15. *Bret*, with 58 more of the Rebels, are hanged ; but
- 18, 20. The Queen pardoned 600 that had been concerned in the insurrection.
21. *Henry Grey*, Duke of *Suffolk*, is beheaded.
- Mar. 4.* Queen Mary gives Chancellor *Gardiner* a particular order to purge the Church of all married Bishops and Priests. She moreover grants a Commission to him, and others, to deprive *Holgate*, Archbishop of *York*, and *Farrar*, *Bird*, and *Bush*, Bishops of St. *David's*, *Chester*, and *Bristol*, for being married : And two days after, *Taylor*, *Hooper*, and *Harley*, Bishops of *Lincoln*, *Gloucester*, and *Hereford*, for being Protestants.
13. *Sir Thomas Wyat*, at his trial, accuses the Princess Elizabeth, and *Edward Courtney*, Earl of *Devonshire*; whereupon they are both committed to the *Tower*; but *Wyat* clears them, upon a second examination.
- The Mass is restored every where.
- April 2.* The Parliament meets again, and is entirely at the Court's devotion, having been bribed by *Gardiner*. They enact, That the Regal Office, and all prerogatives, &c. thereunto annexed, are as fully in the Queen, as they were in any of her Progenitors, Kings of England.
- The Bishopric of *Durham* is restored to its antient rights.
- The Parliament confirms the treaty of marriage between the Queen and *Philip*.
- April 11.* Sir *Thomas Wyat* is beheaded.
- April 17.* Sir *Nicholas Throckmorton* being tried as an accomplice in the late insurrection, and acquitted, his Jury is severely fined. This proved fatal to his brother, Sir *John Throckmorton*, who was brought in guilty, though there were no better proofs against him than against Sir *Nicholas*.
- 16, 17, 18. *Cranmer*, *Ridley*, and *Latimer*, are carried to *Oxford*, to maintain there a public Disputation about the Eucharist. They

They are interrupted, and not suffered to be heard : Upon *Ann. C.*
their refusing to make Abjuration, they are excommunicated. 20.

The Princess *Elizabeth* is removed from the Tower to *May 19.*
Woodstock, and treated with rigour.

The Parliament is dissolved.

Philip sets out from the *Groin*, and brings with him 25.
27 chests of treasure. *Reg. 2.*

He lands at *Southampton*, and draws his sword upon his *July 16.*
landing. 19.

Queen *Mary* goes to meet him as far as *Winchester*,
where the marriage is solemnized.

Philip obtains a pardon for the Princess *Elizabeth*, and 25.
some others, particularly for *Robert Holgate*, Archbishop of
York, and the Earl of *Devonshire*; but his grave manner,
and reserved air, disgusts the *English*.

Thomas Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*, dies.

Septemb.

Nov. 11.

A new Parliament meets.

The Court sends for Cardinal *Pole* over, and his attainder
is reversed by Parliament.

The Cardinal arrives in *England*, as the Pope's Legate ; 21.
and comes to *London*, three days after.

He makes a speech to the Parliament, at which the
Queen is so moved, that she fancies she felt a child stir in
her womb.

The two Houses of Parliament petition the King and 29.
Queen for a Reconciliation of the Kingdom with the Pope :
In pursuance of which, Cardinal *Pole* grants them a full
absolution, and also absolves the Kingdom from all cen-
sures.

Several acts are passed by the Parliament ; particularly,
one restoring the authority of the Pope ; and repealing all
articles and provisions made against the See of *Rome*, since
the 20th year of King *Henry VIII*, with five restrictions,
ratified by the Legate.

Another, to revive the antient statutes of *Richard II*,
and *Henry IV* and *V*, against Heretics.

And another, authorizing *Philip* to assume the title of
King of *England*, during his marriage with the Queen,
and making it treason to attempt upon his life.

The Court deliberates upon the properest measures to be
taken against the Reformed : *Pole* is for gentle, and *Gard-*
ner for rigorous methods ; the latter prevails.

Queen *Mary* sends an Ambassy to *Rome*, with offers of
VOL. II. K submission

Ann. C. submission to the Pope, from the King, Queen, and the three Estates of the Realm.

1555. *Jan. 18.* The Archbishop of York, Sir John Rogers, Sir James Crofts, Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, and several others, are discharged from the Tower.

A resolution being taken to prosecute the Reformed with the utmost rigour, Gardiner readily undertakes to put the laws in execution against them.

Feb. 4. Accordingly, John Rogers is burnt in Smithfield.

8. Laurence Saunders at Coventry.

9. Bishop Hooper at Gloucester, and Dr. Rowland Taylor, at Hadley.

But Gardiner finding this office very odious, he transfers his Commission to persecute the Reformed to Edmund Bonner, Bishop of London, who executes it with great fury.

The persecution causing an universal consternation all over the Kingdom, the Bishops throw the blame of those cruel proceedings upon the Court; but Philip orders his Confessor to preach against persecution.

At this, the Bishops are so amazed, that they do not, for some time, commit any to the flames; but they soon renew their cruelties against the Protestants.

Mar. 23. Pope Julius III. dies.

28. Queen Mary restores the Abbey-lands, and other possessions, taken from the Churches and Monasteries, in the two last Reigns.

29. John Laurence is burnt at Colchester; as is, the next day, Robert Ferrar, Bishop of St. David's, at Caermarthen; and many others, this, and the following month, in divers places.

April 9. Marcellus II. is chosen Pope.

The Princess Elizabeth is released from her confinement at Woodstock.

Pope Marcellus II. dies, 22 days after his exaltation: Upon his death, Mary forms the design of raising Cardinal Pole to the Papacy; but Paul IV. is chosen Pope.

May 23. June 7. He privately erects Ireland into a Kingdom; then gives audience to the English Ambassadors, and demands of them the restitution of the goods of the Church, and of Peter-pence.

The Privy-Council orders the Justices of Peace, particularly those in Norfolk, to proceed against the Reformed, to whom they were thought too indulgent.

The Queen who thought herself with child, has a false conception;

conception ; whereupon King *Philip* grows weary of her, *Ann. C.* and goes over into *Flanders*.

A pretended conspiracy is discovered, in *Dorsetshire* and *Essex*, but it comes to nothing.

A strict inquiry is made after those who had visited, and plundered the Churches and Monasteries.

Pope *Paul IV.* makes a league with *France* against *Spain*. *October.*

Nicholas Ridley, Bishop of *London*, and *Hugh Latimer*, late Bishop of *Worcester*, are burnt at *Oxford*; and many others, in divers places, during the course of this year. *16.*

The Parliament meets, and confirms the Queen's resig- *21.*
nation of the first-fruits and tenths to the Pope.

They likewise make an act for the mending of High-
ways, and chusing Surveyors.

The Commons begin to oppose the Court; however, they grant the Queen a subsidy, *viz.* from every person worth from 5*l.* to 10*l.* eight pence in the pound; from 10*l.* to 20*l.* twelve-pence in the pound, and from 20*l.* and upwards, sixteen-pence. Strangers to pay double.—The Clergy granted 6*s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years.

Stephen Gardiner Bishop of *Winchester*, and High-Chan- *Nov. 12.*
cellor, dies.

The Parliament is dissolved. *Dec. 9.*

Pope *Paul IV.* sends a bull to erect *Ireland* into a King-
dom.

The Emperor *Charles V.* resigns all his *Spanish* Domi-
nions to his Son *Philip*, and the Imperial dignity to his bro-
ther *Ferdinand*.

This year, the Heralds were incorporated.—And
coaches came first in use in *England*.

Nicholas Heath Archbishop of *York* is made High-Chan- *1556.*
cellor. *Jan. 1.*

A five years truce is concluded between *France* and *Spain*. *Feb. 5.*

Thomas Cranmer Archbishop of *Canterbury* is degraded : *14.*
He signs six abjurations, notwithstanding which he is burnt, *Mar. 21.*
at *Oxford*.

Cardinal Pole is made Archbishop of *Canterbury*. *22.*

The persecution of the Reformed is carried on with the *Reg. 4.*
utmost barbarity.

Queen *Mary* repairs old Monasteries, particularly that of *Westminster*, and erects new ones.

She gives a Commission to Bishop *Bonner*, and some o-
thers, to raze out of the public records all that had been

Ann. C. done by King *Henry VIII.* against the Monks and the Pope.

Pope *Paul IV.* prevails with *Henry II.* King of *France*, to break the truce he had concluded, in the beginning of this year, with *Spain*.

1557. Cardinal *Pole* visits both the Universities, and causes the bones of *Bucer* and *Fagius* to be burnt at *Cambridge*.

January. The wife of *Peter Martyr* is also dug out of her grave at *Oxford*, and buried in a dunghill.

The Magistrates grow remiss in the persecution; whereupon the Council writes circular letters to all the towns to inflame their zeal.

Queen *Mary* grants a Commission tending to erect a kind of Inquisition in *England*; after which insues a dreadful persecution.

Mar. 20. The Duke of *Guise* marches into *Italy* to conquer *Naples*; whereupon, King *Philip*, coming to *England*, prevails upon Queen *Mary* to declare against *France*.

Apr. 27. Thomas, second son of the Lord *Stafford*, lands in *Scotland* with *French* troops; and from thence passes into *England*, where he assumes the title of Protector of *England*, and takes *Scarborough-Castle*; but being taken prisoner, he

May 28. is carried to *London*, and executed.

June 7. The Queen declares war against *France*; and 8000 English under the conduct of *William Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*, go and join the *Spanish* army in the *Low-Countries*.

July 7. King *Philip* himself departs from *England*, and returns to *Brussels*.

15. Anne of *Cleves*, fourth wife of King *Henry VIII.*, dies at **Reg. 5.** *Chelsea*.

Aug. 10. The Duke of *Savoy* General of the *Spanish* army besieges St. *Quintin*; and having defeated the *French* at the battle of St. *Lourence*, makes himself master of St. *Quintin*.

The Pope recalls Cardinal *Pole* from his legation, and appoints *Peyto*, the Queen's Confessor, to succeed him; but the Queen forbids *Peyto*'s setting foot in *England*.

The Duke of *Guise* returning to *France*, the Pope is unable to act alone against King *Philip*, and therefore makes a peace with *Spain*, and restores *Pole* to his office of Legate.

The *Scots*, through the solicitations of *Henry II.* King of *France*, make an irruption into *England*.

Philip gives Queen *Mary* notice of a design formed against *Calais*.

1558. *Calais* is accordingly besieged by the Duke of *Guise*, and taken,

Jan. 1.

taken, as are also *Guisnes* and *Hames*; and all in less than *Ann. C.* fifteen days: Which occasions great murmurings among the people.

Philip presses the Queen to make a vigorous effort for the recovery of *Calais*, before *France* had time to repair and fortify it.

The Parliament meets, and grants the Queen a subsidy of 4*s.* in the pound of lands (8*s.* of Strangers) and 2*s.* and 8*d.* of goods from every person worth 5*l.* — And likewise a fifteenth. — The Clergy granted at the same time 8*s.* in the pound, to be paid in four years.

20.

An act is made, for confirmation of all Letters Patents, &c. made by the King and Queen, or by the Queen since the beginning of her Reign; or seven years after the passing of this act.

Ambrose and *Robert Dudley*, two sons of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, are restored in blood.

The Parliament is prorogued.

Mar. 7.

Ferdinand I. is declared Emperor, upon the resignation *14.* of *Charles V.*

Francis the Dauphin marries *Mary Queen of Scotland*; *April 28.* the States of that Kingdom consent he should take the title of King of *Scotland*.

The King of *Sweden* demands the Princess *Elizabeth* in marriage: But she excuses herself.

The persecution is kindled afresh; and, during this reign, there were 284 Protestants inhumanly burnt.

Edward Lord Clinton puts to sea with 140 sail, in order to make an attempt upon *Brest*; but finding it too difficult, *June.* he only burns *Conquest*, and then retires.

Reg. 6.

The Emperor *Charles V.* dies.

Sept. 17.

A peace begins to be negotiated at *Cambray* between *October.* *France*, *England*, and *Spain*.

The Parliament meets again, and makes some difficulty *Nov. 5.* of granting a subsidy, that was required.

Queen *Mary* dies, after having reigned five years, four months, and eleven days: And was buried in King *Henry* the VIIth's Chapel at *Westminster*.

17.

Cardinal *Pole* dies sixteen hours after her.

The Character of Queen M A R Y.

The excessive bigotry of Queen *Mary* is evident from the History of her Reign. To this she joined a temper cruel and vindictive, which she endeavoured to confound with zeal

for

An. C. for Religion. But when it was not possible to unite them, she plainly shewed, she was inclined to cruelty, as well by nature as zeal. She had the misfortune to be encouraged in this disposition by all who approached her. King *Philip* was naturally morose. *Gardiner* was one of the most revengeful men living. *Bonner* was a fury; and the other Bishops were chosen from amongst the most cruel and barbarous of the Clergy. This was the quality by which alone a man was thought worthy of the Episcopal Dignity. The persecution therefore against the Protestants in this Reign, has nothing which ought to seem strange. Dr. *Burnet* says, *Mary* had a generous disposition of mind. It were to be wished, he had given us some passages of her life, where this generosity appeared. For my part (says *Rapin*) I find but one action to approve in her whole Reign. This was her rejecting the Spanish Ambassador's project, to make herself absolute at the expence of the laws and liberties of the Nation. She discovered no great capacity in the Government of her Dominions; and the loss of *Calais*, though there was not something more odious, would be an everlasting blot upon her Reign.

An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture of the first of Queen *Mary*, a pound weight of Gold, of the old Standard, was coined into thirty-six pounds; and a pound weight of Silver, eleven ounces fine, was coined into three pounds by tale.

The Gold Coins of this Queen, are, Sovereigns at 30 s. Half-Sovereigns at 15 s. Angels at 10 s. and Half-Angels at 5 s. a piece.—The money before her marriage has her head half-faced, crowned, MARIA D. G. ANG. FRA. Z. HIB. REGI. Reverse, the arms of *France* and *England* quartered, VERITAS. TEMPORIS. FILIA. (Fig. 1). Those after her marriage have only her head as before, but her husband's name in the Legend, PHILIP. Z. MARIA. D. G. REX. Z. REGINA. Reverse, POSVIMVS. DEVVM. ADVITO. NOS. — Her Sovereign, (called by Mr. *Evelyn*, a Ryal, and which, he says was scattered at her Coronation) has, on one side, the Queen in her Robes, with Crown, Scepter, and Ball, sitting upon her Throne; at her feet a portcullice, MARIA. D. G. ANG. FRA. Z. HIB. REGINA. MDLIII. Reverse, a large full blown Rose, filling up the space, with the arms of *France* and *England*, quartered in the center, A. DNO. FACTV.

FACTV. EST. ISTVD. Z. EST. MIRA. IN. OCVL.
NRIS. The Angel has on the Reverse, the Queen's arms
in a ship, with a cross for the mast, and the star and letter
M. on each side, inscribed, A. DNO. FACTVM. EST.
ISTVD. Camden mentions a Crown of Gold of this
Queen whereon was, MVNDI. SALVS. VNICA. —
The silver moneys of Queen Mary are, Shillings, Six-
pences, and Groats; to which Bishop Nicolson adds, Half-
Groats, and Pennies; but Thoresby says, he never saw or
heard of any of these last. Upon the Shillings of Philip and
Mary are both their heads facing each other under a Crown,



PHILIP. ET. MARIA. D. GR. ANG. FR. NEAP. PR.
HISP. 1554. Reverse, the arms of Spain and the Queen's,
impaled, crowned, and XII. POSVIMVS. &c. There is
another sort of these Shillings, wanting the date. (See Fig. 2.)
Another, PHILIP. ET MARIA. D. G. REX. ET.
REGINA, ANG. Reverse, as the former, The Emperor
Charles V. resigning Spain to his son Philip in 1555, oc-
caſioned an alteration in Philip's style, his and the Queen's
title, being now upon the Great Seal, *Rex & Regina, Angl.*
Hispaniar. Franc. utriusque Sicilie, &c. The Irish Shilling,
before the Queen's marriage gave her head crowned, MA-
RIA. D. G. ANG. FRA. Z. HIB. REGINA. Reverse,
a Harp betwixt M. and R. all crowned, VERITAS.
TEMPORIS. FILIA. MDLII.

Ann. C.

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

- 1553. *Edward, Baron Courtney*,—Earl of *Devonshire*.
- 3 Sept. *Edward North*, Baron *North*, of *Kerthing*.
- 1553-4. *Thomas Howard*, Baron *Howard of Effingham*.
- 17 Feb. *John Williams*, Baron *Williams of Tame*.
- 1554. *John Bruges*, Baron *Chandos*.
- 5 April. *Anibony Brown*, Viscount *Montacute*.
- 8 April. *Thomas Percy*, Baron *Percy*—and the next day restored
- 2 Sept. *30 April. Earl of Northumberland*.
- 1557. *George Hastings*, Baron *Hastings of Loughborough*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of Queen
M A R Y.

- Philip King of Spain*, of that name the second, afterwards King of *England*.
- Henry Ratcliffe*, Earl of *Suffex*.
- Emanuel Philibert*, Duke of *Savoy*.
- William Howard*, Lord *Howard of Effingham*.
- Anthony Brown*, Viscount *Montacute*.
- Sir Edward Hastings*, Knight, afterwards Lord *Hastings of Loughborough*.
- Thomas Ratcliff*, Earl of *Suffex*.
- William Grey*, Lord *Grey of Wilton*.
- Sir Robert Rochester*.

B O O K XVII.

*The Reign of Queen ELIZABETH: Containing
the space of forty-four years and four months.*

23. E L I Z A B E T H.

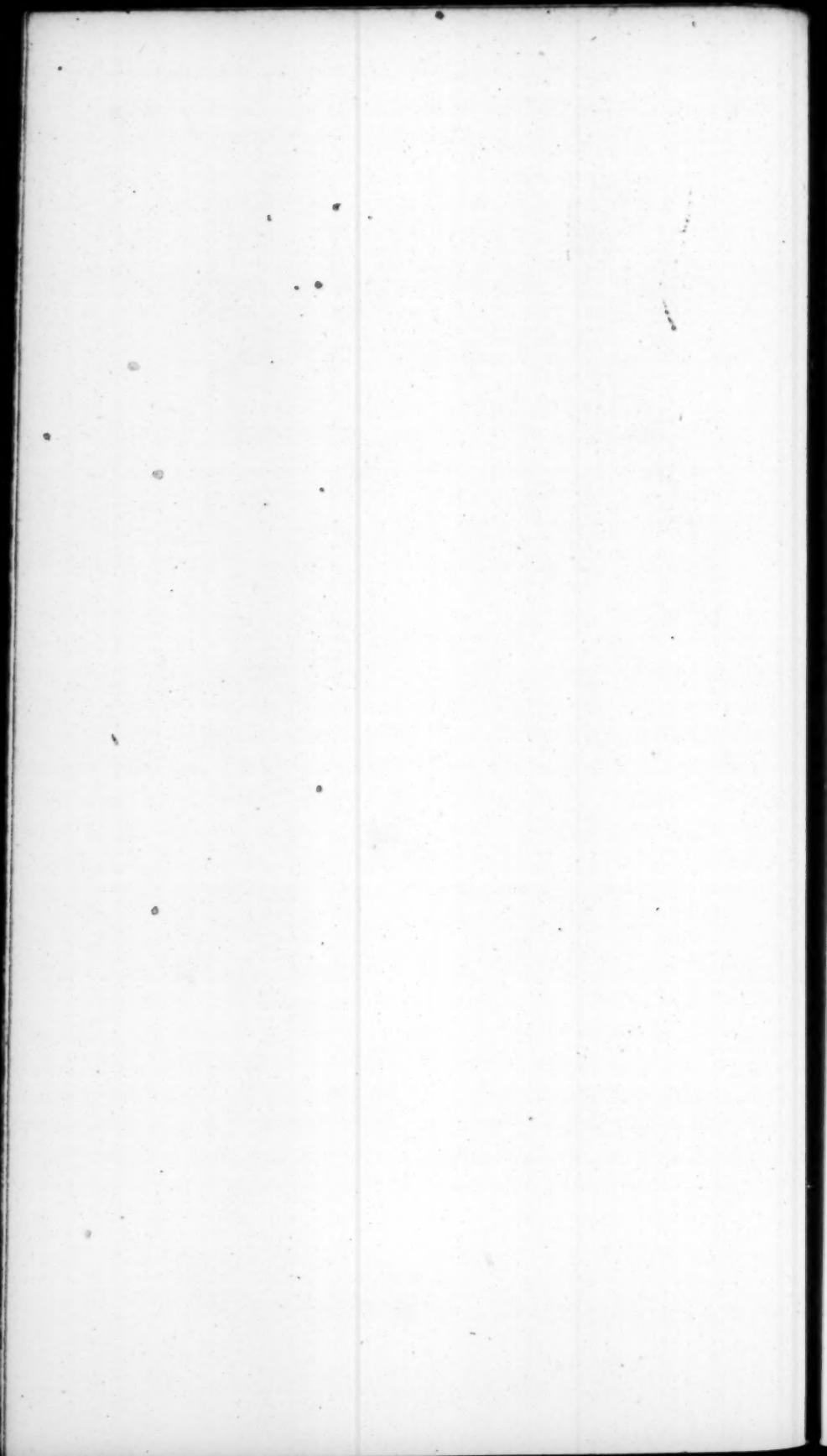
1558. *MARY Queen of Scotland*, and *Frances Duchess of Suffolk*, are *Elizabeth's* competitors to the Crown.
Reg. I. The House of Lords declare for *Elizabeth*; and the Commons concur with them in owning her for Queen.

Whereupon *Elizabeth* is proclaimed: She was then 25 years old.

She



G. Vertue sculp.



She comes attended to *London*, from *Hatfield*, by a numerous train of Lords and Ladies. *Ann. C. Nov. 19.*

Ambassadors are sent by her to all the principal Courts of *Europe*.

She forms a Council, in which she leaves thirteen of Queen *Mary's* Counsellors who were all zealous *Roman Catholics*; but adds to them eight new ones equally attached to the Protestant Religion.

Sir *Nicholas Bacon* is made Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, in the room of Archbishop *Heath*.

Philip II. King of *Spain* makes her an offer of marriage, which she objects against: But resolves, however, to preserve his friendship, if possible.

Queen *Elizabeth* examines before her Cabinet-Council, which were the properest methods to restore the Reformed Religion.

The Liturgy is revised; and the Queen allows, by a Proclamation, the Gospels and Epistles, the Lord's Prayer, Creed, Litany, and Ten Commandments to be read in *English*, but forbids all preaching on controversial subjects, &c.

The funeral of Queen *Mary* is solemnized.

Dec. 13.

Some Gentlemen in *Scotland* form an Association, under the name of *Congregation*, for the defence of the New, or Reformed Religion. The Queen-Regent gives them permission to celebrate Divine Service in their own way.

Several eminent Protestants, in *England*, are promoted to honours. *1559. January 15.*

Queen *Elizabeth* is crowned by *Owen Oglethorpe*, Bishop of *Carlisle*; the rest of the Bishops refusing to assist at that solemnity.

The Parliament meets, and makes an act, for reviving several statutes, against the Pope, and for the Supremacy of the Crown, that had been repealed by Queen *Mary*.

As also an act for the Uniformity of the Common-Prayer, and Service in the Church, and Administration of the Sacraments.

And another for recognition of the Queen's title to the imperial Crown of this Realm.

By clause 18, in the first of these statutes, the High-Commission-Court is erected.

The tenths, first-fruits, and impropriated tithes, are restored to the Crown, by another act.

This Parliament grants her Majesty a subsidy of 2*s. 8d.* in the pound of goods, and 4*s.* of lands, to be paid at two several

- Ann. C.* several payments ; and two tenths, and two fifteenths. They also granted her tonnage and poundage for life.
- Feb. 4.* The Commons address the Queen to marry : She declares to them, that she had no inclination to it.
- The Queen forbids preaching without license.
- Mar. 31.* A Conference is held about Religion, but without success.
- April.* Of 9400 beneficed Clergymen that were in *England*, only 1½ Bishops, 12 Deans, 12 Archdeacons, 15 Heads of Colleges, 50 Canons, and about 80 of the Parochial Clergy, refuse to embrace the Reformation.
- April 2.* A peace is signed at *Cateau* between *England* and *France*. A treaty is signed, the same day, between Queen *Elizabeth*, and the King and Queen of *Scotland*.
- King *Henry II.* orders his son, the Dauphin, and his daughter-in-law, *Mary*, Queen of *Scots*, to take the arms of *England*; of which Sir *Nicholas Throckmorton*, the *English* Ambassador at the Court of *France*, complains, to no purpose.
- The Queen-Regent of *Scotland* forbids the Protestants of that Kingdom the exercise of their Religion, and resolves to banish their Ministers; which occasions disturbances in that Kingdom.
- James Melvil* is sent into *Scotland* by the King of *France*, to know, whether *James Stewart*, Prior of St. *Andrew's*, aspired to that Crown.
- May 8.* Divine Service begins to be performed in *English*.
- July 10.* *Henry II.*, King of *France*, dies.
- 24.* A truce is concluded in *Scotland*, between the Regent and the Confederate Protestants;
- But the new King of *France*, *Francis II.*, sends troops into *Scotland*, and the truce is broken.
- The Duke of *Guise*, and Cardinal of *Lorrain*, rule in *France*, with an absolute sway : They send 3000 men into *Scotland*, with orders to join the Catholics of *England* for dethroning Queen *Elizabeth*.
- Philip II.* breaks in upon the privileges of the inhabitants of the *Low-Countries*.
- Septemb.* He sets out for *Spain*, and leaves the government of the *Low-Countries* to *Margaret*, Duchess of *Parma*.
- Reg. 2.* Pope *Paul IV.* dies, and is succeeded by *Pius V.*
- Nov. 18.* *Cuthbert Tonstal*, late Bishop of *Durham*, dies.
- 1560.* A treaty is concluded between Queen *Elizabeth* and the Confederate *Scots*; and she sends an army to their assistance:
- Feb. 27.* Whereupon, the Queen-Regent of *Scotland* retires to the Castle of *Edinburgh*.

The

The Lord Grey, of Wilton, enters Scotland with the Eng- Ann. C.
ish army, which is joined by the Confederate Scots, and Mar. 30.
they besiege Leith.

Queen Elizabeth publishes a Manifesto, wherein she de-
clares her reasons for concerning herself with the affairs of
Scotland.

France offers to restore Calais to her, if she would re-
call her forces out of Scotland : She refuses that offer.

The conspiracy of Amboise being discovered in France, a
truce is concluded between England and Scotland.

The Queen-Regent of Scotland dies.

June 10.

A peace is negotiated between England and Scotland, at July.
Edinburgh : And, soon after a treaty is concluded between 7.
Queen Elizabeth, the King and Queen of France, and Scot-
land, and the Confederate Scots.

The treaty, so far as it relates to Scotland, is executed ;
but Francis II. refuses to ratify the particular treaty made
with Elizabeth ; wherein he and his wife, Mary, Queen of
Scots, engaged not to assume the title of King and Queen
of England, nor bear the arms of these Kingdoms.

Charles, Archduke of Austria, Erick, King of Sweden,
the Duke of Holstein, James Hamilton, Earl of Arran, and
several others, make their addresses to Queen Elizabeth :
But Robert Dudley flatters himself with having the greatest
share in her affection ; and indeed he was in great favour
with her.

But Sir Nicholas Bacon, Keeper of the Great Seal, and
Sir William Cecil, Secretary of State, were her chief Fa-
vourites, and Prime Ministers.

Philip II. receives the Ambassy from Queen Elizabeth
with great coldness, and refuses to renew the ancient Al-
liance between England and the House of Burgundy : Nay,
he returns back her Ambassador the Collar of the Order of
the Garter.

Pope Pius IV. tries, in vain, to persuade Queen Eliza- Sept. 2.
beth to embrace Popery.

She restores the coin to its true value and purity.

Westminster-Abbey is turned into a Collegiate Church, for
a Dean and 12 Prebendaries, &c.

The conspiracy of Amboise, against the Duke of Lorrain
and his brothers, is discovered, and 1200 persons put to Reg. 3.
death for it.

The States of Scotland establish the Reformation, and de- Dec. 5.
molish all the Monasteries.

Francis II., King of France, dies, and is succeeded by
Charles IX., a minor. The

Ann. C. The ill success of Philip II, against Dragut, King of Tripoli, obliges him to recall his forces out of the Netherlands.

Catharine de Medici, Mother to Charles IX, prevails with the King of Navarre to yield the Regency to her.

Mary of Scotland quits the title of Queen of England.

Queen Elizabeth presses her to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh, but she returns an evasive answer; for which reason, when Queen Mary was preparing to return to Scotland, and sent to Queen Elizabeth for a safe-conduct, she refused to give her one.

1561. *Mary* arrives in Scotland, and is received there with great *Aug. 21.* demonstrations of joy.

The Roman Catholics form the design of restoring their Religion in Scotland, and supplanting James Steuart, the Queen's natural brother, who supported the Reformation.

Queen Mary sends an Ambassador to Queen Elizabeth, to desire her friendship; and, at the same time, She and the Scots Nobility send a letter to Queen Elizabeth, to persuade her to declare Queen Mary her presumptive Heir. Elizabeth is offended at that proposal, and calls upon Queen Mary to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh.

James Steuart, Prior of St. Andrew's, is created Earl of Murray, and John Arreskin Earl of Marr.

Reg. 4. Queen Elizabeth refuses to receive a Nuncio from the Pope.

Being in danger from all sides, she provides a good fleet, and makes all other preparations for her defence and security.

Orders the pensions to be regularly paid to the Monks, with satisfaction for the arrears due to them.

This year, gun-powder was first made in England; and a fine mine of copper discovered in Cumberland.

1562. The Countess of Lenox, holding a secret correspondence with Queen Mary of Scotland, she and her husband are imprisoned.

Arthur Pole and his brother, and Sir Anthony Fortescue, form a conspiracy against the Queen. They are tried, and condemned; but the Queen grants them a pardon.

Catharine Grey is sent to the Tower, and her marriage with Edward Seymour Earl of Hertford annulled: She dies in prison nine years after.

The Huguenots send to Queen Elizabeth to desire her assistance; She concludes a treaty with them.

Septemb. The English troops sent to their assistance, enter Dieppi, and take possession of Havre de Grace.

The King of Navarre, General of the Huguenots, takes *Ann. C.* *Rouen* by storm; but he dies of a wound which he received at the siege of that place.

A battle is fought at *Dreux*, between the Catholics and Huguenots.

A plot against *James Steuart Earl of Murroy*, contrived by the Duke of *Chatelerault*, and the Earls of *Huntley* and *Borthwell*, is discovered.

George Gordon, Earl of *Huntley*, forms the design to carry off Queen *Mary*, and force her to marry *George* his eldest son; the Earl of *Murray* saves her.

The Earl of *Huntley* persisting in his design, and having assembled some forces, is defeated by the Earl of *Murray*, and taken prisoner: He dies shortly after.

George Gordon his son, is condemned to die; but the sentence is not executed.

A new Parliament meets at *Westminster*; which grants *1563.* the Queen a subsidy, and two fifteenths and tenths: The *Jan. 12.* Clergy also give a subsidy of six shillings in the pound to be paid in three years. — The following statutes were then enacted,

For the assurance of the Queen's Royal Power [or Supremacy] over all estates and subjects within her Dominions.

For the maintenance of the Navy. — For punishment of wilful perjury. — Against clipping and filing of coins. For the punishment of vagabonds called *Egyptians*. — For translating the Bible and Common-Prayer-book into *Welsh*, &c.

The Duke of *Guise* is slain by *Peltrot*, at the siege of *Orleans*.

The Huguenots make a peace with the King of *France*, without taking any notice of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Havre de Grace is besieged and taken by *Charles IX.*

A truce, and, at length, peace is concluded between *France* and *England*.

The English forces, which had served in *France*, return to *July*. *England*, and bring the plague along with them.

The Cardinal of *Lorrain* proposes to Queen *Mary* a marriage between Her and the Archduke *Charles*: She asks *Reg. 6.* Queen *Elizabeth*'s advice about it, who persuades her to marry an Englishman: She desists from her marriage with the Archduke.

Frances Brandon, Duchess of *Suffolk*, dies; she was daughter to *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, by *Mary* second sister to King *Henry VIII.*

The

Ann. C. The peace between *France* and *England* is signed at *Troyes* 1564. in *Champagne*.

April 11. Queen *Elizabeth* sends to *Charles IX.* the Order of the Garter.

The commerce between *England* and the *Low-Countries*, having been interrupted for some time, is set again in the same state it formerly was in. It amounted yearly to above twelve millions of gold.

August. Queen *Elizabeth* visits the University of *Cambridge*, and makes a *Latin* oration there.

Queen *Mary* forms the design of marrying *Henry Steuart* Lord *Darnley*, son to the Countess of *Lenox*, grand-daughter to King *Henry VIII.*

She contrives means to draw him into *Scotland*, as well as his father *Matthew*, Earl of *Lenox*, who had been forced to withdraw into *England*.

Both she, and Queen *Elizabeth*, act towards each other with great dissimulation.

Sept. 29. Robert *Dudley* is made Earl of *Leicester*, and becomes the Queen's greatest favourite.

Queen *Elizabeth*, at a Conference held at *Berwick*, about Queen *Mary*'s marriage, gets her Deputies to propose the Earl of *Leicester* to that Queen for a husband. The proposal is received with great coldness.

Reg. 7. The Emperor *Ferdinand I.* dies, and is succeeded by his son *Maximilian II.*

1565. David *Rizzo*, a musician of *Turin*, becomes Queen *Mary*'s favourite, which proves the chief cause of her ensuing misfortunes.

February. The Lord *Darnley* arrives in *Scotland*, and contracts a friendship with *Rizzo*.

The Earl of *Murray*'s credit declines at Court : He joins with several Lords and others to prevent the Queen's marriage with the Lord *Darnley*, but in vain.

Queen *Mary* obtains a dispensation from the Pope for her marriage, and gets it also approved by the Lords of her Court : She asks the approbation of Queen *Elizabeth*, who endeavours to divert her from her purpose.

June 22. Queen *Elizabeth* recalls the Earl of *Lenox*, and his son the Lord *Darnley*, who excuse themselves from returning to *England* : Whereupon the Countess of *Lenox* is committed to the *Tower*.

July 29. Mary, Queen of *Scotland*, marries *Henry Steuart* Lord *Darnley*.

Several Lords (particularly the Duke of *Chatelerault*, and the

the Earls of *Murray*, *Argyle*, *Roxburgh*, and *Glencairn*) dis-
satisfied with it, take arms ; and, being pursued by her from
place to place, are forced to fly into *England*. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Mary* refuses to give audience to an Ambassador
sent by Queen *Elizabeth*, to demand, that the Lord *Darnley*
should be delivered up to her : but, however, returns
an answer to her letter.

Queen *Mary* conceives an extreme aversion for the King
her husband, and lives in a scandalous familiarity with
Rizzo ; whereupon that King privately recalls the fugitive
Lords to *Scotland*.

The Courts of *France* and *Spain* have an interview at *July*.
Bayonne, wherein they resolve to extirpate the Heretics. *Reg. 8.*

Pope *Pius IV.* dies : And is succeeded by *Pius V.* *Decemb.*

The States of *Scotland* meeting at *Edinburgh*, *Rizzo* 1566.
presses them to condemn the fugitive Lords. *January.*

Charles IX. sends an Ambassador to Queen *Elizabeth*.

Henry King of *Scotland* causes *Rizzo* to be assassinated, for *March 9.*
his scandalous familiarity with the Queen. And she is put
under a guard.

The King forsakes *Rizzo*'s murderers, who are obliged
to treat with the Queen ; but she deceives them, and ef-
capes to *Dunbar*.

Queen *Mary* re-assumes her authority, and pardons the
fugitive Lords.

Rizzo's murderers fly into *England* : The Queen causes
his body to be buried in the sepulchre of the Kings.

James Hepburn, Earl of *Bothwell*, comes to be in great
credit with *Mary Queen of Scots*.

Queen *Mary* forms the project of dethroning Queen
Elizabeth ; her designs are found out by means of a spy,
who being discovered, is arrested.

James, Queen *Mary*'s son, afterwards King of *England*
and *Scotland*, is born.

Queen *Mary* uses the King her husband ill, and lives in *June 19.*
a scandalous manner with *Bothwell* ; She refuses to ratify the
treaty of *Edinburgh*.

The King is treated in so injurious a manner, that he
resolves to withdraw to *Glasgow* to the Earl his father. He
is poisoned as he was going away, but overcomes the poi-
son.

Henry Fitz-Alan Earl of *Arundel*, quits *England* ; and
several *English* go into *Hungary* to war against the *Turks*.

Queen *Elizabeth* visits the University of *Oxford*. *Aug. 31.*

The Parliament meets, and forms the resolution of get. *Sept. 30.*

Ann. C. ting Queen *Mary* declared Queen *Elizabeth's* presumptive heir.

Nov. 5. The House of Lords sends the Lord-Keeper *Bacon* to Queen *Elizabeth* to beseech her to marry, or appoint a successor. She makes an ambiguous speech to both Houses, in order to shift off their demands ; and prorogues the Parliament.

The most remarkable statutes, made during this Session, were,

An act declaring the making and consecrating of the Archbishops and Bishops of this Realm, to be good, lawful, and perfect.—Another act declaring, that whereas there was but one Sheriff for *Surrey* and *Sussex* — one for *Essex* and *Hertfordshire*, — one for *Somerset* and *Dorset*, one for *Warwick* and *Leicester* — one for *Nottingham* and *Derby* — and one for *Oxford* and *Berkshire*, — each of those Counties should, for the future, have one Sheriff a-piece.

There was now granted a subsidy, and one tenth, and a fifteenth ; and the Clergy granted a subsidy of 4*s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years.

Reg. 9. Several great men in the *Low-Countries* form a Confederacy against the setting up of the Inquisition there.

Lewis, Count of *Nassau*, presents a petition to the Governess upon that affair, being accompanied with 400 men : And this was the origin of the name *Gueux*, or Beggars, given to the Protestants.

1567. Queen *Mary* orders the Prince, her son, to be removed from *Stirling* to *Edinburgh*.

The King, her husband, resolves to withdraw into *France*, or *Spain* ; she carelessly him, and persuades him to retire to *Edinburgh*.

Feb. 9. The Earl of *Murray* goes from Court, to see his wife, who was dangerously ill.

Feb. 10. Henry *Steuart*, King of *Scotland*, is stifled or strangled in his bed ; *Bathwell* is accused of causing him to be murdered. The Earl of *Murray* is, by some, charged with it.

The Queen commands him to be interred near *Rizzo*.

The Earl of *Murray* returns to Court, two days after the murder.

Queen *Mary*, in order to get *Edinburgh Castle* into her hands, suffers the Earl of *Marr* to carry away the Prince, her son, to *Stirling*.

Matthew Steuart, Earl of *Lenox*, accuses *Bathwell* of being the cause of the King his son's death, and demands justice against him ; but *Bathwell* is acquitted, by a number

of Lords, dependent on him, whom he drew together to *Anno. C.*
be an Assize.

Several persons endeavour to dissuade Queen *Mary* from marrying *Bothwell*, but she suffers herself to be carried off by him.

Whereupon, *Bothwell* gets himself divorced from his wife, who was daughter of the Earl of *Huntley*; and procures the Lords of the Court to sign a paper, in which they approved of his marriage with the Queen; immediately after which they are married.

May 15.

The Queen and *Bothwell* form a league, for their own defence, with several Lords; but the Earl of *Murray* refuses to sign it, and retires into *France*.

The Earls of *Argyle*, *Morton*, *Marr*, *Athol*, *Glencarn*, and the Baron of *Boyd*, sign a Confederacy to punish the King's murderers, and to dissolve the Queen's marriage.

They project to seize the Queen and *Bothwell* in *Edinburgh*, but they escape to *Borthwick*, and then to *Dunbar*; however, the Confederates advance to *Edinburgh*, which declares for them.

The Queen and *Bothwell* march with some troops towards that City, in order to surprize the Confederates; but, when the two armies were come near one another, the Queen, afraid of being deserted by her troops, capitulates with the Confederates, and puts herself into their hands: As for *Bothwell*, he retires to *Dunbar*.

The Queen is conducted to *Edinburgh*, and then shut up in *Loch-lewin Castle*.

A Casket of *Bothwell's* is intercepted, in which were found papers that discovered the whole plot against the late King.

Bothwell retires to the Isles of *Orkney*, and turns Pirate.

The Queen is obliged to resign the Crown to Prince *James*, her son; and, being allowed to appoint a Regent, she nominates the Earl of *Murray*.

June 24.

James VI, King of *Scotland*, is inaugurated.

June 29.

Some Lords meet together at *Hamilton Castle*, and form a party for the Queen.

The Earl of *Murray* arrives in *Scotland*, and loads the Queen with reproaches.

Aug. 11.

He is elected Regent, and invites the *Hamiltonians* to come and join with the rest of the States, but they refuse to come in.

20.

The government of *Edinburgh Castle* is taken from *Balfour*, and conferred on the Laird of *Grange*.

Ann. C. Eleven Lords sign an Association to release the Queen, and replace her on the Throne.

The Regent takes into his hands all the strong places of the Kingdom, and bestows the offices and governments as he judged necessary.

Queen Elizabeth demands of the King of France the restitution of *Calais*, according to the treaty of *Cateau*; but King *Charles* refuses to restore it.

A Negotiation is set on foot for the marriage of Queen *Elizabeth* with the Archduke *Charles*: The Negotiation comes to nothing.

John Basilowitz, Grand Duke of *Muscovy*, sends Ambassadors to Queen *Elizabeth*, to conclude with her a league offensive and defensive: The Queen returns him a doubtful answer.

Shan O'Neal raises a Rebellion in *Ireland*, but he is slain by his own people.

The Duchess of *Norfolk* dies, which gives the Duke an opportunity of aspiring to marry the Queen of *Scots*.

Ferdinand of Toledo, Duke of *Alva*, is sent with an army of *Spaniards* into the *Low-Countries* to chastise the inhabitants: He causes *Claude Lamoral*, Count of *Egmont*, and Count *Horn*, to be beheaded. *Montigny* suffers the same punishment in *Spain*; and all the Prince of *Orange's* lands are confiscated.

The Court of France levies troops to extirpate the *Huguenots*; but the Prince of *Condé* draws the *Huguenots* together, and blocks up *Paris*; and *La Nouë* takes *Orleans*.
Sept. 1. *Nov. 10.* A battle is fought at the gates of *Paris*, wherein the
Reg. 10. Constable *Montmorency* is slain.

1568. This year, the *Royal Exchange* in *London* was finished.

The threats and intreaties of Queen *Elizabeth* procure the *French Huguenots* a peace.

Catharine de Medici proposes a marriage between her son, the Duke of *Anjou*, and Queen *Elizabeth*, in order to tie her hands from assisting the *Huguenots*.

Philip II. confines Queen *Elizabeth's* Ambassador to a country village, and some *English* ships are taken in the *West-Indies* by the *Spaniards*.

Bathwell, being pursued by the Laird of *Grange*, escapes to *Denmark*, where he is thrown into prison.

Several of the Earl of *Murray's* party forsake him.

May 2. Mary Queen of *Scots* escapes out of *Loch-levin Castle*, and marches with 6000 men against the Regent, who had but

but 4000 : They come to an engagement near *Glasgow*, and *Ann. C.*
the Queen is defeated.

13.

She flies towards the borders of *England*, and sends *John Beton* to Queen *Elizabeth*, to desire her protection, and leave to retire into *England*.

16.

But, before *Beton's* return, Queen *Mary* arrives in *England*, and writes to Queen *Elizabeth*, who orders her to be conducted to *Carlisle*, and treated as a Queen: But she refuses to see her, till she had cleared herself of her husband's murder.

The English Council is divided in their opinions about the manner of disposing of that Queen: Queen *Elizabeth* resolves to detain her.

The Earl of *Murray*, Regent of *Scotland*, notwithstanding the endeavours of the contrary party, and Queen *Elizabeth's* solicitations, calls a Parliament, in order to get those condemned that had taken up arms in favour of the Queen; and then he raises an army to pursue those who were condemned.

Queen *Mary* offers to appoint Commissioners to defend her cause before Queen *Elizabeth*: Whereupon Queen *Elizabeth* writes to the Regent, to send Deputies to examine into that affair. He resolves to go himself, with eleven Deputies.

The Conference about it is opened at *York*, and removed Oct. 4. to *Westminster*, and then to *Hampton-Court*; but, after a Nov. 25, full examination of both parties, Queen *Elizabeth* forbears &c. to decide the matter.

Decemb.

The Earl of *Murray* informs her of what had passed Reg. II. between him and the Duke of *Norfolk*, and shews her some of Queen *Mary's* intercepted letters.

Queen *Elizabeth*, having had intimations of some plots in favour of Queen *Mary*, orders her to be removed to *Tutbury Castle*.

The Huguenots, being persecuted in *France*, apply to Queen *Elizabeth* for assistance, who sends them 100,000 crowns of gold, with a good train of artillery.

The Duke of *Alva* persecutes so severely the Protestants in the *Low-Countries*, that the Prince of *Orange* is forced to retire among the Huguenots of *France*, and abundance of Flemish families come and settle in *England*.

Queen *Elizabeth* stops a large sum of money belonging to Decemb. some Italian Merchants, and designed to be seized by the Duke of *Alva*; which occasions a dispute between Her and the Court of *Spain*.

Ann. C. A new translation of the Bible, commonly called the *Bishops Bible*, was published this year.

1569. Some English Lords, who looked upon Secretary *Cecil* as the Queen of Scots most dangerous enemy, contrive his ruin; but Queen Elizabeth protects him.

John Story, an Englishman, the Duke of *Alva's* spy in the *Low-Countries*, is decoyed on board a ship, and brought to *England*, where, after a long imprisonment, he is hanged.

Hostilities are committed between Queen *Elizabeth* and *Philip II*, who tries to raise Rebellions in *England* and *Ireland*.

Mar. 13. The battle of *Jarnac* is fought, wherein the Prince of *Condé*, General of the Huguenots, is slain. Some time after, the Duke of *Deuxponts* leads an army into *France* to their assistance; but, dying there, he leaves the command of the army to Count *Mansfeldt*.

Septemb. The Huguenots besiege *Poitiers*, but are forced to raise *OCTOBER.* the siege. Moreover, they are defeated at the battle of *Moncontour*.

Aug. 27. Queen *Elizabeth* makes an Alliance with the *Czar*, and obtains several privileges for the *Russia Company*.

Queen *Mary's* friends project a match between her and *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*. Queen *Mary* consents to it: And the project is also communicated to the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, who approve of it.

Queen *Elizabeth*, being informed of it by the Earl of *Leicester*, commands the Duke of *Norfolk* not to think of that marriage; he promises to desist from it.

OCTOB. But, shortly after, having received from *Scotland* a fuller account of his ill designs, the Queen sends him to the *Tower*: And his accomplices are banished the Court, except the Earl of *Leicester*.

NOVEMB. *Thomas Percy* Earl of *Northumberland*, and *Charles Nevil* Earl of *Westmoreland*, break out into a Rebellion: For fear they should release Queen *Mary*, *Elizabeth* orders her to be removed to *Coventry*.

REG. 12. Upon the approach of the Queen's troops, the two Earls fly out of the Kingdom, and the Rebels disperse: Some are taken and hanged for a terror, and the rest pardoned.

The Duke of *Alva* sends *Ciapine Vitelli* into *England*, under pretence of demanding the money stopped by the Queen, but in reality to be at hand to command the Rebels.

Some commotions are raised in *Ireland* by two of the Earl of *Ormond's* brothers, but are soon allayed.

Jame^s

James Hamilton Duke of Chateleraud tries to seize the *Ann. C.* Regency of *Scotland*, but miscarries in his attempt: He, and — *Maxwell Lord Herris*, are sent to prison.

Queen *Mary* writes to the States of *Scotland*, to desire that her marriage with *Bothwell* might be annulled, that she might be at liberty to marry the Duke of *Norfolk*.

Queen *Elizabeth* writes to them in behalf of Queen *Mary*; which was all but artifice. They return no answer to Queen *Mary*'s letter, but send one to Queen *Elizabeth*'s.

The Regent *Murray* orders *Lidington* to be apprehended, who is rescued by the Laird of *Grange*, but however kept confined.

Queen *Elizabeth* lends Admiral *Coligny* money upon the Queen of *Navarre*'s jewels; and gives leave that a company of a hundred Gentlemen Volunteers should be raised in *England*, to serve in the Huguenots army.

The Duke of *Alva* continues his oppressions in the *Low-Countries*, and sets up an Inquisition there.

The Regent of *Scotland* apprehends Thomas *Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, and imprisons him in *Loch-levin*. January.

James *Stewart* Earl of *Murray*, and Regent of *Scotland*, 23. is assassinated.

Walter *Scot* and Thomas *Carr* ravage the borders of *England*, in order to occasion a war between the two Kingdoms. 24.

Leonard *Dacres*, having raised an insurrection in the North, is defeated, and flies into *Flanders*. Feb. 22.

The Laird of *Lidington* is set at liberty, and labours for Queen *Mary*, by endeavouring to unite all the *Scots* into one party against *England*: But Queen *Elizabeth* avoids the snare, by complaining only of the authors of the late Invasion, and not of the whole Nation.

Queen *Mary*'s party endeavours, however, to incense Queen *Elizabeth* against the whole Nation, by publishing libels and slanders: She takes no notice of them, and prepares an army. To amuse her, and the rest of the *Scots*, is the business of *Mary*'s adherents, till the arrival of succours they expected from *France* and the *Netherlands*.

The Laird of *Grange* sets the Duke of *Chateleraud*, and the rest of the prisoners of the Queen of *Scots* party at liberty: They hold an assembly at *Linlithgow*, and afterwards at *Edinburgh*, of which latter they try in vain to become masters. April 9.

Upon the *English* army's approach, they offer to make Queen *Elizabeth* their umpire: She consents to be media-

Ann. C. trix between the two parties, reserving to herself the punishment of the violators of the peace.

17. The English army, commanded by Thomas Ratcliff Earl of *Suffex*, entering *Scotland*, ravages the lands of those who were concerned in the late incursion into *England*.

May. The States summoned in the King of *Scotland*'s name meet at *Edinburg*, and send to Queen *Elizabeth*, to bespeak her favour.

Queen *Mary*'s adherents besiege *Glasgow*; but Sir William Drury, Governor of *Berwick*, forces them to raise the siege.

The States of *Scotland* chuse an *Inter-rex*; and the choice falls upon Matthew Steuart, Earl of *Lenox*; who, shortly after, by Queen *Elizabeth*'s recommendation, is elected Regent.

He takes *Brechin Castle* from George Gordon, Earl of *Huntley*, and disperses his troops: Queen *Mary*'s party obtains a truce.

The Laird of *Grange* forms a third party in *Scotland*, in order to restore Queen *Mary* to the Throne.

At the same time, several plots are formed in *England* to free Queen *Mary*, especially one in *Norfolk*.

27. The Pope's bull against Queen *Elizabeth* dated February, 25, 1569, is fixed up in *London*, by J. Felton, who is executed for the same.

John *Lefley*, Bishop of *Ross*, Queen *Mary*'s Ambassador, is confined for being the chief promoter of all these plots.

Aug. 4. Notwithstanding them, Thomas Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*, is discharged from the *Tower*, though he was considered as the head of Queen *Mary*'s party.

Queen *Elizabeth* feigning to be desirous of restoring Queen *Mary*, sends Secretary *Cecil* to make captious proposals to her; she returns to them only a general answer, and desires that they may be communicated to the heads of her party in *Scotland*: Her adherents send particular answers to those proposals.

The Court of *France*, notwithstanding all their pretences, is not inclined to restore Queen *Mary* for fear of uniting thereby the Crowns of *England* and *Scotland*.

J. *Lefley*, Bishop of *Ross*, sollicits in vain the Pope, and the Kings of *France* and *Spain* in Queen *Mary*'s behalf.

Aug. Charles IX. King of *France* grants the Huguenots a peace only on purpose to amuse them.

Reg. 13. Catharine de Medicis proposes to Queen *Elizabeth* a match between her, and her son Charles IX; and upon her

Book XVII. 23. ELIZABETH. 151

her refusal, she proposes her second son *Henry Duke of Ann. C.*
Anjou,

William Cecil is created Baron of Burleigh. 1571.

Feb. 25.

A conference is held at *London* between the two *Scotch* factions; Queen *Elizabeth* prolongs the negotiation: And at length the conference breaks up without any thing being done.

Feb.

March.

April.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the Queen two fifteenths and tenths, and a subsidy of 2*s.* 8*d.* in the pound. The Clergy grants also a subsidy of 6*s.* to be paid in three years.

Apr. 2.

4.

The Acts now made, were: One declaring it High-treason, to intend destruction, or bodily harm, to the Queen, or to levy war, &c. against her. Another, against the bringing in, and putting in execution, Bulls, &c. from the See of *Rome*. One against usury. Another, injoining every Ecclesiastical person that takes a living to declare his assent to, and subscribe the XXXIX Articles, and to read them in his Church; and directing also, what other things are required upon an admission to a benefice. An Act confirming the convictions and attainders of *Charles Earl of Westmoreland*, and 57 others, &c.

The Earl of *Lenox*, Regent of *Scotland*, takes *Dunbar-ton*, by surprize; *James Hamilton* Archbishop of St. *Andrew's*, who was accused of being concerned in the late King's murder, being taken therein, is hanged.

March.

Sept.

Queen *Elizabeth's* Ministers engage her to negotiate her marriage with the Duke of *Anjou*; Sir *Francis Walsingham* being sent Ambassador to *France*, for that purpose a negotiation is accordingly set on foot; but both parties equally dissembled. At last, they cannot agree upon the article of Religion.

May.

Queen *Mary's* adherents become masters of *Edinburgh*; where the heads of them convene the States of their faction; and, at the same time, the Earl of *Lenox* assembles those of the King's party in the suburbs of the same city.

The Lords of this last party meet again at *Stirling*, and the Queen's at *Edinburgh*.

Aug.

The estates of the Queen's party form the project of carrying away by force the Lords of the King's party assembled at *Stirling*, which they successfully put in execution, and take the Regent and Earl of *Morton* prisoners: But the Earl of *Marr*, sallying out of the Castle with the Garrison, compells them to retire.

Ann. C. The Earl of Morton escapes; but Matthew Stewart Earl of Lenox, the Regent, being carried away, is murdered upon the road, in cold blood. In his room, John Erskin, Earl of Marr, is chosen Regent.

Sept. The negotiation about Queen Elizabeth's marriage with the Duke of Anjou breaks off.

Queen Mary dispatches Ridolpho to the Pope and the King of Spain, to implore their assistance: The Duke of Norfolk is also engaged again in her interest, and resumes the project of marrying her.

Ridolpho's intrigues being partly discovered, by letters sent by him to England, J. Lesley Bishop of Ross, who was found to be deeply concerned therein, is arrested,

Oct. 7. The Court discovers the Duke of Norfolk's designs; and he being committed again to the Tower, confesses part of what he was accused of.

24. The Bishop of Ross is brought before the Council, and charged with having attempted to disturb the peace of the Kingdom. He is sent to the Tower and examined.

Reg. 14. Queen Elizabeth informs the Court of France of the reasons that induced her to commit the Duke of Norfolk to the Tower.

Charles IX. cares less very much the Huguenots; and concludes a marriage with the Princess Margaret his sister, and the King of Navarre.

Queen Elizabeth refuses to assist William Prince of Orange.

Jan. 15. Died Sir William Petre, who had been Secretary and Privy-Counsellor to four Kings and Queens of this realm, and seven times Ambassador abroad.

16. The Duke of Norfolk is tried, and condemned to death for High-treason.

Mar. 10. Died Sir William Poulett Marquis of Winchester, and Lord High Treasurer.

May 8. The Parliament meets again: And passes an Act making it highly penal to go about to enlarge a prisoner condemned for High-treason.

April 11. A league offensive and defensive is signed at Blois between England and France.

Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk is beheaded.

June 2. Queen Elizabeth sends some Privy-Counsellors to examine Mary Queen of Scots, upon the points that had appeared against her at the Duke of Norfolk's trial.

7. She swears to the league with France.

15. Sir William Cecil is made Lord Treasurer.

The massacre of St. Bartholomew's, wherein Admiral *Ann. C.*
Chatillon and the Huguenots are butchered at *Paris*. *July 13.*

Charles IX. makes offers to Queen *Elizabeth* to renew *Aug. 24.*
 the league with a fresh oath; proposes a match between
 her and the Duke of *Alençon*; and desires her to stand
 godmother to his daughter. The Queen consents only to
 the last.

Thomas Percy Earl of *Northumberland*, is betrayed by the *22.*
 Earl of *Morton*, for a sum of money, and beheaded.

Queen *Elizabeth* suspects the Court of *France* with re-
 gard to *Scotland*; and the more, because *Charles IX.* fol-
 licits her to send the Queen of *Scots* into *France*.

The Count *de la Marck* take the *Brille* in *Holland*,
 whereupon the whole Province of *Holland* throws off the
Spanish yoke, as do also several towns in *Zealand*.

The Duke of *Medina-Celi*, sent from *Spain* with a Fleet
 to secure the *Netherlands*, is defeated by the Confederates.

Lewis Count of *Nassau* surprizes *Mons*; but the succours
 sent by *Charles IX.* to the Count of *Nassau* being defeated
 by the Duke of *Alva*, *Mons* is retaken by that Duke. And *Sept. 19.*
Frederico de Toledo, his son, takes *Zutphen*, *Naarden*, and
 other places.

John Erskin, Earl of *Marr*, Regent of *Scotland*, enters into
 a negotiation with Queen *Mary*'s party, in order to put an *Reg. 15.*
 end to the troubles in *Scotland*: But dying, *James Douglas* *Okt. 29.*
 Earl of *Morton* is chosen Regent in his room. He was en- *Nov. 24.*
 tirely devoted to *England*.

The Court of *France* sends *Verac* into *Scotland*, with
 money to support Queen *Mary*'s party; and to endeavour
 to ruin the Earl of *Morton*.

A marriage is proposed again between Queen *Elizabeth* *1573.*
 and *Henry Duke of Alençon*.

The Count of *Montgomery* fails from *England* with suc-
 cours for the relief of the *Protestants* blockaded up in *Ro-*
chelle, and Queen *Elizabeth* evades the complaints made to
 her by the Court of *France* about it.

The Regent of *Scotland* signs a treaty of peace with
 the Duke of *Chateleraud*, the Earls of *Huntley* and *Ar-*
gyle, and most of the rest of the Queen's party; and it is
 ratified by the States of the Kingdom.

The Laird of *Grange*, Governor of *Edinburgh Castle*,
 who was not included in the treaty, offers to surrender that
 Castle, in order to obstruct all agreement, till the arrival
 of forces from *France*. But the Regent, who knew his de-
 sign, makes a treaty with Queen *Elizabeth*; from whom *April.*
 having

Ann. C. having obtained a supply of troops and artillery, he besieges *May.* and makes himself master of *Edinburgh Castle.*

The Governor of it, Sir *William Kirkaldy*, Laird of *Grange*, and some others there taken, are hanged. And *Lidington*, another of the Queen's adherents, dies in prison.

Verac, the French Ambassador to *Scotland*, is forced by a storm into *Scarborough*, and sent to *London*.

June 25. The siege of *Rochelle* is raised.

Queen *Catharine de Medicis* discovers herself to *Walsingham* about the Queen of *Scots*, before she was aware.

John Lesley Bishop of *Ross*, promoter of all the plots in favour of Queen *Mary*, is driven out of *England*.

August. *Walter d'Evereux* Earl of *Essex*, obtains leave to go and conquer the country of *Clandeboye* in *Ireland* at his own expence; but has no success, because he was privately crossed by the Earl of *Leicester*.

Reg. 16. The Court of *France* presses Queen *Elizabeth*, about her marriage with the Duke of *Alençon*; and desires she would permit him to come and see her, but she desires him to put off his journey.

The Duke of *Anjou* is chosen King of *Poland*.

1574. *Catharine de Medicis* orders a guard to be set upon the Duke of *Alençon*, and the King of *Navarre*, for fear they should deprive their brother, the Duke of *Anjou* and King of *Poland*, of the Crown, which she endeavoured to secure to him.

May 30. *Charles IX.* King of *France* dies: The Duke of *Anjou*, King of *Poland*, succeeds him by the name of *Henry III.*

The Confederates in the *Low-Countries* seize *Middleburgh*. But *Lewis Count of Nassau*, who was leading an army to his brother the Prince of *Orange*, is defeated upon the Heath of *Moker*, and slain, with his brother *Henry*, and *Christopher Count Palatine*.

Reg. 17. The Spanish troops mutinying, surprize and plunder *Antwerp*.

Charles Steuart, Earl of *Lenox*, marries *Elizabeth Cavendish* unknown to the Queen, for which both their mothers are imprisoned.

1575. *Henry III.* makes war against the Huguenots, and renews with Queen *Elizabeth* the league of *Blois*, in order to tie her hands.

But, notwithstanding that, she supplies underhand the Prince of *Condé* with money, to pay the army Prince *Casimir Count Palatine* was levying for the Huguenots.

Matthew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies ; pure Ann. C.
was succeeded by *Edmund Grindall*. May 17.

A tumult arises on the borders of Scotland between the July.
English and *Scots*, but is appeased. Reg. 18.

James Hamilton, Duke of Chateleraud, and Earl of Ar- 1576.
ran, dies.

The Parliament meets again, according to its proroga- Feb. 8.
tion : And grants the Queen two tenths and fifteenths, and
a subsidy. The Clergy also give a subsidy of 6 s. in the
pound, to be paid in three years.

Lewis de Zuniga, Commander of *Requesens*, and Gover-
nor of the *Low-Countries*, dies ; shortly after, the *Spanish*
troops mutinying, plunder *Alost*. Whereupon a league is
concluded at *Brussels* to expel the *Spanish* troops. But they
being joined by the *Germans*, plunder *Maastricht* and *Antwerp*.

The Duke of *Alenson* drawing together an army in fa-
vour of the Huguenots : The King of France grants them May 9.
an advantageous peace ; but it was only with a view to
ruin them.

Martin Frobisher sails from *England*, to try to discover a June 15.
passage to *China* by the North of *America*.

Walter Devereux, Earl of *Essex*, dies in *Ireland*. The Sept. 22.
Earl of *Leicester* privately marries his widow, daughter of
Sir Robert Knolles.

Francis, Duke of *Alenson*, is drawn off from the Hugue- Oct. 1.
nots, and takes the title of Duke of *Anjou*. Reg. 19.

The Union, or Pacification of *Ghent*, is formed : As also
the beginning of the League, or Holy Union, in *France*.

Don John of *Austria* comes into the *Low-Countries*, full 1577.
of the ambitious project of making himself master of those *January*.
Countries ; and also of *Scotland* and *England*, by marrying
Mary Queen of Scots.

A perpetual edict is published for driving the *Spanish*
troops out of the *Low-Countries*, pursuant to the Pacifica-
tion of *Ghent*.

Don John surprizes the Castle of *Namur* : But the Arch-
duke *Matthias* being elected Governor-General of the
United Provinces, and the Prince of *Orange* declared his
Lieutenant : The States proclaim war against *Don John*.

They send also an Ambassy to Queen *Elizabeth*, who lends
them 100,000 l. sterling.

She writes to King *Philip II.* to excuse herself for so do-
ing.

The Huguenots of *France* finding a resolution was taken Reg. 20.
to extirpate them, enter into a Counter-League : And the

Ann. C. former edict of Pacification being revoked, hostilities are renewed on both sides ; but, shortly after, King *Henry III.* grants the Huguenots a peace.

1578. Pope *Gregory XIII.* wants to help his natural son *Jacomo Boncompagno* to the Crown of *Ireland*.

This project was first formed by *Thomas Stukely*, an *English* Fugitive, who persuaded the Pope, and *Philip II.* King of *Spain*, to undertake the conquest of that Kingdom. For that purpose, the Pope gives him men and ships, with which he sails from *Civita Vecchia*, and comes to *Lisbon*. But *Don Sebastian* King of *Portugal*, prevailing upon him to accompany him to *Africa*, in his expedition against the *Moors*; they are both slain at the battle of *Alcazar*.

Several Companies of *English* Volunteers go and serve the *States* of the *United-Provinces*.

Don John defeats the army of the *States* at the battle of *Gembloers*, and takes several places from them; notwithstanding which, the *States* reject a peace offered to them by *Philip II.*

The City of *Amsterdam* joins the Confederates; and the Government of that City, as also of *Haerlem*, *Utrecht*, and other places, is put into the hands of the Reformed.

Francis Duke of Anjou is chosen Protector of the *Belgic Liberties*.

Both he, and Prince *Casimire* bring the Confederates succours, but they prove of no service to them, by reason of discords that arose among the *States*.

Thereupon, the Duke of *Anjou* returns to *France*.

Don John of Austria dies. *Alexander Farnese*, Prince of *Parma*, takes upon him the command of his army.

The Duke of *Anjou* presses his marriage with Queen *Elizabeth*; she receives his Envoys very graciously, but gives him no positive answer.

The Earls of *Argyle* and *Athol*, being dissatisfied with the Earl of *Morton*, Regent of *Scotland*, persuade King *James VI.* to take the reins of the Government, which he accordingly doth.

Reg. 21. He sends Queen *Elizabeth* notice of it; and demands of her at the same time the estates belonging to his grandfather *Matthew Steuart*, Earl of *Lenox*, and desires her to renew the Alliance with *Scotland*. She evades the former part of his demand.

The Earl of *Morton* becomes master of *Stirling*, and of the King's person, and resumes his authority of Regent.

Shortly

Book XVII. 23. ELIZABETH. 157

Shortly after, the Earl of Athol, Chancellor of Scotland, Ann. C. dies.

Prince Casimire, whose troops were paid by Queen Elizabeth, comes to England, and is caressed in an extraordinary manner by the Queen : He is made Knight of the Garter. 1579. Jan. 22.

Sir Nicholas Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, dies.

He is succeeded by Sir Thomas Bromley, Lord Chancellor. Feb. 20.

Simié, the French Envoy, promotes the Duke of Anjou's marriage, and tries to ruin the Earl of Leicester : A pistol is fired in the Queen's Barge, when she was on the Thames July 17. with Simie and others.

The Duke of Anjou comes and pays a visit to Queen Elizabeth incognito.

Esme Stewart, Baron of Aubigny, and James Stewart of Ogiltry, King James's two Favourites, set him against the Earl of Merton, and try to make him fall out with England.

Negotiations for a peace in the Low-Countries are set on foot at Cologne, and come to nothing.

The Prince of Orange causes the union of Utrecht to be signed between Holland, Zealand, Friesland, and Utrecht ; 1580. to which Ghent and Ypres afterwards accede ; and the Prince January. is made Governor of Flanders.

The Prince of Parma takes Maestricht ; and afterwards Mechlin, Lisse, and Valenciennes declare for him.

Sir Thomas Gresham, founder of Gresham-College, and of Nov. 21. the Royal Exchange, dies.

Queen Elizabeth forbids by a proclamation the building of any new houses within three miles of the gates of the City of London.

The Parliament meets again, according to its prorogation ; and grants the Queen a subsidy, and two fifteenths. Jan. 16. The Clergy grant at the same time a subsidy of 6 s. 8 d. to be paid in three years. Among other acts, one passed, making it High-treason to be reconciled to the Romish Religion.

Four Priests sent to England from the English Seminaries at Rheims and Rome, are executed.

Robert Parsons and Edmund Campian, Jesuits, come to preach sedition in England, being the two first of that Order that were sent into the Kingdom. The Queen, hearing of it, issues out a proclamation, commanding all those, who had any children beyond sea, to call them home.

Some of the Family of Love come out of Holland to England.

Seven hundred Spaniards and Italians, sent by the Pope

Ann. C. and *Philip II.*, land in *Ireland*, under the command of *San Josepho*, and build a fort there. But being besieged therein, and forced to surrender at discretion, all the *Spaniards* are put to the sword, and the *Irish* that had joined them, hanged.

Nov. 3. *Francis Drake* returns to *England* from his voyage round the world : He sailed from *Plymouth*, Dec. 13, 1577.

Bernardine de Mendoza, the Spanish Ambassador, making loud complaints against *Drake*, for his having taken great quantities of gold and silver in the Spanish Settlements in *America* : The Queen repays part of the treasure.

Novemb. The religious war is renewed in *France*, and ends in a sixth treaty of peace.

Reg. 23. *Philip II.* takes possession of the Throne of *Portugal*, vacant by the death of King *Henry* : *Don Antonio*, Prior of *Crato*, endeavours to dispute the Crown with him, but in vain.

Esmé Stewart Baron of *Aubigny*, is, by King *James*, made Duke of *Lenox*, and *James Stewart* Earl of *Arran*.

Queen *Elizabeth* sends Sir *Robert Bowes* into *Scotland* to accuse the Duke of *Lenox* of holding with *France* intelligence destructive of *Scotland* and *England* ; but the Council of *Scotland* does not admit of the accusation.

The Queen, on her part, refuses audience to the Lord *Humes*, sent into *England* by King *James*, to clear his Favourite, the Earl of *Lenox*.

The Earl of *Morton* is accused of having been concerned in King *Henry Darnley*'s murder, and committed to prison.

1581. *Thomas Randolph* is sent by Queen *Elizabeth* to solicit in the Earl of *Morton*'s behalf, but not being able to obtain any thing, he tries in vain to stir up a Rebellion in *Scotland*. The Queen sends troops towards the borders ; but not desiring to enter into a war with King *James*, she orders them to retire.

June 2. *James Douglas* Earl of *Morton* is beheaded.

King *James*'s two Favourites, the Duke of *Lenox* and Earl of *Arran*, become odious to the people.

The articles of Queen *Elizabeth*'s marriage with the Duke of *Anjou* are agreed upon.

The Duke of *Anjou* is made Sovereign of the United Provinces ; and King *Philip II.* is declared, by the States, to have forfeited the Sovereignty of the *Netherlands*.

August. The Duke of *Anjou* constrains the Prince of *Parma* to raise the siege of *Cambray*, and is declared Prince thereof.

Queen *Elizabeth* starts difficulties about her marriage ; and

and requires that a league offensive and defensive should be *Ann. C.* concluded between *England* and *France*.

The Duke of *Anjou* arrives in *England*, where he is received with great honour and civilities. One day, the *Reg. 24.* Queen pulls a ring from her finger, and puts it on his; but, on a sudden, she alters her conduct with regard to him, and retracts all she had done.

Edmund Campian the Jesuit, and three other Priests, are *Dec. 1.* put to death.

Don Antonio of *Portugal* retires into *France*, and then into *England*.

The Duke of *Anjou* leaves *England*, and goes to *Antwerp*, where he is crowned Duke of *Brabant*. 1582. February.

Queen *Elizabeth* having thus disengaged *France* on the point of her marriage, and expecting no favour from *Spain*, is in a state of uncertainty, and relies entirely on the affection of her subjects.

She sends the order of the Garter to *Frederic II*, King *July.* of *Denmark*.

Henry III, King of *France*, warns Queen *Elizabeth* of the Duke of *Guise*'s design in favour of *Mary Queen of Scots*.

The *Ruthven* Conspiracy is formed in *Scotland*, by *William Ruthven* Earl of *Goury*, the Earls of *Marr*, *Lindsay*, &c. The Conspirators secure the King's person, and expel his two Favourites. Reg. 25.

Queen *Mary* agrees to make her son partner with her in the Royal authority, having hitherto refused to own him for King.

Pope *Gregory XIII.* reforms the Calendar.

Queen *Elizabeth* pretends to be willing to release *Mary Queen of Scots*: For that purpose, she sends some articles to her; but she meant only to amuse her and the world. 1583.

The Duke of *Anjou* attempts to seize, on one and the same day, *Antwerp*, and seven or eight other towns of the *Netherlands*, but miscarries, and is forced to retire into *France*.

Esmé Stewart Duke of *Lenox*, one of King *James's* Favourites, withdraws into *France*, and dies.

King *James* having declared, in a Convention of the States, that whatever the Lords of *Ruthven* had done was with his consent, is set at liberty.

But, shortly after, he recalls to Court his favourite *James Steuart*, Earl of *Arran*; who advises him to punish the Lords of *Ruthven*, notwithstanding the general pardon granted

Ann. C. granted to them; whereupon those Lords are forced to quit the Court.

Reg. 26. Queen Elizabeth sends Sir Francis Walsingham to give King James advice about the management of his affairs: The Ambassador brings back no very satisfactory answer.

This year died Edmund Grindal, Archbishop of Canterbury, and was succeeded by John Whitgift.

1584. A Conspiracy is formed in Scotland against James Stewart Earl of Arran, who was grown extremely proud and insolent, and persecuted his enemies without mercy. The Conspirators take Stirling.

But William Ruthven Earl of Gowrie, who was in the plot, being apprehended, the Conspirators are disheartened, and leave the Kingdom. The Earl is beheaded at Edinburgh.

Queen Elizabeth sends William Davison into Scotland to win the Earl of Arran to her interests; he succeeds in his Negotiation.

William Carey Lord Hunsdon, for England, and James Stewart Earl of Arran, for Scotland, meet upon the borders, and make a private treaty, whereby the Earl of Arran engaged to keep the King unmarried for three years.

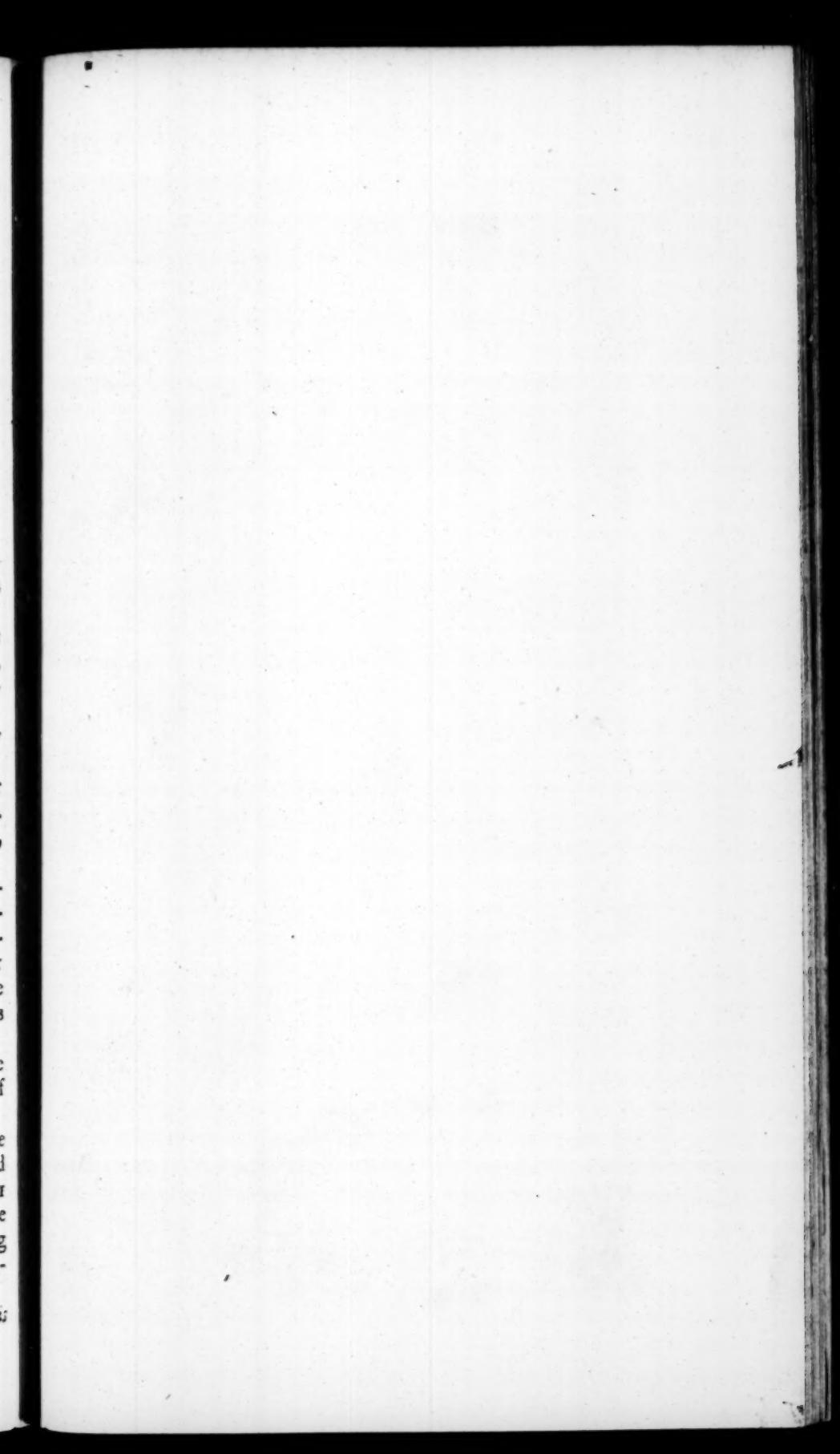
Queen Elizabeth discovers Queen Mary's secrets by means of the Master of Gray, Ambassador from Scotland.

A Conspiracy is discovered in favour of Queen Mary: Francis Throckmorton, one of the Conspirators, is arrested. But some of the others, particularly Thomas Lord Paget, and Charles Arundel, fly into France.

Several books are handed about, wherein Queen Elizabeth is slandered to the highest degree, and taxed with having put many Catholics to death without cause. Thereupon the Queen sends for the Judges, and blames them for their severity: They affirm, that no person had been made to suffer for his Religion, but only for dangerous practices against the State.

However, Elizabeth forbids the putting any person to the rack; and orders seventy Priests to be transported out of England, some of whom were under sentence of death.

Mendoza, the Spanish Ambassador, is discovered to have been in the plot for freeing Queen Mary. He is desired to come before the Council; where making but a poor defence, he is ordered to depart the Kingdom. And the Queen sends Sir William Waad to Spain, to inform King Philip of what had passed; but he refuses to give her Ambassador audience.





g. Vertue Sculp: 1722

Francis Throckmorton is executed.

Ann. C.

Queen Elizabeth renews the Negotiation with *Mary July 10.* Queen of Scots, in order to discover more fully the designs of her enemies; but the Negotiation is broken off.

Another plot is discovered between the Pope, the King of Spain, and the Duke of Guise, for invading England; whereupon, a general association of men of all degrees and conditions is formed in England, to prosecute to the death those that should attempt any thing against the Queen.

Queen Mary thinking herself thereby meant, and consequently in danger, sends some proposals to Queen Elizabeth, who rejects them; and taking Mary out of the Earl of Shrewsbury's hands, commits her to the custody of Sir Drugeon Drury and Sir Amias Paulet.

Francis Duke of Anjou dies. And the same day *William June 10,* Prince of Orange is assasinated at *Balthazar Gerard.* The States confer the Government of Holland and Zealand on Maurice his second son.

The Duke of Guise projects to seize the Throne of France, and renews the league.

The Duke of Parma lays siege to *Antwerp.* In this distress, the States resolve to put themselves under the protection of France; but King Henry III. refusing to accept of their offer, they apply to Queen Elizabeth.

A new Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants Nov. 23. the Queen one entire subsidy, and two fifteenths. The Clergy grant, at the same time, a subsidy of 6*s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years. In this Session, an act was made against Jesuits, Seminary Priests, &c. declaring it High-treason for them to come into the Realm, and felony for any one to relieve them. And another act, enjoining, That no Juryman shall be returned upon trials, but what hath an estate of 4*l.* a year, at least, of freehold.

The Parliament confirms also the general Association, and enacts, That 24 Commissioners at least, appointed by the Queen, should examine the offences of such as should make any open Invasion or Rebellion within the Realm, or attempt hurt to the Queen's person, by, or for pretending a title to the Crown.

The Duke of Guise signs a private league with the King Dec. 31. of Spain, to exclude Henry of Bourbon King of Navarre, and to raise the Cardinal of Bourbon to the Throne, after the death of Henry III.

William Parry conspires to kill Queen Elizabeth, for 1585, which he is executed.

Ann. C. Pope *Gregory XIII.* dies ; he is succeeded by *Sixtus V.*, who excommunicates the King of *Navarre* and the Prince of *Conde*.

April 25. Philip Howard, Earl of *Arundel*, is apprehended as he was going out of the Kingdom, and committed to the *Tower*.

June 21. Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*, shoots himself in the *Tower*, where he had been committed for being an accomplice in *Brockmorton's* plot.

Queen *Elizabeth* being threatened from all quarters, sends Sir *Thomas Bodley* into *Germany* and *Denmark*, to endeavour to persuade the Protestant Princes to make a league defensive with *England*.

She sends Edward *Wotton* into *Scotland*, to break the match between King *James* and the King of *Denmark's* eldest daughter.

July 16. Francis, Lord *Ruffel*, being killed on the borders of *Scotland*, the Earl of *Arran* is confined, on that account, to his house, and Queen *Elizabeth* demands a solemn reparation for that murder.

But not having immediate satisfaction, she permits the *Scotch* Fugitives, who had retired to *England*, to return to *Scotland*.

Upon their return to *Scotland*, they seize the King's person, and are restored to their estates ; however, the Earl of *Arran* escapes their hands.

Edward *Wotton* forms the project to bring King *James* away to *England*, but missing his aim, he privately retires.

Colonel *Steuart* begins a treaty at *Copenhagen*, about King *James's* marriage with one of the Princesses of *Denmark*.

Queen *Elizabeth* refuses the Sovereignty of the *United-Provinces*, offered her by the *States* : However, she makes a treaty with them, whereby she engages to send them succours ; and, for security of her being reimbursed, *Flushing*, *Rammekins*, and the *Brill*, are delivered to her.

Robert *Dudley*, Earl of *Leicester*, is appointed General of the *English* auxiliary forces.

Queen *Elizabeth* publishes a manifesto, to justify her conduct in assisting the *States*.

Septemb. Moreover, to prevent King *Philip*, she sends a large fleet into *America* to annoy the *Spanish* Settlements ; and that fleet takes St. *Jago*, one of the *Cape Verd Islands*, the Capital of St. *Domingo*, and *Carthagena* ; and burns St. *Antonio*, and St. *Helena* in *Florida* : They return to *England* with a very large booty.

Sir

Sir Walter Raleigh carries the first English Colony to *Vir-Ann. C. ginia.*

Ralph Lane brings the first Tobacco to *England.*

John Davis, who endeavoured to find a passage to *China Reg. 28.* by the North of *America,* discovers a new Streight in the Northern Seas, under the Polar Circle.

Henry III. is compelled, by the intrigues of the Duke of *Guise,* to forsake the Duke of *Navarre,* to publish an edict against the Huguenots, and to join with the Duke in extirpating them.

The Prince of *Condé* being thereupon forced to fly to *England,* Queen Elizabeth supplies him with 50,000 crowns, and lends him 10 ships, with which he raises the blockade of *Rochelle.*

The family of the *Bourks* raises, this, and the following year, great disturbances in *Ireland,* which are appeased by the good conduct of Sir Richard Bingham.

The Earl of *Leicester* goes over to *Holland,* and is declared by the States Governor and Captain-General of *Holland, Zealand, and the United-Provinces,* and invested *Jan. 6.* with almost an absolute power.

Feb. 6.

Queen Elizabeth, afraid of being further engaged than she intended, complains bitterly to the States for investing the Earl with that title, and severely reprimands him for accepting of it.

She proposes to King *James* a league for the defence of *May.* the Protestant Religion. The French Ambassador uses all *June.* his endeavours to obstruct it; but, notwithstanding that, *July 5.* a treaty of Alliance and strict Friendship between the two Crowns is signed at *Berwick.*

A conspiracy, formed by *William (and Gilbert) Gifford, July.* *John Savage, John Ballard, Anthony Babington,* and others, to assassinate Queen Elizabeth, is discovered.

Queen Mary approves of the design, as it tended to her deliverance, and keeps a correspondence with Babington, one of the Conspirators.

By Babington's persuasion, six persons engage with him to assassinate Queen Elizabeth.

But Gilbert Gifford discovers the whole conspiracy to Sir Francis Walsingham, who makes use of him to deliver Queen Mary's letters, and bring back her answers.

All the Conspirators are apprehended at the same time: *July.* They impeach one another, and discover the whole business. Whereupon, Queen Mary's papers are seized, and

M 2

her

Ann. C. her two Secretaries, *Nau* and *Curle*, apprehended, and conducted to *London*.

An artifice is used to get several papers, relating to Queen *Mary*, out of the *French Ambassador's* hands.

Sept. 20. Fourteen of the Conspirators are executed.

21. Queen *Elizabeth* sends Sir *Edward Wotton* to the King of *France*, with authentic copies of Queen *Mary's* letters.

The *English Court* being now resolved to try and condemn Queen *Mary*, as the prime cause of these repeated conspiracies, Queen *Elizabeth* appoints, for that purpose, *42* Commissioners, to whom were joined five of the Judges of the Realm.

Okt. 11. Thirty-six of the Commissioners meeting at *Fotheringhay Castle*, where Queen *Mary* was then in custody, send her Queen *Elizabeth's* letter; but she peremptorily denies that Queen *Elizabeth* had any jurisdiction over her, and disputes two whole days the authority of her Judges.

14. Being prevailed upon, at last, to plead, the Judges meet in the Hall of *Fotheringhay Castle*; and Queen *Mary*, appearing before them, puts herself upon her trial.

She offers to answer in full Parliament, provided she might be declared the next Heir to the Crown.

25. The Court adjourns to *Westminster*; and, meeting again in the Star-Chamber, pronounces sentence against Queen *Mary*. It contained, in general, that *Mary* had broken the Statute passed last year.

The Judges declare, the same day, that the sentence passed against Queen *Mary* did not prejudice the Rights of King *James*, her son.

Okt. 29. A new Parliament meets, which, having confirmed the sentence against the Queen of *Scots*, as just, true, and ho-

Nov. 12. nourable, petitions Queen *Elizabeth* to put it in execution:

Reg. 29. She returns an ambiguous answer, the drift whereof was to let them know, that she was extremely troubled and irresolute.

14. She desires the two Houses to find out some expedient, whereby the Queen of *Scots* life might be saved, and her own safety provided for; but both Houses insist upon their demand: The Queen answers them in a speech of the same nature as her former.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 15th of *February* following.

Queen *Mary* is informed of her sentence, and receives the news of it with great firmness of mind.

L'Aubespine, the French Ambassador, sollicits in vain in *Ann. C.* her behalf.

The sentence passed against her is published in *London*, Dec. 6. and throughout the Kingdom.

Queen *Mary* writes to Queen *Elizabeth*, desiring of her certain favours about her death, burial, and domestics.

James, King of *Scotland*, intercedes for his Mother, but to no purpose.

Henry III., King of *France*, sends an Ambassador to intreat, seemingly, Queen *Elizabeth* in Queen *Mary*'s behalf; but, privately, to sollicit her death; as the Master of *Gray*, sent by King *James*, had done before.

The Earl of *Leicester* having been invested with so exorbitant a power, as we have seen above, forms a project destructive of the liberties of the *United-Provinces*. He returns to *England*, November 23, this year, after a fruitless campaign.

L'Aubespine, the French Ambassador, bribes an Assassin to murder Queen *Elizabeth*: This being made public, the people loudly call for Queen *Mary*'s death. 1587.

Queen *Elizabeth* delivers to Secretary *Davison* a writ, Feb. 1. signed with her own hand, commanding him to draw a warrant under the Great Seal for the Queen of *Scots* execution; but withal, she enjoins him to acquaint no man therewith.

The next day, she sends him word, not to draw the warrant; whereupon, being told, that it was drawn, and under seal already, she is angry, and blames *Davison* for making such haste; mean while, she leaves the warrant in his hands.

Davison, puzzled at the Queen's contrary proceedings, imparts what was done, to one of the Council, who informs the rest of the Counsellors of the matter.

The Council unanimously resolves to put the warrant in execution; and it is given to *Beal*, who sets out for *Fotheringhay*, with two Executioners.

After *Beal*'s departure, the Queen tells *Davison*, she had changed her mind; and yet no care is taken to call *Beal* back, though there was seven days between his departure, and Queen *Mary*'s execution.

Thus, through Queen *Elizabeth*'s negligence, or the forwardness of her Ministers, *Mary Steuart*, Queen of *Scotland*, is beheaded. Feb. 8.

Queen *Elizabeth* appears so extremely displeased at it, that she drives the Privy-Counsellors from her presence,

Anno. C. and commands them to be examined in the Star-Chamber.

A few days after, she writes a letter to King *James*, to clear herself; and causes *Davison* to be tried for contempt and disobedience to her orders: He is condemned in a fine of 10,000*l.* and to be imprisoned during the Queen's pleasure.

Feb. 15. King *James* was, at first, for revenging the death of the Queen, his Mother; but the great dependance, he had upon Queen *Elizabeth*, soon stifles his resentment.

April 12. The Parliament meets again, and grants the Queen a subsidy, and two fifteenths. The Clergy grant, at the same time, a subsidy of 6*s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years; and, moreover, a subsidy of 3*s.* in the pound.

Sir *Thomas Bromley*, Lord Chancellor, dies, and is succeeded by Sir *Christopher Hatton*.

The Queen, hearing the *Spaniard* was making great preparations to invade *England*, sends Sir *Francis Drake* with a good fleet upon the coast of *Spain*: He goes to *Cadiz*, where he burns above a hundred vessels, and two galleons: Then returning to *Cape St. Vincent*, he does great damage along the coast, and plunders and burns several ships in the mouth of the *Tajo*: From thence he sails to the *Azores*, and takes a rich carack.

Thomas *Cavendish* plunders at the same time the coasts of *Chili* and *Peru*.

The States of the United-Provinces send Ambassadors to *England*, to complain of the Earl of *Leicester*, and give the command of their army to Count *Maurice of Nassau*.

June 25. The Earl of *Leicester* returns to *Holland*, to oblige the Duke of *Parma* to raise the siege of *Sluys*, but does not succeed. Finding himself mistrusted, he resolves to seize the Sovereignty of the *Low-Countries* by force, and for that purpose, attempts to make himself master of several places at once; but his attempt upon *Leyden* being discovered, the Queen is obliged to recall him.

Nov. 10. Peregrine *Bartu*, Lord *Willoughby of Eresby*, is sent in his room, but with no other authority than the command of the English troops.

Philip II, King of *Spain*, prepares to invade *England*: At the same time, to amuse Queen *Elizabeth*, he desires her to be mediatrix for a peace between *Spain* and the *Netherlands*: Negotiations are set on foot for that purpose; but the preparations that were making in *Spain* cause them to be broken off.

Pope *Sixtus V.* sides with *Philip II.* against *England*; *Ann. C.*
and thunders out a bull against Queen *Elizabeth*, absolving
her subjects from their oath of allegiance, and giving her
Kingdoms to the first that should seize them.

Whilst *Philip* is carrying on his preparations against *Eng-* Reg. 30.
land, the Duke of *Parma* causes an army of 30,000 men
to advance towards the coast of the *Low-Countries*, in order
to join the *Spanish* fleet, and make a descent in *England*.

Queen *Elizabeth* puts herself in a posture of defence, both 1588.
by sea and land, and caresles the King of *Scotland*.

The Duke of *Guise's* faction prepare to attack King *May*.
Henry III., and chain the streets, which was called the Bar-
ricadoes of *Paris*.

The *Spanish Invincible Armada* (designed for invading *May 19.*
England) after three years preparation, sails out of the
Tajo, under the command of *Alfonzo Perez de Guzman*,
Duke of *Medina Sidonia*; consisting of 132 ships, besides
20 caravels for the service of the army, and 10 falves with
6 oars a-piece.

They had not been long at sea, before they were dis- July.
persed by a violent storm: But being rejoined, they sail all 12.
together from the *Grayne*.

They enter the Channel, and from that day till the 27th, 20.
have several sharp engagements with the *English* fleet.

The *Spanish Vice-Admiral's* ship is disabled. 21.

One of their galleons is taken, and another of their 22.
ships burnt.

Four of their ships are taken, and three sunk. 23.

The *English* and *Dutch* ships, that were stationed on the
coast of *Flanders*, hinder the Duke of *Parma* from putting
to sea.

The *Spanish Armada* comes to anchor off *Calais*, intend- 27.
ing for *Dunkirk*, where they were to be joined by the
Duke of *Parma*: But the *English* Admiral sends eight
fire-ships among them, which puts the whole *Spanish* fleet
into such consternation, that they cut their cables, and are
dispersed. Some of their ships fall into the hands of the
English and *Zealanders*. 28.

The *Spaniards* would have fain retreated through the
Streights of *Calais*, but the wind being boisterous and con-
trary, they resolve to return to *Spain* by the North of
Scotland. 31.

On the coasts of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, they lose 19 *August.*
ships, and 5394 men.—And in the whole lost 35 ships, and *Septemb.*

Ann. C. above 13,000 men. Whereas the *English* lost only one ship, and about 100 men.

The Queen hath a public thanksgiving for this great deliverance.

Sept. 4. Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester dies.

Reg. 31. The Duke of Parma besieges Bergen-op-zoom; but the brave defence of the Lord Willoughby, the Governor, constrains him to raise the siege.

Decemb. Henry III, King of France, causes the Duke of Guise, and his brother the Cardinal of Lorrain, to be assassinated.

Frederic II, King of Denmark, being informed, that King James had some thoughts of marrying Catharine, sister to the King of Navarre, gives his eldest daughter (whom King James had demanded) in marriage to the Duke of Brunswick.

1589. George Gordon Earl of Huntley, and the Earl of Bothwel, *January.* son of John Prior of Coldingham, form a conspiracy against James King of Scotland.

Feb. 4. A new Parliament meets at Westminster, which grants the Queen two subsidies of 2*s.* 8*d.* in the pound, and four fifteenths, and a tenth. The Clergy give two subsidies of 6*s.* in the pound, to be paid yearly by 2*s.* in the pound. Among other things, it was then enacted, That no person shall build, maintain, or uphold any cottage, unless he lays to it four acres of land at least.

April 14. Philip Howard Earl of Arundel is condemned to die for treason, but is pardoned.

Queen Elizabeth persuades Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Norris to undertake an expedition against Spain, chiefly at their own charge. They sail from Plymouth, land at the Greyne, and carry the lower-town by storm: Conde de Andrada, who was marching to the relief of the place, is defeated, with the loss of 3000 men.

May 16. Being joined by the Earl of Essex, with some ships he had armed at his own charge, they sail towards Portugal, and take Peniche, which they restore to Don Antonio. In the mean time, Sir John Norris marches by land to Lisbon, and takes the Suburbs of St. Catharine; but, Drake not being able to come up the Tagus with the fleet, Norris thinks fit to retire. However, Drake takes the town of Cascaes, and blows up the Castle.

June. In the Tajo, the English seize sixty vessels laden with corn and naval stores, belonging to the Hans-Towns; for which those towns send great complaints to Queen Elizabeth; but she maintains they were lawful prizes.

In their return to *England*, the *English* take and burn *Ann. C.*
Vigo.

The Leaguers in *France* stir up almost the whole Kingdom to a revolt against King *Henry III*, who is forced to call in the King of *Navarre* and the Huguenots to his assistance. He lays siege to *Paris*; but is stabbed in the belly, *Aug. 1.* with a dagger, by *James Clement*, a *Jacobin Monk*.

Before he expires, he nominates the King of *Navarre* for his Successor, who takes the name of *Henry IV*, and was the first of the House of *Bourbon*.

The new King applies to Queen *Elizabeth* for assistance *Septemb.* against the Leaguers: She sends him both men and money; but the Duke of *Mayenne* causes the old Cardinal of *Bourbon* to be proclaimed King.

King *James* marries *Anne*, the King of *Denmark's* second daughter: In her passage to *Scotland*, she being forced by a storm on the coast of *Norway*, King *James* goes thither *Reg. 32.* to her, and stays till the *May* following.

Queen *Elizabeth* manages her revenues with admirable economy.

Sir *Francis Walsingham*, Secretary of State, and Chancellor of the Duchy of *Lancaster*, dies. *1590.* *Apr. 6.*

Henry IV. gains the battle of *IVry* against the Duke of *Mayenne*; after which, he blocks up *Paris*, and takes the Suburbs: But the Duke of *Parma* constrains him to raise the blockade, which having done, he returns into the *Low-Countries*.

In the mean time, Count *Maurice* takes *Breda* by surprise, and makes some farther progress.

The Duke of *Mercoeur*, of the House of *Lorrain*, becomes master of *Bretagne*, by the help of the *Spaniards*. *Reg. 33.*

King *Henry IV*, being hard pressed by the Leaguers and *Spaniards*, makes a treaty with Queen *Elizabeth*, who in *June 25.* engages to send 3000 men into *Bretagne* and *Picardy*, to hinder the *Spaniards* from settling there.

These not sufficing, she sends 4000 more, under the command of *Robert Duvreux*, Earl of *Essex*, to be employed only in the siege of *Roan*; but King *Henry*, instead of that, designing to send them into *Champagne*, the Earl of *Essex* returns to *England*, leaving, however, his troops behind him.

The Queen, thus disappointed, complains of King *Henry*, who causes *Roan* to be invested, to satisfy her: Whereupon, the Earl of *Essex*, pursuant to his solemn promise to *Henry*, though contrary to the Queen's express order, re-

pairs

Ann. C. pairs to the siege. The Queen is very angry with the Earl for so doing; but he soon returns to *England*, and pacifies her.

King Henry sends *Du Plessis Mornay* to Queen Elizabeth, to demand a further supply of 5000 men; but he can obtain nothing more from her.

The Duke of *Parma* raises the siege of *Roan*.

Thomas Howard, the Duke of *Norfolk*'s second son, goes to the *Azores* to wait for the *Spanish* plate-fleet, homeward bound, from *America*; but does not succeed in his design: However, the *English* take several *Spanish* ships, and particularly one, in which they found 22,000 indulgences for the *Spaniards* of *America*.

Nov. 20. Sir *Christopher Hatton*, Lord Chancellor, dies, and is succeeded by Sir *John Puckering*, Lord-Keeper, the 28th of *May*, 1592.

This year, *Edmund Coppinger*, *Henry Arthington*, and *William Hacket*, three blasphemous Sectaries, under pretence of a further Reformation, cause great disturbances in the Kingdom; *Hacket* is hanged, and *Coppinger* dies in *Bridewell*.

1592. Queen *Elizabeth* makes a new treaty with *Henry IV*, in pursuance of which she sends 4000 men into *Bretagne*, under the command of *Sir John Norris*: But *Henry IV*, deceives her, by causing her troops to serve in *Normandy*, instead of *Bretagne*; at which the Queen is highly angry.

July. The Earl of *Bothwell* makes a fresh attempt to become master of King *James's* person; but being discovered, he is forced to fly into *England*.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* sets sail for *America*, and takes a *Spanish* carrack with five decks, that was coming back from the *Indies*, richly laden, worth 150,000*l.*

Sept. 6. The *Thames* was dried up at *London*, so that a man might *Reg. 35.* ride through it.

Alexander Farnese, Duke of *Parma*, dies.

1593. A new Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants *Feb. 19.* three subsidies of 2*s.* 8*d.* in the pound, of goods, and 4*s.* of lands; together with six fifteenths and tenths, amounting, in all, to 280,000*l.* At the same time, the Clergy advance two whole subsidies of 4*s.* in the pound, to be paid in two years. This Parliament, among other acts, passes a severe one against all persons which should obstinately refuse to repair to some Church, or usual place of common Prayer. And another, for restraining of *Popish Recusants* to some certain places of abode.

Queen

Queen Elizabeth hearing, that King James was ruled by *Ann. C.* suspicious persons, and that the *Spaniards*, assisted by the Catholics, were contriving some plots, she sends the Lord *Brough* to give King James advice, and to enquire into those plots.

King James demands the Earl of *Bothwell*; Queen Elizabeth refuses to give him up, but banishes him out of *England*: He thereupon withdraws to his own house in *Scotland*, and has even the boldness to come into the King's presence, who finding him supported by a strong party, is forced to grant him a pardon.

King James is suspected of favouring the Catholics, and keeps about his person men who seemed to have no zeal for the Protestant Religion.

King Henry IV. changes his Religion: He endeavours to excuse himself for it to Queen Elizabeth, who writes him a very sharp letter.

The King of *Spain*'s great preparations induce Queen *October*. Elizabeth to conclude a league offensive and defensive with King Henry, though he had given her great reason to complain, for his non-performance of the treaties she had concluded with him.

Richard Hesquet is hanged for persuading *Ferdinand Stanley*, Earl of *Derby*, to take the title of King; but the Earl, who had discovered his treason, dies shortly after, of a strange kind of poison.

The Count *de Fuentes*, and *Don Diego d'Ibarra*, govern Reg. 36. the *Low-Countries*, after the Duke of *Farma*'s death; and project to invade *England* with a *Spanish* army, by the way of *Scotland*.

They bribe two *Portuguese*, and *Roderigo Lopez*, a *Jew*, 1594, Queen Elizabeth's Physician, to poison her; but it being found out, Lopez and his accomplices are executed.

It is discovered, that *Ibarra* had suborned *Patrick Cullen*, *Edmund York*, and *Richard Williams*, to assassinate her, and others to set the fleet on fire: *Cullen* is hanged, and the rest some time after. The Queen complains of these plots to the Archduke *Ernest*, but has no redress.

Henry IV. becomes master of *Paris*, and then carries the Mar. 22. war into *Bretagne*. Sir *Martin Forbisher* is wounded there at the siege of *Crodon*, and dies shortly after his return to *Plymouth*. Sir *John Norris* is recalled from thence, and sent into *Ireland*.

Queen Elizabeth, hearing that the *Spanish* faction was very powerful at the Court of *Scotland*, sends the Lord

Zouch

Ann. C. Zouch to sollicit King James to proceed against the Catholics : He brings no very satisfactory answer.

Reg. 37. the town of *Leith*; but having some disadvantage in the first engagement with the King's troops, he retires to the borders : Queen Elizabeth forbids any to harbour or conceal him.

1595. King James is so well pleased with this, that he alters his conduct, and proceeds vigorously against the Catholics : Whereupon they form the project of placing the Crown of England upon the head of *Isabella*, Infanta of Spain ; and *Philip* prepares to second them. This produces a hearty union between King James and Queen Elizabeth.

Hugh O'Neal Earl of *Tir-Oen* rebels in Ireland, in expectation of assistance from the Spaniards.

Henry IV, having declared war against Spain, demands succours from Queen Elizabeth, who complains of him, and refuses his request.

Febr. Edmund York and Richard Williams are executed.

April. Ferdinand de *Velasco*, Constable of *Castile*, enters *Franche-Comté* with a large army : At the same time, the Count de *Fuentes* invades *Picardy*, and becomes master of *Catelet*; then he besieges *Dourlens*, beats the French, who came to its relief, and takes the town by storm. Shortly after, he also becomes master of *Cambray*.

King Henry, being thus hard pressed, sends *Lomenie* to Queen Elizabeth, to demand a powerful aid ; which she refusing, the Ambassador speaks haughtily to her.

July. The Spaniards make a descent in *Cornwall*, and burn *Mouse-hole*, *Neulin*, and *Pensance*.

King Henry IV. accuses the *States of the United-Provinces* of violating their Alliance with him, and threatens to make a separate peace : Wherefore, to appease him, they send him money, troops, and corn.

At this Queen Elizabeth being displeased, demands to be reimbursed for the charges she had been at upon their account : But they accommodate matters with her for a time.

The *Hans-Towns* carry their complaints against Queen Elizabeth to the diet of the Empire, for the plundering of their ships in the *Tajo* in 1589.

Reg. 38. Sir Walter Raleigh makes a second expedition into America at his own charge. The Queen sends, at the same time, 26 ships there, under the command of Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins : They have but little success, and the two last die in the expedition.

A jealousy

A jealousy arises between Sir *John Norris*, and the Lord *Arb^tell Lieutenant of Ireland*, which stops the progress of the English arms in that Kingdom, and is the cause of the Earl of *Tir-Oen's* obtaining a truce.

King *Henry IV.* besieges *La Fere*: In the mean time, 1596. Cardinal *Arb^tert Archduke of Austria*, goes and lays siege to *Calais*.

In this distress, King *Henry* demands assistance of Queen *Elizabeth*, April, who sends accordingly a body of men to *Dover*, under the command of the Earl of *Essex*; but before they could pass over into *France*, *Calais* and *Ardres* were taken by the *Spaniards*.

Sir *Thomas Egerton* is made Lord Chancellor, in the room *May 6.* of Sir *John Puckering* deceased.

Queen *Elizabeth* lends King *Henry* a sum of money, on the security of his Ambassadors.

She fits out a fleet against *Spain* of 150 sail (among which were 24 *Dutch* ships) under the command of Sir *Charles Howard*: The land-forces were commanded by *Robert Devereux Earl of Essex*.

The English fleet arrives before *Cadiz*: At their approach, the Spanish ships retire to the *Puntals*; but the English, attacking them with great resolution, force the Spaniards to sink them, and escape to shore. Whereupon, the Spanish Admiral ship, with two others, are burnt, two are taken, and most of the others run a-shore.

At the same time, Sir *Walter Raleigh* burns a fleet of merchant-ships at *Port-Real*: And the Earl of *Essex*, having made himself master of *Cadiz*, plunders and burns that town, with some adjacent villages.

It was next proposed, to go to the *Azores*, and wait for the *Indian* carracs; but the majority being against it, the English fleet returns to *England*. August.

Sir *Thomas Bodley* is recommended by the Earl of *Essex* to the Queen to be Secretary of State; but, without any regard to his recommendation, Sir *Robert Cecil* is made Secretary, and *Francis Vere Governor of the Brie*.

Queen *Elizabeth* renews her applications to the States of the *United-Provinces* for payment of her arrears; they put her off.

A league offensive and defensive is concluded between *August.* *France* and *England*, to which the *United-Provinces* accede. Septemb.

Philip II. makes another effort to conquer *England*, and Reg. 39. fits out a fleet for that purpose; but his fleet is dispersed by a tempest. Prince

Ann. C. Prince Maurice defeats the Spaniards at the battle of Turnhout. But, on the other side, Hermand Telles *January. tocarrero* surprizes Amiens.

Mar. 10. Queen Elizabeth, having received advice of an intended *May.* expedition of the Spaniards against Ireland, equips a fleet of six-score vessels, under the command of the Earl of Essex, and Sir Walter Raleigh, in order to go and seize the isles of Azores: They return to England without doing any thing of moment.

At the same time, a Spanish fleet that was sailing towards England, in order to make a descent upon Cornwall, is dispersed by a storm.

May. King Henry IV, having resolved to recover Amiens, forms the siege of that place; and summons Queen Elizabeth to send the 4000 men stipulated by the treaty.

She offers to send them, provided he would pay them; whereupon, King Henry threatens to make a peace without her. But the Queen justifies her conduct from the words of the treaty; and at length lends Henry money instead of troops. Amiens is retaken by the French.

The dispute between England and the Hanse-Towns being revived, Queen Elizabeth prohibits all commerce between them and England.

Oct. 24. King Henry privately negotiates a peace with Spain; whereupon Queen Elizabeth calls a Parliament, which per-

Reg. 40. ceiving the danger of an immediate invasion, grants the Queen three subsidies of 2*s. 8d.* in the pound, of goods, and 4*s.* of lands, with six fifteenths and tenths. The Clergy grant at the same time, three subsidies of 4*s.* in the pounds to be paid at three several days. The chief acts, now made, were, One for punishment of rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars. Another for erecting hospitals and working-houses for the poor.

Feb. Queen Elizabeth sends Ambassadors to France; but, before their arrival, King Henry had concluded a peace with Spain; of which the Ambassadors highly complain; and

May 2. the Queen herself writes him a very severe letter.

Notwithstanding all that, King Henry's Plenipotentiaries sign the treaty at Vervins, in which his Allies the English and Dutch were not included: He ratifies it, the 12th of June following.

Aug. 4. William Cecil, Baron Burleigh, Lord Treasurer, dies; and was succeeded in that high office by Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst.

Aug. 16. Queen Elizabeth being resolved to continue the war with Spain, makes a new treaty with the States of the United Provinces.

King

King James makes an almost open demand to be declared Queen Elizabeth's presumptive heir; and writes a letter to the Pope, which is shewn to Queen Elizabeth. *Ann. C.*

Hugh O'Neal, Earl of Tir-Oen, causes in the meantime, great disturbances in Ireland, and becomes formidable there. *Sept. 13.*

Philip II. King of Spain dies.

He assigned the Sovereignty of the Low-Countries, as a portion to the Infanta Isabella his daughter, when she married the Archduke Albert; Philip III. his son succeeds him.

Queen Elizabeth gives the Earl of Essex a box on the ear, for his insolent behaviour in Council; but he is soon after readmitted to favour. *Reg. 41.*

Edward Squire having conspired to destroy Queen Elizabeth, by poisoning the pummel of her saddle, is arraigned, and executed. *Nov. 9. 13.*

The Province of Munster in Ireland revolts; and the Irish fancy, that, with the assistance of the Pope and Spain, the Earl of Tir-Oen would free them from the English yoke. *1599.*

Thereupon Robert Devereux Earl of Essex, is made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland; and sets out for that Kingdom March. with a very numerous army; but acts directly contrary to his instructions, for he treats with the Earl of Tir-Oen, and grants him a truce, till May the next year. *Mar. 12.*

At this the Queen is so incensed, that she suspects the Earl of Essex of ill designs, and writes him a very angry letter.

This letter makes such impression on him, that he resolves to return to England with the flower of his army, and be revenged on his enemies; but Henry Wriothesley Earl of Southampton dissuades him from so dangerous a resolution.

However, attended with a few officers, he comes to England without leave, to justify himself before the Queen; *Sept. 28. Oct. 2.* and defending himself very ill, is confined at the Lord-Keeper's.

He writes an apology, wherein he vindicates himself but very poorly.

Mean while, the Earl of Tir-Oen hearing the Earl of Essex was under arrest, breaks the truce, and does great mischief to the English inhabitants in Ireland.

The friends and relations of the Earl of Essex loudly complaining of his treatment, railing against the ministry, and inciting the people to an insurrection in his favour, the Queen assembles the Privy-Council, and gets them to October. examine

Ann. C. examine the Earl's conduct; they unanimously condemn
Reg. 42. it. Whereupon, he gives himself up to devotion.

The Archduke *Andrew* proposes a peace to Queen *Elizabeth*, only with a design to amuse her.

1600. The Earl of *Tir-Oen* reduces the whole Province of *Ulster* to his obedience; and tries to become master of

Feb. the whole Kingdom: But *Charles Blount*, Lord *Montjoy*, the new Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and Sir *George Carew* President of *Munster*, going over thither, stop his progress.

May. A conference is held at *Boulogne* for a peace between *England* and *Spain*; but it comes to nothing.

The *East-India-Company* is founded by the Queen, and invested with large privileges.

July 2. Prince *Maurice* defeats the Archduke *Albert*, at the battle of the *Dunes*, or *Newport*.

Pope *Clement VIII.* sends two briefs into *England*, one addressed to the *Romish* Clergy, and the other to the People; in which he forbids them to acknowledge, after the death of *Elizabeth*, any Prince who would not swear to support the Popish Religion with all his might; these briefs were aimed at King *James*.

Aug. 5. The *Ruthvens*, sons to the late Earl *Goury*, conspire to murder the said *James* King of *Scotland*, but he escapes: In the attempt, the two *Ruthvens* are killed; their accomplices are condemned to death; and by an act of Parliament, all that bore the name of *Ruthven*, are obliged to quit it.

The Queen content with having humbled the Earl of *Essex*, permits him to retire to his own house, under the free custody of Sir *Richard Berkley*.

But his friends and domestics proclaiming his innocence, and prejudicing the Nation against the Queen, by asserting she prosecuted him unjustly; she causes him to be examined before the Privy-Council; where he is accused of want of respect to the Queen, and of contempt to her orders:

Reg. 43. He owns himself guilty, and is condemned to be suspended from his offices of Earl-Marshall and Master of the Ordnance, to be removed from the Council-board, and to be imprisoned during the Queen's pleasure.

This sentence he receives with so much humility, that the Queen leaves him at full liberty, but forbids him the Court.

Shortly after, the Queen having refused him the continuation of the Farm of the *Sweet Wines*, he forms the dangerous design of restoring himself to favour by force, and

and of destroying all his enemies at Court : And by cabal- *Ann. C.*
ling, and entertaining disaffected persons, puts himself ab- 1601.
solutely out of the Queen's favour.

He writes to James King of Scotland, that a design was laid to deprive him of the Crown of England, and to place it upon the head of the Infanta of Spain.

He forms a Council consisting of Presbyterian Ministers, of Papists, and Swordsmen ; with this Council he resolves to seize the Palace and the Queen's person.

The Privy-Council sends for him at the Lord-Treasurer's house, but he excuses himself from going, and determines to excite an insurrection in London. *Feb. 7.*

The Queen sends to him the Lord-Keeper Egerton, Edward Somerset Earl of Worcester, Sir William Knowles, and Sir John Popham ; but he detains them prisoners, and marches into the City to raise an insurrection.

There he meets with no assistance, nor encouragement ; *Feb. 8.*
and being proclaimed a traitor, returns to his own house, by water, with great difficulty, where he is immediately invested by the Lord Admiral. At length he surrenders, and is, with his principal followers, committed to the Tower ; the rest of his accomplices are sent to other prisons.

Thomas Lee, the Earl of Essex's creature, is hanged, for *Feb. 17.*
plotting to rescue that Earl by force out of the Tower.

Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, and Henry Wriothesley, 19.
Earl of Southampton, are brought to their trials, and condemned to die. After sentence, the Earl of Essex is very penitent, and discovers his accomplices.

He is beheaded. *25.*

Sir Gilley Merrick, one of his accomplices, and Henry Mar. 13.
Cuffe, his Secretary, are executed.

As were also Sir Charles Danvers, and Sir Christopher 18.
Blount : But several that had been concerned with him are April 28.
pardoned. *May 5.*

James King of Scotland sends an Ambassy to Queen Elizabeth. *July 26.*

The siege of Ostend is begun, in which Sir Francis Vere, July.
the Governor, and the English troops under him signalize themselves.

King Henry IV. comes to Calais ; some compliments *August.*
pass between him and Queen Elizabeth.

Don Juan d' Aquila brings the Earl of Tir-Oen succours *Septemb.*
from Spain, and becomes master of Kinsale ; but Tir-Oen
being utterly routed, the Spaniards are forced to return *Reg. 44.*
home.

Ann. C. A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the
Oet. 27. Queen four entire subsidies, and eight fifteenths and tenths.
 And the Clergy gave four subsidies of four shillings in the
 pound. Among other acts, one was made for the relief of
 the poor, &c.

Complaints being made in Parliament of several monopolies authorized by the Queen's Letters Patents, she abolishes them.

1602. To divert the *Spaniards* from making fresh attempts upon *Ireland*, Queen *Elizabeth* fits out a fleet against *Spain*, under the command of Sir *Richard Leveson* and Sir *William Munson*; they take a *Spanish* carrack valued at a million of crowns.

Septemb. Some gallies commanded by *Spinola*, that were failing for *Flanders*, are sunk and taken by the *English* and *Dutch*.

A quarrel arises in *England* between the *Jesuits* and *secular Priests*; and the former being found to be contriving something against the Government, the Queen issues out a Proclamation against them.

Nov. 5. A conspiracy is formed in *France* against King *Henry IV.* for which the Marshal *de Biron*, one of the chief of the Conspirators, is beheaded.

1602-3. *Hugh O'Neal*, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, submits to Queen *Elizabeth*.

Januar Queen *Elizabeth* falls ill: Her Courtiers forsake her, and go and seek the favour of the King of *Scots*: She grows thereupon melancholy.

Being desired by the Council, to name whom she should like for her Successor, she names *James* King of *Scotland*.

Mar. 24. Queen *Elizabeth* dies, after having lived sixty-nine years, six months, and seven days; and reigned forty-four years, four months, and eight days: And was buried in *Henry the VIIth's Chapel* at *Westminster*.

The Character of Queen ELIZABETH.

To display in few words the Elogy of this illustrious Queen, it seems to be sufficient to observe, that her name is still of blessed memory with the *English*, now when flattery cannot be supposed to have any share in the veneration they pay her. But *Elizabeth* banished from *England* the Catholick Religion, and restored the Reformation. This alone was the cause that two Parties have been formed on her account, who mutually tax each other with flattery or animosity. The Protestants considering that this Queen was

the
he
la
for
in
Ro
for
an
pol
wo
ma
ly
Qu

fou
the
cap
cul
it i
ful
lous
mo
Ph
Ch
Du
Scot
Hac
uni
Stre
mar
It
her
ber
To
rig
It c
of
is n
ene
repr
man
who
hyp
dian
greg

the sole bulwark of their Religion, which probably without her would have been destroyed in *England*, *Scotland*, *Ireland*, and perhaps in *France* and the *Low-Countries*, cannot forbear giving her great commendations, and feel themselves inclined to excuse her failings. For the same reason, the Roman Catholicks look upon her with another eye ; nay, some have not scrupled to paint her in the blackest colours, and give her the most odious epithets. This makes it impossible to give her a character, that shall please all the world. I shall content myself, (*says Rapin*) therefore with making some reflections which will assist those who seek only truth, to pass an impartial judgment on this famous Queen, free from party-passion and prejudice.

Elizabeth had great sense, and a judgement naturally sound and solid. This appeared in her whole conduct, from the beginning to the end of her reign. Nothing shews her capacity more, than her address in surmounting the difficulties and troubles created by her enemies, especially when it is considered, what these enemies were, the most powerful, the most artful, the most subtle, and the least scrupulous in *Europe*. The bare naming of them is a sufficient demonstration. The Court of *Rome* under several Popes, *Philip II.* King of *Spain*, the Duke of *Alva*, *Henry II.* and *Charles IX.* Kings of *France*, *Catharine de Medici*, the Duke of *Guise*, the Cardinal of *Lorrain*, *Mary Queen of Scots*, all the *Romish* Clergy, and particularly the *Jesuits*. Had her forces been proportionable to those of her enemies united together, there would be nothing very extraordinary. Strength often supplies the want of capacity. But in what manner did she withstand so potent, so formidable enemies? It was by two or three maxims which she made the rule of her conduct, and from which she never swerved : *To make herself beloved by her people* : *To be frugal of her treasure* : *To cherish dissention amongst her neighbours*. If things are rightly considered, she had no other way to secure herself. It cannot therefore be denied, that this is a clear evidence of her ability. But as her ability was never questioned, it is not this I am chiefly to describe. On the contrary, her enemies have taken occasion from thence to defame her, by representing as vices disguised, what her friends extol as so many virtues. They pretend, that her ability consisted wholly in an over strained dissimulation, and a profound hypocrisy. In a word, they say she was a perfect Comedian. For my part, I don't pretend to deny that she made great use of dissimulation, as well to the Courts of *France*

and Spain as to the Queen of Scotland and the Scots. This would be denying a manifest truth. The Court of Rome was the only court she never dissembled with. I am also persuaded, that being so much concerned to gain the love and esteem of her subjects, she affected to speak frequently, and with exaggeration, of her tenderness for them, and desired to have it believed, that she did through an excessive love to her people, things wherein her own interest was mostly concerned. But the question is to know, whether in her circumstances her dissimulation was blameable. What injury was it to her subjects to endeavour to persuade them, she loved them tenderly, since she actually and really did whatever was necessary to convince them? As to foreigners, it must be carefully observed, that her dissimulation and artifices tended not to invade their possessions, but to preserve her own. Her enemies frequently attempted to deprive her both of Crown and Life, and she saved both by her policy and dissimulation. Where is the harm of such a conduct? Can the dissimulation and artifices which aim only at self-preservation, be, without extreme prejudice, confounded with the dissimulation and artifices that tend to surprize the innocent, and invade the property of others; can these, I say, be considered upon the same foot? For my part I am so far from thinking that this sort of dissimulation is any blemish to Elizabeth's reputation, that I rather believe it ought to be reckoned among her commendable qualities.

Avarice is another failing imputed to her by her own friends. I will not deny that she was too parsimonious and upon some occasions stuck too close to her maxim, not to be at any expence but what was absolutely necessary. However, in general, I maintain, that her circumstance required her, if not to be covetous, at least not to part with her money, but with the greatest caution, both to preserve her People's affection, and enable her to withstand her enemies. After all, whom did she wrong by her extreme frugality? A dozen of hungry Courtiers, who would have been very glad she had lavished her treasure, like the King her Father, in the beginning of his Reign. As for the rest of her subjects, instead of having cause to complain of this pretended avarice, they had reason to be pleased with it, since it consisted not in robbing them of their property by illegal methods, as King Henry VII, her Grandfather had done, but in husbanding her revenues, and consequently their own.

She is also accused of not being so chaste as she affected to appear. Nay, some pretend, there are now in England the descendants of a daughter she had by the Earl of Leicester. But as hitherto no proof of this accusation has been produced, it may be safely reckoned among the calumnies with which her reputation has been attacked, as well during her life, as after her death.

It is not so easy to justify her concerning the death of the Queen of Scots. Here it must freely be owned, that she sacrificed equity, justice, and perhaps her own conscience, to her safety. If *Mary* was guilty of her Husband's murder, as there is reason to believe, it belonged not to *Elizabeth* to punish her. And indeed, it was not for that she took away her life, but she used that pretence to detain her in prison, under the deceitful excuse of making her innocence appear. On this occasion her dissimulation was blame-worthy. This first injustice ingaged her afterwards, to use numberless arts and devices to have a pretence to render *Mary's* imprisonment perpetual. Hence arose at last the necessity of putting her to death on the scaffold. In short, this excess of violence gave birth to more artifices and acts of dissimulation to justify herself, and cast the blame on the innocent. This, doubtless, is *Elizabeth's* great blemish, which manifestly proves to what height she carried the fear of losing a tottering Crown. This continual fear and uneasiness, is what characterises her Reign, because it was the spring of almost all her actions. All that can be said for *Elizabeth*, is, that the Queen of Scots and her Friends had brought things to such a point, that one of the two Queens was to perish, and it was natural that the weakest should fall. But this does not excuse *Elizabeth's* injustice to *Mary*, in detaining her in prison, which had no other foundation than *Elizabeth's* fear concerning her Crown.

I come now to *Elizabeth's* Religion. I do not believe her being a true Protestant was ever questioned. But as it was her interest to be so, some have taken occasion to doubt whether the zeal she expressed for her Religion, was the effect of her persuasion, or policy. What may have occasioned this doubt, is, that it clearly appears in her History, that in assisting the Protestants of France and the Netherlands, as well as those of Scotland, she had only temporal views, namely, her own safety and defence against impending invasions. But it cannot thence be inferred, she was not a good Protestant, or had no Religion

at all, since it is not impossible that her Religion should agree with her temporal interest. All that can be said, is, that she happened sometimes to prefer her temporal, before her religious concerns.

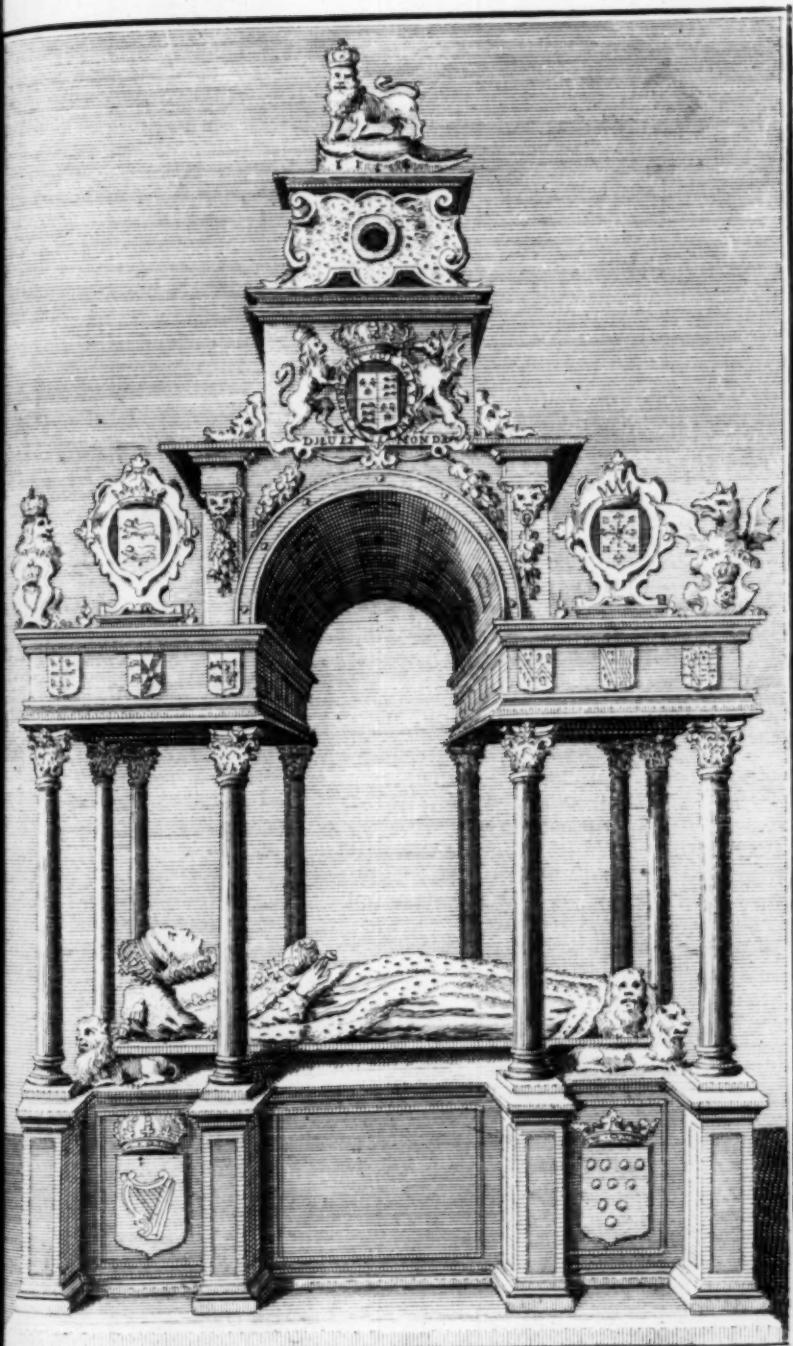
She is warmly accused of persecuting the Catholicks, and putting several to death. It is true, there were some that suffered death in her Reign. But one may venture to affirm, that none were punished but for conspiring against the Queen or State, or for attempting to destroy the Protestant Religion in *England*, and restore the *Romish* by violent methods. The Catholicks, who lived peaceably, were tolerated, though with some restraint, as to the exercise of their Religion, but with none, as to their consciences. If this may be called persecution, what name shall be given to the sufferings of the Protestants in the Reign of *Mary*?

The Presbyterians think also, they have reason to complain of the statute enacted in this Reign, which deprived them of liberty of conscience, though they were Protestants. I shall not take upon me to determine, whether they had cause to complain of this rigour. I shall only say, that, in my opinion, they had too much obstinacy, and their adversaries too little charity.

To sum up in two words what may serve to form *Elizabeth's* Character, I shall add, that she was a good and illustrious Queen, with many virtues and noble qualities, and few faults. But what she ought to be esteemed for above all things, is, that she caused the *English* to enjoy a felicity unknown to their ancestors, under most of the Kings, her Predecessors. This, doubtless, is the test, by which we are to judge of those whom God hath set over us.

A Description of the Monument of Queen ELIZABETH.

JAMES I. her successor, erected a magnificent monument to her memory in the east end of the north isle of her grandfather HENRY VII's chapel. It is an arch of white marble supported by ten Corinthian pillars of black marble, under which lies her effigies in royal robes. The freeze is adorned with the arms of all the royal marriages from EDWARD the Confessor, and with impalements of several branches of the royal family.



J. Mynde sc.

The Monument of QUEEN ELIZABETH
in Westminster Abbey.

B

to

Sp

On a Tablature over the cornish at the head of the tomb is this inscription :

M E M O R I A E A E T E R N A E.

Elizabethæ Angliæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Reginæ, R. Henrici VIII. filiæ, R. Hen. VII. nepti, R. Ed. IV. pronepti, patriæ parenti, religionis & bonarum artium altrici, plurimarum linguarum peritia, præclaris tum animi tum corporis dotibus, regiisq; virtutibus supra sexum, Principi

I N C O M P A R A B I L I.

Jacobus Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ, Rex, virtutum & regnorum hæres, bene merenti pie posuit.

Speed, in his Chronicle, translates this and the other inscriptions on her monument, as here inserted :

For an eternal Memorial

Unto Elizabeth, Queen of England, France, and Ireland, daughter of King HENRY the eighth, grandchild to King HENRY the seventh, and great grandchild to King EDWARD the fourth. The mother of her country : The patroness and nurse of religion and learning ; a Princess for all the endowments of body and mind, and more especially for her royal virtues above her Sex,

I N C O M P A R A B L E.

JAMES King of Great-Britain, France, and Ireland, heir both of her throne and virtues, hath pioufly erected this monument to a Princeſſ so worthy of commemoration.

On the basement at the top are these words :

Regno confortes & urna, hic obdormimus, Elizabetha & Maria forores, in spe resurrectionis.

The sisters MARY and ELIZABETH, who possessed the same throne, are companions in the grave, and here sleep in hopes of a resurrection.

On a like Tablature on the cornish at the feet is this inscription :

M E M O R I A E S A C R U M .

Religione ad primævam sinceritatem restaurata, pace fundata, moneta ad justum valorem reducta. Rebellione domestica vindicata, Gallia malis intestinis precipiti sublevata, Belgio sustentato, Hispanica classe profigata, Hibernia pulsis Hispanis, & Rebellibus ad deditiōnem coactis pacata, redditibus utriusque; academie lege annonaria plurimum adauctis, tota denique Anglia ditata, prudentissimæq; annos **XLV.** administrata, Elizabetha Regina victrix, triumphatrix, pietatis studiosissima, fælicissima, placida morte septuagenaria soluta, mortales reliquias dum Christo jubente resurgent immortales, in hac ecclesia celeberrima ab ipsa conservata, & denuo fundata, deposita.

S A C R E D U N T O M E M O R Y .

Religion to its primitive purity restored ; peace established ; money reduced to its just value ; domestick rebellion quelled ; France relieved when involved in intestine divisions ; the Netherlands supported ; the Spanish Armado overthrown ; Ireland almost lost by rebellion, retrieved by defeating the Spaniards ; the revenue of both universities much enlarged by a law of provisions ; AND LASTLY, ALL ENGLAND ENRICHED :

E L I Z A B E T H ,

During forty-five years a most wise governour, a victorious and triumphant Queen, most strictly religious, most happy, by a calm and resigned death at her seventieth year, left her mortal remains, till by Christ's word they shall rise again to immortality, to be deposited in this famous church by her repaired and re-established.

On the basement at the feet are these words,

Obiit xxiv. Martii, Anno Salutis **M.DC.II.** Regni **XLV.**
Ætatis **LXX.**

She died the twenty-fourth of March in the year of Salvation 1602, in the forty-fifth year of her Reign, and the seventieth of her Age.

A de-

H.
this

fun-
ione
ipiti
iga-
tatio-
mize
An-
ata,
stu-
so-
rant
ser-

ish-
re-
in-
pa-
re-
re-
of
N-

o-
is,
er
P's
e-
e.

v.
l-
d



J. Myrdle sc.
The Monument of MARY QUEEN of SCOT
in Westminster Abbey.

A Description of the Monument of MARY Queen of Scots.

King JAMES her son, not long after coming to the crown of England, erected a magnificent tomb for her in the south isle of HENRY VII's chapel, over a vault to which her body had been removed from the Cathedral of Peterborough, where it had been first interred. It is raised in the form of a triumphal arch, supported by eight Corinthian pillars, under which lies her portraiture in royal robes. The freeze is adorned with the arms of the several marriages of the Kings of Scotland, and the top crowned with her achievements. On several tablatures of marble round the tomb are epitaphs, which give a brief account of her royal descent, and relations, the exquisite endowments of her body and mind, the troubles of her life, her constancy in religion, and resolution in death.

The first part of her Epitaph is upon the south side of her Tomb in Roman Capitals.

The inscriptions are :

D. O. M.

Bonæ Memoriæ & Spei Æternæ. Mariæ Stuartæ Scotorum Reginæ, Francie Dotariae, Jacobi V. Scotorum Regis filie & hæredis unicæ, Henrici VII. Engl. Regis, ex Margareta majori natu filia (Jacobo III. Regi Scotorum Matrimonio copulata,) Proneptis, Edwardi IIII, Engl. Regis ex Elizabetha, filiarum suarum natu maxima, Abneptis, Francisci II. Gallorum R. Conjugis, Coronæ Engl. dum vixit, certæ, & indubitata hæredis, & Jacobi magnæ Britanniæ Monarchæ potentissimi, matris.

Stirpe vere Regia, & antiquissima prognata erat, maximi totius Europæ Principib. agnatione, & cognatione conjuncta, & exquisitissimis animi, & corporis dotibus, & ornamentis cùmulativestima. Verum, ut sunt variæ rerum humanarum vices, postquam Annos plus minus viginti, in custodia detenta, fortiter, & strenue (sed frustra) cum malevolorum obtrectationibus, timidorum suspicionibus, & inimicorum capitalium insidiis conflictata esset, tandem inaudito, & infesto regibus exemplo, securi percutitur; & contempto mundo, devicta morte, lassato carnifice, Christo Servatori animæ salutem, Jacobo filio spem Regni, & Posteritatis, & universis cædis insauitæ spectatoribus exemplum patientiæ

tientiae commendans, pie, patienter, intrepide, cervicem regiam, securi maledicta subjecit, & vitae caducae fortem, cum cœlestis regni perennitate commutavit, vi. Idus Februarii. Anno Christi. M. D. LXXXVII. Ætatis xxxxvi.

In English:

Sacred to the memory of MARY STUART, Queen of Scotland, and Dowager of France, daughter and sole heiress of JAMES V. King of Scotland, and granddaughter of MARGARET, eldest Daughter of HENRY VII. by ELIZABETH eldest Daughter of EDWARD IV, (Kings of England) Wife of FRANCIS II. King of France, whilst she lived, certain and undoubted Heiress to the Crown of England, and Mother of the most potent JAMES, Monarch of Great Britain. She was descended from a truly royal and most ancient Line, nearly allied by descent and consanguinity to all the greatest Princes in Europe, and was abundantly adorned with the most excellent endowments of body and mind: But as all human affairs have their vicissitudes, after a confinement of about twenty years, and having struggled with resolution and fortitude, (though ineffectually) with the malignity of Calumniators, the jealousy of the fearful, and the snares of capital Enemies, she was at length, an unprecedented, unheard-of Example with Kings, brought to the block; where, with contempt of this world, triumphant in death, and fearless of the Executioner, recommending her Soul to Christ her Saviour, her hopes of Empire and Posterity to her Son JAMES, and the example of her patience to all the spectators of so bloody and mournful a scene, she piously, patiently, and intrepidly submitted her royal neck to the accursed ax, and exchanged this transitory life for a blessed eternity in heaven, on the eighth of February, in the year of our Lord, 1587. Aged forty-six.

The other part of the Epitaph is on the North-side of the Monument in Hexameter and Pentameter, or Elegiac, verses:

Generis splendor, raræ si gratia formæ,
Probi nescia mens, inviolata fides,
Hectoris invicti robur, sapientia, candor,
Nixaque solantis spes pietate Dei :

Si morum probitas, duri patientia froeni,
 Majestas, bonitas, pura, benigna manus,
 Pallida fortunæ possint vitare tonantis
 Fulmina, quæ montes, templaque sancta petunt :
 Non præmatura fatorum forte perislet,
 Nec fleret moestis tristis imago genis.
 Jure Scotos, Thalamo Francos, spe possidet Anglos,
 Triplice sic triplex jure corona beat.
 Fœlix, heu nimium Fœlix, si turbine pulsa
 Vicinam sero conciliasset opem.
 Sed cadit ut terram teneat, nunc morte triumphat,
 Fructibus ut sua stirps, pullulet inde novis.
 Viæta nequit Vinci, nec carcere clausa teneri ;
 Non occisa mori, sed neque capta capi.
 Sic vitis succisa gemit fœcundior uvis,
 Sculptaque purpureo, gemma decore micat.
 Obruta frugifero sensim sic cespite surgunt
 Semina, per multos, quæ latuere dies.
 Sanguine fancivit fœdus cum plebe Jehova,
 Sanguine placabant numina sancta patres.
 Sanguine consperci quos præterit ira penates ;
 Sanguine signata est quæ modo cedit humus.
 Parce Deus, satis est, infandos fiste dolores :
 Inter funestos pervolet illa dies.
 Sit Reges maectare nefas, ut sanguine posthac,
 Purpureo nunquam terra Britannia fluat.
 Exemplum pereat cæsæ cum vulnere Christæ :
 Inque malum præceps, author & actor eat.
 Si meliore sui post mortem parte triumphet,
 Carnifices fileant, tormina, claustra, cruces ;
 Quem dederant cursum superi, Regina peregit.
 Tempora lœta Deus, tempora dura dedit.
 Edidit eximum fato properante Jacobum,
 Quem pallas, Musæ, Delia Fata colunt.
 Magna viro, major natu, sed maxima partu,
 Conditur hic Régum filia, sponsa, parens.
 Det Deus ut nati & qui nascentur ab illa,
 Æternos videant hinc sine nube dies.
H. N gemens.

In English :

In birth illustrious, or if Beauty's pride,
 A guiltless Mind and Faith severely try'd,
 If Wisdom, Fortitude, a candid breast,
 And Hope in Him who comforts the distrest ;

If Probity of Heart, with Patience mild
 To bear injurious bonds, to be revil'd ;
 If Goodness, Majesty, a lib'ral Will
 To raise the wretched, and the Poor to fill,
 Could 'scape blind fortune's thunders, that alike
 On good or bad, on low and lofty, strike ;
 Thou hadst not early fall'n by being Great,
 Nor thy sad image seem'd to weep thy fate.
 Scotland by right, by marriage France was thine,
 To these well-founded hope did England join,
 By triple-right a triple-crown she wears,
 But dim its lustre to a crown of Stars.
 Happy, too happy if, the storm allay'd,
 Tho' late the neighb'ring realm had her obey'd,
 But see ! she falls to triumph in the grave ;
 New vigour thence, and fruits, her branches have.
 Conquer'd she conquers, free tho' close confined,
 Not dead though slain ; the fates her chains unbind.
 So the prun'd Vine shoots forth with fertile sprays,
 And the cut gem reflects it's purple rays :
 So genial seeds committed to the earth
 Rise from the fruitful soil, a brighter birth.
 With blood, God's covenant with man was made,
 With blood, the Patriarchs his wrath allay'd,
 With blood, the First-born 'scap'd the general doom ;
 Blood stain'd the land which now is Her's become.
 Oh stay thy vengeance heav'n for mercy's sake ;
 That fatal day be ever mark'd with black,
 To murther Kings abhor'd for evermore.
 Nor Britain stain'd again with royal Gore ;
 Let the example perish with the blow,
 Accurs'd its author, and its actor too.
 Since in her better part she triumphs still,
 Dumb be her fate, and silent ev'ry ill.
 Such was her course as heav'n thought fit to steer,
 She had her joys, she knew her sorrows, here,
 Early to life the Royal JAMES she gave,
 Whom ev'ry kinder pow'r in keeping have.
 By nuptials great, by birth still greater known,
 And greatest in her issue, such a Son ;
 Here MARY lies, of whom we sighing sing,
 The Daughter, Wife, and Mother of a King.
 Grant heav'n, that to the latest times her race,
 Their happy hours without a cloud may pass.

H. N. lamenting.

Over

Over the Cornish of this Tomb at the head is part of the 21st verse of the 2d Chapter of 1 Peter.

Christus pro nobis
Passus est, relinquens
Exemplum, ut sequamini
Vestigia ejus.

In English :

Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that we should follow his steps.

Over the Cornish at the feet is the 23d verse of the same chapter.

Qui cum malediccretur
Non maledicebat, cum
Pateretur, non
Comminabatur; tradebat
Autem judicanti iuste.

In English :

Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously.

An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture of the 2d of Elizabeth, a pound-weight of Gold, of the old standard, of 23 Carats, 3 grains and a half fine, was coined into 36 pounds by tale; namely, into 24 Sovereigns, at thirty shillings a-piece, or 48 Rials, at fifteen shillings, or 72 Angels, at ten shillings a-piece, or 144 Half Angels, at five shillings a-piece: And a pound-weight of Crown Gold of 22 Carats fine, and 2 Carats alloy, was coined into 33 pounds by tale; namely, 33 Sovereigns at twenty shillings a-piece, or 66 Half-Sovereigns at ten shillings a-piece, or 132 Crowns at five shillings a piece, or 264 Half-Crowns. And a pound-weight of the old sterling Silver, viz. 11 ounces 2 penny-weight fine, and 18 penny-weight alloy, was coined into 3 pounds by tale, of Half-Shillings, Groats, Quarter-Shillings, Half-Groats, Three Half-penny Pieces, Pence, and Farthings.— In the 19th of her Reign, a pound-weight of Gold, of the old standard, was coined into 72 Angels, at ten shillings a-piece, 144 Half-Angels, at five shillings a-piece, or 288

Quarter

Quarter-Angels, amounting in tale to 36 pounds ; and a pound of old sterling Silver, into Half-Shillings, Threepences, Three-Half-penny, or Three-Farthing Pieces, to make three pounds by tale.—And in the 25th, into sixty shillings, or into three pounds by tale.—In the 26th, a pound Troy of old standard Gold, was coined into 48 Nobles, at fifteen shillings a-piece, or 24 Double-Nobles, at thirty shillings a-piece, making 36 pounds.—In the 35th year of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold of 22 Carats fine, and 2 Carats alloy, was coined into 33 Sovereigns, at twenty shillings a-piece, or 66 Half-Sovereigns, or 132 Crowns, or 264 Half-Crowns, making 33 pounds by tale.—In the 43d, the pound-weight of old standard Gold, was coined into 73 Angels, at ten shillings a-piece, or 146 Half-Angels, or 292 Quarter-Angels, making 36 pounds ten shillings in tale, and the pound-weight of Gold of 22 Carats fine, and 2 Carats alloy, into 33 Sovereigns and a half, at twenty shillings a-piece, or 67 Half-Sovereigns, or 134 Crowns, or 268 Half-Crowns, making 33 pounds ten shillings in tale ; and the pound-weight of old standard Silver, into three pounds, two shillings by tale ; viz. into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence.

The corruptions which the last year of *Henry VIII.* had brought into the *English* money, were not quite rooted out till Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign ; but her first busines was to mark all the base pieces, either with a Greyhound, Portcuse, Lion, Harp, Rose, or Fleur-de-lis. Her Gold Coins, as appear from the foregoing Indentures, were Sovereigns, Half-Sovereigns, or Rials, Nobles, double Nobles, Angels, Half-Angels, pieces of an Angel and a half, and three Angels, Crowns,





Crowns, and Half-Crowns. The Sovereign has, on one side, the Queen's figure, in Armour and Ruff, Hair disheveled, crowned with the Imperial Crown of *England*, (consisting of the double Arch, as born ever since; all, except *Henry VI*, having born it before her, with the single Arch,) ELIZABETH. D G ANG FRA ET HIB REGINA. Reverse, the Arms crowned between E. R. a Wool-pack the Mark, SCVTVM. FIDEI. PROTEGET. EAM. (Fig. 1.) the Half-Sovereign has her head,

as upon the Shilling. The Angel has her titles as before ; Reverse, the ship and arms, with E. and a Rose, DNI. FACTVM. EST. ISTVD. ET. EST. MIRABI. The double Rose-Noble, or Rose-Rial, which is a noble medal, has on one side, the Queen in her Robes and Crown, Scepter, and Ball, upon her Throne, at her feet a Portcluse, ELIZABETH. D. G. ANG. FRA. ET. HIB. REGINA. Reverse, a large Rose filling the Area, with the arms in the center A. DNO. FACTV. EST. ISTVD. ET. MIRAB. IN. OCVL. NRIS.—Queen Elizabeth's Silver money are Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Groats, Three-pences, Two-pences, Pennies, Penny Half-pennies, Half-pence, and Farthings, all of Silver ; for there was no Brass or Copper-money coined in England before James I. This Silver-money, from the Crown to the Three-pence, is the same, *viz.* ELIZABETH. D. G. ANG. FRA. ET. HIB. REGINA. Reverse, the Arms and POSVI, &c. On the Crown and Half-Crown, she appears with the Ball and Scepter, (*Fig. 2.*) which latter never appeared upon the monies from the Reign of Henry III. The Shillings are of several kinds, some with a Cross Crostet, another with a Dove or Drake upon it, which last is said to be in memory of Sir Francis Drake's voyage round the World ; a third very fair, mill'd, a Star the Mint-mark, (*Fig. 4.*) The Portcluse-Shilling and Crown-Piece, both which are very rare, instead of the Queen's head, have the Arms crowned between E. R. and ELIZABETH. D. G. ANG. FR. ET. HIB. REGINA. Reverse, a Portcullice crowned, and POSVI, &c. an Annulet the Mint-mark. The Six-pences are of different Mints, as the Shillings ; some with a Rose behind the Queen's Head, another marked with the Belgic Lion upon the Queen's breast. Of Groats there are the Drake, Star, or Mill'd, and Cross crostet, Mint-marks, &c. Of the Three-pences, some have a Cross, others a Sword for the Mint-mark, others the Star, Cinque-foil, Pheon, &c. all having the Rose behind the Head, and Motto as the larger Pieces. The Two-pence has two dots behind the Head, E. D. G. ROSA. SINE. SPINA. Reverse, the Arms, and CIVITAS LONDON. The Three Half-penny piece (coined by this Queen only,) has the Rose without the Queen's head, CIVITAS EBORACI. The Pennies have the same inscription about the Queen's head ; Reverse, the Arms, and CIVITAS LONDON. Of these there are with the Drake, Crescent, Cross crostet, Tun, Figure II. and Annulet. They are from

fix grains and a half, to ten and a half. The Farthings have all the Rose on each side, and weigh from three to five grains.—Besides these, *Elizabeth* coined also *Irish* money, namely, Shillings called Harpers, from the arms of that Kingdom, *viz.* three Harps crowned on the Reverse. (Fig. 5.)

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows: *Ann. C.*

William Parr, restored to the title of Marquis of Northampton. 1558-9.
13 Jan.

Edward Seymour, Baron Beauchamp, restored to the honour of Earl of Hertford.

Thomas Howard, Viscount Bindon.

Henry Carey, Baron Hunsdon.

Oliver St. John, Baron St. John of Bletshoo.

Ambrose Dudley, Baron Lisle; and the next day, Earl of Warwick. 1562.
25 Dec.

Robert Dudley, Baron of Denbigh; and the next day, Earl of Leicester. 1564.
28 Sept.

Thomas Sackville, Baron Buckhurst.

1567.
8 June.

William West, Baron La Ware.

1570.
25 Feb.

Walter D'Evereux, Viscount Hereford—Earl of Essex. 1572.
May 4.

Edward, Baron Clinton,—Earl of Lincoln.

8 May.

Henry, Baron Compton, by summ.

Henry Cheney, Baron Cheney, by summ.

Henry, Baron Norris, of Ricot, by summ.

Philip Howard, Earl of Arundel.

1580.
16 Jan.

Peregrine Bertie, or *Bertie*, Baron Willoughby of Eresby,
by summ.

Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham.

1597.
22 Oct.

Thomas Howard, Baron Howard of Walden.

24 Oct.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of Queen ELIZABETH.

Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk.

Henry Manners, Earl of Rutland.

Sir Robert Dudley, Knight, afterwards Earl of Leicester.

- Adolphus, Duke of Holstein.*
George Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury.
Henry Carey, Lord Hunsdon.
Thomas Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick.
Charles IX, King of France.
Francis Russel, Earl of Bedford.
Sir Henry Sidney, Knight.
Maximilian II, Emperor of Germany.
Henry Hastings, Earl of Huntingdon.
William Somerset, Earl of Worcester.
Francis Montmorency, Duke of Montmorency.
Walter D'Evereux, Viscount Hereford, afterwards Earl of Essex.
William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, afterwards Lord Treasurer of England.
Arthur Grey, Lord Grey of Wilton.
Edmund Bruges, Lord Chandos.
Henry Stanley, Earl of Derby.
Henry Herbert, Earl of Pembroke.
Henry III, King of France.
Charles Howard, Lord Howard of Effingham, afterwards Earl of Nottingham.
Rodolpho, Emperor of Germany.
Frederic II, King of Denmark.
John Casimir, Count Palatine of the Rhine.
Edward Manners, Earl of Rutland.
William Brook, Lord Cobham.
Henry Scrope, Lord Scrope of Bolton.
Robert D'Evereux, Earl of Essex.
Thomas Butler, Earl of Ormond and Offaly.
Sir Christopher Hatton, Knight, afterwards Lord Chancellor of England.
Henry Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex.
Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, afterwards Lord Treasurer of England, and Earl of Dorset.
Henry IV, King of France.
James VI, King of Scotland, afterwards King of England.
Gilbert Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury.
George Clifford, Earl of Cumberland.
Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
Edward Somerset, Earl of Worcester.
Thomas Burrough, Lord Burrough.
Edmund Sheffield, Lord Sheffield, afterwards Earl of Mulgrave.

Earl

rea-

ards

an-

rd-

nd.

of

bir



Vertue Sculp

Sir Francis Knolles, Knight.
 Frederic, Duke of Wirtemberg.
 Thomas Howard, Lord Howard of Walden, afterwards Earl of Suffolk, and Lord-Treasurer of England.
 George Carey, Lord Hunsdon.
 Charles Blount, Lord Mountjoy, afterwards Earl of Devonshire.
 Sir Henry Lea, Knight.
 Robert Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex.
 Henry Brook, Lord Cobham.
 Thomas Scrope, Lord Scrope of Balton.
 William Stanley, Earl of Derby.
 Thomas Cecil, Lord Burleigh, afterwards Earl of Exeter.

BOOK XVIII.

*The Reign of JAMES I. Containing the space
of 22 years and 3 days.*

24. JAMES I.

JAMES VI, King of Scotland, is proclaimed, at London,
 King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, under
 the name of James I.

Sir Robert Carey, the Lord Hunsdon's youngest son, carries him the news of his accession to the Crown of England.

King James sets out from Edinburgh for London, attended by the Duke of Lenox, the Earl of Mar, and the Lords *Hume*, and *Kinloss*, &c.

Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton, and others, are released out of the Tower, by the King's order.

The King arrives at York, where most of the English Lords come and meet him, particularly Sir Robert Cecil, who had kept a correspondence with him during Queen Elizabeth's life.

He comes to Newark, where he orders a cut purse to be hanged, without trial. His Majesty comes to Ryston.

The funeral of Queen Elizabeth is solemnized: King James refuses to go into mourning for her.

The King comes to Theobald's, a house of Sir Robert Cecil's, where the Council come to pay their respects to him.

Ann. C.
1603-3.
Mar. 24.
Reg. 1.

10.

15.

21.

27.

28.

Ann. C. He introduces several *Scots* into his Council, and makes a great number of Knights.

4. He arrives at *London*, where he is very lavish of honours and dignities : But he receives with great coldness the Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and others, that had been enemies to the late Earl of *Essex*.

A Proclamation is issued out against some monopolies.

King *James* sends for his Queen and children out of *Scotland*.

June. Ambassadors come to *England* from the Courts of *France* and *Spain*, and from the Archduke. The Master of the Ceremonies is instituted, the first of whom was Sir *Lewis Lewkenor*.

7. *Valentine Thomas*, that had lain many years in the *Tower*, is condemned of treason, for a conspiracy against Queen *Elizabeth*, and some of her Council, and executed.

8. The Marquis de *Rosny*, Ambassador from *Henry IV*, comes to *London*.

11. The Queen arrives at *York*.

Charles *Blount*, Lord *Montjoy*, returns from *Ireland*, bringing with him Hugh *O Neal*, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, who, notwithstanding all the blood he had shed, is pardoned.

21. Roger *Maners*, Earl of *Rutland*, is sent to carry the Order of the Garter to *Christiern*, King of *Denmark*, and to be King *James's* proxy at the christening of Prince *Christian*. *Robert*, Lord *Spencer*, is also sent to the Duke of *Wurtemberg* with the Order of the Garter.

23. King *James* revokes the letters of mart granted by Queen *Elizabeth* against the *Spaniards*.

27. He goes and meets the Queen, Prince *Henry*, and the Princess *Elizabeth*, in *Northamptonshire*.

July 3. Prince *Henry* and the Duke of *Lenox*, with the Earls of *Southampton*, *Marr*, and *Pembroke*, are created Knights of the Garter.

Henry *Wriothesley* Earl of *Southampton*, and Robert *D'Evereux* son to the late Earl of *Essex*, are restored to their estates and honours.

A conspiracy by Henry *Brooke* Lord *Cobham*, George *Brooke* his brother, Thomas Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, Sir *Griffith Markham*, and some others, to place *Arabella Steuart* on the throne, is discovered, and the Conspirators are apprehended.

July 34. The King makes 62 Knights of the *Bath*.

25. King *James*, and his Queen, Anne of *Denmark*, are crowned.

A pro-

A Proclamation is issued out, forbidding all persons who *An. C.*
had any busines at Court, to repair thither till winter, by
reason of the plague, which raged this year so violently,
that there died of it in *London* 30,578 persons.

The Conspirators abovementioned are carried to *Win. Nov. 4.*
chester; where they are arraigned and condemned to die; *10.*
and three of them, *viz.* *George Brooke*, and *William Wat-* *15.*
son and *William Clarke*, two Priests are executed. *17.*

But the *Lord Grey*, *Lord Cobham*, *Sir Walter Raleigh*, *Dec. 5.*
and the rest being reprieved, are sent back to prison. *15.*

The Papists and Puritans present petitions to the King,
for a toleration, &c. *1604.*

A conference is held at *Hampton-Court*, between some *Jan. 14.*
Bishops and Presbyterian Ministers, at which King *James* *16.*
presides. *18.*

He puts out a proclamation commanding all Jesuits and *Feb. 22.*
Popish Priests to leave the Kingdom. *29.*

John Whitgift Archbishop of *Canterbury* dies. *Mar. 5.*

The Puritans are enjoined, by a Proclamation, to conform to the worship of the established Church.

By another proclamation sundry abuses, such as monopolies, salt-petre men, purveyors, &c. are suppressed.

The 5th day of *August* is ordered to be kept as a holy-day, on account of the King's deliverance from the *Gouri's* conspiracy.

The King and Queen make their entry into *London*. *15.*

King *James* was persuaded, that the Parliament's and People's privileges were so many usurpations on, or at best but concessions of, the Kings his predeceſſors.

He orders, both in the writs and the proclamation for calling the Parliament, what Representatives should be chosen.

The Parliament meets: The King makes a speech to *19.*
them, very artful upon the point of Government, very ob- *Reg. 2.*
scure as to Religion, and very plain with regard to his design of uniting both Kingdoms.

Commissioners are appointed, to examine the King's proposal concerning the Union of *England* and *Scotland*: And he assumes the title of King of *Great-Britain*.

An act is passed, recognizing, That, immediately upon Queen *Elizabeth's* deceafe, the Imperial Crown of the Realm of *England* did, by inherent birth-right, and lawful and undoubted succession, descend to King *James*. An act also was made for the due execution of the statutes against Jesuits, Priests, and Recusants: One to restrain the

- Ann. C.* inordinate tippling in alehouses : One to restrain all persons from marriage, until their former wives and former husbands be dead : One against conjuration, witchcraft, &c.
- June 16.* The Commons address the King concerning certain grievances, and inform him of their privileges : This address so displeases the King, that he prorogues the Parliament till *July 7.*
- July 7.* the 7th of *February, 1604-5,* after they had granted him the subsidy of tonnage and poundage for life.
- Some of the Clergy countenance the King's principles touching arbitrary power.
- Aug. 18.* The Constable of *Castile*, Plenipotentiary for *Spain*, arrives at *London*; and a peace is concluded between *England* and *Spain*.
- The King grants a monopoly of the trade with *Spain* and *Italy* to a Company of Merchants.
- Aug. 20.* *Robert Cecil, Baron of Effington,* is created Viscount *Cranborne*, being the first Viscount that made use of a Coronet.
- Sept. 20.* *Oxford* is taken by the *Spaniards*, after a siege of three years and three months.
- October.* *Charles, Duke of Albany*, the King's second son, arrives at *Windsor*, being three years old.
- 24.* King *James* orders himself to be proclaimed King of *Great-Britain*.
- Dec. 10.* *Richard Bancroft*, Bishop of *London*, is consecrated Archbishop of *Canterbury*.
- 1605.* Prince *Charles* is created Duke of *York*.
- Jan. 6.* *Pope Clement VIII.* dies ; he is succeeded by *Leo XI,* who dying, fourteen days after, hath for successor *Paul V.*
- Feb. 21.* A Proclamation is issued out, ordering the Jesuits and Seminary Priests immediately to depart out of the Kingdom : And another, to establish the Discipline and Liturgy of the Church of *England*.
- Reg. 3.* *Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham*, is sent Ambassador extraordinary to *Spain*; and
- April 19.* *Eduard Seymour, Earl of Hertford*, Ambassador to *Brussels*; both, in order to have the late peace sworn to.
- An Ambassador comes to *England* from the Emperor, *Rodolph II.*
- Nov. 4.* The Gun-powder Plot is discovered.
- 9.* The Parliament meets, and the King makes a speech to them about the plot. The same day, the Parliament is prorogued to the 21st of *January*.
- 27.* *Henry Percy Earl of Northumberland* is committed to the *Tower*, on suspicion of being concerned in the plot.

About

About this time coaches came to be in common use. *Ann. C.*

Robert D'Evereux Earl of Essex, marries Frances Howard, 1605-6. the Earl of Suffolk's daughter. *Jan 5.*

The Parliament meets. *21.*

Eight of the Popish Conspirators are executed; amongst whom were Sir Everard Digby, Guy Fawkes, &c. *30, 31.*

A report is spread in London, that King James was Mar. 22. stabbed. *Reg. 4.*

The King of Spain sends an Ambassador to congratulate April 24. King James's preservation from the plot, which was looked upon as a great farce. *1606.*

William Oldcorn, and Henry Garnet, two Jesuits, are May 3. executed on account of the plot.

The 5th of November is appointed, by act of Parliament, to be a day of public thanksgiving.

The contrivers of the late plot are attainted by Parliament: And an act is made, for the better discovering and repressing of Popish Recusants; wherein a new oath is appointed to be tendered to them. Another is also made, to prevent and avoid dangers, which may grow by Popish Recusants.

This Parliament granted the King three whole subsidies, and six fifteenths and tenths. The Clergy granted, at the same time, four subsidies of four shillings in the pound.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 1st of November. *27.*

Among others, an act is made, for repressing the odious and loathsome sin of drunkenness.

Henry, Lord Mordaunt, and Edward, Lord Stourton, are June 3. severely fined in the Star-Chamber, for not discovering the gun-powder plot.

A Proclamation is issued out, for extirpating Jesuits and Seminary Priests out of the Realm. *16.*

Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland, is fined 30,000 l. 27. for being supposed to be concerned in the gun-powder plot.

A monument is erected for Queen Elizabeth, in Westminster-Abbey.

Christiern IV, King of Denmark, comes to London, to July 17. visit King James.

He returns back. *Aug. 14.*

The Prince of Vaudemont, third son of the Duke of Lor- Sept. 23. rain, comes also to pay King James a visit.

Pope Paul V. sends a brief, forbidding the English Catholicks to take the oath of allegiance. *OCT. 21.*

The Parliament meets again at Westminster, wherein the Nov. 18. Union of the two Kingdoms is debated. *1607.*

Ann. C. The King makes a speech to both Houses, to shew the Reg. 5. necessity of that Union; but, notwithstanding, it is rejected. Mar. 31.

July 1. The Parliament is prorogued to the 16th of November.

The Country-people rise in arms in *Northamptonshire*, and other Counties; and pull down the inclosures of Commons, newly set up.

Septemb. *Hugh O'Neal*, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, being permitted to return to *Ireland*, endeavours to raise a Rebellion there; but being disappointed, leaves the Kingdom, and complains of the pretended barbarity used towards the Catholics.

Nov. 15. The King publishes an apology, to vindicate himself of that aspersion.

King *James* comes to have a dislike for Parliaments.

The Parliament is further prorogued to *February 19, 1609-10.*

1608. *George Jervis*, a seminary Priest, is hanged at *Tyburn*.
Reg. 6. *Thomas Sackville*, Earl of *Dorset*, and Lord-Treasurer, *April 11.* dies.

19. A proclamation is put out, commanding the oath of allegiance to be tendered to all persons.
29.

May 6. *Robert Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, is made Lord-Treasurer; and about the same time *Henry Howard*, Earl of *Northampton*, Lord Privy-Seal.

The sale of cloths, and of allum, are monopolized.

May 8. Disputes arise between the King and the *Hollanders*, about the fishery upon the coasts of *Great-Britain*.

June 23. *Thomas Garnet*, a Jesuit, is executed at *Tyburn*.

Oct. 9. *Richard Neile* is consecrated Bishop of *Rochester*.

Archbishop *Bancroft* persecutes the *Puritans*; great numbers of them go and settle in *Virginia*.

His Grace presents a second time to the King the *Articuli Cleri*; but they are opposed by the Judges, and rejected.

King *James* makes two treaties with the *States*; one for the payment of what they owed him; and the other contained an alliance.

1609. Negotiations are set on foot for a peace between *Spain* and the *United-Provinces*; at length, a twelve years truce is concluded between them.
Reg. 7.

April 9. Dr. *Cowell*, and Dr. *Blackwood*, advance some pernicious maxims, tending to favour the King's arbitrary power.

1610. The City of *London* sends Colonies into *Ulster* in *Ireland*, which were planted about *Coleraine* and *Londonderry*.

Feb. 9. The people are dissatisfied with the Government, and the King countenances the Papists upon all occasions.

The Parliament meets again pursuant to its prorogation : *Ann. C.*
At the meeting of it, the Earl of *Salisbury* makes a speech *Feb. 9.*
in the King's name, wherein he complains of the King's
wants, and demands money.

But the House of Commons, instead of readily granting
the desired supplies, loudly complains of Grievances ; and
particularly of the High-Commission.

The King makes a speech to both Houses, wherein he *Reg. 8.*
endeavours to shew he was unjustly complained of ; but
advances therein notions very disagreeable to the Com-
mons.

Henry IV, King of *France*, is assassinated by *Ravillac* ; *May 3.*
shortly after, King *James* renews the league between *Eng-*
land and *France*.

A proclamation is issued out, commanding all Jesuits and *June 4.*
Priests to depart the Kingdom, before the 5th of *July*.

Henry, the King's eldest son, is created Prince of *Wales*.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 16th of *October, July 23:*
after having granted the King a subsidy, and one fifteenth
and tenth. The Clergy grant at the same time a subsidy.

An act is made to avoid the double payment of debts.
And another, for the due execution of divers laws against
rogues, vagabonds, &c.

King *James* negotiates a marriage between his son, the
Prince of *Wales*, and the King of *Spain*'s eldest daughter.

Richard Bancroft, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, dies ; and
is succeeded by *George Abbot*, Bishop of *London*.

The Parliament meets in a temper not at all pleasing to *Oct. 16.*
the King ; whereupon, he prorogues it to the 9th of *February*
following, and then dissolves it by proclamation.

Robert Carr, a young Scotch Gentleman, about twenty *1610-11.*
years old, becomes the King's favourite ; and, shortly after, *February.*
he is made Knight, Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, Lord- *Reg. 9.*
Treasurer of *Scotland*, Baron of *Branfeth*, Viscount *Roche-*
ter, Privy-Counsellor, and Knight of the Garter.

King *James* institutes the order of Baronets, and creates *May 22.*
ninety.

He intermeddles in the disputes between the *Arminians*
and *Gomarists* in *Holland*.

Frances Howard, Countess of *Essex*, falls in love with *1612.*
Carr. *Reg. 10.*

Sir *Thomas Overbury* is committed to the *Tower*, for dis- *June.*
suading him from marrying her.

Robert Cecil, Earl of *Salisbury*, dies : *Thomas Howard*, *May 24.*
Earl of *Suffolk*, is made Lord-Treasurer in his room.

Robert

Ann. C. Robert Creighton, Baron Sanquir, is hanged for killing a June 29. fencing-master.

The body of Mary Queen of Scots is removed from Peterborough to Henry the VIIth's Chapel at Westminster.

July. Sir Robert Sherly, an Englishman, comes Ambassador to London, from the Court of Persia, where he had lived many years.

Sept. 15. Sir Thomas Overbury dies of poison in the Tower.

Oct. 16. Frederic V, Elector Palatine, comes to England.

Nov. 6. Henry, Prince of Wales, dies; his funeral is solemnized.

Dec. 7. The Elector Palatine, and Prince Maurice, Stadholder of 29. Holland, are made Knights of the Garter.

1612-13. The Elector Palatine marries the Princess Elizabeth,

Feb. 14. daughter of King James, and mother to the late Prince

1613. Sophia. They both set out for Germany.

Reg. 11. April 25. The Viscount Rochester forms the design of getting the marriage between Robert D'Evereux, Earl of Essex, and Frances his Countess, annulled; and then to marry her. For that purpose, the Countess accuses her husband of impotency, and desires to be divorced from him; which is accordingly done.

Nov. 4. Robert Carr, Viscount Rochester, is made Earl of Somerset.

Dec. 26. set. He marries Frances [Howard] Countess of Essex.

The new Earl o' Somerset leaves the management of affairs to his Lady's uncle Henry Howard, Earl of Northampton, who countenances the Papists.

1613-14. The Presbyterians are hindred from going to settle in New-England, for fear those Plantations should become nurseries of Nonconformists.

King James enhances the value of gold-coins.

He raises money, by granting monopolies, reviving obsolete laws (especially about Knighthood) selling titles, *Reg. 12.* honours, &c.

But still, this not being sufficient to supply the King's necessities, the Earl of Somerset advises him to call a Parliament, in order to get money.

1614. April 5. The Parliament meets; and instead of granting the King money first, as he desired, the Commons examine the grievances; and resolve to represent them in a petition to his Majesty.

June 7. At this the King is so provoked, that he dissolves the Parliament; and causes several Members of the House of Commons to be imprisoned for having spoken too freely, as he thought.

June 15. King James resolving to call no more Parliaments, exacts money by way of benevolence. *Henry*

Henry Howard, Earl of Northampton, dies : And Thomas Ann. C. Howard, Earl of Suffolk, is made Lord-Treasurer in his room.

Christiern, King of Denmark, comes and pays a second July 21. visit to the King and Queen. He goes back to Denmark. Aug. 1.

The Czar of Russia sends an Ambassador to London. October.

The Queen resolves to ruin the Earl of Somerset, the King's favourite.

Hugh Middleton undertakes to bring water from Hertfordshire, to the principal parts of the City of London, and gets an act of Parliament for that purpose.

George Villiers begins to be in the King's favour, and is 1615. made his cup-bearer.

The King begins to be weary of the Earl of Somerset; Reg. 13. who tries to procure a pardon from his Majesty. But the Lord Chancellor refuses to put the seal to it ; and, in the mean time, the King is informed of Sir Thomas Overbury's being poisoned by the Earl of Somerset's procurement.

George Villiers is knighted, and made Gentleman of the April Bed-Chamber : The King gives him a thousand pounds. 23, 24.

Arabella Stewart dies in the Tower. Sept. 27.

The Earl and Countess of Somerset, together with their Oct. 26. Accomplices, are apprehended and committed to prison.

Richard Weston, one of them, is condemned, and exec. Oct. 23. cuted.

The rest, namely, Anne Turner, Sir Gervase Elwes, Novemb. [or Helwiss] and James Franklin, are also executed.

George Villiers engrosses the King's affection, and rules ab- 1616. solutely at Court. Reg. 14.

The Earl and Countess of Somerset are tried, and con- May 24, demned to die : The King grants them a reprieve now, 25. their liberty in 1621, and a full pardon in 1624.

King James delivers up the Cautionary Towns to the Dutch, for 2,728,000 florins, instead of 8,000000 of florins that were due to him. 31.

A dispute arises between the King and the Judges about the Prerogative Royal : The Council decides in favour of the King.

Sir Edward Coke is turned out of his place of Chief-June 30. Justice of the King's-Bench, for opposing the Court.

Thomas Egerton, Baron of Ellesmere, and Lord-Chancellor, being taken ill, delivers up the Great-Seal to the King.

Sir George Villiers is created Baron of Whaddon, and Vis- Aug. 27. count Villiers, and the 5th of January following Earl of Buckingham. Prince

- Ann. C.* Prince *Charles* is created Prince of *Wales*: The King
Nov. 4. forms the design of marrying him to *Maria*, Infanta of
Spain.
- Dec. 16.* *Marco Antonio de Dominis*, Archbishop of *Spalato*, comes
 to *England*, and embraces the Protestant Religion.
- 1616-17.* Sir *Francis Bacon* is made Keeper of the Great Seal, and
Mar. 7. afterwards Lord Chancellor.
- 1617.* King *James* resolves to compel the *Scots* to conform to
Reg. 15. the Church of *England*; and, for that purpose, takes a
March. journey to *Scotland*, where he endeavours to introduce Episcopacy.
April. He makes a speech to the Parliament there, and
May. treats the *Scots* with great haughtiness, because they did not
 readily comply with his desires.
- August.* He returns to *England*, and the 15th of *September* following
 arrives at *Westminster*.
- 1617-18.* The Earl of *Buckingham* is created a Marquis, and his
Jan. 1. relations are loaded with honours and preferments: His
Reg. 16. mother, *Mary Beaumont*, is created Countess of *Buckingham*;
 and countenances the Papists, who, under her protection,
1618. flock into the Kingdom.
- May.* Troubles begin to arise in *Bohemia* on account of Religion; the Protestants resolving to take arms, the Emperor *Matthias* raises an army in the *Low-Countries*.
- 24.* The Book of Sports is published, and ordered to be read in Churches.
- June.* Sir *Walter Raleigh* returns from his expedition into *America* (whither he failed *March 28, 1617.*) but without any success.
- The King and People are jealous of one another, and dissatisfied.
- July 12.* Thomas *Howard*, Earl of *Suffolk*, and Lord-Treasurer,
19. being accused of several misdemeanors, is turned out, and fined 30,000*l.* the 30th of *November, 1619.*
- King *James* signs five articles, containing Preliminary Conventions for the Prince of *Wales*'s marriage with the Infanta of *Spain*.
- Oct. 17.* George *Carleton*, Bishop of *Llandaff*, Dr. *John Hall*, Dr. *Davenant*, and Mr. *Ward*, go to the Synod of *Dort*.
- 29.* Through the solicitations of *Don Diego de Sarmiento*, Count of *Gondemar*, the Spanish Ambassador, Sir *Walter Raleigh* is beheaded, in pursuance of the sentence passed upon him in the year 1603.
- The Court of *Spain* amuses King *James*, for fear he should interpose in the affairs of *Bohemia*.
- 1618-19.* Henry *Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, is released out of the

the Tower, by means of the Lord *Hay*, his son-in-law. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Anne* dies of a dropsy, aged 44, and was buried Mar. 2.
the 13th of May following, in *Westminster-Abbey*.

Shortly after, the King is seized with a great illness,
which indangers his life.

The Emperor *Matthias* dies : *Ferdinand of Austria*, his 20.
cousin and adopted son, is proclaimed King of *Bohemia*; *Reg. 17.*
and, not long after, he is elected Emperor. 1619.

Frederic V, Elector *Palatine*, and King *James's* son-in-*Aug. 18.*
law, is chosen King of *Bohemia*. Aug. 26.

King *James* is very angry with him, for accepting the
Crown, and uses his utmost endeavours to persuade him to
quit it.

The Court of *Spain* continues to amuse King *James*
about the marriage.

He desires to be Umpire between *Ferdinand* and *Frederic*, 1620.
but cannot succeed.

Philip III, King of *Spain*, raises an army in the *Nether-Reg. 18.*
lands to invade the *Palatinate*: King *James* suffers himself
to be amused by the *Spaniards*, and so hindered from assisting
the Elector *Palatine*.

He is even, with much ado, prevailed upon to suffer a *June.*
regiment of 2200 men to go over into the *Palatinate*, under
the command of Sir *Heratio Vere*, accompanied by *Henry*
Vere, Earl of *Oxford*, and *Robert D'Evereux*, Earl of *Efsex*.

These *English* troops join *Frederick's* Allies; but the *Oz. I.*
campaign being opened very late in the *Palatinate*, nothing
of consequence is done.

King *James* and *Lewis XIII*, King of *France* send Ambas-
sadors to try to compose the troubles in *Bohemia*.

The Elector of *Saxony* conquers *Lusatia*, and keeps it
for himself, having, by that bait, been gained over to
Ferdinand's side.

The Duke of *Bavaria* joins also *Charles de Bucquoy*, the *Nov. 8.*
Emperor's General; and, by their united forces, *Frederic's*
army is entirely routed at the battle of *Prague*: He flies to
Holland, leaving behind him all his baggage and money.

King *James* solicits, in vain, *Lewis XIII*, in behalf of
the *Huguenots*, who were much persecuted in *France*.

He takes false measures to save the *Palatinate*; and suf-
fers himself to be entirely ruled by Count *Gondemar*, the
Spanish Ambassador.

He demands a benevolence for the defence of the *Pa-*
latinate.

Sir *Henry Montague* is constituted Lord-Treasurer for a *Dec. 1.*
sum

Ann. C. a sum of money ; but on the 28th of September following, he is deprived of that office, which is conferred on Sir Lionel Cranfield, a relation of Buckingham's.

The Marquis of Buckingham marries Catharine, the only daughter and heiress of Francis Maners, Earl of Rutland (May 16.)

The King calls a Parliament, in order to get money, upon pretence of the war in the Palatinate.
1620-21.

Jan. 14. Sir Robert Naunton, one of the Secretaries of State, is turned out by Buckingham's means, and Sir Edward Conway put in his place.

Jan. 30. The Parliament meets ; and the King makes a speech to both Houses, wherein he gives them several instructions, and demands money of them.

Reg. 19. The Parliament grants the King two subsidies, and the *Mar. 11.* Clergy three.

1621. Several petitions are presented to the King against monopolies, and against Papists.

An act is made concerning monopolies, and dispensations with penal laws. Another, for the ease of the subject, concerning informations upon penal statutes. An act for limitation of actions, and for avoiding of suits in law. An act against usury, &c.

Mar. 31. Philip III, King of Spain, dies, and is succeeded by his *February.* son, Philip IV.

March. The estate of Sir Giles Monpeson, a noted monopolist, who had fled, is confiscated : Sir Francis Michel, another monopolist, is fined : And they are both degraded of the

May. order of Knighthood.

May 2. Gondemar is insulted by the populace, in London, for which some of them are whipped.

Sir Francis Bacon, Viscount St. Albans, is turned out of his office of High-Chancellor, fined 40,000*l.* and deprived of his place in the House of Peers.

Two parties are formed in England, one for the King, and another for the People ; which gave rise to the present names Whigs and Tories.

June 4. The King sends and adjourns the Parliament : The Commons think this to be a breach of privilege, and maintain, that the King had not power to adjourn the Parliament : But the House of Lords refuses to join with the Commons, in a petition to the King upon that occasion.

The Commons draw up a declaration about the Palatinate, before they adjourn.

A Proclamation is issued out against several monopolies.
The

- The Archduke *Albert* dies. Ann. C.
- Dr. *John Williams*, Dean of *Westminster*, is made Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal. July 13.
July 15.
- The Lord *Digby*, who was sent Ambassador to *Vienna* in *February* this year, obtains an audience of the Emperor, who only amuses him.
- Bucquoy*, the Emperor's General, is slain by the Hungarians. 13.
- Archbishop *Abbot* kills the Keeper of a Park, as he was hunting.
- Count *Mansfeldt* marches into the *Upper Palatinate*, and makes a treaty with Count *Tilly*, the *Bavarian* General. Sept. 27.
- The *Upper Palatinate* is lost this campaign, and the *Lower* vigorously attacked.
- Dr. *John Williams*, High-Chancellor, is consecrated Nov. 11. Bishop of *Lincoln*.
- King *James* thinks of restoring the affairs of *Frederic*, his son-in-law, by way of negotiation : He is amused both by the Emperor and the King of *Spain*.
- Dr. *William Laud* is made Bishop of St. *David's*. 18.
- The Parliament meets again : The King lays before them the state of his affairs, and demands money for carrying on the war in the *Palatinate*. They vote a subsidy for that purpose. Nov. 20.
- The Commons present a remonstrance to him about the people's grievances, and particularly against Popery, with which he is highly offended.
- The King sends an angry letter about it to Sir *Thomas Richardson*, Speaker of the House of Commons. Dec. 3.
- The Commons present a petition to the King, in which they justify their conduct.
- He returns an answer to them in writing, with which they are not at all satisfied. 11.
- The Commons make a protestation upon the receipt of this answer. 21.
- The King causes the Journal of the House of Commons to be brought into Council, and razes thence with his own hand, the Commons protestation. 30.
- The Parliament is dissolved by proclamation ; which proclamation is followed by another, forbidding, under severe penalties, to talk of state affairs. 1621-2. Jan. 6.
- Several of the Members, particularly *Henry Vere Earl of Oxford*, *Henry Wriothesley Earl of Southampton*; *Sir Edward Coke*, *John Selden*, *John Pym*, &c. are imprisoned ; but at different times.

The

Ann. C. The King pretended, that the privileges of the Commons having no other foundation, than the concession of the Kings his Predecessors, it was in his power to revoke them, if they gave just occasion : The Commons, on the other side, pretended, they enjoyed these privileges by antient and undoubted right, and that it was not in the King's power to take them away.

The Puritans side with the People, and the Arminians declare for the King.

Reg. 20. King James loses all his reputation abroad ; several Pasquils are made upon him in the *Netherlands*.

He exacts from his subjects a benevolence, on pretence of being resolved to recover the *Palatinate* by arms.

A. de Dominis late Archbishop of *Spalato*, returns to *Rome*.

1622. John Lord *Digby* (created September 15, this year, Earl of *Bristol*) is sent Ambassador extraordinary to *Spain*, to conclude the treaty of marriage between Prince *Charles*, and the Infanta *Maria*.

At the same time, *Gage* is sent to *Rome* to sollicit the hastening of the Pope's dispensation ; and to forward it, the imprisoned Recusants are all released.

Sir *Richard Weston* is sent to the Archduchess *Isabella* at *Brussels*, to negotiate a truce about the *Palatinate*.

Edward Lord Vaux is permitted to raise men in *England* to go and serve the Infanta against the *United-Provinces*.

King *James* is amused every where, and deceives himself by taking wrong measures.

Sept. 9. *Gage* comes back from *Rome* with the Articles or Conditions upon which the Pope was willing to grant a dispensation ; the King resolves to accept of them, with some few exceptions, and orders the Earl of *Bristol* to conclude the marriage.

The King of *Spain*, thinking this to be a favourable opportunity to restore the Roman-Catholic religion in *England*, resolves at last to consent to the marriage.

Septemb. Heidelberg and *Manheim* are taken from the Elector *Palatine*, and *Frankendal* besieged by the *Imperialists*.

Novemb. The Duke of *Bavaria* is invested with the Electoral Dignity, and the *Upper-Palatinate*, which had been wrested from Prince *Frederic*.

King *James* agrees to whatever the Pope required for the Catholics.

The Earl of *Bristol* settles all the articles with the Court of

of Spain; and a time is fixed for the celebration of the *Ann. C.* marriage. Nothing is now wanted but the Pope's dispensation, without any thing being stipulated for the *Palatinate*, according to the King's express order.

The King of Spain grants a fifteen months truce for the *Palatinate*: and *Frankendal* is put, by way of trust, into the Infanta *Isabella*'s hands.

The Marquis of Buckingham persuades the Prince of Wales to go into Spain, and the King is so weak as to consent to his going.

Prince *Charles* sets out *incognito*, with *Buckingham*, and Feb. 7. two more only.

He arrives at *Madrid*, where he is well received, but Mar. 7. is not suffered to see the Infanta in private. *Reg. 21.*

Pope *Gregory XV.* writes a letter to Prince *Charles*, April 20. wherein he exhorts him to embrace Popery.

The Prince sends him back an ambiguous answer. *May 20.*

The Pope adds new Conditions to the dispensation, when he heard of the Prince's being in Spain: King *James* consents to every thing required; and after having signed the Articles, sends them back to Spain.

The Court of Spain endeavours to allure and persuade Prince *Charles* to turn Papist, but to no purpose.

George Abbot Archbishop of *Canterbury*, advises King *James* not to tolerate Popery.

George Villiers is created Duke of *Buckingham*, and his May 18. patent is sent to him in Spain.

Pope *Gregory XV.* dies; which renders the dispensation null.

Urban VIII. is chosen Pope; he delays to grant the Aug. 6. dispensation; waiting till Prince *Charles* had embraced Popery.

The Prince resolves to break off the match, and gets his Father's consent for it. He devises means to leave Madrid, without causing any suspicion in that Court.

Prince *Charles* sets out from Madrid. *Sept. 9.*

He returns safe to *Portsmouth*. *Oct. 5.*

The Court of Madrid promises the restitution of the 1623-4. *Palatinate*. *Jan. 8.*

Notwithstanding that, King *James* is forced to consent to the breach of the match between his Son and the Infanta.

He is ruled absolutely by the Prince and the Duke of *Buckingham*; and they prevail upon him to call a new Parliament, though much against his own inclination.

Ann. C. They cause *John Digby Earl of Bristol* to be recalled from *Spain*.

February. The *Hollanders* dispossess the *English* of their settlement at *Amboyna* in the *East-Indies*, and cause ten of them to be barbarously and ignominiously executed.

A project is formed of a marriage between Prince *Charles* and Princess *Henrietta Maria*, sister of *Lewis XIII*, King of *France*.

Feb. 19. The Parliament meets, and the King makes a speech to them, different from his former ones.

The Duke of Buckingham imposes upon the Parliament, by a false narrative of what had been done in *Spain*; whereupon, both Houses present an address to the King, to advise him to discontinue the treaty begun with *Spain*, as well for the restitution of the *Palatinate*, as for the marriage.

Upon his promising to try to recover the *Palatinate* by force of arms, the Commons offer to grant him three entire subsidies, and three fifteenths and tenths, to be disposed of by Commissioners of their own chusing. They granted them accordingly; and the Clergy gave four entire subsidies.

They present to him a petition against Recusants.

April. King *James* dispatches a messenger to the Court of *Spain*, with his last resolution to break off the treaty.

The Marquis of *Inoisoa*, the *Spanish Ambassador*, privately informs the King of the Duke *Buckingham's* indirect practices.

1624. The Prince of *Wales*, and Duke of *Buckingham*, cause *Lionel Cranfield*, Earl of *Middlesex*, and High-Treasurer, to be disgraced, though utterly against the King's inclination, whom they kept in an ignominious subjection.

May 29. The Parliament is prorogued, after having made the following acts, among others; one concerning monopolies, and dispensations with penal laws, and the forfeitures thereof; another, for the better repressing of drunkenness, and inordinate haunting of inns, alehouses, &c.—That, not above 8*l. per cent.* interest shall be given for money.—For the relief of creditors against bankrupts.—That profane swearers and cursers shall pay 1*s.* for every oath, to the use of the poor.—For making the river *Thames* navigable as far as *Oxford*, &c.

The King entertains strong suspicions against the Prince and the Duke: The Duke is upon the point of being discarded

carded, but the King dares not do it ; on the contrary, he *Ann. C.* is forced to turn the Earl of *Bristol* out of favour.

James Hay, Earl of *Carlisle*, is sent to *France*, to negotiate a marriage between Prince *Charles* and the Princess *Henrietta Maria*.

King *James* puts the laws in execution against the *Papists* : The Archbishop of *Ambrun* is sent by *Lewis XIII.* to intercede for them, and hath several private conferences with King *James*.

The treaty of marriage is signed at *Paris*.

Nov. 10.

Six thousand *English* are sent into *Holland* to serve in the army of the *States*, under the command of the Prince of *Orange*, to recover the *Palatinate*.

Count *Mansfeldt* comes to *England* to obtain succours for the *Palatinate*, and 12,000 men are granted him for that purpose.

King *James* demands *Frankendal* of the Infanta, who *Sept. 30.* promises to give it up : But a garrison cannot be conveyed thither, because King *James* had not stipulated for a passage to it through the Emperor's Dominions.

Count *Mansfeldt* embarks with the *English* army ; but a *Decemb.* passage being denied him through *France*, the army is carried to *Zealand*, where, immediately after landing, they disperse ; above two thirds of them having perished of the plague on ship-board.

Some difficulties arise about the Pope's dispensation, and *1624-25.* a new one is demanded.

January.

King *James I.* dies, in the 60th year of his age, after *February.* having reigned 22 years and three days, in *England*, and *Reg. 23.* been King of *Scotland* 59 years, three months, and twelve *1625.* days.

May 27.

The Duke of *Buckingham* is suspected of having hastened his death.

The Character of King JAMES I.

Rapin observes that King *James I.* had for Historians, *Wilson.* men very much prepossessed in his favour, or extremely pre-*Coke.* judiced against him. This naturally followed from the di-*Weldon.* visions to which he himself had given birth. Some repre-*Annals.* sent him as a perfect pattern of a good King : Others blac-*Sanderson.* ken his reputation as much as possible, by aggravating his failings. The reason of this diversity proceeds from the History of his Reign, being penned at a time when the animosity of the two parties was at the height, whence both

have happened to leave in their writings evident marks of their passion. Therefore the character of this Prince must not be formed, either upon the praises of the one, or the invectives of the other, but upon his manner of governing, upon his speeches and actions. This might be done by recollecting the principal circumstances of his reign. But to save the Reader the pains, (*continues Rapin*) I shall briefly relate, what is said on both sides, of which he will be able to judge.

The principal ingredients in King James's panegyrick is the constant peace he caused his subjects to enjoy. This cannot be said to be the effect of chance, since it clearly appears to have been his sole, or, at least, chief aim in his administration. Nothing, say his friends, is more noble or more worthy a great King, than such a design. But this design loses all its merit, if the Prince is discovered by his conduct to preserve peace only out of fear, supineness, excessive love of ease and repose, and King James's whole behaviour shows he acted by these motives, though he coloured it with the pretence of affection for his people.

Bacon. If some take care to extol his knowledge in Philosophy, Divinity, History, polite Learning, others affirm it was but Coke, p. 176 real pedantry, and that from all his acquired knowledge he learnt only to talk very impertinently on every subject, instead of framing solid and sure rules for the government of his dominions.

Coke, p. 180 His liberality, which some praise, is exclaimed against by others as prodigality. These pretend he gave without measure and discretion, without any regard to his own wants, or the merits of those on whom he heaped his favours.

Williams. The same contrariety occurs between King James's Historians with respect to his capacity. Some call him for his Coke, p. 176 wisdom, the *Solomon* of the age. Others endeavour to display all his errors, particularly in the two sole important affairs of his reign, wherein he came off very ill, namely, the Prince his son's marriage, and his son-in-law's election to the Kingdom of Bohemia.

Some extol him for maintaining the Prerogative Royal in its full lustre, in spite of the efforts of those who were continually attacking it. Others pretend, he had conceived very wrong ideas of the *English* Constitution, and by aiming to carry the regal authority too high, and instilling the same principles into his successor, he was the first cause of his family's ruin.

As

As to his manners writers are no less divided. Some describe him as a very wise and virtuous Prince, whilst others speak of him as a Prince of a dissolute life, given to drinking, and swearing in common conversation, especially when he was in a passion. He is likewise reproached for dissolving the Earl of Essex's marriage, pardoning the Earl and Countess of Somerset, for the death of Sir Walter Raleigh, and for confidently calling God to witness in full Parliament, that he never had any thoughts of granting the Papists a toleration, which he could affirm but by means of some mental reservation.

In fine, whilst some praise his moderation and equity to the Catholicks, others pretend to demonstrate he was a Papist in his heart, and only professed the Protestant Religion out of fear of what might follow, in case he openly declared for the Catholick. If some say, in proof of his being a good Protestant, that he made constant profession of the established religion, persevered in it to his death, and when dying, charged the Prince his son to protect the Church and Clergy; others answer, this is far from a demonstration. They pretend, the point is not to know what he would appear to be, but what he was in reality, and that his actions belied his outward profession: that the same thing had happened to him in Scotland, where till the age of thirty-six years, he had professed a Religion which he mortally hated, as plainly appeared afterwards. That when he came to England, he declared himself openly the protector of the Papists: took their part on all occasions: promoted them to honours, dignities, publick offices: that in his Reign the laws against them were never duly executed, of which he boasted to the Catholick Princes in his apology concerning the oath of Allegiance: That in all his speeches, whether in the Parliament or the Star-chamber, his constant aim was to move his subjects to consent to a full toleration for the Catholicks: but not finding the Parliament inclined as he wished, he granted, by his sole authority, a toleration in effect, by hindering the execution of the laws, and discharging the condemned Recusants from fines, and other penalties: that in his conventions with Spain and France, he positively promised to cause no more laws to be enacted against the Papists, and those already in force not to be executed: that on all occasions, he affected to show he found nothing amiss in the Roman Religion, but the Pope's exorbitant power over Princes: that by giving the Pope the titles of Holy Father,

Echard.
Weldon.
p. 179, 186.
Coke, p. 71.

Burnet.
p. 17.

his Holiness, and by consenting that his son's children should be educated in the *Roman Religion* till the age of thirteen years, he plainly discovered he should not be sorry for their continuance in that Religion: Lastly, his engagements with the Archbishop of *Ambrun* is a fresh and manifest proof of his being a true Papist. To this the others reply, it is not possible to conceive, that if King *James* had been a Papist in his heart, he would have spent a considerable part of his time in writing books against the Popish Religion, and combating the arguments of *Bellarmino*, and *Du Perron*.

Having related what is said for and against King *James*, with respect to his Religion, I shall take the liberty to offer my opinion or conjecture, which is, that this Prince was truly neither a sound Protestant, nor a good Catholick. One can hardly help owning, that he had never much at heart the interest of the Protestant Religion, as on the other hand, it cannot be denied, he made publick and constant profession of the same to his dying day. This induces me to think he had formed a scheme of Religion different from that of others, according to which he counted of no moment, what the Protestants and Catholicks looked upon as essential. The difference between the two Religions, with respect to the tenets, was not what affected him most. He believed, probably, that every Religion was good, provided it taught obedience to Sovereigns, and preserved the Hierarchy, which he considered as a fundamental Article. It is therefore no wonder, that, agreeably to this scheme, he should refuse to enter into the measures of the English Protestants, to hinder the growth of the *Romish Religion* in *England*, or not scruple to continue in the religion he professed, since, according to his notions, the two religions were equally good, provided the Pope's despotic power was abolished. I scarce doubt, that in his conferences with the Archbishop of *Ambrun*, he had in view the chimerical project of reconciling the two religions, without troubling himself about the tenets which divided them, and which, in one of his speeches he called scholastick questions. But, very probably, if he could have executed this project, according to his ideas, all the advantage would have been on the side of the *Romish Religion*. This, in my opinion, is the only way to excuse his condescension to the Catholicks, and his zeal to protect them. Otherwise, I don't see how his doubtful behaviour, with regard to Religion, can well be accounted for. This may also

also serve to discover the reason of his rejecting with so much animosity, the Religion of the Puritans, whose principles he believed directly contrary to the scheme he had formed.

But whatever may be said for and against King James's person, it is certain, *England* never flourished less than in his Reign, and the *English* saw themselves exposed to the insults and railleries of other Nations, whilst the blame was generally cast on the King. The following Epigram made in *France* in his time, is a clear evidence in what esteem he was with his neighbours :

*Tandis qu' Elizabeth fut Roy,
L'Anglois fut d'Espagne l'effroy.
Ma intenant, devise et caquette,
Regi par la Reine Jaquette.*

That is literally in *English*.

*Whilst Elizabeth was King,
The English were of Spain the Terror.
But now, governed by Queen Jaquet,
They only talk and prattle.*

As to the King's person, though his Father and Mother Welwood, were esteemed the handsomest couple of the age they lived p. 17. in, yet he was himself but homely, nor in any of his features was to be found the least resemblance of the beautiful *Mary Steuart*, or *Lord Darnley*.

By his Queen, *Anne*, daughter of *Frederic II*, King of *Denmark* and *Norway*, he had the following sons, 1. *Henry-Frederick*, born *February 19, 1593*, created Prince of *Wales* *May 30, 1610*, died *November 6, 1612*. 2. *Robert*, who died young. 3. *Charles*, born *November 19, 1600*, afterwards King of *Great-Britain*. He had also these daughters, 1. *Elizabeth*, born *August 19, 1596*, married *February 14, 1612*, to *Frederick V*, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, Duke of *Bavaria*, and elected afterwards King of *Bohemia*: From which the present Royal Family is descended. 2. *Margaret*. 3. *Mary*. 4. *Sophia*. Which three last died young.

*An Account of the burial of ANNE, wife of King JAMES I;
and of King JAMES I.*

On *Tuesday* the *2d* of *March*, about two o'clock in the morning, *Ann. Dom. 1618*, died *Anne Queen of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland*, at the King's Palace of *Hamp-*

ton-Court, from whence her corpse was brought by barge to *Denmark-* (commonly called *Somerset-*) *House*, and there set forth with all the state and magnificence of so great a Queen, where it remained till the 13th day of *May*, being *Thursday*, in the year 1619, and was then conveyed, in a solemn proceeding and attendance of very many of the Nobility and Gentry in mourning, to the *Abbey-Church of St. Peter at Westminster*, where all the funeral ceremonies were performed, and then interred in the Chapel of King *Henry the Seventh*; but no monument is yet erected to her memory, only on a tablature hanging on the wall on the north side thereof, these verses present themselves to your view:

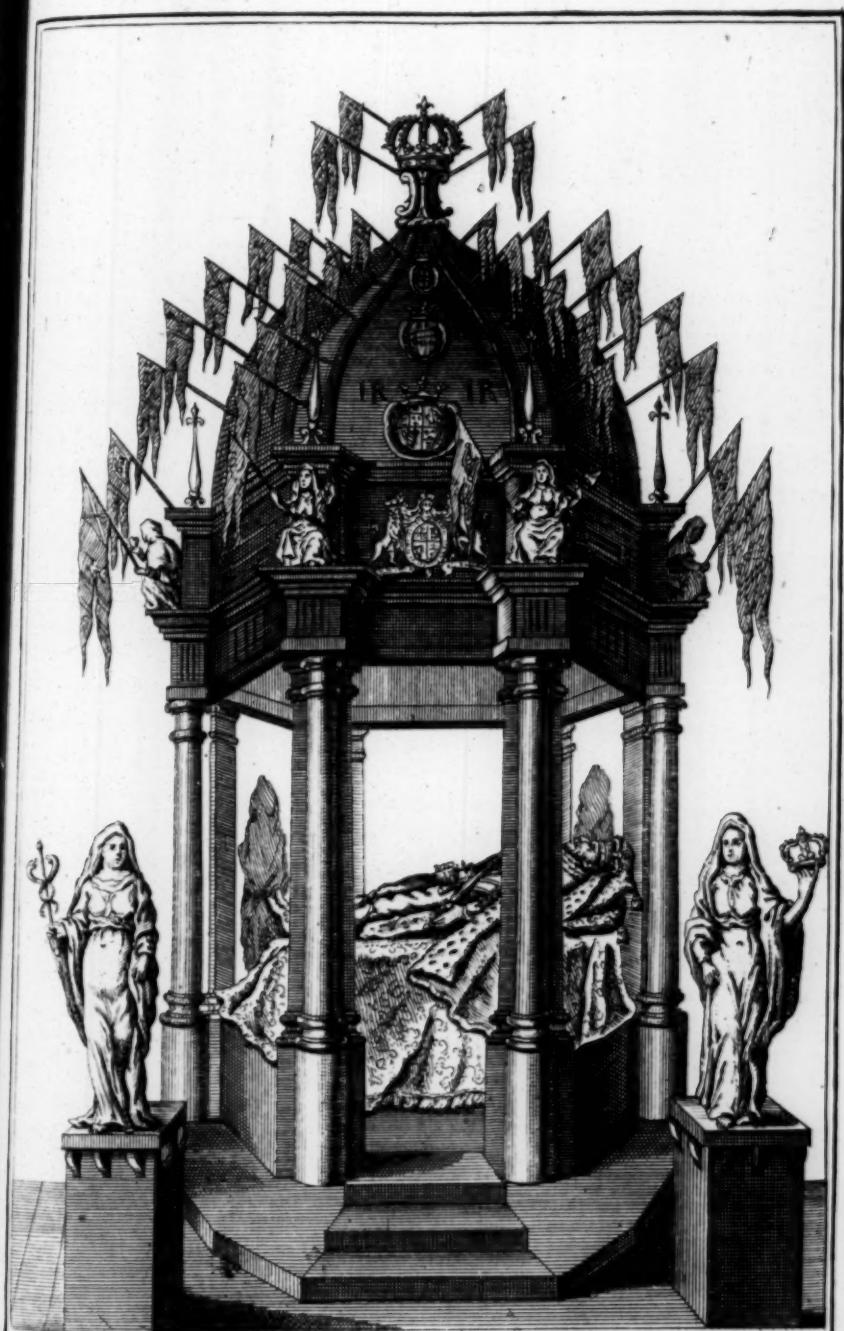
Ad Potentissimum Serenissimæ ANNÆ maritum, Jacobum, Dei Gratia, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Regem, Fidei Defensorem, &c.

Annus & Anna in se reddit, his novus, illa perennis:
 Cujus Vir Pater & Frater Rex, Regia proles:
 In Cœlo æternos Regina est Anna per annos,
 Floreat illa suis in prole æterna Britannis,
 Inque suo vigeat fæliciter Anna Jacobo.
 Inclyte Rex Britonum, veniam da vera loquenti,
 Jacobus caret Anna, & non caret Anna Jacobo;
 Maxime Rex Regum Regem solare Jacobum.

Obiit in Domino, Anno Domini 1618. quarto nonarum Martii, annos nata 44, menses 4, & dies 18.

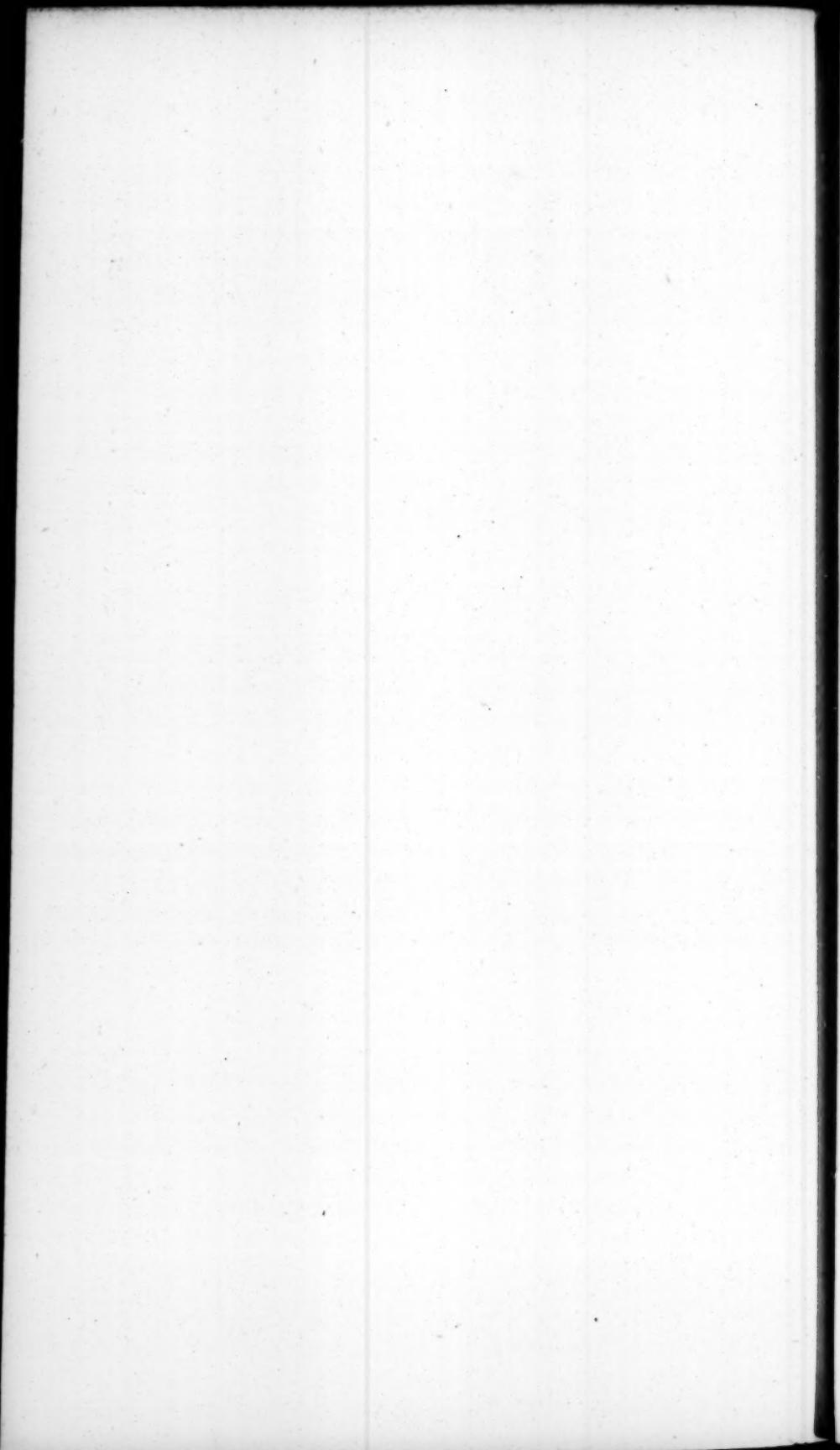
King James's body, for the greater state, was, by torch-light, conveyed from *Theobald's* to *Denmark-House*, where having rested from the 23d of April to the 7th day of May, it was thence carried to *Westminster-Abbey* to a stately herse, with great solemnity, but with greater lamentation, (the figure whereof is represented in the following page) and there interred in the Chapel of King *Henry the Seventh*; King *Charles*, his Son and Successor, being chief-mourner. Upon whose coffin, on a plate of copper gilt, was engraven this memorial:

Depositum Invictissimi Principis Jacobi primi, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Regis, qui rerum apud Scotos, annos 59. menses 3. dies 12. Et apud Anglos, annos 22. & dies 3. pacifice, ac fæliciter potitus, tandem in domino obdormivit, 27 die Martii, anno à Christo nato, 1625, ætas vero suæ, 60.



The Mausoleum in Westminster Abbey —
at the Funeral Obsequies of K. JAMES I.

J. Mynde sc.



An account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture of the 2d of James I, a pound-weight of Gold, of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was coined into 37*l.* 4*s.* by tale; namely, into Unites, going for 20*s.* Double-Crowns at 10*s.* Britain-Crowns at 5*s.* Thistle-Crowns at 4*s.* and Half-Crowns at 2*s.* 6*d.* a-piece: And a pound-weight of Silver of the said old Standard into 62*s.* by tale; namely, into Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, Half-pence, Crowns, and Half-Crowns.— In the 3d year of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold of the old Standard, of twenty-three Carats, three Grains and a half fine, was coined into 40*l.* 10*s.* by tale; namely, into Rose-Rials at 30*s.* a-piece, Spur-Rials at 15*s.* and Angels at 10*s.* a-piece.— In the 9th, there was a proclamation for raising Gold 2*s.* in every 20*s.*— In the 10th, a pound-weight of the old Standard Gold was coined into 44*l.* by tale; namely, Rose-Rials, Spur-Rials, and Angels; and a pound-weight of Gold of twenty-two Carats fine, was coined into 40*l.* 18*s.* and 4*d.* namely, into Unites at 22*s.* Double-Crowns at 11*s.* British Crowns at 5*s.* 6*d.* Thistle-Crowns at 4*s.* 4*d.* three-Farthings, or Half British Crowns at 2*s.* 9*d.* a-piece.

The Gold Coins of this King (as appears from the Indentures above) are Rose-Rials, and Spur-Rials, Angels, Unites, Crowns, and Half-Crowns, of several denominations. The Rose-Rial has on one side the King upon his Throne, in his Robes, with Crown, Scepter, and Ball, at his feet a Portcuse, IACOBUS. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIBER. REX. Reverse, the Rose and Arms, which are quarterly, *France* and *England* in the first and fourth Quarters; second, the Lion within the double Tressure fleury, for *Scotland*; third, the Harp for *Ireland*, A. DNO. FACTVM. EST. ISTUD. ET. EST. MIRAB. IN. OCV. NRIS. The Unite has on one side the King's Figure, IACOBVS. DEI. GRA. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIBER. REX. Reverse, FACIAM. EOS. IN. GENTEM. VNAM. Of these Unites there are several sorts, as may be seen in the *Nummi. Britann. Historia*, p. 84, 85. One in particular has the King's Laureat on one side, and XX. behind the Head, a Scarf crosses the shoulder, Inscriptions and Arms as the former Unites, HENRIC. ROSAS. REGNA. IACOBVS. There is a Half, with X. behind the Head, and a Quarter with V. The Crowns have on the reverse the Arms, and HEN-

HENRICVS. ROSAS. REGNA. IACOBVS. The Thistle-Crown has on one side a Rose crowned, and IA. D. GRA. MAG. BR. FR. ET. HIBER. REX. On the other side a Thistle-flower crowned, TVEATVR. VNITA. DEVS. (Fig. 1.) The Half-Crowns have, on one side, the King's Figure, and IA. D. G. ROSA. SINE. SPINA. Reverse, the Arms, and TVEATVR, &c.— The Silver Coins of this King are Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence. The Crown represents the King on Horse-back in Armour, and crowned, holding a sword in his hand ; the Rose and Crown upon the Trappings of the Horse, IACOBVS. D. G. ANG. SCO. FRA. ET. HIB.



REX. Reverse, the Arms, EXVRGAT. DEVS. DIS-SIPENTVR. INIMICI. Another Crown is inscribed, IACOBVS. D. G. ANG. SCO. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. Reverse, the Arms, QVÆ. DEVS. CONIVNXIT. NE-MO. SEPARET. The Shillings have XII. (Fig. 2.) and the Six-pences VI. behind the King's head crowned, with Legends as on the Crowns. The Pence and Two-pences are inscribed I. D. G. ROSA. SINE. SPINA. with I. or II. behind the King's head crowned. (Fig. 4.) Reverse, the Arms fill up the whole Area. The Irish Monies are in all respects like the English, only have a Harp crowned on the reverse. (Fig. 3.) The Copper Money of Ireland has two Scepters through the Crown. The

Ann. C.

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

<i>Robert Cecill, Baron Cecill of Effendon.</i>	1603.
— Viscount Cranburne. See below.	13 May.
<i>Robert Sidney, Baron of Penshurst.</i>	1604.
<i>William Knollys, or Knowles, Baron of Gray's.</i>	20 Aug.
— Viscount Wallingford.	1616.
<i>Edward Wotton, Baron of Marley.</i>	7 Nov.
<i>Charles Blount, Baron Montjoy</i> — Earl of Devonshire.	21 July.
<i>Thomas Baron Howard</i> , — Earl of Suffolk.	
<i>Henry Wriothesley</i> , Earl of Southampton, restored.	
<i>Thomas Egerton, Baron of Ellesmere.</i>	
— Viscount Brackley, and Earl of Bridgewater.	1617. 28 May.
<i>William Russel, Baron of Thornhaugh.</i>	
<i>Henry Grey, Baron of Groby.</i>	
<i>John Petre, Baron of Wriothesley.</i>	
<i>John Harrington, Baron of Exton.</i>	
<i>Henry Danvers, Baron of Dantsey.</i>	
<i>Thomas Gerrard, Baron of Gerrard-Bromley.</i>	
<i>Robert Spencer, Baron of Worm-Leighton.</i>	
<i>Thomas Sackville, Baron Buckhurst</i> — Earl of Dorset.	1603-4. 13 Mar.
<i>Henry Howard, Baron of Marnhill</i> , and Earl of Northampton.	
<i>Lodowick Steuart, Earl of Newcastle</i> , and Duke of Richmond.	17 May.
<i>Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex</i> ; and,	
<i>William Paget, Baron Paget</i> , restored by Act of Parliament.	
<i>George Hume, Baron Hume, of Berwick.</i>	7 July.
<i>Robert Cecill, Baron of Effendon</i> , and Viscount Cranburne,	1605.
— Earl of Salisbury. In the morning.	4 May.
<i>Thomas Cecil, Baron Burleigh</i> — Earl of Exeter. In the afternoon, of the same day: Though the elder brother.	
<i>Philip Herbert, Baron Herbert of Shurland.</i>	
— Earl of Montgomery.	4 June.
<i>John Stanhope, Baron of Harrington.</i>	
<i>George Carew, Baron of Clopton.</i>	
<i>Thomas Arundel, Baron Arundel of Wardour.</i>	

- Ann. C.* *William Cavendish, Baron Cavendish, of Hardwick.*
 1618. ——— Earl of Devon.
 7 Aug. *Robert Sidney, Viscount Lisle.*
 1618. ——— Earl of Leicester.
 2 Aug. *Thomas Knyvet, Baron Knyvet of Escrick, by sum.*
 4 July. *William Parker, Baron Monteagle, by sum.*
 5 Nov. *Henry Howard, Marquis of Northampton.*
 1608.
 19 April. *Robert Carr, Viscount Rochester.*
 1611.
 25 Mar. ——— Baron Carr, and Earl of Somerset.
 1614.
 3 Nov. ——— Viscount Doncaster.
 1613. *Lodowick Stuwart, Baron Settrington, and Earl of Richmond.*
 6 Oct. ——— Earl of Carlisle.
 1615.
 29 June. *James Hay, Baron Hay of Sawley.*
 1617.
 5 July. ——— Viscount Doncaster.
 1622.
 13 Sept. ——— Earl of Carlisle.
 30 June. *Robert, Baron Dernier, of Wing.*
 27 Aug. *George Villiers, Baron Whaddon.*
 1616.
 5 Jan. ——— Viscount Villiers, and Earl of Buckingham.
 1617.
 1 Jan. ——— Marquis of Buckingham.
 1623.
 18 May. ——— Earl of Coventry, and Duke of Buckingham.
 1616.
 9 July. *John Holles, Baron Houghton.*
 1624.
 2 Nov. ——— Earl of Clare.
 22 July. *John Roper, Baron Tenham.*
 Septemb. *Francis Maners, Baron Ross; and Earl of Rutland.*
 7 Nov. *Mervin, Baron Audley, Earl of Castlehaven.*
 1616-17.
 23 Mar. *Philip Stanhope, Baron of Shelford.*
 1618.
 July 16. *Edward Noel, Baron of Ridlington.*
 2 Aug. *Mary Beaumont, mother to George Marquis of Buckingham.*
 6 Aug. *ham, Countess of Bucks.*
 2 Aug. *William, Baron Compton, —— Earl of Northampton.*
 6 Aug. *Robert Rich, Earl of Warwick.*

John

	<i>Ann. C.</i>
<i>John Digby, Baron Digby of Sherburne.</i>	25 Nov.
— Earl of Bristol.	1622.
	5 Sept.
<i>Esmé Stewart, Baron Leighton, and Earl of March.</i>	1619.
	7 June.
<i>James Hamilton (Marquis of Hamilton, in Scotland)</i>	16 June.
<i>Baron Ennerdale, and Earl of Cambridge.</i>	
<i>John Villiers, Baron Villiers of Stoke, and Viscount Pur-</i>	19 June.
<i>bek.</i>	
<i>Francis Bacon, Baron Verulam.</i>	11 July.
— Viscount St. Albans.	1620.
	18 Jan.
<i>William Cavendish, Baron Ogle, and Viscount Mansfield.</i>	1620.
	3 Nov.
<i>Henry Montague, Baron Kimbolton, and Viscount Man-</i>	19 Dec.
<i>deville.</i>	
<i>William Fielding, Baron and Viscount Fielding.</i>	1620-21.
	30 Dec.
— Earl of Denbigh.	1622.
	14 Dec.
<i>Fulk Greville, Baron Brock, of Beauchamp's-Court.</i>	9 Jan.
<i>John Ramsey, Baron Ramsey of Kingston, and Earl of Holderness.</i>	22 Jan.
<i>Francis Norris, Viscount Tame, and Earl of Berkshire.</i>	23 Jan.
<i>Edward Montague, Baron of Boughton.</i>	29 June.
<i>Thomas, Baron Darcy of Chichester, Viscount Colchester.</i>	5 July.
<i>Henry Carey, Baron Hunsdon, Viscount Rochford.</i>	6 July.
<i>Lionel Cranfield, Baron Cranfield.</i>	9 July.
— Earl of Middlesex.	1622.
<i>Thomas Howard, Baron of Charlton, and Viscount Andover.</i>	1621-22.
	23 Jan.
<i>Robert Carey, Baron of Leppington, and Earl of Monmouth.</i>	6 Febr.
<i>Henry Rich, Baron of Kensington.</i>	8 Mar.
— Earl of Holland.	1624.
	24 Sept.
<i>Christopher Villiers, Baron Daventre, and Earl of Anglesea.</i>	1623.
	18 Apr.
<i>Elizabeth [Heneage] relict of Sir Myle Finch, Viscountess Maidstone.</i>	8 July.
<i>William, Baron Grey, of Werke.</i>	1623-24.
	11 Febr.
	<i>Richard</i>

*Ann. C.**3 April.**Richard Burgh, or Burk (Earl of Clanrickard in Ireland)
Baron Somerhill.**5 April.**— Viscount Tunbridge.**7 July.**William Fines, Viscount Say and Sale.**22 Oct.**Francis Leke, Baron Deincourt.**28 Dec.**Oliver, Baron St. John of Bletshoo, Earl of Bolingbroke.**29 Dec.**Francis Fane, Baron Burghersh, and Earl of Westmoreland.**31 Dec.**James Ley, Baron of Ley.**16²⁴-25.**Richard, Baron Roberts, of Truro.**26 Jan.**Edward, Baron Conway, of Ragley:*

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
JAMES I.

*Henry Prince of Wales.**Christian IV. King of Denmark.**Ledowick Stewart, Duke of Lenox, and afterwards Duke
of Richmond.**Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton.**John Erskine, Earl of Marr.**William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke.**Ulrick, Duke of Holstein.**Henry Howard, Earl of Northampton.**Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury.**Thomas Howard, Viscount Bindon.**George Hume, Earl of Dunbar.**Philip Herbert, Earl of Montgomery, afterwards Earl of
Pembroke.**Charles Steuart, Duke of York, Prince of Wales, and after-
wards King of England, the first of that name.**Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel, afterwards Earl of
Norfolk.**Robert Carr, Viscount Rochester, afterwards Earl of
Somerset.**Frederic, Count Palatine of the Rhine, Prince Elector of
the Empire, and afterwards King of Bohemia.**Maurice de Nassau, Prince of Orange.**Thomas Erskine, Viscount Fanton, afterwards Earl of
Kelly.**William Knolles, Lord Knolles, afterwards Viscount Wal-
lingford, and Earl of Banbury.**Francis Manners, Earl of Rutland.**Sir George Villiers, Knight, afterwards Baron of Whad-
don*

dn, then Earl and Marquis of *Buckingham*, and lastly, Earl of *Coventry*, and Duke of *Buckingham*.

Robert Sidney, Viscount *Lisle*, afterwards Earl of *Leicester*.

James Hamilton, Marquis *Hamilton*, and Earl of *Cambridge*.

Efme Steuart, Duke of *Lennox*, and Earl of *March*.

Christian, Duke of *Brunswick*.

William Cecil, Earl of *Salisbury*.

James Hay, Earl of *Carlisle*.

Edward Sackville, Earl of *Dorset*.

Henry Rich, Earl of *Holland*.

Thomas Howard, Viscount *Andover*, afterwards Earl of *Berkshire*.

A short Account of the first Institution of BARONETS.

The lowest degree of honour, which is hereditary, is that of Baronets, and was first instituted by King James I. Anno 1611. given by patent to a man and the heirs male of his own body lawfully begotten; for which each one is obliged to pay into the Exchequer as much as will, for three years, at 8d. per diem, pay 30 foot soldiers to serve in the Province of Ulster in Ireland; which sum amounts to 1095 l. which is now always remitted.

Baronets have precedence before all Knights, except Knights of the Garter, Knights who are Privy-Councillors, or Knights Bannerets, made under the King's banner or standard displayed in an army royal in open war, and the King personally present.

They are styled Baronets in all Writs, Commissions, &c. with the addition of Sir, by a peculiar clause in their Patent of creation, and their wives are Ladies.

Baronets and their eldest sons, being of full age, may claim Knighthood.

Baronets have the privilege to bear in a canton of their coat of arms, or in a whole escutcheon, the arms of Ulster, viz. in a field argent, a hand Gules. Also in the King's armies, to have a place in the gross near the King's standard, with some particulars for their funerals.

The whole number of Baronets in England were not to exceed 200 at one and the same time; but now their number is without limitation: Their qualifications are, That they be of good reputation, and descended of a grandfather, at least by the father's side, that bore arms, and have also a yearly revenue of 1000 l. per annum *de claro*.

They

They take place according to the priority of the date of their patents.

No honour is ever to be created between Baronets and Barons.

The form of the Patent is as follows:

JAMES, by the Grace of God, &c. greeting: Whereas, amongst the other cares of Sovereignty, with which our mind is constantly exercised, that, neither is the least, nor of least moment, the Plantation of our Kingdom of Ireland, and chiefly of Ulster, a large and famous province of the same Kingdom, which, now under our government, and by our arms happily subdued, we endeavour so to establish, that so great a province should more and more flourish, not only in the true practice of religion, civil humanity, the probity of manners, but also in affluence of riches, and abundance of all things which contribute either to the ornament or happiness of the Commonweal: A work, indeed, which none of our Progenitors could perform and accomplish, though they had often, with much expence of blood and treasure, attempted it: In which work, our Royal Care, not only ought to contrive that the said Plantation should be strenuously promoted, towns founded, houses and castles built, fields tilled, and other things of that kind done; but also to regard, in the first place, that the whole management of such civil affairs should by an armed power, to wit, by garrisons and troops, be protected and communicated, to the end, that neither hostile force, nor intestine factions, should hinder or disturb them: And whereas it is intimated unto us, on the part of certain of our faithful subjects, that they are most ready, as well with their persons as their fortunes, to promote this our Royal undertaking; we, moved with a desire of accomplishing so holy and wholesome a work, and fondly regarding such generous inclinations and minds, so addicted to our service and the publick good, have resolved with ourselves, to be wanting in nothing which may reward the aforesaid goodwill of our subjects, or excite a spirit and alacrity in others, to perform their parts, and furnish their expences upon this occasion; therefore weighing and considering with ourselves, that virtue and industry are cherished and supported by nothing more than by honour; and that all the splendor and amplitude of honour and dignity take their rise from a King, as from a fountain, to whose high prerogative it properly belongs, to erect and institute new titles of honour,

and dignity, as he from whom the old ones flowed ; we have thought proper (the service of the Commonwealth, and the exigence of the times so requiring) to reward new merits with new ensigns of dignity : And therefore, of our certain knowledge and mere motion, we have ordained, erected, constituted, and created a certain state, degree, dignity, name and title of Baronet, within this our Kingdom of England, for ever to endure. Now know ye, that we of our special grace, and of our certain knowledge and mere motion have raised, appointed, and created, and by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, do raise, appoint, and create our beloved — of — in the County of —, a man in family, patrimony, riches, and probity of manners, remarkably eminent (who with a generous and liberal mind, gave and yielded to us a relief and supply, ample enough to maintain and support thirty men in our foot forces in our said Kingdom of Ireland for three entire years, for the defence of our said Kingdom ; and especially for the security of the said Plantation of Ulster) to and into the dignity, state, and degree of Baronet, and him — a Baronet, for us, our heirs and successors, do appoint, constitute, and create, by these presents, to have to him, and the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, for ever. We will also, and by these presents, of our special grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, for us, our heirs and successors, do grant to the aforesaid — and the heirs male of his body lawfully begotten, that he the said — and the heirs male aforesaid, may have, enjoy, hold, and take place and precedence, by virtue of the dignity of Baronet aforesaid ; and by force of these presents, as well in all Commissions, Writs, Letters Patents, Writings, Appellations, Nominations, and Directions, as in all Sessions, Conventions, Companies, and Places whatsoever, before all Knights, as well of the Bath as Knights Batchelors ; and also before all Knights Bannerets now created, or hereafter to be created, (those Knights Bannerets only excepted, who shall happen to be created under the Royal banner displayed, in a Royal army in open war, and the King himself personally present, and no otherwise :) And that the wives of the said — and of the heirs males aforesaid, by virtue of the said dignity of their husbands aforesaid, may have, hold, enjoy, and take place and precedence before the wives of all others whatsoever, before whom the husbands of such wives, by force of these presents, ought to have place and precedence : And

that the first begotten son, and all the other sons, and their wives and the daughters of the said — and of his heirs males aforesaid respectively, may have, and take place and precedence before the first begotten sons, and other sons, and their wives, and the daughters of all whatsoever, respectively, before whom the fathers of such first begotten sons, and other sons, and their wives, and daughters, by force of these presents, ought to have place and precedence. We will also, and by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, of our special grace, and of our certain knowledge and mere motion, do grant that the said — may be named, called, mentioned, may plead, and be impleaded, by the name of — Baronet; and that the stile and addition of Baronet shall be put at the end of the name of the said — and of his heirs male aforesaid, in all our Letters Patents, Commissions, and Writs, and all other Charters, Deeds and Letters, as a true legal, and necessary addition of dignity. We will also, and by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, do ordain, That before the name of the said — and his heirs male, aforesaid, in *English* speech, and all *English* writings, shall be placed this addition, Sir: and likewise that the wives of the said — and his heirs male, aforesaid, shall have, use, and enjoy, the appellation of Lady, Madam, and Dame, respectively, according to the custom of speaking. To have, hold, use, and enjoy the said state, degree, dignity, stile, title, name, place, and precedence, with all and singular the privileges, and the rest of the premises, to the aforesaid — and the heirs male of his body issuing, for ever. Willing, and by these presents granting, for us, our heirs and successors, that the said — and his heirs male aforesaid; the name, state, degree, stile, dignity, title, place, and presidence aforesaid; with all and singular the privileges, and other the premises, successively may bear, and have, and every of them may bear and have: and that the said — and his heirs male aforesaid, successively, may in all things be held as Baronets, and as Baronets be treated and reputed. And futher, of our more ample special grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have granted, and by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, do grant unto the said — and his heirs male aforesaid, that the number of Baronets of this Kingdom of *England*, shall never hereafter exceed in the whole, at any one time, the number of two hundred Baronets; and that the said Baronets and their heirs male aforesaid, respectively,

ly, from time to time, for ever, shall have, hold, and enjoy their places and precedencies, among themselves; to wit, every of them, according to the priority and seniority of his creation of Baronet, aforesaid. And moreover, of our more abundant special grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have granted, and by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, do grant to the aforesaid—and his heirs male aforesaid, that neither we, nor our heirs, or successors, shall for the future, erect, ordain, constitute, or create, within this our Kingdom of *England*, any other degree, order, name, title, dignity, or state, under or beneath the degree, dignity, or state of Barons of this our Kingdom of *England*, which shall be, or which can be superior or equal to the degree and dignity of Baronets aforesaid; but as well the said—and his heirs male aforesaid, as the wives, sons, sons wives, and daughters of the said—and his heirs male aforesaid, for ever hereafter, freely and quietly may have, hold, and enjoy their dignities, places, and precedencies aforesaid, before all who shall be of such degrees, states, dignities, or order, for the future to be created, as aforesaid, respectively according to the true intention of these presents, without the impeachment of us, our heirs, or successors, or of any other whatsoever. And further, by these presents, we declare and signify our will and pleasure to be now, and hereafter, and so we have resolved and determined with ourself, that if after we have compleated and perfected the aforesaid number of two hundred Baronets of this our Kingdom of *England*, it shall happen that some, or any of the same Baronets shall depart this life, without any heir male of the body, or bodies of such Baronet or Baronets begotten; that then we shall not create or appoint any other person or persons, Baronet, or Baronets, of our Kingdom of *England*; but that the said number of two hundred Baronets shall therefore, from time to time, decrease and be reduced to a lesser number. Lastly, We will, and by these presents, for us our heirs, and successors, of our special grace, and of our certain Knowledge and mere motion do grant unto the aforesaid—and heirs male aforesaid, that these our letters patent shall in all things, and by all things, be firm, valid, good, sufficient, and effectual in law, as well against us, our heirs and successors, as against all others whatsoever, according to the true intention of the same, as well in all our Courts, as in any other place whatsoever, notwithstanding any law, custom, prescription, use, or
Q 2
ordination,

dination, or constitution whatsoever, heretofore set forth, had, used, ordained, or provided, or hereafter to be set forth, had, used, ordained, or provided; and notwithstanding any other thing, cause, or matter whatsoever. We will also, &c. without fine in the Hanaper Office, so that express mention, &c. in testimony of which, &c. Witnes, &c.

Baronets created by King J A M E S I.

- 1 Sir Nicholas Bacon, Kt. of Redgrave in Suffolk, Mag 22, 1611.
- 2 Sir Richard Molineux of Sefton in Lancashire, Kt. since Viscount Molineux. *Irisb.*
- 3 Sir Thomas Mansel of Margam, Lord Mansel in Glamorganshire, Kt.
- 4 George Shirley of Stounton in Leicester, Esq; since Earl Ferrers. *Englifb.*
- 5 Sir John Stradling of St. Donat's in Glamorganshire, Kt.
- 6 Sir Francis Leake of Sutton in Derby, Kt. since Earl of Scarsdale. *E.*
- 7 Thomas Pelham of Laughton in Sussex, Esq; now Duke of Newcastle.
- 8 Sir Richard Houghton of Houghton Tower in Lancashire, Kt.
- 9 Sir Henry Hobart of Intwood in Norfolk, Kt. Earl of Buckinghamshire.
- 10 Sir George Booth of Dunham-Massy in Cheshire, Kt. since Earl of Warrington. *E.*
- 11 Sir John Peyton of Ifelham in Cambridgeshire, Kt.
- 12 Lionel Talmash of Helmingham in Suffolk, Esq; Earl of Dysert. *Scots.*
- 13 Sir Gervase Clifton of Clifton in Nottinghamshire, Kt. of the Bath.
- 14 Sir Thomas Gerrard of Bryn in Lancashire, Kt.
- 15 Sir Walter Aston of Tixhall in Staffordshire, Kt. of the Bath, since a Scots Baron, Lord Aston.
- 16 Philip Knevet of Buckenham in Norfolk, Esq; ex.
- 17 Sir John St. John of Lidiard Tregoz in Wiltsshire, Kt.
- 18 John Shelly of Michel-grove in Sussex, Esq;
- 19 Sir John Savage of Rock-Savage in Cheshire, Kt. since Earl Rivers, June 29. *E.*
- 20 Sir Francis Barrington of Barrington-Hall in Essex, Kt.
- 21 Henry Berkley of Wimundam in Leicestershire, Esq; ex.
- 22 William Wentworth of Wentworth-Woodhouse in Yorkshige, Esq; since an English Baron, Lord Raby.

- 23 Sir Richard Musgrave of Hartley-Castle in Westmoreland, Kt.
- 24 Edward Seymour of Bury Pomery in Devonshire, Esq;
- 25 Sir Moyl Finch of Eastwell in Kent, Kt. since Earl of Winchelfea. *E.*
- 26 Sir Anthony Cope of Hanwell in Oxfordshire, Kt.
- 27 Sir Thomas Monson of Carleton in Lincolnshire, Kt.
- 28 Charles Vavasor of Killingthorp in Lincolnshire, Esq;
- 29 George Grefely of Drakelow, Esq; in Derbyshire.
- 30 Paul Tracy of Stanway in Gloucestershire, Esq; ex.
- 31 Sir John Wentworth of Gosfield in Essex, Kt. ex.
- 32 Sir Henry Bellasisse of Newborough in Yorkshire, Kt. since Viscount Falconberg. *E.*
- 33 William Constable of Flamborough in Yorkshire, Esq; ex.
- 34 Sir Thomas Leigh of Stonely in Warwickshire, Kt. since an English Baron, Lord Leigh.
- 35 Sir Edward Noel of Brook in Rutland, Kt. since Earl of Gainsborough. *E.*
- 36 Sir Robert Cotton of Conington in Huntingdonshire, Kt.
- 37 Robert Cholmondeley of Cholmondeley in Cheshire, Esq; since Earl of Leinster. ex.
- 38 John Molineux of Taversal in Nottinghamshire, Esq;
- 39 Sir Francis Wortley of Wortley in Yorkshire, Kt. ex.
- 40 Sir George Savile, Senior, of Thornhill in Yorkshire, Kt.
- 41 William Kniveton of Mercaston in Derbyshire, Esq; ex.
- 42 Sir Philip Woodhouse of Wilbrahal in Norfolk, Kt.
- 43 Sir William Pope of Wilcot in Oxfordshire, Kt. since Earl of Downe. *I.* ex.
- 44 Sir James Harrington of Ridlington in Rutlandshire, Kt. ex.
- 45 Sir Henry Savile of Methley in Yorkshire, Kt. ex.
- 46 Henry Willoughby of Risley in Derbyshire, Esq; ex.
- 47 Lewis Tresham of Rushton in Northamptonshire, Esq; ex.
- 48 Thomas Brudenel of Dean in Northamptonshire, Esq; since Earl of Cardigan. *E.*
- 49 Sir George St. Paul of Snarsford in Lincolnshire, Kt. ex.
- 50 Sir Philip Tirhwit of Stainfield in Lincolnshire, Kt.
- 51 Sir Roger Dallison of Loughton in Lincolnshire, Kt. ex.
- 52 Sir Edward Carr of Sleaford in Lincolnshire, Kt. ex.
- 53 Sir Edward Hussey of Hennington in Lincolnshire, Kt. ex.

- 54 L'Estrange Mordant of Massingham, Esq; in Norfolk.
 55 Thomas Bendish of Steeple-Bumsted in Essex, Esq; ex.
 56 Sir John Wynne of Guidder in Caernarvanshire, Kt.
 57 Sir William Throckmorton of Tortworth in Gloucestershire, Kt. ex.
 58 Sir Richard Worsley of Apuldercomb in Hampshire, Kt.
 59 Richard Fleetwood of Caldwich in Staffordshire, Esq;
 60 Thomas Spencer of Yarnton, Esq; in Oxfordshire.
 61 Sir John Tufton of Hothfield in Kent, Kt. now Earl of Thanet. *E.*
 62 Sir Samuel Peyton of Knowlton in Kent, Kt. ex.
 63 Sir Charles Morrison of Cashio-Bury in Hertfordshire, Kt. ex.
 64 Sir Henry Baker of Sissinghurst in Kent, Kt. ex.
 65 Roger Appleton of South-hempsted in Essex, Esq; ex.
 66 Sir William Sidley of Ailesford in Kent, Kt. ex.
 67 Sir William Twisden of East-Peckham in Kent, Kt.
 68 Sir Edward Hales of Wood-church in Kent, Kt.
 69 William Monins of Walderher in Kent, Esq; ex.
 70 Thomas Mildmay of Mulsho in Essex, Esq; ex.
 71 Sir William Maynard of Eastanes-Parva in Essex, Kt. and Baron Maynard of Wickloe in Ireland.
 72 Henry Lee of Quarrendon in Buckinghamshire, Esq; since Earl of Litchfield. *E.*
 73 Sir Robert Napier, alias Sandy of Lewton-Hoo in Bedfordshire, Kt. Sept. 24.
 74 Paul Bayning of Bentley-Parva in Essex, Esq; since Viscount Bayning, *E.* ex.
 75 Sir Thomas Temple of Stow in Buckinghamshire, Kt. since an English Baron, Lord Cobham.
 76 Thomas Penyston of Leigh in Essex, Esq; ex.
 77 Sir John Portman of Orchard-Portman in Somersetshire, Kt. Nov. 25, 1612. ex.
 78 Sir Nicholas Sanderson of Saxby, Kt. Viscount Castleton, and since Baron Sanderson of Saxby. ex.
 79 Sir Miles Sandys of Wilberton in Cambridgeshire, Kt. ex.
 80 William Gostwick of Willington in Bedfordshire, Esq;
 81 Thomas Puckering of Weston, Esq; in Hertfordshire. ex.
 82 Sir William Wray of Glentworth in Lincolnshire, Kt.
 83 Sir William Ailiffe of Braxted-Magna in Essex, Kt.
 84 Sir Marmaduke Wivil of Constable-Burton in Yorkshire, Kt.
 85 John Pershal of Horsley in Staffordshire, Esq; ex.

- 86 Francis Englefield of Wotton-Basset in Wiltshire, Esq;
 87 Sir Thomas Ridgway of Torr in Devonshire, Kt. since
 Earl of London-Derry. *I.*
 88 William Essex of Bewcot in Berkshire, Esq; ex.
 89 Sir Edward Gorges of Langford in Wiltshire, Kt. Lord
 Gorges. *I.* ex.
 90 Edward Devereux of Castle-Bromwich in Warwick-
 shire, Esq; Viscount Hereford. *E.*
 91 Reginald Mohun of Boconock in Cornwall, Esq; ex.
 92 Sir Harbottle Grimston of Bradfield in Essex, Kt. ex.
 93 Sir Thomas Holt of Alton near Birmingham in War-
 wickshire, Kt.
 94 Thomas Blackston of Blackston in the Bishopric of
 Durham, Esq; May 27, 1615. ex.
 95 Sir Robert Dormer of Wing in Buckinghamshire, Kt.
 Lord Dormer, June 10. *E.*
 96 Sir Rowland Egerton of Egerton in Cheshire, Kt.
 April. 5, 1617.
 97 Roger Townshend of Rainham in Norfolk, Esq; Vi-
 count Townshend, April 16, 1617. *E.*
 98 Simon Clark of Salford in Warwickshire, Esq; May 1.
 99 Edward Fitton of Gawsworth in Cheshire, Esq; Oct. 2. ex.
 100 Sir Richard Lucy of Broxburn in Hartfordshire, Kt.
 March 11. ex.
 101 Sir Matthew Boynton of Bramston in Yorkshire, Kt.
 May 25, 1618.
 102 Thomas Littleton of Frankley in Worcestershire, Esq;
 July 25.
 103 Sir Francis Leigh of Newnham in Warwickshire, Kt.
 Earl of Chichester, Dec. 24. *E.* ex.
 104 Thomas Burdet of Bramcote in Warwickshire, Esq;
 Feb. 25.
 105 George Morton of St. Andrews-Milborn in Dorset-
 shire, Esq; March 1. ex.
 106 Sir William Harvey of Kidbrook in Kent, Kt. with
 remainder to William Harvey, his son, and to the heirs
 male of the body of the said William. English and
 Irish Baron, *viz.* Lord Harvey, May 11, 1619. ex.
 107 Thomas Mackworth of Normanton in Rutlandshire,
 Esq; June 4.
 108 William Grey, Esq; son and heir of Sir Ralph Grey
 of Chillingham in Northumberland, Kt. English Baron
 and Earl of Tankerville and Lord Grey, --- 15. ex.
 109 William Villars of Brookesby in Leicestershire, Esq;
 July 19. ex.

- 110 Sir James Ley of Westbury in Wiltshire, Kt. Earl of Marlborough, — 20. *E. ex.*
- 111 William Hicks of Beverston in Gloucestershire, Esq; — 21.
- 112 Sir Thomas Beaumont of Cole-Orton in Leicestershire, Kt. Sept. 16. *ex.*
- 113 Henry Salisbury of Leweny in Denbighshire, Esq; Nov. 10. *ex.*
- 114 Erasmus Dryden of Canons-Ashby in Northamptonshire, Esq; — 16.
- 115 William Airmine, Esq; son and heir to Sir William Airmine of Osgodley in Lincolnshire, Kt. Nov. 28. *ex.*
- 116 Sir William Bamburgh of Howton in Yorkshire, Kt. Dec. 1. *ex.*
- 117 Edward Hartop of Freathby in Leicestershire, Esq; — 3.
- 118 John Mill of Camoyscourt in Sussex, Esq; — 31.
- 119 Francis Radcliff of Derwentwater in Cumberland, Esq; English Earl, viz. Earl of Derwentwater, Jan. 31. *Attainted.*
- 120 Sir David Foulis of Ingleby in Yorkshire, Kt. Feb. 6.
- 121 Thomas Philips of Barrington in Somersetshire, Esq; — 16. *ex.*
- 122 Sir Claudius Forster of Bamborough-Castle in Northumberland, Kt. March 7. *ex.*
- 123 Anthony Chester of Chicheley in Buckinghamshire, Esq; — 23.
- 124 Sir Samuel Tryon of Layr-Marney in Essex, Kt. — 28, 1620. *ex.*
- 125 Adam Newton of Charlton in Kent, Esq; April 2. *ex.*
- 126 Sir John Boteler of Hatfield Woodhall in Hertfordshire, Kt. English Baron, Lord Boteler of Bramfield, — 2. *ex.*
- 127 Gilbert Gerard of Harrow on the Hill in Middlesex, Esq; — 13. *ex.*
- 128 Humphrey Lee of Langley, Esq; in the County of Salop, May 3. *ex.*
- 129 Richard Berney of Parkhall in Redham of Norfolk, Esq; — 5.
- 130 Humphrey Forster of Alder-Marston in Berkshire, Esq; — 20. *ex.*
- 131 Thomas Bigs of Lenchwike in Worcestershire, Esq; — 26. *ex.*
- 132 Henry Bellingham of Helsington in Westmorland, Esq; — 30. *ex.*

133 William

- 133 William Yelverton of Rongham in Norfolk, Esq; --- 31. ex.
- 134 John Scudamore of Homelacy in Herefordshire, Esq; Viscount Scudamore, June 1. I. ex.
- 135 Sir Thomas Gower of Sittenham in Yorkshire, Kt. English Baron, Lord Gower, June 2.
- 136 John Packington of Aylesbury in Buckinghamshire, Esq; --- 22.
- 137 Ralph Ashton of Lever in Lancashire, Esq; --- 28. ex.
- 138 Sir Baptist Hicks of Cambden in Gloucestershire, Kt. Viscount Cambden, July 1. E. ex.
- 139 Sir Thomas Roberts of Glastenbury in Kent, Kt. --- 3.
- 140 John Hanmer of Hanmer in Flintshire, Esq; --- 8.
- 141 Edward Fryer of Water-Eaton in Oxfordshire, Esq; --- 11. ex.
- 142 Edward Osborne of Kiveton in Yorkshire, Esq; Duke of Leeds, --- 13. E.
- 143 Henry Felton of Playford in Suffolk, Esq; --- 20. ex.
- 144 William Chaloner of Gisborough in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 20. ex.
- 145 Sir Thomas Bishop of Parham in Sussex, Kt. --- 24.
- 146 Sir Francis Vincent of Stoke-Dabernon in Surrey, Kt. --- 26.
- 147 Henry Clere of Ormesby in Norfolk, Esq; Feb. 27. ex.
- 148 Sir Benjamin Tichburne of Tichburne in Hampshire, Kt. March 14.
- 149 Sir Richard Wibraham of Woodhey in Cheshire, Kt. May 5, 1621. ex.
- 150 Sir Thomas Delves of Doddington in Cheshire, Kt. --- 8.
- 151 Sir Lewis Watson of Rockingham Castle in Northamptonshire. Kt. since Earl Rockingham, June 23. E.
- 152 Sir Thomas Palmer of Wingham in Kent, Kt. --- 29.
- 153 Sir Richard Roberts of Truro in Cornwall, Kt. since Earl of Radnor, July 13. E.
- 154 John Rivers of Chafford in Kent, Esq; --- 19.
- 155 Thomas Darnel of Heyling in Lincolnshire, Esq; Sept. 6. ex.
- 156 Sir Isaac Sidney of Great-Chart in Kent, Kt. --- 14.
- 157 Robert Brown of Walcot, Esq; in Northamptonshire, --- 21. ex.
- 158 John Hewit of Headley-Hall in Yorkshire, Esq; October 11.
- 159 Henry Jernegan of Cossey, alias Cossell in Norfolk, Esq; --- 16.

- 160 Sir Nicholas Hide of Albury in Hertfordshire, Kt.
November 8. ex.
- 161 John Philips of Pierton in Pembrokeshire, Esq; --- 9.
- 162 Sir John Stepney of Prendergast in Pembrokeshire,
Kt. --- 24.
- 163 Baldwin Wake of Clevedon in Somersetshire, Esq;
December 5.
- 164 William Masham of High-Laver in Essex, Esq; --- 20.
- 165 John Colbrond of Borham in Sussex, Esq; --- 21. ex.
- 166 Sir John Hotham of Scarborough in Yorkshire, Kt.
January 4.
- 167 Francis Mansel of Mudlescombe in Caernarvonthshire,
Esq; --- 14. ex.
- 168 Edward Powel of Penkelley in Herefordshire, Esq;
one of the Masters of Requests, --- 18. ex.
- 169 Sir John Garrard of Lamer in Hertfordshire, Kt.
February 16.
- 170 Sir Richard Grosvenor of Eaton in Cheshire, Kt. -- 23.
- 171 Sir Henry Moody of Garendon in Wiltshire, Kt.
March 11. ex.
- 172 John Barker of Grimston-Hall in Trimley in Suffolk,
Esq; --- 17.
- 173 Sir William Burton of Alton in Wiltshire, Kt. -- 18. ex.
- 174 John Gage of Ferle in Sussex, Esq; Mar. 26, 1622.
- 175 William Goring, Esq; son and heir of Sir Henry
Goring of Burton in Sussex, Kt. May 14.
- 176 Peter Courtene of Aldington, alias Aunton, in Wor-
cestershire, Esq; --- 18. ex.
- 177 Sir Richard Norton of Rotherfield in Hampshire, Kt.
--- 23. ex.
- 178 Sir John Leventhorp of Shingle-Hall in Hertfordshire,
Kt. --- 30. ex.
- 179 Capel Bedel of Hamerton, Esq; in Huntingdonshire,
June 3. ex.
- 180 John Darrel of Westwoodhey in Berkshire, Esq;
--- 13. ex.
- 181 William Williams of Veynol in Caernarvanshire,
Esq; --- 15. ex.
- 182 Sir Francis Ashby of Harfield in Middlesex, Kt.
--- 18. ex.
- 183 Sir Anthony Ashley of St. Giles-Winburne in Dor-
setshire, Kt. July 3. ex.
- 184 John Cooper of Rockburn in Hampshire, Esq; since
Earl of Shaftesbury, --- 4. E.

185 Edmund

- 185 Edmund Prideaux of Netherton in Devonshire, Esq;
--- 17.
- 186 Sir Thomas Haflerigg of Nosely in Leicestershire,
Kt. --- 21.
- 187 Sir Thomas Burton of Stockerton in Leicestershire,
Kt. --- 22.
- 188 Francis Folejambe of Walton in Derbyshire, Esq;
--- 24. ex.
- 189 Edward Yate of Buckland in Berkshire, Esq; --- 30. ex.
- 190 George Chudleigh of Ashton in Devonshire, Esq;
August 1.
- 191 Francis Drake of Buckland in Devonshire, Esq; --- 2.
- 192 William Meredith of Stansby in Derbyshire, Esq; --- 13.
- 193 Hugh Middleton of Ruthin in Denbyshire, Esq;
October 22. ex.
- 194 Gifford Thornhurst of Agnes Court in Kent, Esq;
November 12. ex.
- 195 Percy Herbert, son and heir of Sir William Herbert
of Red-Castle in Montgomeryshire, Kt. Marquis of
Powis, *E.* but since attainted, --- 16.
- 196 Sir Robert Fisher of Packington in Warwickshire,
Kt. December 7.
- 197 Hardolph Wastneys of Heydon in Nottinghamshire,
Esq; December 18.
- 198 Sir Henry Skipwith of Prestwold in Leicestershire,
Kt. --- 20. ex.
- 199 Thomas Harris of Boreatton in Shropshire, Esq;
--- 22. ex.
- 200 Nicholas Tempest of Stanley in the Bishopric of Dur-
ham, Esq; --- 23.
- 201 Francis Cottington, Esq; Secretary to King Charles I,
when Prince of Wales; since Lord Cottington, Feb. 16.
E. ex.
- 202 Thomas Harris of Tong-Castle in Shropshire, Ser-
jeant at law, April 12, 1623. ex.
203. Edward Barkham of South-Acre in Norfolk, Esq;
June 28. ex.
- 204 John Corbet of Sprowston in Norfolk, Esq; July 4. ex.
- 205 Sir Thomas Playters of Soterley in Suffolk, Esq;
Aug. 13.

BOOK XIX.

*Containing the first fifteen years of the Reign of
CHARLES I.*

25. CHARLES I.

Ann. C. **C**HARLES I. is proclaimed King at *London*.
1625. He forms two difficult projects: 1. To wrest from
Reg. 1. the Emperor and the Duke of *Bavaria* the two *Palatinates*:
Mar. 27. 2. To carry the regal authority much higher than his Pre-
decessors had done.

A Parliament is called for the 17th of *May*, but does not meet till the 18th of *June*, on account of the plague, which broke out at *London*, in the mean time.

May 1. The dispensation for the King's marriage with the Princess *Henrietta Maria* being brought to *Paris*, the marriage is solemnized there by proxy.

7. The funeral of King *James I.* is celebrated, and he is buried in *Henry VIIth's Chapel* at *Westminster*.

King *Charles* sends 8000 men to *Plymouth*, for an expedition against *Spain*; but those troops had been raised for the *Palatinate*.

10. He grants a pardon to 20 *Romish Priests* that were condemned to die.

May 24. *George Villiers* Duke of *Buckingham* comes to *Paris*, to conduct the new Queen to *England*.

June 12. The Queen imarks at *Boulogne*.

13. She arrives at *Dover*.

14. The marriage is consummated at *Canterbury*.

16. The King and Queen make their entry into *London*.

18. The first Parliament of King *Charles I.* meets at *Westminster*.

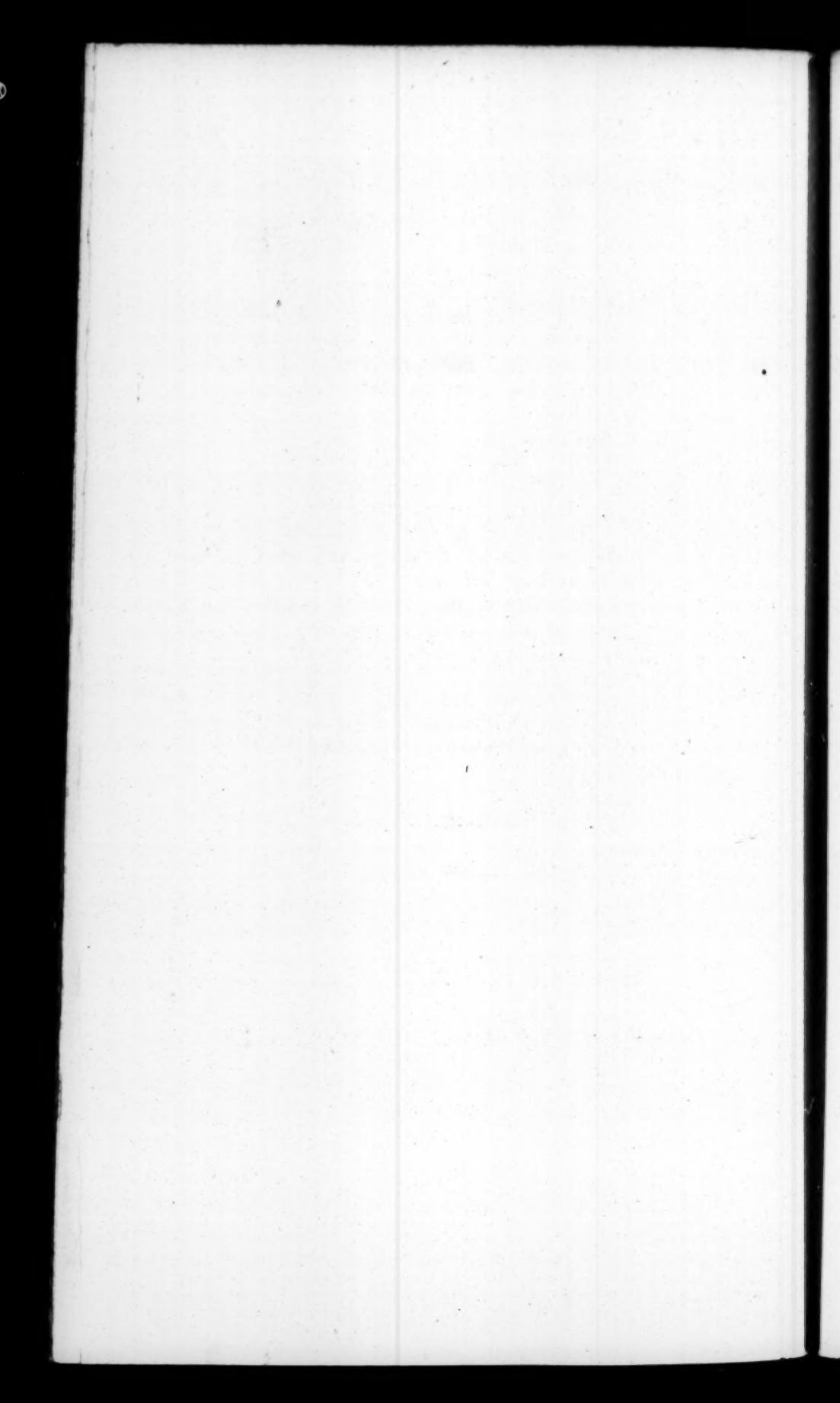
The King asks money of the Parliament for the recovery of the *Palatinate*, and the war with *Spain*; but instead of granting him some immediately, both Houses present a petition to him against Recusants, to which he returns a gracious answer; however, he defers answering each particular article of the petition, till he had examined it.

Richard Mountague is brought to the bar of the House of Commons, for his *Appeal to Cæsar*, which is declared contrary to



A. Ländyke p.

Vérité Sculp.



to the articles, &c. The King is displeased with the Commons about it, and takes the business into his own hands. *Ann. C.*

The Commons grant the King two subsidies; he accepts them graciously, and asks for more money. The Clergy grant at the same time three subsidies.

An act is made, forbidding sports and pastimes; such as bear or bull-baiting, plays, or other unlawful exercises, on Sundays. And another, for the farther restraint of tippling in inns, alehouses, and victualling houses.

The Parliament is adjourned to *Oxford*, upon account of the plague's raging in *London*. *July 11.*

During the adjournment, the King lends six ships to *Louis XIII.* King of *France*, to serve against the Protestants in *Rochelle*.

The Parliament is reassembled at *Oxford*, where the Commons examine grievances. *Aug. 1.*

King *Charles* sends for both Houses, and makes a speech to them, in which he demands money. The Commons complain, that the King had granted a pardon to a Jesuit, and ten other Papists, the day after having returned a favourable answer to their petition against Recusants, and examining other grievances. *4.*

The King returns a full and express answer to each article of their petition against Recusants.

The Duke of *Buckingham* gives the Parliament an account of the fleet, and at the same time takes occasion to vindicate his conduct. *9.*

The King sends a message to the Commons to hasten the money-bill, and threatens them to take other measures; whereupon, the Commons draw up a declaration. *10.*

The King perceiving they were resolved not to give a further supply, without the redress of grievances, dissolves this his first Parliament. *11.*

His Majesty fits out a fleet against *Spain*, and raises money *Septemb.* by way of loan, by letters under his Privy-Seal.

The fleet sails towards *Cadiz*, under the command of *Oct. 2.* *Edward Cecil Viscount Wimbleton*.

Sir *Thomas Coventry* is made Keeper of the Great Seal, *30.* in the room of Dr. *John Williams*.

The fleet returns without doing any thing considerable.

The King calls his second Parliament, to meet the 6th *Novemb.* of February. *Decembris.*

He issues out a proclamation, ordering all such as had 40*l.* a year or more, to come and receive the order of Knighthood, before the King's Coronation.

This

Ann. C. This year, there died in London of the plague, 35,417 persons.

This year also the order of Knights of Nova Scotia was instituted.

1625-26. The King is crowned at Westminster.

Feb. 2. The Parliament meets, and the Commons examine the public grievances.

The Committee of Religion calls in question *An answer to the late Gagg of the Protestants*, *An Appeal to Cæsar*, and *A Treatise of the Invocation of Saints*, composed by Dr. Richard Mountague.

Mar. 7. The King sends a message to the Commons, to demand a supply of money: And the Lords also press the Commons to consider of it.

The Commons are offended at this, and examine the conduct of George Villiers Duke of Buckingham.

The King sends a letter to the Speaker, to forward the supply, and a message to Sir Richard Weston, to the same purpose.

The Commons return an answer, in which they promise to assist the King, and say, they did not doubt but he would receive their information concerning grievances.

The King accepts their offer, but will not hear of any conditions; and tells them, he would not allow any of his servants to be questioned amongst them.

The House of Commons resolves that common fame is a good ground of proceeding against the Duke of Buckingham; at which the King is extremely offended.

The Commons vote the King three subsidies, and three fifteenths.

Reg. 2. They continue to examine the Favourite's conduct.

Mar. 28. The King sends for both Houses to Whitehall, and after a short speech, orders the Lord-Keeper to make a speech to them, in which the Commons were severely reprimanded.

The Commons take great offence at the King's and the Lord-Keeper's speeches; but the Duke of Buckingham excuses the King, at a conference between the two Houses, and takes from thence an occasion to vindicate his own conduct.

24. John Digby Earl of Bristol, having petitioned the House of Lords, that he might be summoned to Parliament, the King sends him a writ of summons, but orders him withdrawal not to make use of it.

April. The Commons present a remonstrance to the King, concerning

concerning his speech, and that of the Lord-Keeper, at *An. C.*
Whitehall. They vote a fourth subsidy.

The Parliament is adjourned for a week, upon account
of *Easter*.

The Commons draw up articles of accusation against
the Duke of *Buckingham*, and send him word that they
expected his answer; but the House of Lords refuse to
give him leave to answer.

There is annexed to the charge against the Duke an
article concerning the plaster, and the potion given to
King *James*.

King *Charles* orders a charge of High-Treason to be
brought against the Earl of *Bristol*; which is accordingly
done the same day.

The Earl of *Bristol* exhibits to the Lords articles of
accusation against the Duke of *Buckingham*, and the
Lord *Conway* Secretary of State. May 1.

The Commons send up to the Lords a declaration and
impeachment against the Duke of *Buckingham*. Sir *Dudley Digges* makes a prologue, and Sir *John Elliot* an epi-
logue to the impeachment: They are both sent to the
Tower. 8.

The King goes to the House of Lords, where he makes
a speech in vindication of the Duke. 11.

The Commons desire that the Duke might be taken in-
to custody; and loudly complain of the imprisonment of
their Members, *Digges* and *Elliot*: Whereupon, the
King orders them to be released.

A dispute of the like nature arises between the King and
the House of Lords about the imprisonment of *Thomas Howard* Earl of *Arundel*. They present several petitions
to the King, to which not receiving a satisfactory answer,
they grow dissatisfied; and at several times adjourn till the
2d of June: At length the Earl is released. March.
April.
May.
June.

Thomas Howard Earl of *Suffolk* dies. 28.

George Villiers Duke of *Buckingham*, is chosen Chancel-
lor of the University of *Cambridge*, in the room of the
Earl of *Suffolk*: The Commons are offended at it, but the
King supports the election. June 2.

The Duke gives in his answer to the impeachment en-
tered against him by the Commons. 8.

King *Charles* writes a letter to the Speaker of the House
of Commons, to hasten the subsidy. 9.

The Commons present a petition to his Majesty against
Popish

Ann. C. Popish Recusants, and give a list of 59 who were in places of trust and authority.

They give an answer to the King's letter to the Speaker about the subsidy.

Being informed that the King intended to dissolve the Parliament, they immediately draw up a remonstrance against the Duke, and against tonnage and poundage.

15.

The King dissolves his second Parliament.

He publishes a declaration, dated the thirteenth of *June*, wherein he vindicates himself for dissolving this and the former Parliament.

A proclamation is issued out, ordering all those who had any copies of the Commons remonstrance to burn them: And another forbidding the preaching or disputing upon the controverted points between the Arminians and Calvinists.

By the King's command, an information is preferred in the Star-Chamber against the Duke of *Buckingham*, about the plaster.

A commission is granted to some persons to compound with Popish Recusants.

The Privy-Council orders all customs to be levied and paid, though they were not yet settled by authority of Parliament.

And the King requires a loan of a certain sum from every Peer, for the defence of the Kingdom.

But he desiring a loan of 100,000*l.* from the City of *London* is refused.

The Ports and maritime Counties are ordered to fit out ships; *London* amongst the rest, is commanded to equip twenty.

Privy-Seals for money are issued out; and the King raises by way of benevolence, the four subsidies and three fifteenths, which the Commons had voted him.

Aug. 27. *Christian IV.* King of *Denmark* is defeated by Count N. S. Tilly, the Emperor's General; whereupon King *Charles Septemb.* exacts a general loan of all his subjects for assisting his uncle the King of *Denmark*.

Soldiers returned from *Cadiz*, are billeted upon private houses, contrary to the custom of *England*.

Nov. 9. Sir Randolph Crew Lord-Chief-Judge of the *King's-Bench*, is removed from his place, for not advancing the loan, and such as refused to subscribe thereto, are either inrolled for soldiers, or imprisoned.

The King recalls six thousand foot soldiers that he had in the

the service of the *United Provinces*, and sends them to the *Ann. C.*
King of *Denmark*.

Dr. *Richard Sibthorp* preaches up passive obedience, in 1627.
order to further the loan. Feb. 12.

Dr. *Roger Mawuring* preaches two sermons upon the
same subject.

Dr. *Richard Neile* Bishop of *Durham*, and Dr. *William April*.
Laud Bishop of *Bath and Wells*, are sworn of the Pri-
vy-Council.

King *Charles* being resolved to go to war with *France*, *Reg. 3.*
dismisses his Queen's *French* domestics; and treats with
the Duke of *Rohan*, head of the Protestants in that King-
dom.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, being made Admiral, and *June 27.*
Commander of the land-forces to be employed in the ex-
pedition, sails with a fleet against *France*, without war be-
ing declared.

He appears before *Rochelle*, but the inhabitants being ti-
morous, and refusing to admit the *English* into that city,
the Duke goes and makes a descent in the Isle of *Rhe'*,
where he besieges *St. Martin's* fort.

Several persons of distinction are imprisoned for refusing
to subscribe to the loan, and among the rest, Sir *Thomas*
Wentworth.

Archbishop *Abbot* is suspended for refusing to licence *Sib. Oct. 9.*
sibthorp's sermon.

The Duke of *Buckingham* is forced to quit the Isle of *Nov. 9.*
Rhe', with the loss of near 5,000 men.

Rochelle, where the Protestants stood upon their defence,
being on the point of being besieged by the King of
France, the *Rochellers* apply to King *Charles* for assistance.

King *Charles* calls his third Parliament to meet the 17th 1627-8.
of March. Jan. 29.

Wrts of summons are sent to *George Abbot* Archbishop
of *Canterbury*, to *John Williams* Bishop of *Lincoln*, and to
John Digby Earl of *Bristol*, though they were in disgrace.

Seventy-eight Gentlemen who had been imprisoned for
the business of the loan are released.

The Parliament meets: The King demands of them a *Mar. 17.*
supply of money.

A letter is dispersed about, concerning the grievances
and inconveniences of the State, intitled *A Speech without*
Doors.

The Commons examine the grievances of the Nation,

VOL. II.

R

and

22.

Ann. C. and seem determined not to grant any supply till they were redressed.

25. The King sends several propositions to the Commons concerning the supply ; but the reading of them is deferred, till some resolutions had been taken about the grievances.

1628. The Commons examine the liberties of the Nation, and Reg. 4. come to some important resolutions about them.

31. Both Houses present a petition to the King against Recusants : He returns a favourable answer to each article.

April 2. The Commons examine the King's propositions, and then resume the consideration of the grievances.

3. The King sends a message to them in behalf of the Duke of Buckingham ; and another, to desire them to dispatch the supply.

The Commons vote the King five subsidies.

10. Easter Holidays approaching, he sends and desires the Commons not to adjourn, that affairs might be the more speedily dispatched : At this the House is offended ; but complies.

11. Secretary Coke presses the dispatch of the subsidies.

12. The King sends another threatening message upon the same subject, which occasions many debates.

14. Secretary Coke brings another message, to the same intent.

The Commons present a petition to the King against billeting of soldiers : He returns no direct answer to this petition, and only presses the business of the supply.

Great debates pass in the House about Martial Law, and a Petition of Right, till the 25th day.

The Commons resolve to present to the King a Petition of Right, a draught of which they send up to the Lords.

The King's Serjeant, *Ashley*, makes a speech against it, for which the House of Lords orders him to be imprisoned.

25. The Lords make propositions concerning the Petition of Right, but they are rejected by the Commons.

28. The Lord-Keeper, *Coventry*, makes a speech to both Houses, to hasten the supplies ; and assures them, in the King's name, That his Majesty would maintain all his subjects in the just freedom of their persons, and safety of their estates, &c. Secretary Coke persuades the Commons to comply with the King's request.

Notwithstanding that, a Committee is appointed to draw up the Petition of Right.

May 1. The King desires the Commons to rest on his Royal word :

word : He sends them word, that he intended shortly to *Ann. C.*
prorogue the Parliament.

2.
3.

The Commons return an answer to several of the King's messages ; wherein they alledge, that they relied on the King, but not on his Ministers, and desire him to secure their rights and liberties by bill, or otherwise. The King orders the Lord-Keeper to tell them, that they ought to rely on his word, for explanations would hazard an encroachment upon his prerogative.

6.

He sends another message to prevent the Petition of Right, which he would by all means have stopped, if he could.

The Commons vote, that a verbal declaration of the King is not sufficient satisfaction, unless made in a parliamentary way.

12.

The King sends a letter to the Lords, wherein he asserts his right of committing prisoners, without expressing the cause of their commitment : It is communicated to the Commons, but they take no notice of it.

17.

The Lords have a conference with the Commons about the Petition of Right, and offer an addition, which is not admitted by the Commons.

23.

The Commons shew, that the addition proposed by the Lords would render the Petition of no effect.

26.

The Lord-Keeper makes a speech at the conference, to persuade the Commons to dispatch the Petition ; at length, the Lords agree with the Commons to present the Petition, without any addition.

A charge is brought in against Dr. *Roger Manwaring*, for his sermons above-mentioned.

The Captain of a French ship deposes, That the English May 30.
fleet did not attempt to relieve Rochelle ; whereupon, *William Fielding*, Earl of Denbigh, is ordered to go and relieve that town.

The King comes to Parliament, and gives an answer to June 2.
the Petition of Right, in general and ambiguous terms : The Commons are not satisfied with it, and resume the consideration of the grievances.

3.

Sentence is passed against Dr. *Manwaring*, whereby he is ordered to be imprisoned, and to make a submission ; fined 1000*l.* suspended for three years, and disabled to have any ecclesiastical dignity, or secular office.

5.

The King repeats a message he had sent the Commons two days before, namely, That he intended to prorogue the Parliament the 11th ; and requires them withal, not to enter into, or proceed to any new business, that might lay a scandal upon his Government.

R. 2

He

Ann. C. He commands the House to adjourn till the next day ; at which offence is taken.

6. The King being informed thereof, sends a gracious message by the Speaker.

The House examines an order of the King's to bring in foreign forces into the Kingdom : The order is read, and witnesses are examined.

June 7. The King comes to the Parliament, and returns a full and plain answer to the Petition of Right.

The Commons take into consideration a commission from the King to settle a general excise, without the consent of Parliament : The two Houses have a conference about it ; and, in the end, it is cancelled by his Majesty.

13. The debates concerning the Duke of *Buckingham* are renewed : He is charged with being the cause of all the evils to the Kingdom ; and a remonstrance against him is presented to the King, by the Commons.

They also draw a remonstrance against the undue taking of tonnage and poundage, without act of Parliament.

26. The King gives his assent to the subsidy-bill, and then prorogues the Parliament to the 20th of *October*.

The Clergy grant five subsidies, as the Commons had done before.

The acts made this session, were : An act forbidding carriers, waggoners, and drovers, travelling on *Sundays*, or butchers killing or selling meat on that day : Another, to restrain the passing, or sending of any to be popishly bred, beyond the seas : An act, to establish *Sutton's Hospital*, or the Charter-house ; and one for restitution, in blood, of *Carew Raleigh*, Esq; Sir *Walter's son*, &c.

A proclamation is issued out to suppress Dr. *Manwaring's* sermons, that had been condemned by the Parliament ; and a commission to compound with Recusants.

July 15. Sir *Richard Weston*, a Papist, is made Lord-Treasurer, and Earl of *Portland* ; the same day Dr. *William Laud* is translated from *Bath* and *Wells* to the bishopric of *London*, and becomes a great favourite.

Dr. *Richard Montague* and Dr. *Manwaring* procure pardons from the King ; moreover, *Montague* is made Bishop of *Chichester*, and *Manwaring* Rector of *Stamford-Rivers* in *Essex*.

Aug. 23. George Villiers Duke of *Buckingham*, is assassinated at *Portsmouth*, by Lieutenant *John Felton*.

24. Dr. *Montague* is consecrated Bishop of *Chichester*.

Sept. 10. The fleet that was to have been commanded by the Duke

of

of *Buckingham*, fails from *Portsmouth* under the command of *Ann. C. Robert Bertie*, Earl of *Lindsey*, for the relief of *Rochelle*, that was closely besieged by King *Lewis XIII.*

King *Charles* disposes of the troops he had ordered to be raised in *Germany*, to the King of *Sweden* and the Duke of *Savoy*.

The English fleet appears before *Rochelle* and attempts to force the barricado, but in vain. 20.

The Parliament is further prorogued to the 20th of Octob. 1. January.

Rochelle is taken by the King of *France*. 20.

Felton is arraigned and condemned, and executed, two Nov. 27. days after, at *Tyburn*.

Samuel Vassal, a *London* Merchant, refuses to pay tonnage, for which his effects are seized.

The merchandizes of *Richard Chambers* are seized upon the same account, and he is imprisoned.

The Parliament meets again.

They find that the Petition of Right had been inrolled; Jan. 20. and printed by the King's order, not with the right answer, and with some additions.

The imprisonment of *John Rolls* about tonnage and poundage, since the Petition of Right, is taken into consideration by the House of Commons.

The King sends for the Commons to *Whitehall*, and makes a speech to them, in which he says, that he did not challenge tonnage and poundage as of right, but *de bene esse*. Then, he presses them to pass a bill to grant him tonnage and poundage.

He sends a message to the House, to take that bill speedily into consideration; but the Commons in their great wisdom, and wonderful zeal for Calvinism, fall upon matters of Religion, and condemn Arminianism. 26.

The King requires them by another message, to give the preference to the bill of tonnage and poundage; they regard it not, and proceed in their debates concerning Religion. 27.

Secretary *Coke* brings them another message concerning the precedence of tonnage and poundage: They continue notwithstanding to examine religious matters. 28.

The House of Commons enter into a vow, to stand to the thirty-nine articles established in the 13th of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Both Houses petition the King for a fast: He grants it, but protests withal, that he would not grant any fast for the future, except on extraordinary occasions. 30.

- Ann. C.* A declaration is presented to the King by the Commons, wherein they justify their proceedings, in giving the precedence to matters of Religion, the King returns an answer, and prescribes them to hasten the bill of tonnage, &c.
- Feb. 4.* The commons enter into some debates about the proclamation to prohibit disputing for, or against, *Arminianism*. Bishop *Laud* and *Montague* are suspected of having procured it.
- 19.* They take into examination the affair of Mr. *Rolls*, and the seizing of the Merchants effects.
- Great Complaints are made in the House about the pardon granted to *Sibthorp*, *Montague*, and *Manwaring*, and the preferring of *Manwaring*, in opposition to the sentence passed upon him by the Parliament.
- Complaint is also made about the licensing of Popish books.
- 18.* The fast is kept.
- 19.* The Officers of the Customs are examined about the taking of Mr. *Rolls*'s goods, who was a Member of the House of Commons.
- Complaints are made, in the House, against *Richard Neile*, Bishop of *Winchester*, and the Lord-Treasurer *Weston*.
- 25.* *Mar. 2.* The Speaker refuses to put the question, saying, he was otherwise commanded from the King; and, had an order to adjourn the House till the 10th of *March*.
- He endeavours to go out of the chair, but is held down in it, till a protestation was drawn up against Popery or *Arminianism*; and against tonnage and poundage.
- The House is adjourned till the 10th.
- A proclamation is drawn up, to notify that the Parliament was to be dissolved.
- 4.* Several Members of the House of Commons are imprisoned, particularly Sir *John Elliot*; and *Denzil Holles*, *William Stroud*, *John Selden*, Esquires, &c.
- 10.* The King dissolves his third Parliament; and publishes a declaration, containing the causes which moved him to dissolve that Parliament.
- 12.* The Duke of *Rohan* writes a letter to the King.
- Bishop *Laud* presents to the King *Considerations for the better settling of the Church-Government*.
- Tonnage and poundage are exacted with rigour, though they were not granted by Parliament.
- A strict order is made, enabling the King's Messengers

to search any warehouses, &c. in default of the payment *Ann. C.*
of Customs. *1629.*

The King puts out a proclamation for suppressing false *27.*
rumours touching Parliaments. *Reg. 5.*

An order is published for arming and mustering the Mi-
litia.

Several proclamations, and statutes, made against the Re-
cusingants are but ill put in execution.

A peace between *England* and *France* is signed. *April 14.*

Richard Chambers, an Alderman of *London*, is fined *May 6.*
2000 l. by the Star-Chamber, for a rash expression of his,
and for refusing to pay tonnage and poundage.

The peace with *France* is proclaimed in *England*. *10.*

Several Priests are released, which was very disagreeable *13.*
to the bulk of the Nation.

John Selden, and the other imprisoned Members, bring *June 24.*
their *Habeas Corpus*; but the King refuses to let them have
the benefit of it.

The King erects the Starch-makers into a Corporation. *30.*

The Recusants compound for their forfeitures. *July.*

Louis XIII, King of *France*, swears to the peace with *Sept. 6.*
England. *Dec. 30.*

King *Charles* publishes *Regal Instructions* about the Go-
vernment of the Church, conformably to *Bishop Laud's*
Considerations.

The Council writes a threatening letter to the Mayor of *1629-30.*
Chichester, about the billeting of soldiers. *Jan. 4.*

King *Charles* ingages to furnish *Gustavus Adolphus*, King *Reg. 6.*
of *Sweden*, with *6000* men, in the Marquis of *Hamilton's* *1630.*
name.

He puts out a proclamation for confirming defective titles. *May 27.*

Prince *Charles*, afterwards King *Charles II*, is born. *29.*

Articles are agreed upon between the King of *Sweden* and
the Marquis of *Hamilton*, about the forces above-men-
tioned. *31.*

Dr. *Alexander Leighton* is condemned in the Star-Chamber, *June 4.*
for a virulent book, intitled *Sion's Plea*; but his sentence is
not put in execution till *November 16*, when he had his nose
slit, his ears cropped, and his forehead branded.

The Corporation for buying in of Impropriations for
Preaching-ministers.

The King grants a commission to compound with those *July 6.*
who had neglected to receive the Order of Knighthood.

A peace is concluded between *England* and *Spain*. *Nov. 5.*
1630-31.

Ann. C. Bishop Laud uses several new and strange ceremonies at *Jan. 16.* the consecration of St. Catharine-Creed Church, *London*.

March. A Commission is granted to the Marquis of *Hamilton*, *Reg. 7.* to raise the troops designed for the service of the King of *Sweden*.

1631. Bishop Laud is chosen Chancellor of the University of *April 12. Oxford*.

25. *Mervin, Lord Audley*, is tried and condemned for sodomy, and for assisting one of his servants to ravish his lady.

Cards and soap are monopolized, being by patents vested in private hands.

July 19. *James, Marquis of Hamilton*, sets out for *Germany*.

A tax is imposed for the salary of the Muster-master.

Sept. 7. The battle of *Leipsick* is fought.

Three members of the University of *Oxford* are expelled, for preaching against *Arminianism*.

Oct. 27. Sir Robert Heath, Attorney-General, is made Chief-Justice of the *Common-Pleas*, and William Noy, Esq; made Attorney-General in his room.

James Malverer, Esq; is proceeded against in the *Exchequer*, for neglecting to take the Order of Knighthood.

Sir Robert Cotton dies.

1632. Nathanael Barnard, Lecturer of St. Sepulchres, *London*, *Reg. 8.* is suspended by the High-Commission-Court, fined 100*l.*

May 6. and committed to prison, for preaching against *Arminianism*.

May. The City of *London* is fined 1500 marks, for neglecting to take inquisition of the death of Dr. Lamb, who was killed by the mob, *June 13, 1628*.

June 10. The King issues out a proclamation, commanding all Lords and Gentlemen to depart from *London*, and go and reside at their estates.

16. And another against building in, or near *London*, upon new foundations.

Decemb. Henry Sherfield, Recorder of *Sarum*, is fined 500*l.* for having broken some painted glass in St. Edmond's Church, in that City.

The King gains to his side several eminent persons, which had been violent against the Court, particularly Sir John Saville, Sir Dudley Digges, Sir Edward Littleton, and Sir Thomas Wentworth.

1632-33. The latter is made President of the Council of *York*, and *Mar. 21.* hath remarkable instructions given him.

1633. Sigismund III, King of *Poland*, dies.

Reg. 9. King Charles takes a journey to *Scotland*.

April 29. He arrives at *Edinburgh*;

And is crowned there.

Ann. C.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets, and grants the King, *May 13.* for six years, a subsidy of *1l. 10s.* of every pound-worth of *June 15.* land; and also the sixteenth penny of all annual rents, or *18.* interest of money. *20.*

King *Charles* makes use of some sort of violence to get two Acts passed in that Parliament, concerning his prerogative, and apparel of Kirkmen; and for ratifying the Acts touching Religion; with which the people are highly dissatisfied.

He departs from *Edinburgh*, and arrives at *Greenwich*.

Walter Curle, Bishop of *Winchester*, publishes Articles of *July 6.* Inquiry, and an Oath to be tendered to the Church-*20.* Wardens, at the primary Visitation of his Diocese.

Dr. *William Laud* is nominated Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Aug. 6.* upon the death of Dr. *George Abbot*.

A sentence passes in the Star-Chamber against some persons who made bad soap.

The King forbids, by a proclamation, people selling tobacco without license.

Sir *Thomas Richardson*, Chief-Justice of the *King's-Bench*, is obliged to revoke an order made by him at the Assizes in *Somersetshire*, against wakes.

King *Charles* orders, that Divine Service should be performed in his Chapel at *Edinburgh*, according to the *English* Liturgy; and that his Privy-Council, and the Lords of the Sessions, &c. should receive the Communion kneeling.

Archbishop *Laud* writes several letters to the Bishops in *Scotland* about that matter.

The King renews and confirms the proclamation put out by his Father, concerning recreations on *Sundays*. *18.*

Placing the Communion-table altar-wise in St. *Gregory's* Church, *London*, occasions great debates, and a law-suit.

Gustavus Adolphus, King of *Sweden*, is slain at the battle *Nov. 6.* of *Lutzen*.

Frederic, Elector *Palatine*, and King of *Bohemia*, dies. *19.*

The silk manufacture is monopolized, and the manufacturers of it erected into a Company.

William Prynne, Esq; is fined *5000l.* and condemned to be set in the pillory, to have his ears cut off, and to be imprisoned during life, for his book, intitled *Histrio-mastix*. *1633-34.* *Feb. 7.*

Archbishop *Laud* forbids the *Dutch*, *Walloon*, and *French* Congregations in *England*, the *English* Church at *Rotterdam*, Reg. *10.* *dam.*

Anno. C. dam, and the Regiments in the service of the *United Provinces*, to make use of Presbyterian Ministers, and enjoins *&c. &c.* them to conform to the Church of *England*.

June. *William Noy*, Esq; Attorney-General, who had advised *April. 9.* ship-money, dies. The learned Sir *Edward Coke* also dies.

Septemb. The *Swedes* are defeated at the battle of *Nordlinguen*.

Sept. 6. Sir *John Finch*, who was a fit instrument to promote *Okt. 16.* ship-money, is made Chief-Justice of the *Common-Pleas*, in the room of Sir *Robert Heath*, who was removed.

20. The first writ for ship-money is sent to the City of *London*: They present a petition against it; but, notwithstanding, it is, shortly after, assessed and levied throughout the Kingdom.

Archbishop *Laud* gives some injunctions to the *French* and *Walloon* Churches. He sets up pictures in the windows of his Chapel at *Lambeth*.

Novemb. Several pardons are granted to *Romish* Recusants.

The use of sedans, or chairs, was brought this year into *England*.

March 6. Dr. *William Juxon*, Bishop of *London*, is made Lord High-Treasurer.

1635. An information is laid in the Star-Chamber against several hundreds of persons, for residing in *London*, contrary to the King's proclamation.

March. *July 21.* The King publishes a proclamation, commanding all persons not to depart the Kingdom without his licence:

August. And renews a former Commission to confirm the defective titles of such as held lands of the Crown.

Sept. 29. *Thomas Parr*, aged 152 or 153 years, is presented to the King.

Nov. 22. *Charles Lewis* Elector *Palatine*, and his brother Prince *Rupert*, come to *England*.

1636. By a proclamation, foreigners are forbid fishing on the coasts of *England* and *Scotland*.

May 10. *Algernoon Percy* Earl of *Northumberland*, and High-Admiral, sinks some of the *Dutch* fishing-boats, and disperses the rest: Whereupon the *Dutch* agree to give the King 30,000*l.* for this summer's fishing, and to pay him a yearly tribute for a licence for the future.

6. The Judges give it as their opinion, that for some seditious passages, in books published by *John Baftwick*, M.D. and *Henry Burton*, B.D. no indictment could be found for treason, unless it was grounded upon statute 25 Edw. III.

A difference arises between Archbishop *Laud*, and the two Universities, about his right to visit them, as Metropolitan.

The

The King grants a Commission to enquire about depo- *Ann. C.*
pulations. *July 19.*

Ship-money is laid upon the whole Kingdom, which had
hitherto been imposed only upon the maritime towns.

King *Charles* gives instructions to the Bishops in *Scot. Oct. 18.*
land, about settling a Conformity in that Kingdom with
the Church of *England*.

The tax of ship-money brought the King, in the year
1636, 202,240*l.* sterling.

The King causes the Judges opinion concerning ship- *1636-37.*
money to be published, and inrolled in all the Courts of *February.*
Westminster.

A proclamation is issued out, forbidding the Presbyterians *1637.*
to go and settle in *America*: And an order of Council made *Reg. 13.*
against the transporting them thither. *Oliver Cromwell* was *April 30.*
one of those who were actually embarked for *America*. *May 1.*

John Williams, Bishop of *Lincoln*, is, by sentence of the *June 11.*
Star-Chamber, suspended, condemned to imprisonment, and
to a fine of 8000*l.* for tampering with witnesses. And
Lambert Olbadeston, Master of *Westminster-School*, is fined
10,000*l.* for some letters of his to that Bishop.

William Prynne, *Henry Burton*, and *John Bastwick*, are
questioned in the Star-Chamber, for books published by
them. They are condemned to a 5000*l.* fine each, to have
their ears cut off, and their noses slit, and to be imprisoned
in *Caernarvon*, *Launceston*, and *Lancaster* Castles; from
whence they were afterwards removed, *Prynne* from *Caernarvon* to *Jersey*, *Bastwick* from *Launceston* to *Scilly*, and
Burton from *Lancaster* to *Guernsey*.

The first tumult happens at *Edinburgh*, upon reading the *July 23.*
Liturgy, sent down there by the King's order.

Another tumult is raised there; and the Malecontents *Oct. 18.*
present two petitions. *19.*

Several proclamations are published in *Scotland* to sup- *Dec. 7,*
press those tumults. *&c.*

John Hampden, Esq; is prosecuted for refusing to pay *Nov. 6:*
ship-money, and cast. *Dec. 18.*

Such Ministers as refused to read the *Book of Sports* on *1637-38.*
Sundays, are prosecuted. *February.*

A rigorous sentence is passed upon *John Lilburn*, for
writing in *Prynne's* behalf, to whom he had been Clerk.

The King sends a proclamation into *Scotland*, to quell *19.*
the troubles there. The Malecontents draw up a pro-
testation, erect four tables, and subscribe a covenant.

The King appoints *James Marquis of Hamilton* to be *1638.*
his High-Commissioner into *Scotland*. *The Reg. 14.*

- Ann. C.* The Marquis arrives in *Edinburgh*, and, after having
May 16. founded the *Covenanters*, lets the King know, that he
20. must either yield to the *Scots* demands, or prepare for war.
- June 6.* The King resolves upon war, and orders the Marquis to
11. amuse the *Malecontents*.
- 28.* His Majesty's declaration is published at *Edinburgh*: In
 answer to which, the *Malecontents* draw up a protestation,
- July 6.* The Marquis returns to *England*, to receive the King's
27. orders: King *Charles* gives him fresh instructions.
- Aug. 10.* The Marquis, upon his return to *Scotland*, finds things
 in a worse condition than before.
- 19.* An order is made against transporting Ministers into
America, without the Archbishop of *Canterbury*'s, and the
 Bishop of *London*'s licence.
- 25.* The Marquis of *Hamilton* takes a second journey into
England.
- Sept. 9.* The King gives him new instructions, wherein he abates
 considerably of his former demands; and requires the *Scots*
17. to sign the old Confession of Faith.
- The Marquis of *Hamilton* returns to *Edinburgh*, and
 publishes his Majesty's proclamation, wherein he revoked,
 in ambiguous terms, the orders he had sent into *Scotland*:
 The *Malecontents* form a protestation against it, and raise
 objections against the oath annexed to the Confession of
 Faith.
- 22.* The High-Commissioner convenes a General Assembly
 to meet at *Glasgow* the 21st of November 1638, and a Par-
 liament at *Edinburgh* the 15th of May 1639.
- Oct. 30.* *Mary of Medicis* the Queen's mother arrives in *England*.
- Nov. 3.* An order of Council is issued out for collecting the ar-
 rears of ship-money.
- 21.* The General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* begins
 to meet at *Glasgow*.
- 27.* There is read in it a *Declinator* sent by the Bishops.
- 28.* The High-Commissioner seeing the *Covenanters* insolent
 behaviour, resolves to dissolve the Assembly.
- 29.* Accordingly, it is dissolved by proclamation; but the
 Assembly of the Kirk draws a protestation against it: And
 continuing to sit, notwithstanding their dissolution, deprive
 the Bishops, and abolish Episcopal Government in *Scotland*.
- Archibald Campbell*, Marquis of *Argyle*, joins the *Male-*
contents.
- Dec. 8.* The King forbids by a proclamation, the acknowledging
18. the authority of the General Assembly: But the Assembly
 makes a protestation against it.

The Marquis of *Hamilton* sends the King word, that *Ann. C.*
there was no way to reduce *Scotland* to obedience, but by
sending a fleet to lie in the *Frith* to block up their trade,
and then to follow with a royal army.

By an order of Council, all the Counties are command-
ed to find a certain number of troops for the war with
Scotland. 16.

Thomas Baron Coventry, Lord-Keeper, dies; and is 1638-9.
succeeded by *Sir John Finch*.

The King summons the Nobility to meet him at *York*,
each, with as many horse as he could raise; and several
orders are issued out to the several Counties for raising
troops. Jan. 14.
26.

Thomas Viscount Strafford, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, Feb. 10.
writes a letter to the King, about the preparations for the
war with *Scotland*.

The Archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York* send a circular
letter to the Clergy, to exhort them to contribute freely to
the war against the *Scots*. The Queen writes to the Papists
upon the same account. 11.

The *Scots* disperse a declaration [or kind of *Manifesto*] 14.
in *England*.

King *Charles* publishes a declaration, to justify his going 27.
1639.
to war with *Scotland*.

He sets out for the *North*:

Mar. 27.

And arrives at *York*.

Reg. 15.

The *Scots* seize *Dumbarton*, where the King intended to 30.
have some troops landed from *Ireland*: They also take
Aberdeen.

The Privy-Council writes letters to several gentlemen, April 9.
requiring them to lend the King money.

The King issues a proclamation to revoke sundry mono-
polies, but it is not put in execution.

He goes from *York* towards *Newcastle*, and then incamps 29.
near *Berwick*.

His General was the Earl of *Arundel*, and the Earl of May.
Essex Lieutenant-General.

The *Scots* residing in *Ireland* are forced to take an oath May.
of allegiance, whereby they abjured the covenant.

Henry Rich Earl of Holland, General of the King's 31.
horse, enters *Scotland*, and reads there a proclamation from
the King.

He enters *Scotland* a second time, with four thousand June 3.
men, and retreats in a hurry.

By an order of Council, the *Scots* living in *England* are 5.
enjoined

Ann. C. enjoined to take the same oath as had been taken by those in *Ireland*.

The King by the advice of some of his friends, resolves to stand upon the defensive.

6. The *Scots* sue for peace ; and the King agreeing to it, negotiations are set on foot.

13. A doubtful peace is concluded, containing seven articles of pacification ; and the *Scots* disband their army.

July. King *Charles* gains the Earl of *Montrose* to his side.

Aug. 1. He arrives at *Theobald's*, from his *Scottish* expedition.

6. He writes a letter to the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, by which it appears that he intended only to amuse the *Scots*.

10. The *Scottish* Bishops sign a *Declinator*.

11. A General Assembly meets at *Edinburgh* ; wherein the

15. Earl of *Traquair*, the King's High-Commissioner, approves of the *Covenant*.

Sept. 7. A *Spanish* fleet is attacked by the *Dutch* in the *Channel*, and dispersed.

8. The King renews his orders for the levying of ship-money.

Nov. 10. The Privy-Council issues out injunctions for paying in the arrears of the same.

Dec. 15. The Parliament of *Scotland* meets, and passes several acts

18. disagreeable to the King.

It is prorogued ; whereupon the members make a declaration, That the High-Commissioner had not power to prorogue the Parliament upon the King's letter, without the consent of the Parliament itself.

They break up, however, but leave a Committee, to present a remonstrance to the King, and attend his answer. The King refuses audience to the Deputies that brought this remonstrance.

27. *Algernoon Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, Lord High-Admiral, is ordered to get 20 ships fitted out, besides those that were to be set forth by the City of *London*.

A war between *England* and *Scotland* is fomented by the Court of *France*, and by several of the *English* Nobility and Clergy.

1639-40. The Earl of *Northumberland* is appointed Captain-General, and the Earl of *Strafford* Lieutenant-General of the army that was to be employed against *Scotland*.

The Lord *William Hamilton*, brother to the Marquis, is made Earl of *Laneric*.

The Committee of *Edinburgh* obtains leave of the King to send him their Deputies : These Deputies present two petitions to his Majesty.

They

They desire him to let the Parliament meet, and confirm the acts of the Assembly. The King objects to them, *Mar. 2.* that their powers were not full enough.

He calls his fourth Parliament in *England*, to meet the 4.
13th of *April*.

The Council of *England* resolves upon a war with *Scotland*: The King publishes a declaration to justify this second war. 11.

He insists, chiefly, upon a letter without date, written 1640.
by the Malecontents to the King of *France*.

Orders are sent to the several chief towns and counties, *Mar. 26.*
to raise soldiers, and to furnish them with coat and conduct- Reg. 16.
money.

A proclamation is published against libellous and seditious 30.
pamphlets, and discourses from *Scotland*.

Ireland grants the King four subsidies, for the war with
Scotland.

Sir John Finch, Lord-Keeper, is made Baron of *Ford*- April 7.
with.

The patents for monopolies are called in a second time by 10.
the King.

The Lord Lowdon, one of the *Scottish* Deputies, is committed to the *Tower*, for being one of those who subscribed the letter above-mentioned to the King of *France*. 11.

The Parliament meets: The King makes a speech to both Houses, to demand money for the war with *Scotland*. 13.

Several petitions are presented to the Commons about 16.
Grievances.

The Commons take them into consideration. 17.

They enter into a resolution about the business of Sir 20.
John Finch, Speaker in the last Parliament, who refused to put the question.

The King sends for both Houses to *Whitehall*, and, in April 21.
a speech made by the Lord-Keeper, requires them to dispatch the supply.

But, notwithstanding, the Commons proceed in the examination of grievances. 22.

The House of Lords, in a conference, sollicits the Commons to go about the supply: The Commons vote this to be a breach of privilege, and stick to the grievances. There was then a very full House, no less than 405 Members. 27, &c. 23, 24. 30.

King Charles sends a message to them requiring a speedy May 2.
answer.

He

Ann. C.

4. He proposes to them, in another message, to abolish utterly ship-money, if they would grant him twelve subsidies.

The House has a debate about it till six at night, and come to no resolution, but put it off till next day.

May 5.

The King dissolves the Parliament, and publishes a declaration containing the causes of its dissolution.

6. Several Members of the House of Commons are imprisoned.

7. The King continues the Convocation, notwithstanding the Parliament's dissolution.

An order of Council is made for proceeding against such High-Sheriffs as neglected to raise and collect the ship-money.

11. The mob besets *Lambeth-House*, and highly threatens the Archbishop.

16. An order is made for imprisoning those who refused to pay coat and conduct-money.

Some Aldermen of *London* are committed to prison, for refusing to give in the names of such persons as were able to lend the King money.

Circular letters are sent about, to require people to pay in ship-money betimes.

20. The Council appoints a Committee to press the payment of ship-money with all expedition.

29. The Convocation rises, after having made 17 Canons, enjoined a new oath, and granted the King six subsidies, payable in six years; being 4*s.* in the pound every year, according to the valuation of the benefices in the King's books.

An order is sent to the Lord-Mayor of *London*, to raise 4000 men.

July 1. Commissions of array are sent into every county.

5. The Lord-Mayor and Aldermen of *London* are ordered to be prosecuted, for neglecting to levy ship-money.

The King buys all the pepper upon credit, and sells it again for ready money.

28. He seizes the bullion in the *Tower*, belonging to the Merchants, and borrows afterwards, of the Merchants concerned in the Mint, 40,000*l.* upon the credit of the Customs.

A project is formed to debase the coin, by mixing silver and copper together; but it is not put in execution.

Aug. 20. The *Scots* army enters *England*, and publishes two manifesto's.

23. The King arrives at *York*, having set out from *London* the 20th. The

- The Scots force a pass over the *Tyne* at *Newburn*, and become masters of *Newcastle*. *Ann. G.*
 The King is at *North-Allerton*: He returns to *York*, whether the *English* troops retire likewise. *27.*
28.
29.
- Wrists are sent to the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, to attend the King in the North, according to their tenures.
- The Scots send a petition to the King, and sue for *Sept. 4.* peace.
- The King summons all the Nobility to meet him at *York* the 24th of *September*, and give him their advice upon the situation of his affairs. *7.*
8.
- The Scots send him their demands.
- Twelve Lords petition his Majesty to call a Parliament. *10.*
 Other petitions are presented to him by the City of *London* and the *Yorkshire* Gentry, to the same purpose. *11.*
24.
- A great Council of Lords meets at *York*, to consider of means how to get the *Scots* out of the Kingdom; which continues sitting till the 28th of *October*.
- The King calls a Parliament to meet the 3d of *November*.
- The Lords advise the King to make peace with the *Scots*.
- They borrow, upon their own credit, 200,000*l.* of the City of *London*, to pay the King's army.
- The King appoints Commissioners to treat with the *Scots* about a peace. *29.*
- The treaty begins at *Rippon*. *Ott. 1.*
 The preliminaries for the maintenance of the *Scotch* army, &c. are agreed upon. *16.*
- The treaty is, by mutual consent, removed from *Rippon* to *London*. *23.*
- A truce is concluded between the *English* and *Scots*. *26.*

BOOK XX.

The Second Part of the Reign of CHARLES I.

THE 5th Parliament of King *Charles* meets. *Nov. 3.*
 The King makes a speech to both Houses, in which he desires them to think of means to drive the *Scots* out of the Kingdom.

A vast number of petitions about grievances are presented to the Commons, who apply themselves entirely to the redressing of them.

- Ann. C.* The House appoints a Committee to draw up a remonstrance, or representation of the state of the Kingdom.
9. *Thomas Wentworth*, Earl of *Strafford*, is impeached by the Commons of High-treason, and sent to the *Tower* the 22d.
11. *John Digby*, Earl of *Bristol*, gives both Houses a relation of his negotiation with the *Scots*.
13. *John Williams*, Bishop of *Lincoln*, is released out of the *Tower*, and takes his seat in Parliament.
16. A fast is appointed.
17. All the members of the House of Commons are ordered to receive the Communion.
- Dec. 7.* The Commons vote, that ship-money is contrary to the laws of the Realm, &c.
- Sir *Francis Windebank*, Secretary of State, being complained of in the House of Commons for favouring Popery, flies into *France*, January 11.
11. The inhabitants of *London* present a petition to the Commons against Bishops, containing twenty-eight grievances.
16. The Canons made by the late Convocation, and the subsidies, or benevolence, granted by the Clergy to the King, are voted illegal.
17. The *Scottish* Commissioners present to the Lords articles of impeachment against *Archbishop Laud*, who is accordingly accused by the Commons of High-treason.
18. *Matthew Wren*, Bishop of *Ely*, is obliged to give 10,000*l.* bail
22. The Lord-Keeper, *Finch*, makes a speech in his own justification, before the House of Commons; but being, notwithstanding, declared a traitor, he flies into *Holland*.
- Sir *Edward Littleton* is made Lord-Keeper in his room.
- Three of the Judges, Sir *John Bramston*, Sir *Humphrey Davenport*, and Justice *Crawley*, are impeached.
- 1640-41. A petition is sent from *Kent* against the Bishops.
- Jan. 13.* The articles of impeachment against *John, Lord Finch*, are carried up to the House of Lords.
14. The House of Lords orders, That Divine Service be performed, as it is appointed by the acts of Parliament of this Realm.
16. The Commons send up to the Lords a bill for triennial Parliaments.
- Some members of the House of Commons are expelled, on account of their having been concerned in monopolies.
23. Several Ministers, particularly *Peter Smart*, present petitions against irregularities in the government of the Church.
- A dis-

A dispute happens between the King and the House of *Ann. C.* Commons, about *John Goodman*, a Jesuit.

Commissioners are ordered to be sent into all counties, for defacing pictures, and all other relicks of idolatry in Churches.

The King sends for both Houses to *Whitehall*, and proposes some restrictions to the bill concerning triennial Parliaments. 25.

Both Houses present a remonstrance to his Majesty against *Goodman*. 29.

The King returns an answer to their remonstrance. Feb. 2.

The Commons resolve to give the *Scots* 300,000*l.* 3.

Clergymen are ordered to be left out of the Commission of the Peace: And, from this time, till the end of our intestine divisions, above 7000 of the Clergy are deprived of their livings, and other preferments. 5.

The Queen sends a message to the Commons about the raising money by the Recusants, and the Pope's Nuncio.

The King communicates to the Lords the marriage of the Princess *Mary*, his daughter, with the Prince of *Orange*. 10.

Sir *Robert Berkley*, one of the Judges, is impeached, and taken off the Bench, to be committed to prison. 12.

The King passes the act for triennial Parliaments.

The Lords order the record in the *Exchequer* of the judgment in Mr. *Hampden*'s case concerning ship-money, to be annulled: And the same is vacated by Act of Parliament. Feb. 15. 26.

Articles of impeachment against *Archbishop Laud* are carried up to the Lords; and he is committed to the Tower. Mar. 1.

The Commons vote against the Bishops sitting in Parliament. 12.

Articles of accusation are sent up by the Commons, to the House of Lords, against Dr. *John Cosin* Prebendary of *Durham*. 15.

Both Houses petition the King to remove the Papists from Court. 16.

The House of Peers returns thanks to the twelve Lords, who had petitioned the King at *York* to call a Parliament.

The trial of the Earl of *Strafford* begins; but there being no sufficient cause found for his legal condemnation, he is Reg. 17.] voted guilty of High-treason. 1641. 22.

The Commons read thrice in one day a bill of attainder April 21. against that Earl, and send it up to the Lords.

They vote for abolishing the Council of the *North*, or the Court of *York*. 24.

- Ann. C.* A petition from the inhabitants of *London*, subscribed by 20,000 persons, is presented to the Parliament.
26. A bill is brought in for laying fines on the Members of the late Convocation.
- May 1.* The King makes a speech to the Parliament in favour of the Earl of *Strafford*.
3. *John Pym*, Esq; discovers to the House of Commons a plot to seduce the army; the House doth thereupon subscribe a protestation.
- 3 and 4. The rabble flocks to *Westminster*, and demands justice against the Earl of *Strafford*.
4. The Earl finding the King was in great anxiety about passing the bill for his attainder, he writes a letter to his Majesty to persuade him to pass it.
- The Commons examine into the plot for seducing the army.
8. The bill of attainder against the Earl of *Strafford* passes in the House of Lords.
10. The King passes it by commission, with another bill for the continuance of the Parliament, that it might not be dissolved, without the consent of both Houses.
11. He writes to the Lords in behalf of the Earl of *Strafford*.
12. *Thomas Wentworth*, Earl of *Strafford*, is beheaded.
13. The Commons explain a clause in their protestation.
19. *William Juxon*, Bishop of *London*, resigns his place of High-Treasurer.
25. The Customers offer 150,000*l.* for an act of oblivion, which offer is accepted.
- Robert Sidney*, Earl of *Leicester*, is appointed by the King Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*.
- June 7.* The Lords vote, that the Bishops should continue to sit in Parliament; but the Commons proceed upon the bill for abolishing Episcopacy.
9. The Commons send up to the Lords a bill for regulating the Council, and taking away the Star-Chamber.
- The King calls up to the House of Peers *George, Lord Digby*, son of the Earl of *Bristol*.
12. A bill is brought in, to restore the Earl of *Strafford's* children in blood and honour, and for settling his estate upon his heirs.
14. *Henry Wilmot*, Captain *Ashburnham*, and Captain *Pollard*, are committed to prison, about the plot for seducing the army.
15. The Commons vote, that all Deans, Chapters, Canons, &c. should be abolished.

The witnesses about the plot to seduce the army are examined. *Ann. C.*

The King gives his assent to a bill, whereby tonnage and poundage were granted him for a time. 16.
22.

Count Rosetti, the Pope's Nuncio, is ordered to be brought to the Bar of the House of Commons; but he absconds, and departs for Rome. 24.

Father Philips, the Queen's Confessor, is also accused. 26.

A vote is passed for abolishing the High-Commission Court.

The King gives his assent to a bill for a poll-tax. *July 3.*

As also to two bills, for taking away the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts. 5.

Articles of accusation are brought in against the Judges. 6.

The Commons pass some votes about the imprisonment of the Members of Parliament. 8.

Matthew Wren, Bishop of Ely, is impeached. 20.

Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, is made Lord High-Chamberlain, in the room of Philip Herbert, Earl of Pembroke. 23.

The King communicates to both Houses the engagement he had entered into with Philip IV, King of Spain, to lend him 4000 men, part of the Irish army, and the rest to the King of France; but the Parliament finds means to hinder it. 28.

The House of Lords rejects the bill for taking the protestation. 30.

An accusation is brought by the Commons against Bishops, who had assisted at the last Convocation. 13 Aug. 1.

Both the English and Scottish armies are disbanded. 6.

The peace is concluded between England and Scotland. 7.

The King gives his assent to a bill about Knighthood; to one for regulating the Clerks of the market, and to another for the certainty of forests, and of the limits and bounds of the forests, &c. 10.

He sets out the same day for Scotland, and in four days arrives thither.

Mary of Medicis, the Queen's mother, departs from England.

The Parliament sends a Committee into Scotland to watch the King. 17.

The Commons vote against the monopoly of soap; and about the plantation of Londonderry, in Ireland; and against the King's resolution of lending the Irish army to the Kings of France or Spain. 26.

Ann. C. The House hath a great debate about altering the Common-Prayer Book ; shortly after, they vote against innovations and images.

8. A declaration upon this matter is sent up by the Commons to the Lords, who return no answer.

9. The Lords communicate to the Commons their order of the 16th of January, concerning Divine Service ; the Commons order their declaration to be forthwith published, and put in execution, throughout the Kingdom.

Both Houses adjourn to the 20th of October, and appoint Committees to take care of affairs during the recess.

October. A conspiracy is discovered in Scotland against James Marquis of Hamilton, *Achibald Campbell Earl of Argyle*, and *William Hamilton Earl of Lanercost*.

20. The Parliament meeting again, desires a guard of the Earl of Essex, whom the King had made General on the South of Trent.

22. They push the bill for excluding the Bishops from their votes in Parliament.

23. The Rebellion breaks out in Ireland.

30. The Commons pass some votes about the monopoly of soap.

William Seymour Marquis of Hertford, is made Governor to Prince Charles.

The Lord Justices of Ireland issue out a proclamation, to vindicate King Charles of an aspersion thrown upon him, that he was concerned in the Irish rebellion.

Nov. 1. The Parliament votes large sums, for securing Ireland, and suppressing the Rebellion there.

4. A remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom passes in the House of Commons by nine voices only.

22. The King returns from Scotland to London, and is received with great demonstrations of joy.

27. He dismisses the Parliament's guard, that had been given by the Earl of Essex. The Earl resigns his commission of Captain-General.

Dec. 1. The remonstrance is presented to the King ; to which his Majesty returns an answer some time after.

Both Houses resolve never to consent to a toleration of Popery in Ireland.

10. The King issues out a proclamation, ordering that the use of the Common-Prayer-Book should be continued.

14. He makes a speech to the Parliament, wherein he proposes an accommodation concerning the Bill for pressing soldiers ; both Houses vote this to be a breach of privilege.

Several

Several inhabitants of *London* present a petition against *Ann. C.*
Colonel *Lunsford* Lieutenant of the *Tower*, put in the room 23.
of Sir *William Balfour*, whom the King had displaced.

The King removes *Lunsford* from that post, and gives Dec. 26.
it to *Montjoy Blount* Earl of *Newport*, whom he also re-
moves, immediately after, and gives that place to Sir *John* 27.
Byron.

There is a tumult and a great concourse of people at
Westminster, crying out against the Bishops.

About this time the name of *Roundheads* came to be used.

A proclamation is put out against those tumults.

The Bishops present a protestation to the King, against
all laws to be made without their concurrence: His Ma-
jesty communicates it to the Lords, who send it down to the
Commons. Whereupon the Commons accuse the twelve
Bishops of High-treason, and they are sent to the *Tower*.

An act of the Common-Council of the City of *London* 31.
is passed for suppressing the tumults.

The King issues out a proclamation, wherein he declares 1641-2.
the *Irish*, Rebels and Traitors. Jan. 1.

The King's Printer is ordered to print but forty copies Jan. 2.
of it, and send them to Sir *Edward Nicholas* Secretary
of State.

The King orders *Edward Montague* Lord *Kimbolton*, a 3.
Peer, and five Members of the House of Commons, *viz.*,
Denzil Holles, Sir *Arthur Hatherig*, *John Pym*, *John Hamp-
den*, and *William Stroud* to be accused of High-treason.

King *Charles* goes himself to the House of Commons, to 4.
demand the five impeached Members.

The Commons vote that by so doing, the King had 5.
violated the privileges of Parliament.

They appoint a Committee to sit at *Guildhall*, and ad-
journ till the 11th; the King comes to *Guildhall*, to
demand the five Members.

The Lord-Mayor and Common-Council present a peti-
tion to his Majesty, wherein they represent their fears. 7.

A proclamation is issued out for apprehending the five 8.
accused Members.

The King retires from *London* to *Hampton-Court*, and 10.
then to *Windsor*.

The Commons meet again.

King *Charles* sends two messages to them, declaring
that he desisted from his proceedings against the five Mem-
bers. 11.
12.
13.

The Parliament receives information, that *George Lord*
S + *Digby*

Ann. C. *Digby* was in arms at *Kingston upon Thames*, attended with several Officers: Whereupon both Houses use precautions to hinder the King from becoming Master of *Portsmouth*.

They send Sir *John Hotham* to secure *Hull*, without acquainting the King with it.

George Lord Digby withdraws out of the Kingdom.

13. The Sheriffs of *London* and *Middlesex* are ordered to set a guard about the *Tower*.

15. The Commons petition to have Sir *John Byron* removed from the Lieutenantcy of the *Tower*.

Sir *Edward Herbert*, Attorney-General, is impeached by the Commons.

The *Scotch* Commissioners who were come to treat about sending 15,000 of their own forces to *Ireland*, offer their mediation: The Parliament accepts it, but it is rejected by the King.

20. The King sends a message to both Houses, wherein he makes them some proposals: The Commons return for answer, that to enable them to do what his Majesty desired, it was necessary, that the *Tower*, and other principal forts of the Kingdom, and the whole Militia should be put into the hands of such persons as the Parliament might confide in, and as should be recommended by both Houses of Parliament.

24. The *Scots* make some proposals for sending 2500 men into *Ireland*.

28. His Majesty sends an answer to the Commons, wherein he seems to be willing to grant what they desired.

Feb. 7. He denies that ever he gave any passes for *Ireland*.

11. Sir *John Byron* is removed from the Lieutenantcy of the *Tower*, which is given to Sir *John Conyers*.

14. The King passes by commission, the Bill for taking away the Bishops votes; and another for pressing of soldiers.

The Queen goes to *Holland*, with the Crown-jewels, to buy arms and ammunition.

March. The business of the Militia, which was taken into consideration Jan. 20, is debated between the King and the two Houses in this month, and till the end of May; upon the whole, the King will not part with the right of disposing of the Militia.

The King determines to go and reside at *York* for some time, and acquaints both Houses with his design.

Mar. 5. The Lords and Commons make an ordinance about the Reg. 18. Militia.

1642. King *Charles* proposes to go in person to *Ireland*, and head his army. He

He comes before *Hull*, wherein Sir *John Hotham*, the *Governor*, refuses him admittance. *Ann. C.*

April 8.

Both Houses petition the King to desist from his intention of going into *Ireland*. *23.*

28.

His Majesty tries to become master of *Hull* by force or surprize. *May.*

He summons the tenants in chief in *Yorkshire*, to appear at *York*, *May 12*, and desires them to grant him a guard.

The Lords and Commons present a remonstrance, or manifesto, to him: He returns an answer to the same. *19.*

The Commons vote, that the King intended to make war upon his Parliament. *20.*

The Earl of *Bristol* endeavours in vain to procure an accommodation, and to prevent a war.

King *Charles* concludes a peace with *Portugal*. *22.*

The Lord Keeper *Littleton* sends the Great Seal to the King, and goes to him the next day.

The two Houses petition the King, to disband the horse and foot raised as a guard for him. *23.*

The Parliament sends nineteen propositions to the King; *June 24* which he rejects, and puts out a long answer to them.

His Majesty receives arms and ammunition from *Holland*.

Both Houses publish proposals for the borrowing of money and plate for the defence of the Kingdom. The King forbids the Citizens to lend them any. *10.*

The Lords that were with the King at *York* promise to stand by him. *13.*

The Commons draw up articles of impeachment against nine of the Lords that were with his Majesty; and the House of Peers passed this sentence, that they should not sit or vote in the house, during the present Parliament. *15.*

The King grants several commissions of array for levying troops. *27.*

Both Houses draw up a declaration against those commissions. *July 1:*

The King issues out a proclamation concerning the Militia. He besieges *Hull*, but without success. *4.*

He miscarries likewise in his design of making himself master of the fleet.

The Commons pass votes for raising an army, to be commanded by *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Essex*, who had left the King's service, and been turned out of his place of *Lord-Chamberlain*. *13.*

Francis Russel, Earl of *Bedford*, is appointed General of the horse. *14.*

He

- Ann. C.* He is routed at *Sherburne*, the 6th of the next month, by *William Seymour*, Marquis of *Hertford*.
18. The Parliament forbids the publishing the King's proclamation about the Militia.
- August.* *George Goring*, Governor of *Portsmouth*, declares for the King; whereupon, the Parliament orders *Portsmouth* to be blocked up.
- His Majesty publishes a manifesto, and orders by proclamation all men that could bear arms to repair to him at *Nottingham*.
8. Both Houses declare those traitors that should assist the King.
10. Sir *Richard Gurney*, Lord-Mayor of *London*, is impeached by the Commons. Sentence is passed upon him.
12. Colonel *Goring* surrenders *Portsmouth* to the Parliament.
18. The gates of *Coventry* are shut against the King.
20. *Dover* is surprized by one *Drake* for the Parliament.

B O O K XXI.

*Containing the third and last Part of the Reign
of CHARLES I.*

22. KING Charles sets up his standard at *Nottingham*.
25. He sends a message to the Parliament, by *Thomas Wriothesley*, Earl of *Southampton*, and others, in which he proposes a peace; the two Houses return him no satisfactory answer.
28. *Sep. 1.* Several messages pass between the King and the Parliament about this matter.
27. *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Essex*, sets out from *London*, to head the Parliament-forces.
9. The King makes a solemn protestation at the head of his army.
- He marches to *Shrewsbury*, where he forms an army of 14000 men; and receives large sums of money from *London*, and money and plate from *Oxford*.
23. A fight happens at *Powick-Bridge* near *Worcester*, where Prince *Rupert* gets the advantage.
- The Earl of *Essex* possesses himself of *Worcester*, and afterwards secures *Hereford*, *Gloucester*, and *Bristol*.
27. The King publishes a declaration upon the two Houses refusing to treat about a peace.

The

The Parliament publishes also a declaration, and protestation about the war. *Ann. C.*
Oct. 22.

The King advances towards *London*, and is followed by the Earl of *Essex*.

The battle of *Keinton* or *Edge-hill* is fought; in which the King got the victory, though it was challenged by the Parliament. After it, the King takes *Banbury Castle*, and withdraws to *Oxford*. *23.*

The King issues out a proclamation, in which he offers *Ott. 27.* a pardon to the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*.

Both Houses petition the King for a safe-conduct, to *Nov. 3.* come and treat with him about a peace.

The Parliament's Deputies repair to *Colebrook*.

The King beats the quarters of some of the Parliament's forces at *Brentford*; but the Earl of *Essex*, and some of the *London* trained bands, stop his progress. And he returns to *Oxford*. *11.*
12.

A fight at *Piercebrig* between *William Cavendish*, Earl of *Dec. 1.* *Newcastle*, and *Ferdinando Lord Fairfax*. They have another engagement at *Tadcaster*.

Commissary-General *Wilmot* takes *Marlborough* for the King. *5.*

Sir *William Waller* takes *Farnham-Castle* and *Winchester* for the Parliament. *13.*

The two Houses publish a declaration, in which they threaten to make use of reprisals, if the King put any of his prisoners of war to death, whom he had caused to be tried and condemned. *17.*

John Lilburn was one of the condemned prisoners.

Waller takes *Chichester* for the Parliament.

Associations are formed in some Counties for the King, and in others for the Parliament. *29.*

The General Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland* presents *1642-43.* a petition to the King, in which they sue for uniformity of *Jan. 4.* Church Government.

An order is made by the Parliament, for treating such as should come from the King's quarters to *London* as spies. *16.*

Ralph Lord *Hopton* defeats, near *Bodmin*, a body of Parliamentarians, commanded by *Ruthen*; and, three days after, makes himself master of *Salisbury*. *19.*

Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, one of the Parliament's Officers, defeats and takes prisoner Colonel *Slingsby* at *Gisborough*.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* becomes master of *Leeds*.

The negotiations for a peace are begun at *Oxford*, and continue till the middle of *April*. *23.*
28.

The

- Ann. C.* The Parliament borrows money, for carrying on the war in *Ireland*.
 30. Prince *Rupert* takes *Cirencester* by storm.
 Febr. 2. Queen *Henrietta Maria* arrives from *Holland* in *Burlington bay* in *Yorkshire*.
 Mar. 1. *Lichfield* is taken for the Parliament; and *Robert Lord Brooke*, one of the Parliament's Officers, slain.
 7. The Queen arrives at *York*.
 The same day a plot is formed by *Robert Yeomans*, &c. for delivering *Bristol* to the King.
 An ordinance is made for fortifying *London* by lines and out-works.
 19. A battle is fought at *Salt-Heath* near *Stafford*, wherein *Spencer Compton*, Earl of *Northampton*, is slain.
 Sir *William Waller* relieves *Gloucester*, besieged by some of the Royalists; and afterwards takes *Chepstow* and *Monmouth*.
 The King returns an answer to the petition of the General Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland*.
 1643. The Parliament makes an ordinance for sequestering the Reg. 19. estates of Delinquents.
 Apr. 1. James *Butler*, Marquis of *Ormond*, defeats the Irish Rebels at *Ross*.
 3. Prince *Rupert*, who was sent to establish a communication between *York* and *Oxford*, takes *Birmingham*.
 4. A petition from some Protestant Officers in *Ireland* is presented to the Lords Justices, and afterwards communicated to the King, in which they deplored their miseries.
 7. The King issues out a proclamation, forbidding the paying any taxes to the Parliament.
 10. The Parliament makes an order about spies.
 15. The treaty at *Oxford* is broken off without success.
 16. Robert *Devereux* Earl of *Essex* besieges *Reading*, which had been fortified by the King.
 19. The King publishes a proclamation, in which he offers a pardon to the soldiers in the Parliament's army.
 21. Prince *Rupert* takes *Lichfield*, but is recalled by the King to relieve *Reading*.
 23. The King sends a commission to James *Butler*, Marquis of *Ormond*, to treat with the Irish Rebels about a truce.
 25. Sir *William Waller* takes *Hereford*, but is repulsed before *Worcester*.
 26. *Reading* capitulates; after which the Earl of *Essex* advances to *Thame*.
May 3. The King enjoins the Marquis of *Ormond* to hasten the conclusion of the truce with the Irish. The

- The Parliament orders the *Book of Sports* to be burnt by *Ann. C.*
the common hangman. 5.
- James Earl of Northampton* defeats a body of the enemy at *Middle.* 6.
- The Lords Justices of *Ireland* write a letter to the King, in which they represent the miserable condition of that Kingdom, for want of succours. 11.
- A Convention of the Estates of *Scotland* is summoned. 15.
- The Marquis of *Hamilton* is made a Duke. 15.
- A declaration from the King is sent into *Scotland*, displaying the justice of his cause against the Parliament. 16.
- Henry Grey Earl of Stamford* is defeated near *Stratton* in *Cornwall* by *Sir Ralph Hopton.* 16.
- The King requires of the Parliament an answer to his message from *Oxford*, and desires to renew the treaty of peace. 20.
- The Lord *Fairfax* takes *Wakefield* by storm, and makes *General Goring* prisoner. 21.
- Queen *Henrietta* is accused by the Commons of High-treason. 23.
- The conspiracy of *Tomkins* and *Challoner*, to force the Parliament to a peace, is discovered. 30.
- Whereupon, both Houses unite themselves by a new oath *June 6.* or covenant.
- An ordinance is made for sequestring all the temporalities belonging to *Archbishop Laud:* As one had been made before, to deprive him of the right of presenting to any ecclesiastical benefice. 10.
- An Assembly of Divines is called to meet at *Westminster*,
The Queen comes to *Newark.* 12.
14.
- The Parliament publishes a declaration to encourage voluntary contributions for the war in *Ireland.* 1643.
June 16.
- Prince *Rupert* beats two of the enemies quarters at *High-Wickham*, and disperses another body in *Chalgrove-Field*; in this last action *John Hampden* is wounded, and dies the 24th. 18.
- Captain *John Hotham* is apprehended and imprisoned, for endeavouring to deliver *Hull* to the King. 22.
- The Estates of *Scotland* meet.
- Subscriptions are taken for carrying on the war in *Ireland*, which the King approves of. 24.
- The Marquis of *Newcastle*, and *Ralph Lord Hopton*, take *Taunton*, *Bridgewater*, *Wells*, and other places in the West.
- Gainsborough* is taken by the Lord *Willoughby of Parham*, where

- Ann. C.* where Robert Pierrepont Earl of Kingston is killed by accident.
29. Hull is preserved for the Parliament, and Sir John Hotham apprehended.
30. *Ferdinando, Lord Fairfax*, is defeated on Atherton-Moor, by *William Cavendish, Earl of Newcastle*.
- July 1.* The Assembly of Divines meets for the first time.
- The Marquis of Newcastle takes Bradford, and shortly after, *Hallifax* and *Beverly* are secured for the King.
2. The King writes to the Lords Justices of Ireland, to hasten the conclusion of a truce for the year.
5. The battle of *Lansdown* is fought, in which Sir William Waller is forced to quit the field; eight days after, he is entirely routed, at the battle of *Roundway-down*, in *Wiltshire*, and escapes to *Bristol*.
- Mr. Tomkins and *Challoner* are executed.
13. The King and Queen join their forces at *Edge-hill*.
17. The King forbids all intercourse of trade with *London*.
19. The Assembly of Divines presents a petition to the Parliament.
- The King makes a solemn protestation at his receiving the Sacrament at *Oxford*.
20. He puts out a proclamation, in which he enjoins all persons not to obey the orders of the two Houses of Parliament.
21. An insurrection breaks out in *Kent*, and a skirmish happens at *Tunbridge*.
22. The Parliament publishes an ordinance for an Excise. Prince *Rupert* takes *Bristol*, by storm: *Nathan. Fiennes*, the Governor, is condemned to die.
- The Marquis of *Hertford* takes *Bath*.
- Shortly after, *Robert Dormer*, Earl of *Caernarvon*, makes himself master of *Weymouth*, *Dorchester*, and *Portland Castle*.
25. The Parliament publishes a declaration about the King's conduct, with regard to the rebellion in *Ireland*.
30. Oliver Cromwell defeats a detachment of the Earl of Newcastle's, near *Gainsborough*.
- August.* *William Cavendish, Earl of Newcastle*, takes *Gainsborough* and *Lincoln*.
7. The Parliament's Commissioners arrive at *Edinburgh*, being sent to demand assistance from the Scots.
- The House of Lords sends to the Commons propositions for a peace: The Commons approve of them, and agree they should be sent to the King.

The City of *London* presents a petition against those pro- *Ann. C.*
positions ; whereupon, the Commons reverse their former 8.
resolution.

Some thousands of women go and present a petition for Aug. 9.
peace to the Commons, and cause a tumult at *Westminster*.

The King besieges *Gloucester*.

Plymouth is blocked up by Prince *Maurice*.

A Covenant between the two Nations is agreed upon in
Scotland, and a proclamation issued out for levying troops
in that Kingdom.

Henry Rich, Earl of *Holland*, *John Hollis*, Earl of *Clare*, 25.
and *Francis Russel*, Earl of *Bedford*, quit the Parliament,
and repair to the King at *Oxford*.

The Parliament consents to the *Scottish Covenant*. 28.

William Cavendish, Earl of *Newcastle*, besieges *Hull* : He Sept. 2.
is made Marquis of *Newcastle*.

Robert Devereux, Earl of *Essex*, forces the King to raise
the siege of *Gloucester*, and then goes and surprizes *Ciren-*
cester.

The King writes a letter to the Lords Justices of *Ireland* 7.
to hasten the cessation.

Judge *Berkley* is fined 20,000*l.* and committed to the 12.
Tower.

The truce between King *Charles* and the *Irish Rebels* 15.
is signed.

The first battle of *Newbury* is fought, in which *Henry*
Spencer, Earl of *Sunderland*, *Robert Dormer*, Earl of *Caer-*
narvon, *Lucius Carey*, Viscount *Falkland*, and many others
are slain, on both sides : The Parliamentarians remain ma-
sters of the field.

An ordinance is made by the Parliament, for seizing the
revenues of the King, the Queen, and the Prince : And
the King, on his part, forbids all the tenants and debtors of
such as were in open Rebellion against him, to pay them
any thing.

The Parliament takes the Covenant.

22.

The Earl of *Crawford* is defeated at *Pool*.

24.

Exeter surrenders to Prince *Maurice*.

25.

The Parliament publishes a declaration against the truce
with the *Irish*.

30.

Dartmouth surrenders to Prince *Maurice*.

Oct. 6.

The King forbids in vain the taking of the Covenant.

9.

Some of the King's forces are routed at *Horn Castle*, by
Edward Mountague Earl of *Manchester*.

11.

The siege of *Hull* is raised.

12.

Lynn

- Ann. C.* Lynn surrenders to the Earl of *Manchester*.
16. The King forbids a second time all trade or commerce with the City of *London*.
17. The Parliament makes an ordinance for treating as spies, such as came from the King at *Oxford* to *London*.
18. The Commons add ten fresh articles to Archbishop *Laud's* impeachment.
- Nov. 5.* Henry Rich Earl of *Holland* leaves the King, and comes back to the Parliament; as do also the Earls of *Bedford* and *Clare*.
- II. The Parliament orders a new Great Seal to be made.
19. The King attempts to become master of *Gloucester*, but miscarries.
- Part of the *English* troops that had been employed in *Ireland* are brought over to serve the King, and land in *Flintshire*: They besiege *Hawarden Castle*.
21. The Assembly of Divines sends letters to the Protestant Churches abroad, in which they vindicate the Parliament's proceedings; and the King, on his part, publishes a protestation.
22. Daniel Kniveton, one of the King's Messengers, is hanged.
29. The treaty between the Parliament, and *Scotland*, is signed.
30. The new Great Seal is delivered to the Commissioners.
- Dec. 4.* *Hawarden Castle* surrenders.
8. John Pym dies.
22. The King calls a Parliament at *Oxford*, consisting of those Members that had deserted the Parliament at *Westminster*.
- He endeavours in vain to gain the Earl of *Essex* to his side, which renders the Earl suspected.
- Edward Mountague, Earl of *Manchester*, is made General of the associated Counties, and ordered to go and oppose the Marquis of *Newcastle*.
- The siege of *Plymouth* is turned into a blockade.
15. The *English* forces newly arrived from *Ireland*, take some places in *Cheshire*, and lay siege to *Nantwich*; but are entirely routed by the Lord Fairfax. In this action Colonel George Monk is taken prisoner, and committed to the Tower.
- 1643-44. The Scotch enters *England*, amounting to near 22,000
Jan. 15, men.
- or 19. The Parliament at *Oxford* meets, and sends offers of peace to the Earl of *Essex*, and to the two Houses at *Westminster*.

The

The Lords of the Parliament at *Oxford* send a letter to *Ann. C.*
the Privy-Council of *Scotland*.

The Parliament at *Oxford* votes, that the entrance of 26.
the Scots into *England* was a declaration of war, and that
all who assisted them should be deemed as traitors: They
also vote the Parliament at *Westminster* guilty of High-
treason.

The *Scots* come before *Newcastle*, which they order to *Feb. 3.*
be summoned. 6.

William Cavendish, Marquis of *Newcastle*, who came to
that place *February 2*, goes in pursuit of them.

The King makes a speech to his Parliament at *Oxford*,
to demand assistance: He borrows money, with the ad-
vice of that Parliament, by letters under his Privy-Seal. 7.

The *Scotch* army passes the *Tyne*. 14.

The Members of the Parliament at *Oxford* publish a 28.
manifesto, concerning their being driven from *Westminster*, *Mar. 9.*
by the outrages of the leaders there.

They pass some votes against the Parliament's army, de-
claring them traitors; and against the new Great Seal; as
also, about the *Westminster* Parliament's rejecting the offers
of peace. 12.

The Parliament at *Westminster* publishes a declaration, or
manifesto.

Archbishop *Laud*'s trial begins, and continues till *July 29*
following.

The Conservators of the peace in *Scotland* send an an-
swer to the letter of the Lords assembled in Parliament at 18.
Oxford.

Prince *Rupert* defeats Sir *John Meldrum* at *Newark*; 21, 22.
then he relieves *Latham-House*, and takes *Stopworth* and
Bolton, in *May*.

The King issues out a proclamation, ordering all those 22.
that owe service to the Crown, to repair to him by the
20th of *April*.

The *Scotch* army attack the Marquis of *Newcastle*'s; 24.
but they are repulsed by the bravery of Sir *Charles Lucas*.

An ordinance is made by the Parliament, enjoining every 1644.
family, in and about *London*, to forbear one meal a week, *Reg. 20.*
and contribute the value of it towards carrying on the *Mar. 26.*
war.

Sir *William Waller* defeats Sir *Ralph Hopton*, near *Alref-* 29.
ford, in *Hampshire*.

Waller takes *Winchester*, and some time before *Arundel*. *April 6.*

Ann. C. *Castle*, in which Mr. William Chillingworth was taken prisoner.

- 11. A battle is fought at *Selby* in *Yorkshire*, where Colonel *John Bellasis* Governor of *York* is defeated, and taken prisoner.
 - 12. The King grants a pardon to *Archbishop Laud*.
 - 13. *William Cavendish*, Marquis of *Newcastle*, returns to *York*.
One of the King's spies is hanged at *Westminster*.
The *Irish* Protestants and Papists enter into negotiations with the King at *Oxford*.
 - 16. The Parliament at *Oxford* is prorogued.
 - 17. The Queen departs from *Oxford*, and retires into the *West*.
 - 20. *Lyme* in *Dorsetshire* is besieged by Prince *Maurice*.
The Lord *Fairfax* joins the *Scots* at *Tadcaster*, and then they go and block up *York*.
- May 1.* The Parliament makes an ordinance against adjourning the Courts of Justice from *Westminster* to *Oxford*.
- 6. *Edward Mountague*, Earl of *Manchester*, becomes master of *Lincoln*,
 - 7. Colonel *Massy* takes *Westbury* in *Gloucestershire*.
A dispute arises between the two Houses, about the Committee of both Kingdoms.
 - 8. *Newnham*, in *Gloucestershire*, is taken by Colonel *Massy*.
 - 9. Reinforcements from the *London* trained-bands are sent to the Earl of *Essex*, and to Sir *William Waller*.
An ordinance is made for abolishing all the monuments of idolatry.
 - 14. The King quits *Reading*, and demolishes the fortifications.
 - 15. Robert *Devereux*, Earl of *Essex*, and Sir *William Waller* march towards *Oxford*, with a view to besiege that City.
The King sends a declaration to the foreign Protestant Churches.
 - 16. *London* presents a petition to the Commons for continuing the Committee of both Kingdoms.
 - 22. Colonel *Massy* takes *Beverston* and *Malmsbury*, both in *Wiltshire*.
 - 24. Sir *William Waller* and the Earl of *Essex* become masters of *Abington*.
 - 27. Patrick *Ruthen* the King's General, is created Earl of *Brentford*.
 - 29. The Earl of *Essex* advances nearer to *Oxford*, in order to lay siege to it.

The King withdraws from *Oxford*, with his horse, and a *body of foot*. Ann. C.
June 3.

Edward Mountague, Earl of *Manchester*, joins the Lord *Fairfax*, and the *Scots* that kept *York* blocked up ; whereupon the siege of that City is begun.

The General Assembly of *Scotland* writes a letter to the Churches in the *Netherlands*. 4.

Colonel *Maffy* takes *Tewksbury* in *Gloucestershire*. 5.

The King arrives at *Worcester*. 6.

Robert Devereux, Earl of *Essex*, marches into the West contrary to the Parliament's orders ; and Sir *William Waller* pursues the King.

Prince *Rupert* takes *Liverpool*. 11.

Prince *Maurice* raises the siege of *Lyme*. 15.

The King returns to *Oxford*. 16.

The Princess *Henrietta* is born at *Exeter*. 16.

Weymouth surrenders to the Earl of *Essex*.

Some misunderstanding happens between the Earl of *Essex* and the Parliament. 19.

The Earl of *Essex* becomes master of *Dorchester* ; and *Taunton* is also taken for the Parliament.

The King departs from *Oxford*, after having been joined by his foot, which he left there when he went to *Worcester*, and goes and quarters in *Buckinghamshire*. 21.

Sir *William Waller* attacking the King's forces, is defeated at *Crooked-Bridge*. 29.

An Ordinance is made by both Houses, for excluding from their seats those Members that had deserted the Parliament.

Robert Sidney, Earl of *Leicester*, returns to *London* from *Oxford*, after having been amused two years with a prospect of the Lieutenancy of *Ireland* ; which was given to the Marquis of *Ormond*.

Prince *Rupert* approaches *York*, and raises the siege of that City. 30.
July 1.

The King marches towards the West of *England*.

The battle of *Marston-moor*, in *Yorkshire*, is fought ; in which Prince *Rupert* is defeated, and about 9000 men are killed on both sides. 2.

Immediately after the battle, the Marquis of *Newcastle*, with his two sons, and brother ; Dr. *Bramhall*, Bishop of *London-derry*, and other considerable persons, leave the Kingdom.

The King sends from *Evesham* a message to both Houses to treat of a peace. 4.

- Ann. C.* The Trained-bands of *London* that were in Sir *William Waller's* army return home.
12. Ambassadors sent by the *States of Holland* to offer their mediation between the King and Parliament, present a memorial to both Houses.
- The Queen lands at *Brest*.
15. *York* capitulates ; The same day the King comes to *Bath*.
23. His Majesty makes a speech to the inhabitants of *Somersetshire*, at *King's-moor*, to desire men and money.
26. *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Essex*, enters *Cornwall*.
The King comes to *Exeter*, the same day.
The Earl of *Calendar* coming from *Scotland* with a large reinforcement, blocks up *Newcastle*.
27. Major *Mynnes* is defeated by Colonel *Maffey*, and slain.
- Aug. 1.* The King passes at *Polton-bridge* into *Cornwall* ; and writes a letter to the Earl of *Essex*, to solicit him to embrace his party.
6. *Wareham* in *Dorsetshire* surrenders to the Parliament.
The *Scots* army lays siege to *Newcastle*.
10. *Henry, Lord Wilmot*, is arrested by the King's order ; deprived of his post of Lieutenant-General of the horse ; and withdraws into *France*.
- Sept. 1.* Robert Earl of *Essex* is hard pressed by the King's forces in *Cornwall*, and reduced to great extremity. He contrives a way to save his cavalry : Then he abandons the foot, and retires to *Plymouth*, in a boat.
2. The foot capitulate with the King, and have leave to retire, leaving their arms behind.
- James Graham*, Marquis of *Montrois*, obtains a victory over the *Scottish* Covenanters at *Perth* in *Scotland*.
- The Earl of *Essex* comes to *Portsmouth*, to receive there recruits for his army.
- Charles Lewis*, Elector *Palatine*, comes to *England*, and is complimented by both Houses of Parliament, which allow him a pension of 8000*l.* a year.
8. The King sends a message, from *Tavistock*, to the Parliament, with offers of peace ; but without success.
10. King *Charles* attacks *Plymouth*, and cannot become master of it.
12. The Marquis of *Montrois* obtains a victory at *Aberdeen* in *Scotland*.
17. The King becomes master of *Barnstaple* in *Devonshire*.
18. Some of his forces are worsted at *Montgomery* in *Wales* ; and Sir *William Fairfax*, eldest son to *Ferdinando Lord Fairfax*, is slain there.

Several

Several Ministers of the City of *London* present a petition *Ann. C.* to the House of Commons.

Colonel *Massey* takes *Monmouth*.

The King writes to the Elector *Palatine* to know the reason of his coming to *England*. 26.

King *Charles* marches towards *London*; and publishes a proclamation, in which he requires the inhabitants of the quarters through which he should pass, to prepare themselves with the best arms they could get, and come and join him. 27.

The Lords *Mac-guire* and *Mac-mabon*, two *Irish* Papists *Okt. 11.* concerned in the cruel Rebellion in that Kingdom, are tried and condemned. 30.

The *Scots* summon *Newcastle*, which surrenders to them at discretion. 14.

The King comes to *Salisbury*, and instead of proceeding to *London*, marches to *Oxford*. 23.

The Parliament orders that no quarter should be given to *Irish* soldiers taken in arms against the Parliament. 15.

James Compton, Earl of *Northampton*, relieves *Banbury Castle* that had been besieged ever since *July 19*. 24.

The second battle of *Newbury* is fought, in which the King lost 3000 men, and the Parliament 2500. The King withdraws in the night to *Wallingford*, leaving his heavy cannon and baggage in *Dennington Castle*. 27.

Sir *John Meldrum* takes *Liverpool* for the Parliament. Nov. 1.

The King takes away his cannon and baggage out of *Dennington Castle*, in sight of the enemy, and marches back to *Oxford*, where he arrives *Nov. 21*. 10.

Monmouth is retaken for the King. 19.

Oliver Cromwell accuses *Edward Mountague* Earl of *Manchester*, before the Parliament, of not having done his duty at the battle of *Newbury*; whereupon a design is formed to arrest *Cromwell*.

The Parliament sends to the King propositions for a peace; and accordingly a treaty is appointed at *Uxbridge*. 20.

The Lord *Mac-Mahon* is executed, and the Lord *Mac-guire* the 20th of February following. 22.

The self-denying ordinance is voted for the first time, *Dec. 9.* in the House of Commons.

Ambassadors sent by the *Dutch*, in *January* this year, to offer their mediation between the King and his enemies, have an audience of the Parliament. 10.

The Independents begin now to undermine the power of

- Ann. C.* the Presbyterians: In pursuance of which, a resolution is taken by the Parliament to new-model the army.
6. Sir John Hotham, and his son Captain John Hotham, are tried and condemned. (See above June 22, 1643.)
23. Sir Alexander Carew is beheaded, for attempting to deliver up Plymouth to the King.
26. Roger Lestrange is condemned, for trying to reduce Lynn to the King's obedience; but reprieved.
- 1644-45.* Captain John Hotham is executed, and his father Sir John the next day.
- Jan. I.*
3. An ordinance is passed for taking away the Book of Common Prayer, and for establishing the Directory in its room.
4. The House of Lords consents to the ordinance for the attainder of Archbishop Laud, which had passed in the House of Commons, Nov. 16.
10. The Archbishop is beheaded, and buried in All-hallows-Barking.
13. The House of Lords throws out the self-denying ordinance.
21. The army is new-modelled, and Sir Thomas Fairfax appointed General, instead of the Earl of Essex.
30. Negotiations for a treaty of peace are begun at Uxbridge, and carried on till the 22d of February, when they break off, without success.
- Feb. 2.* James Graham, Marquis of Montrose gains a victory at Innerloch.
19. Sir Thomas Fairfax comes to the House of Commons, and is complimented by the Speaker.
- 1645.* Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, Basil Fielding, Earl of Reg. 21. Denbigh, and Edward Mountague, Earl of Manchester, surrender their Commissions.
- April 2.
3. The Lords pass the self-denying ordinance.
- Sir Thomas Fairfax new-models the army.
4. The Marquis of Montrose is defeated at Dundee.
11. An ordinance is passed for exempting the University of Cambridge from taxes.
22. Colonel Maffey's forces are totally routed by Prince Rupert at Ledbury in Herefordshire.
24. Oliver Cromwell defeats a brigade of the King's horse at Ifflip-Bridge.
- Colonel Windebank is shot by the King's order, for surrendering Blechington-House upon the first summons.
26. The Parliament makes an ordinance, That no person be permitted to preach who is not ordained a Minister either in this or some other Reformed Church, &c. Sir

- Sir *Thomas Fairfax* marches towards the West, to relieve *Taunton*, in *Somersetshire*. *Ann. C.* 28.
- But receiving an order to march back, he sends Colonel *May 4.* *Welden* with some troops, to the relief of *Taunton*.
- Cromwell* is repulsed in an assault upon *Farrington*. 6.
- The King takes the field, and marches to the relief of *Chester*, which was besieged by Sir *William Brereton*. 7.
- The siege of *Taunton* is raised by *Welden*. 12.
- At the King's approach the siege of *Chester* is raised; whereupon his Majesty marches back to *Leicester*. 17.
- General *Fairfax* receives orders to go and besiege *Oxford*; he approaches that city, and begins the siege. 22.
- The King takes *Leicester* by storm. 30.
- Colonel *Welden* is besieged in *Taunton*.
- King *Charles* marches to *Harborough* in *Leicestershire*, and *June 4.* sends for General *Goring* to come and join him, but his letter is intercepted.
- General *Fairfax* raises the siege of *Oxford*, to go and meet the King; he is repulsed in an assault upon *Borstal-House* in *Buckinghamshire*. 5.
- Oliver Cromwell* is made Commander of the Horse, notwithstanding the self-denying ordinance.
- The battle of *Naseby* in *Northamptonshire* is fought, in which the King is entirely routed, and loses all his artillery and baggage, and even his cabinet of papers. After this defeat, the King retires into *Wales*, and Prince *Rupert* to *Bristol*. 14.
- Leicester* surrenders to General *Fairfax*. 18.
- He marches into the Western parts, and relieves *Taunton*, &c. 20.
- A remonstrance from the Kirk of *Scotland* is presented to the King at *Hereford*. 25.
- The Scots become masters of *Carlisle*. 28.
- The Marquis of *Montrose* obtains a victory at *Alford*; *July 2.* and another more considerable at *Kilsyth*, on the 17th of *August*.
- General *Fairfax* comes to *Dorchester* in *Dorsetshire*, and confers with the Club-men. 3.
- Sligo* in *Ireland* is besieged, and the Archbishop of *Tuam* happens to be killed there: In his pockets are found copies of the full powers granted by King *Charles* for treating with the *Irish Rebels*. 7.
- An ordinance is made by the Parliament, for raising 10,000*l.* for the redemption of the captives in *Algiers*. 8.

- Ann. C.* Sir Thomas Fairfax defeats General Goring at *Longport* in *Somersetshire*.
10. *Bridgewater* is stormed by the Parliament's forces.
20. *Pontefract* and *Scarborough* in *Yorkshire* are taken for the Parliament.
- 21, 25. *Bridgewater* in *Somersetshire* is also taken:
29. As is likewise *Bath*.
31. The *Scots* lay siege to *Hereford*.
- Aug. 5.* The Parliament publishes a declaration concerning the ambassy of the *States* of the *United Provinces* to *England*.
6. Cromwell puts 4000 Club men to rout.
7. The Commons vote to send propositions for peace to the King.
- Edward Somerset, Earl of Glamorgan, concludes a treaty with the Confederate Irish Catholics, having full powers from the King for that purpose.
15. *Sherburn*, in *Dorsetshire*, surrenders to the Parliament.
23. An ordinance is passed by the Parliament, for the more effectual putting in execution the *Directory*.
23. Sir Thomas Fairfax besieges *Bristol*, which was defended by Prince Rupert.
24. The King takes *Huntingdon*, and then marches to *Oxford*.
27. Edward, Lord Littleton, Keeper of the Great Seal, dies there.
31. The King marches from *Oxford* to *Campden*.
- Sep. 6.* Lieutenant-General David Leslie goes into *Scotland*, with a party of horse and dragoons, to oppose the Earl of Montrose.
13. The Marquis of Montrose is defeated at *Philiphaugh*, and withdraws into the *Highlands*.
- Several Royalists are executed at *Edinburgh*.
- Prince Rupert surrenders *Bristol*; at which the King is so angry, that he orders him to depart the Kingdom, and revokes all his commissions.
15. The Parliament publishes a second declaration concerning the ambassy from the *States* of the *United Provinces*.
- The *Scots* raise the siege of *Hereford*, where the King advances, and continues there till September 20.
23. Oliver Cromwell becomes master of the *Devizes*.
24. The King is defeated near *Chester*, and Bernard Stewart, Earl of *Lichfield*, with other officers of quality, slain. After this defeat, the King retires to *Denbigh Castle* in *Wales*; from whence, after some time, he comes to *Newark*.
26. Cromwell takes *Berkley Castle*, in *Gloucestershire*.
28. An ordinance is made for settling 10,000*l.* a year on the Earl of *Essex*. Cromwell

Cromwell becomes master of <i>Winchester</i> City and Castle.	<i>Ann. C.</i>
<i>Chepstow</i> Castle, in <i>Monmouthshire</i> , is taken by Colonel <i>Morgan</i> .	<i>Oct. 5.</i>
George, Lord <i>Digby</i> , is routed at <i>Sherbourn</i> , by Colonel <i>Copby</i> : He is defeated a second time in <i>Cumberland</i> , and escapes into <i>Ireland</i> .	<i>10.</i>
<i>Chester</i> is besieged by the Parliament's forces.	
<i>Basing</i> Castle is taken by storm, after having withstood several sieges.	<i>14.</i>
General <i>Fairfax</i> takes <i>Tiverton</i> .	<i>19.</i>
<i>John Baptist Rinuccini</i> , the Pope's Nuncio, comes into <i>Ireland</i> .	<i>22.</i>
Sir <i>William Vaughan</i> is defeated at <i>Denbigh</i> .	
The <i>Scots</i> lay siege to <i>Newark</i> .	
Prince <i>Rupert</i> leaves the Kingdom.	<i>Novemb.</i>
The King returns safe to <i>Oxford</i> .	<i>6.</i>
From thence, his Majesty sends a message to the Parliament, to propose a peace.	<i>Dec. 5.</i>
<i>Hereford</i> is taken by surprize for the Parliament.	
Charles, Prince of <i>Wales</i> , assembles all the King's forces in the West, with the Militia of <i>Cornwall</i> , and forms an army.	
The King sends a second message about a peace;	<i>15.</i>
And a third, wherein he offers to come personally to <i>London</i> , for concluding a peace.	<i>26.</i>
The Parliament returns an answer to the two first messages.	
The King sends a fourth message to the two Houses;	<i>29.</i>
The Supreme Council of Papists in <i>Ireland</i> sends a letter of thanks to the Pope, for sending the Nuncio.	<i>1645-46.</i>
General <i>Fairfax</i> takes a brigade of horse at <i>Bovey-Tracy</i> , in <i>Devonshire</i> , belonging to the Prince of <i>Wales</i> .	<i>Jan. 7.</i>
The Parliament sends an answer to the King's messages of the 26th and 29th of December.	<i>9.</i>
The King sends a fifth message to both Houses,	<i>13.</i>
And an answer to the Parliament's letter of the 13th.	<i>15.</i>
Sir <i>Thomas Fairfax</i> takes <i>Dartmouth</i> by storm.	<i>17.</i>
The Parliament appoints <i>Philip Sidney</i> , Lord <i>Lisle</i> , Chief Governor of <i>Ireland</i> .	<i>18.</i>
The King makes a reply to the answer of the two Houses.	<i>21.</i>
<i>Exeter</i> is blocked up by <i>Fairfax</i> .	<i>24.</i>
The King sends a sixth message to the Parliament.	<i>27.</i>
A battle is fought at <i>Torrington</i> , where <i>Ralph, Lord Hopton</i> , is defeated by Sir <i>Thomas Fairfax</i> .	<i>29.</i>
	<i>Both</i>

- Ann. C.* Both Houses of Parliament make an ordinance for chusing Ruling-Elders in every Parish.
20. General Fairfax marches into Cornwall; whereupon, the Prince of Wales retires into Scilly,
26. The King sends a seventh message about a peace.
- Mar. 14.* Ralph, Lord Hopton, capitulates with General Fairfax; and his army is disbanded.
23. The King sends an eighth message concerning a peace.
1646. Votes are passed by the Parliament, on a rumour of the King's intending to come privately to London: And an order is made for all those that had borne arms against the Parliament, to depart from London.
- Reg. 22.* Montreuil is sent by the Court of France, to procure a private agreement between King Charles and the Scots.
- April 1.* Dennington Castle, in Berkshire, is taken by the Parliament.
3. An ordinance is made for establishing a Court-Martial.
9. Exeter surrenders to Fairfax.
12. Barnstable in Devonshire is taken.
- The Parliament causes the *Preface* to the book of the *Scotch Papers* to be burnt by the common hangman.
16. Charles, Prince of Wales, embarks from Scilly, and lands the next day at Jersey, from whence he passes into France.
17. Both Houses put out a declaration, in which they manifest their intentions to maintain the antient and fundamental Government of the Kingdom, according to the covenant and treaties.
18. General Fairfax marches towards Oxford.
26. Woodstock surrenders to the Parliament.
- Bridgnorth, in Shropshire, is likewise taken.
27. The King departs privately from Oxford, for fear he should be hemmed in there.
- John Williams, Archbishop of York, sides with the Parliament.
- May 1.* Sir Thomas Fairfax comes before Oxford.
4. Both Houses make an order for discovering the King, if he was in London, upon pain of death.
5. King Charles goes and puts himself into the hands of the Scotch army, then before Newark, in Nottinghamshire.
6. He orders Newark to be surrendered up to the Commissioners of the Parliament.
- Banbury is taken by the Parliament's troops.
7. The Scots army marches northwards, and comes to Newcastle, carrying the King along with them: He arrives there the 13th.

From thence his Majesty sends a message to both Houses, *Ann. C.*
containing offers for an accommodation. 18.

By another message, he presses the two Houses to send *June 10.*
their propositions for peace, that he might give them
all just satisfaction; and desires again the liberty to come
to *London*, and treat in person.

He sends orders to *James Butler, Marquis of Ormond, June 11.*
to break off the treaty with the *Scots*.

Major-General *Monroe*, Commander of the *Scotch* forces
in *Ireland*, is defeated at *Benburgh*.

Oxford capitulates, and surrenders upon articles. 20, 24.

The propositions for peace, that were to be sent to
the King, are approved by both Houses. 27.

The *Scotch* army publishes a proclamation, to justify their
proceedings, with regard to the King's coming to take
refuge among them. 29.

Charles, Prince of Wales, goes from *Jersey* into *France*. July 3.

The Commons vote, that *England* had no further need
of the *Scots* army. 6.

Prince Rupert embarks for *France*, and *Prince Maurice* 15.
for the *Hague*.

Both Houses give audience to the President *de Believre*, 17.
Ambassador from *France*.

Worcester is taken; and so is also *Wallingford*. 19.

The Parliament's Commissioners present the propositions
for peace to the King at *Newcastle*. 22.

Prince James, Duke of York, is conducted to *St. James's*. 24.

The Princess *Henrietta* is carried over into *France*. 28.

A peace is proclaimed between King *Charles* and the *Irish Rebels*. July 30.

The King returns only a general answer to the Parliament's Aug. 1.
propositions.

Conway in North-Wales is taken for the Parliament. 9.

The Parliament orders the Great Seal that was brought
from *Oxford* to be broken. 11.

Part of the Popish Clergy in *Ireland* publishes a declaration
against the peace concluded by the Council of *Kilkenny*
with the Marquis of *Ormond*. 12.

The Pope's Nuncio is declared supreme Commander of
that party of Clergy.

Ragland Castle in *Wales* surrenders to the Parliament; as
doth also *Pendennis Castle* in *Cornwall*. 17.

Differences happen between the Parliament and the *Scots*
Commissioners, about the arrears due to the *Scotch* army;
at length, the Parliament agrees to allow them four hundred
thousand pounds. Robert 27.

Ann. C. Robert Devereux Earl of Essex dies, and was buried,
Sept. 14. October 22.

18. It is voted, that the King's person should be disposed of, as both Houses of Parliament should think fit.

Oct. 1. Conferences pass between the Parliament's and the Scots Commissioners, about the manner how to dispose of the King's person.

9. An ordinance is made by the Parliament for selling the Bishops lands, and applying the money towards the payment of the public debts: And at the same time, the whole order of Archbishops and Bishops is abolished.

Nov. 13. George Monk a prisoner in the Tower, takes the Covenant, and embraces the Parliament's party.

Dec. 16. It is debated in the Parliament of Scotland, what should be done with the King's person; and upon the whole, they agree, not to admit him into Scotland, unless he would take the Covenant, &c.

20. The King hearing of that, sends a message to both Houses at Westminster, to desire again to come to London, or any of his houses thereabouts.

22. The Lords vote, that he might come to Newmarket; but the Commons vote Holmby-house in Northamptonshire was the fittest place; to which the Lords consent.

From October to February 1646-7, negotiations passed between James Butler Marquis of Ormond, and the Parliament's Commissioners, for getting Dublin delivered up by the Marquis to the Parliament; but all to no purpose.

1646-7. A Committee of both Houses is appointed to go down Jan. 5. and receive the King from the Scots.

The Parliament of Scotland notifies in a declaration to that of England, that they consented the King should be delivered up to them, and conducted to Holmby-house.

30. King Charles is accordingly delivered up to the Commissioners of the Parliament of England; the Scots set out the same day from Newcastle to return to Scotland.

Feb. 16. The King arrives at Holmby.

Reg. 23. Some officers of the army prepare a petition to be presented to the General, which is by the Commons voted Feb. 1647. seditious, and the officers have orders to suppress it.

Mar. 30. April 1. Differences begin to arise between the Parliament and the army, the former consisting chiefly of Presbyterians, and the latter of Independents.

2. Major General Philip Skippon is appointed Commander of the army that was to go into Ireland.

The Parliament's design, was to pick out of the whole army

army a certain number of officers and of soldiers, both *Ann. C.*
horse and foot; out of which an army was to be formed
for the service of *Ireland*, and the garrisons in *England*
supplied; and then to disband the rest of the army. But
the army unwilling to be disbanded, sought for occasions
of quarrelling with the Parliament, in order to come either
to an open rupture, or to procure an accommodation, by
which it should be left upon the ancient establishment.

The House of Commons nominates the regiments of
horse that were to be continued, at which the rest are
dissatisfied.

Both Houses agree to augment the pay of the officers
and soldiers that should serve in *Ireland*.

Commissioners are appointed by the Parliament, to go
and make propositions to the army about the service in that
Kingdom.

The Commissioners assemble the officers together at *Saffron-Walden*. Several engage to serve in *Ireland*; others,
and much the greater number, refuse to go thither, unless
they had for Commanders, *Fairfax*, *Cromwell*, and *Skippon*,
the two former of which were disagreeable to the Com-
mons.

Some *Scottish* Commissioners press the King to take the
Covenant.

Great opposition is found in the army about serving in
Ireland.

The Commons vote to disband the army, and to give
the soldiers six weeks pay, when dismissed.

One hundred and fifty-one officers present a seditious de-
claration to the House of Commons, in their own vin-
dication.

Major General *Skippon* presents also to that House a let-
ter from eight regiments of horse, who refused to serve in
Ireland; whereupon *Skippon*, *Cromwell*, *Ireton*, and *Fleetwood*
are sent to the army to satisfy them.

Philip Sidney Lord Lisle returns from *Ireland*.

May 1.

An ordinance is made for changing the officers of the
Militia of *London*.

4.

The army makes great opposition to the Parliament's or-
ders and designs, about disbanding and going into *Ireland*.

8.

The University of *Oxford* is visited by Commissioners ap-
pointed by the Parliament; and such of its Members as
refused to take the Covenant, &c. are expelled.

14.

The House of Commons offers six weeks p. y extraordina-
ry, to the officers and soldiers that would go into *Ireland*;
and

Ann. C. and orders eight weeks pay in all to those that should be disbanded.

The Council of Agitators is set up.

18. The King returns an answer to the propositions sent to him at *Newcastle*, with some restrictions.

The Commons vote that all the forces that would not engage to serve in *Ireland* should be cashiered.

21. An ordinance is made for granting an indemnity to the army.

25. And another ordinance for disbanding the army separately, and in different bodies.

29. The army is not satisfied with the terms on which it was to be disbanded ; and the General contracts the quarters of the army in order to break the Parliament's measures.

The division between the Parliament and the army increasing, the Parliament recalls their Commissioners ; and endeavours to sow dissension in the army.

June 1. The Commons order a month's pay to those forces that

3. would quit their regiments, and serve in *Ireland* ; and pass some votes for satisfying the army ; but these latter were resolved not to be satisfied.

4. The King is carried away by force from *Holmby*, by *Cornet Joyce*, with a detachment of 500 horse.

5. The several regiments present a petition to General *Fairfax*, against their being disbanded ; and also sign an engagement to keep themselves from being disbanded.

The Parliament votes, that the soldiers should have their full pay upon disbanding.

6. A petition is presented from the County of *Essex* to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, desiring him not to suffer the army to be disbanded, till the Kingdom was freed from the vassalage of the Parliament.

7. New Commissioners are sent to the army to appease it.

8. The city of *London* petitions the Parliament for leave to raise horses for their own defence ; an ordinance is accordingly made for that purpose.

The Parliament revokes the declaration of the 30th of *March*, concerning the first petition of the army's officers.

Festivals are abolished.

The House of Commons gets a regiment of the Militia of *London* for a guard.

10. They confirm and renew the self-denying ordinance, and declare void all places held by members of Parliament.

The King is conducted to *Newmarket*.

The

The army marches towards *London*, and advances as far *Ann. C.*
as *St. Albans*. *June 11.*

An order is made for raising the trained bands, for the defence of the Parliament and City of *London*.

Both Houses write to the General, desiring that the army might not come within 25 miles of the City.

The Parliament orders, that 10,000*l.* should be paid to such officers and soldiers, as should leave the army and engage in the service of *Ireland*; in order to sow dissensions in the army.

Petitions from *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* are presented to General *Fairfax*, against the pretended tyranny of the Parliament.

12.

A month's pay is ordered to the army, provided they did not draw their quarters nearer *London* than twenty miles.

13.

The army publishes a representation or manifesto, in which they desire that the Parliament might be purged; would fix a time for their dissolution, &c.

14.

A petition is presented from *Buckinghamshire* to the General, against disbanding the army.

15.

The army accuses eleven Members of the House of Commons of treason; and demand, the next day, that they might be suspended from sitting in the House.

16.

The Parliament repeals the order for the raising of forces, and arming the Militia of *London*.

The Marquis of *Ormond* surrenders *Dublin* and *Drogheda* to the Parliament, rather than see them fall into the hands of the *Irish* Rebels.

A petition from several inhabitants of *Hertfordshire* is presented to General *Fairfax*, against disbanding the army.

Glamorganshire sends Deputies to *London* to complain of the tyranny and oppression of the Parliament, and their Committees.

An insurrection happens in *Glamorganshire*.

The army sends up a remonstrance to the Parliament, wherein they complain, of not having received an answer about the eleven Members; that the King was invited to come to *Richmond-House*, &c.

23.

The Commons refuse to suspend the eleven impeached Members from sitting in the House; but devise this expedient, That those Members should desire leave to absent themselves.

24.

The army advances towards *London*, as far as *Uxbridge*, and deliver their reasons against the eleven Members.

25.

The

Ann. C. The Parliament passes some votes in order to satisfy the army ; whereupon, the army removes at a further distance from *London*, and the head quarters were at *High-Wickham*.

July 1. 30. They disown the having made any private treaty with the King.

A plot is formed at *London* to compel both Houses vigorously to oppose the army ; and the plotters send private Agents to *Scotland* for assistance.

2. To forward the business, a petition is presented by the Common-Council to the Parliament, against the army, &c.

The Parliament's Commissioners are empowered to treat with the army.

The King is carried to *Windfor*.

2. The treaty between the Parliament's Commissioners and the Army begins.

The army sends to the House of Commons a particular charge against the eleven Members.

13. The Apprentices in *London* petition the Parliament, that the Presbyterian Government may be firmly established.

14. Another petition, of a different nature, is presented by Apprentices of a contrary party.

15. The army in the North publishes a declaration of their free consent and coherence with the army under the command of General *Fairfax*.

The King is permitted to see his children at *Caverham*.

20. The eleven accused Members obtain leave to withdraw for six months, and even to go beyond sea.

23. The army demands, that a declaration should be published against the bringing in of foreign forces ; that the Committee of the Militia of *London* should be restored again, as it was before the 4th of *May*, &c. An ordinance is accordingly made for that purpose.

24. An engagement against the army is signed by great numbers of persons in *London*, though the Parliament forbids the signing of it.

Two petitions are presented to the Common-Council of *London*, for re-establishing the Militia, according to the ordinance of *May 4* ; and accordingly they petition the Parliament for that purpose.

26. Great multitudes of young men and apprentices flock to *Westminster* ; by whom the Parliament is compelled to revoke the ordinance of *July 23*, concerning the Militia, the declaration against the solemn engagement, and to consent to the King's coming to *London*.

The army advances towards the City of *London*, which puts itself in a posture of defence. General

General Fairfax sends a letter to the Common-Council *Ann. C.*
of *London*, shewing his dislike of their petition. 28.

The two Speakers (the Earl of *Manchester*, and *William Lenthall*, Esq;) with several Members of both Houses, having absented themselves, and repaired to the army, new Speakers are chosen, *viz.* *William, Lord Grey*, of *Warke*, and *Henry Pelham*, Esq;

The Commons vote, that the King should come to *London*; that the Militia of the City should have power to raise such forces as they should think fit for their defence; and that they should chuse a Commander; accordingly, they make choice of Major-General *Maffey*.

The City publishes an apology, or manifesto; and orders the General to remove his army further from *London*; they vote also to receive the eleven accused Members.

Maffey, Waller, and *Poyntz*, form regiments and companies for the defence of the City and Parliament; in the mean time, the army continue their march to the general rendezvous at *Hounslow-Heath*.

The General delivers to the Parliament's Commissioners *Aug. 1.* proposals to be negotiated between the Parliament and Army, for settling the peace of the Kingdom; but the troubles hinder these proposals from being presented.

Both Houses invite the King to come to *London*. 2.

The army comes to *Colebrook* in *Buckinghamshire*.

The City of *London* sends a letter to the General, in order to pacify him.

The army publishes a manifesto, containing the reasons of their marching to *London*. They come to *Hounslow*. 3.

The City of *London* submits to General Fairfax, and delivers to him all the forts on the west-side of the City.

The King denies his having had any hand in the plots against the army.

The army advances as far as *HammerSmith*.

General Fairfax comes to *London*, and restores the two Speakers [*Edward Mountague*, Earl of *Manchester*, and *William Lenthall*, Esq.] with sixty-six Members, that had absented themselves. He receives the thanks of both Houses.

From this day the Parliament was entirely governed by the army.

Colonel *Jones* gets a great victory over the *Irish Rebels* near *Trym*. 8.

An ordinance is passed for ratifying and approving what the army had done. 14.

Ann. C. General Fairfax is made Constable of the Tower.

The authors of the tumult on *July 26*, are proceeded against.

15. The King comes to *Oatlands*, in *Surrey*: He is flattered by the army, and imagines he could manage the Presbyterians and Independents as he pleased; but he is over-reached by *Cromwell*.

The army presents a remonstrance, for purging the Parliament of its corrupt Members.

21. An ordinance is passed, for annulling all the acts made by the Parliament, from the 26th of *July*, to the 6th of *August*.

24. The King is conducted to *Hampton-Court*, and neglected by the army, after they had him in their power: During his confinement there, the *Scotch* Commissioners treat with him.

26. The Commons agree to the army's proposals for a peace.

28. The army offers 6000 foot, 4000 horse, and 500 dragoons, for the service of *Ireland*.

Sept. 2. An ordinance is made for settling the Militia of *London*, on the foot it was put upon by the ordinance of the 4th of *May*.

6. The *Scots* Commissioners refuse their concurrence to the army's propositions for peace.

Colonel *Robert Hammond* is made Governor of the Isle of *Wight*.

The *Scots* Commissioners give their concurrence to the propositions of peace to be sent to the King, but protest against some of the articles.

Seven Lords, and some Members of the House of Commons, are accused of High-treason, for being concerned in the tumult of the 26th of *July*.

8. The army's propositions for peace are presented to the King: His Majesty returns an ambiguous answer to them.

12. The Commons resolve to press his Majesty once more to give his assent to them.

23. Sir *John Gayre*, Lord-Mayor of *London*, is committed to the Tower, on account of the tumult of the 26th of *July*.

Oct. 18. The House of Commons sends up to the Lords 16 propositions to be presented to the King.

Monsieur *de Believre* takes his audience of leave of the King and the Parliament.

The Agitators of five regiments of horse present proposals to General Fairfax. *Ann. C.*

The same regiments present other proposals, as do also Nov. 1.
four regiments more, and seven regiments of foot. Those
proposals are rejected by the Council of war. *Nov. 9.*

The King escapes out of *Hampton-Court*, and withdraws 11.
into the Isle of *Wight*.

The Lord Inchiquin obtains a victory in *Ireland* over the
Irish Rebels. *11.*

The King writes a letter to both Houses, to demand a
personal treaty. *16.*

The Lords propose to the Commons, to treat personally
with the King, upon condition he would give his assent to
four preliminary bills. *26.*

The Commons agree to it. *27.*

The Common-Council of *London* presents a petition to Dec. 1.
both Houses, in which they acknowledge the Parliament to
be the Supreme Power.

The representation of the army is presented to the Par- 7.
liament.

The King sends a second message to both Houses, for a
personal treaty. *9.*

Commissioners are appointed to carry the four bills to 14.
the King.

An ordinance is made about the election of Common- 17.
Council-Men in *London*.

The *Scotch* Commissioners present to both Houses a de-
claration, complaining, that the Parliament violated the
covenant in labouring for peace, without the concurrence
of *Scotland*. *20.*

The same Commissioners protest against the sending the
four bills to the King, and are for treating with him with-
out them : But, notwithstanding their opposition, the four
bills are presented to the King. *24.*

The *Scotch* Commissioners present to the King a declara-
tion of their dissent to the bills, and propositions, &c. *25.*

A riot happens at *Canterbury*, about keeping of *Chris-
mas-day*.

A private treaty is concluded between the King and the 26.
Scotch Commissioners.

Captain Burley forms a plot to rescue the King out of
his confinement in *Carisbrook Castle*. *30.*

General Fairfax gives orders to Colonel Hammond to
keep a strict guard upon the King ; which the House of
Commons approves of.

Ann. C. The Parliament's Commissioners come back with the King's answer, highly dissatisfied.

The army declares, they would live and die with the Parliament.

From the year 1641, to 1647, there was levied by the Parliament in money, and money-worth, above forty millions.

1647-48. *Jan. 3.* The House of Commons, upon hearing the King's answer read, votes, That no more addresses should be made to the King, nor messages received from him.

11. The army sends a declaration to the House of Commons, in which they promise to adhere to the Parliament, against the King.

15. The Lords concur with the Commons vote, of presenting no more addresses to the King.

16. One regiment of horse, and another of foot, are quartered at *Whitehall*, and the *Meuse*, to be a guard to the Parliament.

17. The army notifies, in a declaration, that they had no design to overthrow the dignity of the Peers, as some affirmed.

19. The House of Lords releases six of the imprisoned Peers, and draws up a declaration upon that subject.

A plot is formed for seizing *Gloucester*.

24. Captain *Burley*, who had endeavoured to stir up an insurrection, in order to rescue the King, is condemned to die, and executed *February 10.*

The *Scotch* Commissioners depart from *London*.

27. The eleven impeached Members are declared incapable of ever sitting in the present Parliament.

The Committee of Estates in *Scotland* is called for the 6th of February, and a Parliament for the 10th of March; and a resolution is taken, to levy an army in that Kingdom for King *Charles's* service.

28. The Lord-Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, and the seven Lords, are ordered to be prosecuted with the utmost rigour, for being concerned in the tumult of the 26th of July.

31. Both Houses pass an ordinance for dividing the several Counties into Classical Presbyteries.

Feb. 2. The House of Commons fixes the number of the King's Household servants to thirty.

The Committee of Estates in *Scotland* meets.

Commissioners from the Parliament of *England* are sent to *Edinburgh*.

The

The Committee of the General Assembly of the Kirk *Ann. C.*
meets.

The three Colonels, *Langhorne, Powell, and Poyer*, who
had hitherto served the Parliament in *Wales*, resolve to de-
clare for the King.

Colonel *Poyer*, who was Governor of *Penbroke Castle*, re- *March 2.*
fuses to deliver it up to Adjutant-General *Fleming*, though
he had orders for it from General *Fairfax*.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets.

The House of Commons orders Colonel *Poyer* to be de-
clared a traitor, if he did not surrender the Castle aforesaid.

Both Houses publish a declaration, to vindicate their con-
duct with respect to *Scotland*.

Captain *Wogan* withdraws into *Scotland* with a company
of horse, that was to have been disbanded.

Ferdinando Lord Fairfax, the General's father, dies; by
whose death the General becomes a Lord.

The House of Commons receives information of a design
formed by the Royal party to seize *Berwick*.

Colonel *Langhorn* joins Colonel *Poyer* in *Penbrokeshire*; *1648.*
whereupon an insurrection breaks out in *Wales*. *Reg. 24.*

The Commissioners of the Kirk of *Scotland* oppose the
project of levying an army against the Parliament of *Eng-*
land, for which a Committee was appointed, called the
Committee of Danger.

The *Committee of Danger* returns answers to the Com-
missioners of the Kirk's demands.

Eighteen Lords, and forty other Members of the Parlia-
ment of *Scotland*, enter a protestation against the design
of levying an army.

The troubles in *Wales* increase; and at length all *South-* *April 9.*
Wales declares for the King.

A tumult happens in *London*, occasioned by some of the
King's friends.

The Parliament of *Scotland* resolves to raise an army.

Murrough O'Brien, Lord Inchiquin in *Ireland*, embraces
the King's party.

The visitation of the University of *Oxford* began about
this time, when many Masters and Fellows of Colleges were
ejected, and others put into their places.

James Duke of York escapes from St. *James's* palace, and
withdraws into *Holland*.

The Parliament of *Scotland* prepares for war against *Eng-*
land.

4.

7.

11.

13.

20.

1648.

Reg. 24.

31.

11.

21.

- Ann. C.* One *John Everard* gives information of a plot of the army's, to disarm and plunder *London*.
23. Prince *Philip* obtains a pass, to come to *England* to visit his brother *Charles the Elector Palatine*.
25. Upon the Common-Council's petition, the Parliament restores the chains belonging to the City of *London*, and permits the Common-Council to appoint *Philip Skippon Major-General* within the lines of communication.
27. The Commons vote, That the Government of the Kingdom should be still by King, Lords, and Commons.
28. Adjutant-General *Fleming* is defeated by Colonel *Poyer* in *Wales*.
- May 1.* A very severe ordinance against blasphemy and heresy passes both Houses.
Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* seizes *Berwick*.
3. The Parliament of *Scotland* sends some demands to the Commons of *England* about the King.
4. A petition is presented to both Houses from the County of *Essex*, for a personal treaty with the King.
5. The Parliament declares, that their intention was to maintain the covenant, and the treaties between both Kingdoms, &c.
- Carlisle* is seized by Sir *Philip Musgrave*.
6. The City of *London* is allowed to nominate a Committee for the disposal of the Militia, &c.
- The Parliament desires General *Fairfax* to march towards the North, but he sends *Cromwell* in his room, and stays himself near *London*.
- Chepstow Castle* is surprized for the King.
13. The army begins to march towards the North.
- The Commissioners of the Kirk of *Scotland* declare so strenuously against the war, that the Parliament is obliged to publish a declaration with regard to the covenant, to satisfy them.
16. The inhabitants of *Surrey* present a petition in behalf of the King.
18. Prince *Philip*, the Elector *Palatine*'s son, obtains leave to raise a thousand foot for the service of *Venice*.
20. The Parliament and the City of *London* enter into a strict union together.
- An army is raised in *Scotland*.
From this time the Parliament began to rescue itself from the slavery it was kept in by the army, foreseeing the latter would be obliged to march, either towards the North, or into *Wales*.

The Recorder, Serjeant *Glynne*, and the Aldermen of *Ann. C.*
the City of *London*, are discharged from their imprisonment
in the *Tower*, at the request of the Lord-Mayor and Com-
mon-Council : 23.

And, upon their petition, the House of Commons vote
to treat with the King upon his assenting to three bills. 24.

The people rise in *Kent*, in favour of the King, at the
instigation of Mr. *Hales* and *Roger Lestrange*, and being
headed by *George Goring* Earl of *Norwich*, and Sir *William*
Waller, advance towards *Blackheath*.

Chepstow Castle is retaken for the Parliament.

May 25.

Eight men of war, under the command of Vice-Admiral *Rainsborough*, revolt against the Parliament, and de-
claring for the King, sail to the *Britt.* 25.

General *Fairfax* marches into *Kent*; whereupon the re-
volters retire, some to *Rochester*, and others to *Maidstone*:
The latter being defeated by *Fairfax*, the former come to
Blackheath; but *London* not declaring for them, as they ex-
pected, they disperse. And about 600 crossing the *Thames*
at *Greenwich*, pass into *Essex* with the Earl of *Norwich*. 29.

The Commons order that the eleven impeached Mem- *June 3.*
bers should be fully discharged.

The Earl of *Norwich* is declared a Rebel.

5.

Pontefract Castle is surprized for the King.

6.

The seven impeached Lords are discharged.

Oliver Cromwell besieges *Penbroke* Castle in *Wales*.

7.

An insurrection happens in *Lincolnshire*.

George Goring, Earl of *Norwich*, is joined in *Essex*, by
great numbers of Royalists assembled together, and head-
ed by *Arthur Lord Capel*, *Sir Charles Lucas*, *Sir George*
Lisle, *Sir Bernard Gascoign*, *Sir William Compton*, &c.

8.

Robert Rich, Earl of *Warwick*, prepares a fleet, in order
to reduce the eight ships above-mentioned to obedience.

9.

General *Fairfax* having raised the siege of *Dover*, and
quelled the insurrection in *Kent*, marches into *Essex*, and
drives the Royalists before him. 10.

10.

They go and shut themselves up into *Colchester*, where
they are blocked up a long while by him.

11.

The Parliament names a Committee of both Houses, to
appoint the manner and place of treating with the King.

12.

The Lord-Mayor and Aldermen of *London* present a pe-
tition to both Houses, for a personal treaty with the King.

13.

The Lords pass some votes; for revoking the vote of the
3d of *June*, forbidding any addresses to or from his Ma-
jesty; that the propositions sent into *Scotland* should not be
infisted

Ann. C. insisted upon; and that his Majesty be removed to some of his houses within ten miles of *London*.

July 3. It is resolved by the Commons, that the King should subscribe the three bills, before a treaty is set on foot.

George Villiers Duke of Buckingham, Henry Rich Earl of Holland, and Henry Mordaunt Earl of Peterborough, take up arms for the King, and assemble about 500 horse at *Kingston upon Thames*.

6. From thence they write to the Lord-Mayor and Common-Council of *London*, desiring their assistance; and declaring, their intention was to release his Majesty, &c.

Charles, Prince of Wales, comes from *Paris* to the eight men of war above-mentioned, then at *Helvoet-Sluys*, and sends back to the *Hague* his brother *James Duke of York*, who had been received on board as Admiral.

7. The three Lords [mentioned just above] are declared Traitors by the Parliament, and defeated by Colonel *Levesey* at *Kingston*; from whence they retire to *St. Albans*.

8. The Lords desire the Commons not to insist upon the three bills, &c.

9. The *Scots* army enters *England*, commanded by *James Duke of Hamilton*.

10. *George Duke of Buckingham, and Henry Earl of Holland*, are entirely routed at *St. Neot's in Huntingdonshire*, by Colonel *Scroop*, and the Earl of *Holland* taken prisoner.

11. A conference passes between a Committee of both Houses, and a Committee of the Common-Council of *London*, about treating with his Majesty.

The Common-Council of *London* gets an engagement signed by the inhabitants, in order to force the Parliament to a personal treaty with the King.

12. *Penroke Castle* surrenders, and *Oliver Cromwell* begins his march towards the North.

13. The Parliament declares the *Scotch* army enemies of the Kingdom.

The Commons insist upon the three bills.

14. The inhabitants of *Westminster* present a petition for a personal treaty.

15. The Commons order *Skippen* privately to lift soldiers, for fear the mob should attempt to force them to a compliance with the Lords: The Lord-Mayor complains of it in vain.

16. The differences between the two Houses concerning the three bills continue.

17. *Charles Prince of Wales* comes before *Yarmouth*, with a design

design to seize that place : He publishes a declaration, but *Ann. C.*
is refused admittance into *Yarmouth*. 27.

The Commons give up at length the three bills ; where-
upon, both Houses agree upon entering into a personal
treaty with the King, at *Carisbrooke Castle* in the Isle of
Wight. 28.

The Prince of *Wales* comes into the *Thames*, and seizes 29.
some ships. Aug. 2.

Commissioners are sent to the King, to agree upon the
place for the treaty.

Major *Robert Huntington* presents a memorial to the
House of Lords against *Oliver Cromwell*.

The Prince of *Wales* writes to the City of *London* about
some ships he had taken.

He writes to the House of Peers about the treaty with 8.
the King.

The Common-Council of *London* petitions, that the
King should be set at liberty during the treaty.

The Lords order Major *Huntington* protection.

The King chuses *Newport*, in the Isle of *Wight*, for the 10.
place of treaty : And desires that some *Scots* Deputies may
come there.

Colonel *Henry Lilburn*, Governor of *Tinmouth* in *Nor-
thumberland*, declares for the King.

Charles Prince of *Wales* lands in *Kent*, where *Deal* and 14.
Sandwich had declared for him, but is beaten back.

The Lords pass some votes preliminary to the treaty. 16.

John Maitland, Earl of *Lauderdale*, carries to Prince
Charles an invitation from the Estates of *Scotland*, to come
into that country, and head their army in *England*.

The Commons examine the Lords votes, and add some 17.
restrictions to them.

They refuse to consent to any *Scottish* Commissioners be-
ing invited to the treaty ; and order, that however, if any 18.
of that Nation should be sent for, to advise about the af-
fairs of *Scotland* only, they should be admitted.

Prince *Charles* threatens to use reprisals, if the Colonels, 19.
Poyer, *Langhorn*, and *Powell*, were put to death.

The *Scots* army commanded by *James Duke of Hamil-* 17, 18,
ton, is entirely routed by *Cromwell* near *Preston* in *Lanca-* 19.
shire ; and the Duke taken prisoner, at *Utoxeter* in *Staf-
fordshire*.

Cromwell marches towards the North against General 21.
Monroe, who was bringing forces from *Scotland*.

Colchester surrenders at discretion to General *Fairfax*, af- 27.
ter

Ann. C. ter having been blocked up ever since *Jane 15*, and
29. been reduced to the greatest extremities: Sir George *Liffe*
and Sir *Charles Lucas* are shot to death.

The two fleets, commanded by *Charles Prince of Wales*,
and *Robert Rich Earl of Warwick*, approach one another,
but part without fighting, and the Prince sails back to *Holland*.

Sept. 1. Oliver *Cromwell* continues his march towards *Scotland*,
in quest of *Monroe*, who avoids a battle.

11. The Independents (exalted with the army's success
against the *Scots*, &c.) present a petition to the Parliament
full of complaints and reproaches against the Commons.

13. The Parliament's Commissioners set out from *London* for
the Isle of *Wight*.

The Prince of *Wales* comes to the *Hogue*.

18. The treaty at *Newport* begins, and seven days are spent
in settling the preamble of one of the three bills.

Pontefraet is besieged by the Parliament's forces.

20. Oliver *Cromwell* comes near *Scotland*, and writes to the
Estates to recall *Monroe*, and deliver up *Berwick* and *Car-*
liffe, which the *Scots* had seized.

General *Fairfax* after the taking of *Colchester*, marches
to *St. Albans* with his army.

Cromwell marches to *Edinburgh*, and forces the Com-
mittee of Estates to fly.

An agreement is concluded in *Scotland* between *Archibald*
Campbel Marquis of *Argyle*, *George Hamilton* Earl of *La-*
nerick, and General *Monroe*.

Berwick surrenders to *Cromwell's* forces, who blocked
it up.

James *Butler* Marquis of *Ormond*, goes over to *Ireland*.

Octob. 7. The King sends a message to both Houses, with his of-
fers concerning the Assembly of Divines, the Directory,
Bishops lands, the Covenant, the Militia, &c.

11. Oliver *Cromwell* comes back from *Scotland* into *England*.

Carlisle is restored by the *Scots* to the *English*.

Cromwell comes to *Newcastle*.

The regiments begin to present petitions, under pre-
tence of demanding their pay; but chiefly tending to ob-
stuct the treaty, and to bring the King to the block.

21. The King sends a message to both Houses with his offers
concerning Episcopacy: He consents to the abolishing of
Archbishops and the rest of the Hierarchy, except Bishops;

and

and to the Parliament's nominating the Great Officers of *Ann. C.*
the Kingdom.

The Parliament of *Scotland* condemns the last war, and 26.
the Duke of *Hamilton*'s engagement.

The King's offers about Episcopacy and the Covenant
are rejected by both Houses, and so the treaty of *Newport*
ended.

Colonel *Rainsborough* is assassinated at *Doncaster* in York- 29.
shire, by a party of the garrison of *Pontefract*.

The King's proposals about Delinquents are voted un- 30.
satisfactory.

The officers of *Ingoldsby*'s regiment present a petition to
General *Fairfax* against the treaty of *Newport*.

The Parliament's Commissioners are recalled from *New- Nov. 4.*
port, except three.

Charles, Prince of *Wales*, hath the small-pox at the
Hague. He gives the command of his fleet to Prince
Rupert.

The King gives his final answer concerning Episcopacy ; 11.
which is voted unsatisfactory.

Colonel *Lambert* departs from *Scotland*, where he had
been left by *Cromwell*.

Some of the Prince of *Wales*'s ships come away from 17.
Holland, and join the Earl of *Warwick*'s squadron.

A remonstrance from the officers of the army is presented
to the Parliament by Colonel *Ewers*, requiring that the
King be brought to justice ; that no King be hereafter
admitted but upon election of the People, &c.

The treaty at *Newport* being nigh concluded, General 21.
Fairfax through the practices of the Independents, recalls
Colonel *Hammond* from his government of the Isle of *Wight* ;
and sends Colonel *Ewers* in his room, with orders to keep
the King in close custody : The Commons vote, that Col-
onel *Hammond* should stay in the Isle of *Wight*, but are not
obeyed.

Petitions from the regiments under *Cromwell* are sent to
General *Fairfax*, all agreeing in demanding justice upon
the King.

The army marches towards *London*, and publishes a De- 30.
claration or Manifesto, concerning the evil and danger of
the treaty with the King.

The King is removed to *Hursley Castle* in *Hampshire*, by
Lieutenant Colonel *Cobbet* and a detachment from the army.

General *Fairfax* comes to *Witton* with several regi- Dec. 2.
ments.

The

- Ann. C.* The Commons vote that the removing the King to *Hurst Castle* was without their consent.
4. At five of the clock in the morning they vote, that the King's concessions were sufficient grounds for settling the peace of the Kingdom.
5. Several regiments come to *London*.
6. The army regiments are placed as a guard to the Parliament, and the city trained-bands are discharged.
7. Forty-one Members of the House of Commons are put under arrest by the army, as they were going into the House.
- The army presents to the House of Commons proposals and desires in vindication of their conduct, against *Holles*, *Brown*, and the rest of the 41 Members.
7. *Oliver Cromwell* comes to *London*, and receives the thanks of the House of Commons for his great services.
- About 90 of the Members are hindered by the soldiers from going into the House of Commons.
8. The Parliament consisted at present only of Independents, Anabaptists, &c.
- II. The army presents to the General a new representative, or an agreement of the People, for settling the Government.
13. The Commons vote, that no further addresses should be made to the King, and that the treaty of *Newport* was highly dishonourable to the Nation.
15. The secluded Members publish a protestation against the violence offered to them, which is declared scandalous.
16. An ordinance is made by the Parliament concerning the election of the Lord-Mayor and other Officers of *London*.
- The King is brought from *Hurst Castle* to *Windsor*.
- The vote of the Commons declaring the King's propositions a sufficient ground for peace is revoked.
19. *Scarborough* surrenders to the Parliament.
- The officers under Major-General *J. Lambert* send up a petition to General *Fairfax* agreeable to the army's remonstrance.
21. A petition from the inhabitants of *Somersetshire* is presented to the Parliament, desiring that speedy justice may be executed upon the chief Delinquents. Accordingly, a Committee is appointed to draw up a charge against the chief Delinquents.
23. The fleet commanded by the Earl of *Warwick*, sends a declaration wherein they concurred with the army in their remonstrance.

The

The inhabitants of *Norfolk* petition that the King might *Ann. C.*
be brought to justice. 25.

James Butler Marquis of Ormond concludes a peace with
the *Irish Rebels*, but *Owen Roe O'Neal* refuses to come
into it.

The garrison at *Kingston upon Hull* presents a petition
against the King; and several other petitions of the like
nature are presented from several parts.

The Council of war orders all the usual ceremonies to 27.
the King, as serving upon the knee, &c. to be laid aside,
and most of his domestics to be dismissed.

An ordinance is drawn up for erecting a High-court of Jan. 1.
Justice for trying the King.

Both Houses declare, That, by the fundamental laws of
this realm, it is treason in the King of *England*, for the
time to come, to levy war against the Parliament and King-
dom of *England*.

The Ordinance, and the Commons vote, are carried up 1648-49:
to the Lords, who reject them, and adjourn from *Tuesday January*.
till *Thursday seven-night*; whereupon, the Commons vote,
That the concurrence of the Lords was not necessary.

They vote again, That the People are the original of all 4.
Power; That the Commons of *England*, assembled in Par-
liament, chosen by, and representing the People, have the
Supreme Authority; and that whatsoever is enacted by
them, assembled in Parliament, hath the force of law,
without the consent of King or House of Peers.

The ordinance for trying the King passes the House of 6.
Commons.

The Committee of Estates of *Scotland* send a letter to
the Parliament, desiring that the King might not be tried,
without the advice of their Nation.

A Herald makes proclamation, That all people come in 9.
to give their charge against the King.

The soldiers, and other inhabitants of the Isle of *Wight*,
petition that notorious criminals be brought to justice.

John Bradshaw is appointed President of the High-Court 10.
of Justice.

Petitions are sent from *Exeter* and *Oxford* against the
King; and also from the Common-Council of *London*.

The Parliament of *Scotland* declares for the Covenant;
as also against the trial of the King, and against all altera-
tion in the Government; but those that were concerned
in the late war, are not admitted into this Parliament.

Major-General *Massey* escapes from *St. James's*, where 18.
he was prisoner. The

- Ann. C.* The King is brought from *Windsor* to *St. James's Palace*.
19. *North-Wales* sends up a petition of the same nature as the rest.
- The High-Court of Justice meets in *Westminster-Hall*.
20. The King is brought before this Court, and accused of High-treason, and High-misdemeanors ; and his charge is read ; but his Majesty refuses to answer, and will not acknowledge the authority of the Court.
- Some papers, and a declaration from the Parliament of *Scotland* against the trial of the King, are presented to the House of Commons.
22. The King is brought the second time before the High-Court of Justice. He refuses again to answer, and delivers in writing his reasons against the jurisdiction of the Court.
23. The King is brought a third time before the Court, and refuses to answer.
- 24, 25. The Court examines the witnesses against the King. Sentence of death is passed upon him.
27. He is permitted to see his children.
29. King *Charles I.* is beheaded, before the *Banqueting-House* at *Whitehall*, after a troublesome Reign of 23 years, 10 months, and 3 days, being aged 48 years, 2 months, and 11 days ; and was buried the 9th of *February* following, in *Henry the Eighth's* vault, in *St. George's Chapel* at *Windsor*.

The Character of C H A R L E S I.

It is no easy thing to give a just and exact character of *Charles I.*, amidst the excessive commendations bestowed on him by some, and the calumnies wherewith others have endeavoured to blacken his reputation. If the parties born in his Reign, had died with him (says *Rapin*) we might find in the Histories of that time, composed after the troubles were over, an impartiality which might help to form a true judgment of this Prince's character. But the same parties continuing in the following Reigns, with a mutual animosity, it may be said, there is not an impartial *English Historian* upon this subject. Some had no other view than to vindicate the King, and others, whose aim was to justify the Parliament, could not do it without loading the King, and rendering him odious. We must therefore proceed with the utmost caution when we are in search of this Prince's character, for fear of being misled, and drawn into error by the different representations given their readers by the

Historians. Notwithstanding these difficulties, I shall briefly speak my thoughts, free from all party passion and prejudice.

I do not find, the commendations bestowed on *Charles I.*, with regard to sobriety, temperance, and chastity, were ever contested. All agree likewise, that he was a good husband, a good father, and a good master. But some accuse him, and perhaps not unjustly, of suffering his Queen to have too great an influence over him, and too large a share in State-affairs. The Kingdom being Protestant, and the Queen a very zealous Catholick, her power, which the greatly abused, in causing the most important offices to be conferred on Papists, must have been looked upon with a jealous eye. This was the chief ground of the opinion spread about the Kingdom, that the Court intended to restore the Catholick Religion in *England*.

He was so great a lover of justice, that no temptation could dispose him to a wrongful action, except it was so disguised to him, that he believed it to be just. These are the T. III. Lord Clarendon's own words, which may be very true, if p. 197. applied to the concerns of particular persons. But besides the justice which a King ought to administer impartially to private persons, there is another kind of justice due from him, to all his people in general. With respect to this last, it may justly be doubted, that the Lord Clarendon's encomium is inconsistent with the project of altering the Constitution, and assuming a power, which certainly was illegal. Nay, I do not believe, that this was one of the things disguised to him, and I should rather think, it was by him, that his ministers and courtiers framed their conduct, and adapted their notions to his, in order to make their court, and advance their fortune.

Never was King perhaps so punctual and regular in his devotions both publick and private. This was of some use to him, to repel the charge of his not being well-affected to the Protestant Religion, and he knew how to improve it on occasion.

He abhorred all debauchery, and could not endure an obscene or prophane word. His Court was very different from his father's, where oaths, prophane jests, and obscene discourse were but too much in vogue. It is hard to conceive, how the Duke of *Buckingham*, who was used to King James's ways, could accommodate himself to the gravity and severity of *Charles I.*, or how King *Charles* could adapt himself to the Duke of *Buckingham's* manners.

James

James I., was lavish, and his Son *Charles* inclined towards avarice, but this failing may be excused by the consideration, that he never abounded with money, from the beginning to the end of his reign.

His enemies would represent him as a cruel and bloody Prince; but as they have not been able to reproach him with any particular action denoting such a disposition, it is easy to perceive, this charge is founded on the supposition of his having been author of a war wherein so much blood was spilt.

Sincerity as appears in his History, was not his favourite virtue. He made frequent use of mental reservations, concealed in ambiguous terms, and general expressions, of which he reserved the explication at a proper time and place. For this reason, the Parliament could never confide in his promises, wherein there was always either some ambiguous term, or some restriction that rendered them useless. This may be said to be one of the principal causes of his ruin, because giving thereby occasion of distrust, it was not possible to find any expedient for a peace with the Parliament. He was thought to act with so little sincerity in his engagements, that it was believed there was no dependence on his word. The Parliament could not even resolve to debate on the King's propositions, so convinced were they of his ability to hide his real intentions under ambiguous expressions. But they sent their own propositions to the King, with the liberty only of saying *Content*, or not *Content*, so apprehensive were they of his explanations. But as I may be accused of loading the King too much upon the point of sincerity, I think it incumbent on me, to justify what I have said, by an unexceptionable evidence. I mean the Earl of Clarendon.

Clarendon, *A Law enacted by violence and force, says that illustrious Historian,* III. p. 335. *is not rightfully enacted, was one of those positions of Aristotle, which hath never been since contradicted, and was an advantage, that being well managed, and stoutly insisted upon, would, in spite of all their machinations have brought his Majesty's enemies to a temper of being treated with. But I have some cause to believe, that even this argument which was unanswerable for the rejecting the bill [for taking away the Bishop's votes,] was applied for the confirming it; and an opinion, that the violence and force used in procuring it, rendered it absolutely invalid and void, made the confirmation of it less considered, as not being of strength to make that act good, which was in itself null. And I doubt*

doubt this logick had an influence upon other acts of no less moment than these.

Let the Reader judge after this, if we may boast of King Charles's sincerity, since even in passing Acts of Parliament, which is the most authentick and solemn promise a King of *England* can make, he gave his assent, merely in an opinion, that they were void in themselves, and consequently he was not bound by this engagement. I pass over in silence the manifest breach of the petition of right, perhaps upon the same principle, and of his many assurances to his Parliament of his intention to maintain their privileges, which he violated within a few days, because these things have been sufficiently spoken of in the History of his Reign.

Some accuse him of an inclination for the *Roman Catholic Religion*, nay, there are who carry this charge so far as to say, he intended to restore it in *England*. These imputations are groundless. But it cannot be denied, that he gave occasion for them by his conduct, though contrary to his intention. During the first fifteen years of his Reign, the *Roman Catholicks* were not only screened from the rigour of the Law, but even encouraged and countenanced to such a degree, that he made them Privy-Councillors, Secretaries of State, and Lords-Lieutenants of Counties. Two things induced him to this condescension. The first, the Queen's importunities, who was extremely zealous for her Religion. The second, his project to render himself absolute, for the execution of which, he believed the assistance of the Catholicks, as well *English* as foreigners, to be necessary. But I will not affirm, that the Queen, and some of the Ministry had not formed with regard to Religion, more extensive projects, which they did not think proper to impart to the King. The assistance of the Catholicks, whom the King had managed for another occasion, became necessary for his own defence, after his breach with the Parliament. How unwilling soever he seemed to receive any aid from the Papists, it is certain, many were entertained in his service, and that he was privately assisted by the Catholicks on sundry important occasions.

Though it cannot be proved that he excited the *Irish rebellion*, it may however be affirmed, it was not against him that the *Irish* took arms, since they never had less cause to complain, than in this and the late Reign. Besides, the Papists, both *Irish* and *English*, always looked upon this Prince as their Protector, and were ever ready to assist him. Had he succeeded in his designs, very like-

ly, the condition of the Catholicks in *England* and *Ireland*, would have been much more happy, and the penal laws in great measure repealed. But it does not follow, that the King himself had any inclination to Popery, or intended to establish the *Romish* Religion. In short, that he was a sincere member of the Church of *England*, can hardly be doubted, since he affirmed it on the scaffold, at a time when it could be of no service to him to dissemble his belief.

Many people give him the surname of *Martyr*, pretending he suffered death in maintainance of the truth of the Protestant Religion, against the Presbyterians and Independents, and call the day of his death, which is solemnized yearly on the 30th of *January*, the day of his Martyrdom. But in the first place, there was too great a complication of causes which brought him to this tragical end, to ascribe his death solely to Religion. 2. Though it were true that Religion was the sole cause of his death, it would not be universally agreed that he died for defending the truth of the Protestant Religion, since, among Protestants, the *English* alone, or rather a great part of the *English*, hold Episcopacy to be a doctrine of Faith. 3. Though dying for Episcopacy were really Martyrdom, the King in his last proposals at *Newport*, agreed to reduce Episcopacy to a very small matter. 4. Had he been condemned by the Presbyterians, he might in some measure be said to suffer for Episcopacy. But it is evident the Presbyterians had no share in this sentence, nor ever thought of bringing him to a tryal. The Independents were the men that condemned and executed him, and surely, it was not on any religious account, but to turn the Monarchy into a republick. 5. If the Scrivener's evidence be true, King *Charles* cannot be said to suffer death for supporting Religion against the Independents, since, according to the deposition, he offered to grant them all the freedom they should desire, if they would but take his part. However this be, the Church of *England* having recovered, in the reign of *Charles* II, the advantage she had lost in that of *Charles* I, appointed the day of his death to be kept every year, with tasting and humiliation, which hath caused some to give him the glorious title of *Martyr*.

To conclude, *Charles* I. was endued with many virtues, and noble qualities. There is even room to believe, that his failings flowed entirely from his design to enslave *England*, and if, on some occasions, he followed not exactly the rules of sincerity, it was only the more easily to execute

execute what he had undertaken. Without this unfortunate project, he might be reckoned one of the most accomplished Princes that has ever been on the English throne. The Duke of Buckingham, the Earl of Strafford, Archbishop Laud, and the Queen herself used to a very different Government from that of England, were the persons that ruined this unhappy Prince, whom they so passionately desired to raise higher than his predecessors. But who can forbear making a very natural reflection on this subject? I mean, upon the punishment of those evil Counsellors, and of the King himself. The Duke of Buckingham lost his life by the hands of an assassin; Laud, Strafford, and the King himself died on the scaffold, and the Queen spent the residue of her days in a melancholly widowhood, being even slighted by her nearest relations. She lived however long enough to see the Prince her son's restoration; but found not with him, all the satisfaction she expected, which doubtless was the cause of her return to France, where she died in the year 1669.

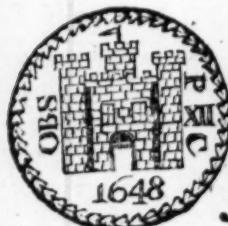
By his Queen, *Henrietta-Maria*, daughter of Henry IV, King of France, he had four sons: 1. *Charles*, born March 18, 1628, and died the same day. 2. *Charles*, Prince of Wales, born May 29, 1630, afterwards King Charles II. 3. *James*, Duke of York and Albany, born October 14, 1633, afterwards King James II. 4. *Henry*, Duke of Gloucester and Earl of Cambridge, born at Oatlands, July 8, 1640, died September 13, 1660. He had also four daughters: 1. *Mary*, born November 4, 1631, married to *William*, Prince of Orange, and mother of the late King *William III*. 2. *Elizabeth*, born December 28, 1631, died in *Carisbrook Castle*, September 8, 1650. 3. *Anne*, born March 17, 1636, died December 8, 1640. 4. *Henrietta-Maria*, born at *Exeter*, June 16, 1644, married to *Philip*, Duke of *Anjou* and *Orleans*, brother to the late King *Lewis XIV*.

An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture in the 2d year of King *Charles I*, a pound weight of Gold, of the old Standard, of twenty-three Carats, three Grains and a half fine, and half a Grain alloy, was coined into 44*l.* 10*s.* by tale; namely, into Rose-Rials at 30*s.* a piece; Spur-Rials at 15*s.* a-piece, and Angels at 10*s.* a piece. And a pound weight of Crown Gold, of twenty-two Carats fine and two Carats alloy, in-

to 41*l.* by tale; namely, into Unites at 20*s.* Double Crowns at 10*s.* or British Crowns at 5*s.* a piece. And a pound of Silver of the old Standard, of eleven Ounces, Two-penny weight fine, into sixty-two Shillings by tale; namely, into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Half-Shillings, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence.

The Gold Coins of this King (as appears by the Indenture above) are, Rose-Rials, Angels, Unites, Double and British Crowns. The Rose-Rial has, on one side, the King's figure in wrought Armour, crowned, and holding in his right hand the Scepter, resting upon his Shoulder; and in his





6



7

8



his left hand the Ball, CAROLUS. D. G. MAG. BRITAN. FRAN. ET. HIB. REX. Reverse, under a Crown, the Arms quartered, *Scotland* in the first and fourth Quarter, between C. R. crowned, HIS. PRÆSVM. VT. PROSIM. struck, probably, when the King was in *Scotland*, and weighing Six Penny weights, eight Grains, and a quarter. (Fig. 1.) The Spur-Rial, weighing just half the other, exhibits the King's head crowned, looking the contrary way, and extending to the edge, CAR. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIB. REX. Reverse, the Arms, as before, VNITA TVEMVR. The Unite has XX. behind the King's head crowned in Ruff, CAROLVS. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. Reverse, Arms in a square shield crowned, CULTORES. SVI. DEVIS PROTEGIT. Another, with the falling Band, has a Sun for the Mint-mark; and reverse, the Arms in an oval Shield crowned, C. R. FLORENT. CONCORDIA. REGNA.— The Silver Coins of this King are Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence: As also, ten and twenty Shilling-pieces, peculiar to this King, which have his Figure on horse-back. The Crown piece has the King on horse-back, with his Sword in his hand, CAROLVS. D. G. MAG. BRITA. FRAN. ET. HIBER. REX. Reverse, between C. R. the Arms in an oval Shield crowned, CHRISTO. AVS-

X 3

PICE

PICE REGNO. Another has on one side a plain Cross, on the other V. with S above it. The Half-Crowns are various; some with the Arms in an Oval, some in a square Shield. They have for Mint-marks, a Lion Passant, and in some Gardant, Anchor, Harp, Fleur-de-lis, &c. The Newark Half-Crown, in form of a Lozenge, has C. R. on each side of a Crown, and XXX. below. Reverse, OBS. NEWARK. 1646. (There is also a Newark Shilling, exactly in the same form, and with the same inscription; only it has XII. instead of XXX.) (Fig. 6.) The Pontefract Half-Crown is in the same form as that of Newark: On one side C.R. crowned, DUM. SPIRO. SPERO. Reverse, the Castle, and a hand out of one of the Towers, holding a drawn Sword, OBS. P. C. 1648. (The Pontefract Shilling wants the Sword and Hand, and has XII. instead of XXX. but in other respects it is like the Half-Crown.) (Fig. 5.) There is also a three Shilling piece, coined at the Siege of Carlisle, having C. R. and III. below: Reverse, OBS. CARL. 1645. Of the Shillings, some have the King's head crowned, with the Ruff, and XII. behind the Head: Reverse, the Arms, and CHRISTO AUSPICE REGNO. a cross the Mint-mark. (Fig. 2.) Another is with a falling Band, (Fig. 3.) One has 1637, and ARCHETYPUS MONETÆ. ARGENTÆ. ANGLIÆ. The Carlisle Shilling, which is an Octogone, has a Crown with C. R. XII. Reverse, OBS. CARL. 1645. The Six-pences are strictly like the Shilling, only have VI. instead of XII. The Carlisle Six-pence, has C. R. crowned. Reverse, VI. The Carlisle Groat, is Octogone, and has on the Reverse IIII. (Fig. 7.) The Three-pence has the King's Head, Title, and Arms, as the larger pieces, CHRISTO. AVSPICE. REGNO. One has the Ostrich-Feathers, (because made of Welsh Silver,) with this Motto, EXVRGAT. DEVS. DISSIPENTVR. INIMICI. In the Field, RELIG. PRO. LEG. ANG. LIBER. PAR. 1645. (Fig. 4.) The Two-pence has II. behind the King's head, with Title and Arms as the Three-pence, Legend IVSTITIA. THRONVM. FIRMAT. One has the King in Ruff, bareheaded, CAR. DG. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIB. Reverse, two Cs. interlinked under a Crown, FIDEI DEFENSOR. (Fig. 8.) The Penny has I. behind the King's head.

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows :

<i>Oliver St. John</i> (Viscount Grandison in Ireland)	Baron	1625.
<i>Tregozze.</i>		21 May.
<i>Horatio Vere</i> , Baron <i>Vere</i> of <i>Tilbury</i> .		25 July.
<i>Henry</i> Baron <i>Mountague</i> ,—Earl of <i>Manchester</i> .		1625-26. 5 Feb.
<i>George</i> Baron <i>Carew</i> ,—Earl of <i>Totnes</i> .		
<i>Thomas Howard</i> , Viscount <i>Andover</i> —Earl of <i>Berkshire</i> .		
<i>Thomas</i> Lord <i>Wentworth</i> —Earl of <i>Cleveland</i> .		
<i>James</i> Lord <i>Ley</i> — Earl of <i>Marlborough</i> .		
<i>Edmund</i> Lord <i>Sheffield</i> —Earl of <i>Mulgrave</i> .		1626. 22 May.
<i>Dudley Carleton</i> , Baron <i>Carleton</i> , of <i>Imbercourt</i> .		1628.
— Viscount <i>Dorchester</i> .		25 July.
<i>William</i> Lord <i>Knollys</i> , Viscount <i>Wallingford</i> —Earl of <i>Banbury</i> .		18 Aug.
<i>Edward</i> Lord <i>Denny</i> —Earl of <i>Norwich</i> .		24 Oct.
<i>Nicholas Tufton</i> , Baron <i>Tufton</i> .		1 Nov.
— Earl of <i>Thanet</i> .		1628. 5 August.
<i>Thomas Savage</i> , Lord <i>Darcy</i> , Viscount <i>Colchester</i> —Earl <i>Rivers</i> .		1 Nov.
<i>Robert Bertie</i> , Lord <i>Willeoughby</i> of <i>Eresby</i> —Earl of <i>Lindsey</i> .		22 Nov. 1626-27.
<i>William Craven</i> , Baron <i>Craven</i> .		16 Mar.
<i>Thomas Brudenel</i> , Baron <i>Brudenel</i> .		1627. 26 April.
<i>Thomas Bellasis</i> , Baron <i>Fauconbergh</i> .		27 May. 1642-43.
— Viscount <i>Fauconbergh</i> .		31 Jan.
<i>Montjoy Blount</i> (Baron <i>Montjoy</i> in <i>Ireland</i>) Baron <i>Montjoy</i> of <i>Thurveston</i> in <i>Derbyshire</i> .		
— Earl of <i>Newport</i> .		1628. 3 August.
<i>Nevil Lovelace</i> , Baron <i>Lovelace</i> .		3 May.
<i>Edward Conway</i> , Viscount <i>Conway</i> .		6 June.
<i>Emanuel</i> Baron <i>Scrope</i> —Earl of <i>Sunderland</i> .		19 June.
<i>John Paulet</i> , Baron <i>Paulet</i> of <i>Hinton St. George</i> .		23 June.
<i>Robert Pierrepont</i> , Baron <i>Pierrepont</i> , and Viscount <i>Newark</i> .		29 June.

Ann. C.

1628. — Earl of *Kingston*.
- 25 July. William Harvey (Baron Harvey of *Rofsi* in *Ireland*) Baron
- 1627-28. 7 Feb. Harvey of *Kidbrook*.
- 27 Feb. Paul Bayning, Baron of *Horkesley*, and Bentley in *Essex*.
- 8 Mar. — Viscount Bayning of *Sudbury*.
- 1627-28. 7 Mar. William Cavendish, Baron of *Ogle*, and Viscount *Mansfield*—Earl of *Newcastle*. See 27 October 1643.
- 8 Mar. Henry Carey, Baron of *Hunstdon*, and Viscount *Rochford*—Earl of *Dover*.
- 9 Mar. John Lord Mordaunt, Earl of *Peterborough*.
- 14 Mar. William Maynard (Baron Maynard of *Wicklow* in *Ireland*) Baron Maynard of *Little-Easton*.
1628. 26 Mar. Henry Grey, Earl of *Stamford*.
- Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*—Baron *Percy*.
- 10 April. Thomas Coventry, Baron *Coventry* of *Alesborough*.
- 13 April. Richard Weston, Baron *Weston* of *Neyland*.
1632. — Earl of *Portland*.
- 14 April. George Goring, Baron *Goring* of *Hurst-Pierrepont*.
1644. — Earl of *Norwich*.
- 8 Nov. John Mohun, Baron *Mohun* of *Oakhampton*.
- 15 April. Edward Howard, Baron *Howard* of *Escrict*.
- 29 April. 5 May. Baptist Hicks, Baron *Hicks* of *Ilmington*, and Viscount *Campden*.
- 12 July. Elizabeth Finch, Countess of *Winchelsea*.
- 21 July. John Savile, Baron *Savile* of *Pontefract*.
- 22 July. Thomas Wentworth, Baron of *Wentworth-Woodhouse*.
1628. — Viscount *Wentworth*.
- 10 Dec. — Earl of *St. Albans*.
1639. — Baron *Raby*, and Earl of *Strafford*.
- 12 Jan. 31 July. William Leigh, Baron *Dunsmore*.
- 2 Aug. Robert Dormer, Viscount *Acot*, and Earl of *Caernarvon*.
- 4 Aug. Philip Stanhope, Earl of *Chesterfield*.
- 23 Aug. Richard Burgh [or Burk] (Earl of *Clan-ricard* in *Ireland*) — Earl of *St. Albans*.
- 20 Sept. John Boteler, Baron *Boteler* of *Bramfield*.
- 18 Oct. Edward Noel, Viscount *Campden*.
- 4 Dec. Catherine Ogle (wife of *Cavendish* Earl of *Newcastle*) Barones *Ogle*.
1629. 2 April. William Herbert, Baron *Powis*.

Edward

Ann. C.

Edward Herbert (Baron of Castle-Island in Ireland) 7 May.
Baron Herbert of Cherbury.

Edward Noel (Baron Noel of Ridlington) Baron Hicks of Ilmington. 18 Oct.

Francis Cottington, Baron Cottington of Hanworth. 1631.
 10 July.

Henry Howard, Baron Mowbray, by descent and summ. 1639-40.
 21 Mar.

John Finch, Baron Finch of Fordwich. 1640.

William Seymour, Marquis of Somerset. 7 April.

— Longueville, Baron Grey of Ruthyn. Allowed in Parliament. 3 June.
 3 Nov.

William Howard, Baron Stafford. 11 Nov.
 — Viscount Stafford. 16 Nov.

Edward Littleton, Baron Littleton of Mounslow. 1640-41.
 18 Feb.

Francis Seymour, Baron Seymour of Trowbridge. 19 Feb.

Elizabeth [Darcy] (widow to Thomas Savage Earl Rivers) Countess Rivers. 21 April.

Thomas Bruce (Earl of Elgin in Scotland) Baron Bruce of Wharltan. 1 Aug.

Arthur Capel, Baron Capel of Hadham. 6 Aug.

James Steuart, Duke of Richmond. 8 Aug.

Conyers Darcy, Baron de Darcy, and Conyers of Hornby. 10 Aug.

Richard Newport, Baron Newport of High-Ercall. 1642.

Henry Somerset, Marquis of Worcester. 14 Oct.

— Minshull, Baron Minshull. 2 Nov.

18 Dec.

John Craven, Baron Craven of Ryton. 1642-43.

21 Mar.

Henry Spencer, Earl of Sunderland. 1643.

8 June.

Rupert (Prince) Earl of Holderness. 24 June.

1643-44.

— Baron of Holderness. 1 Jan.

24 Jan.

— Duke of Cumberland. 28 June.

Henry Percy, Baron Percy of Alnwick. 29 June.

Henry Wilmot (Baron Wilmot of Athlone in Ireland) Baron Wilmot of Adderbury. 29 June.

Thomas Leigh, Baron Leigh of Stonely. 1 July.

29 July.

Christopher Hatton, Viscount Hatton of Kirkby. 4 Sept.

Ralph Hopton, Baron Hopton of Stratton. Henry

Ann. C.

- 8 Sept. Henry *Jermyn*, Baron *Jermyn* of *St. Edmundsbury*.
 23 Oct. Henry *Hastings*, Baron *Hastings* of *Loughborough*.
 24 Oct. John *Byron*, Baron *Byron* of *Rochdale*.
 25 Oct. Richard *Vaughan* (Earl of *Carlberg* in *Ireland*) Baron *Vaughan* of *Emlyn*.
 27 Oct. William *Cavendish*, Earl of *Newcastle*, Baron *Bothal* and *Hepple*, and Marquis of *Newcastle*.
 31 Oct. Charles *Smith*, Baron *Carrington* of *Wotton-Waven*.
 10 Nov. William *Widdrington*, Baron *Widdrington* of *Blanckney*.
 1643-44. James *Steuart*, Duke of *York*, afterwards King *James II*.
 27 Jan. Humble *Ward*, Baron *Ward* of *Birmingham*.
 23 Mar. Alice [Leigh] wife of Sir Robert *Dudley*, Kt. and Duke of the Empire, Duchefs *Dudley*.
 25 May. Thomas *Saville*, Earl of *Sussex*.
 27 May. Patrick *Ruthen* (Earl of *Forth* in *Scotland*) Earl of *Brentford*, including Barony.
 3 June. Francis *Leigh*, Earl of *Chichester*.
 21 Oct. John *Colepepyr*, Baron *Colepepyr* of *Thoresway*.
 4 Nov. Jacob *Astley*, Baron *Astley* of *Reading*.
 Richard *Boyle* (Earl of *Cork*) Baron *Clifford* of *Lanefborough*.
 1644-45. John *Lucas*, Baron *Lucas* of *Shenfield*.
 3 Jan. John *Brook*, Baron *Cobham*.
 27 Jan. John *Bellasis*, Baron *Bellasis* of *Worlaby*.
 28 Jan. Lewis *Watson*, Baron *Rockingham*.
 1645. Henry *Pierrepont*, Marquis of *Dorchester*.
 25 Mar. Robert *Cholmley* or *Cholmondeley* (Viscount *Cholmley* of *Kelis* in *Ireland*) Baron *Cholmley* of *Wich-Malbank*.
 8 Nov. Charles *Gerard*, Baron *Gerard* of *Brandon*.
 21 Nov. Robert *Sutton*, Baron *Lexington* of *Averham*.
 10 Dec. Charles *Steuart*, Baron *Newbury*, and Earl of *Lichfield*.
 Francis *Leke*, Earl of *Scarsdale*.
 Edward *Somerset*, Viscount *Grosmont* and *Caldecot*, and Earl of *Glamorgan*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
CHARLES I.

Claude de Lorrain, Duke of *Chevreuse*.

Gustavus Adolphus, King of *Sweden*.

Henry Frederic de Nassau, Prince of *Orange*.

Theophilus

- Theophilus Howard, Earl of Suffolk.*
William Compton, Earl of Northampton.
Richard Weston, Lord Weston, Lord Treasurer of England, and afterwards Earl of Portland.
Robert Bertie, Earl of Lindsey.
William Cecil, Earl of Exeter.
James Hamilton, Marquis of Hamilton, Earl of Cambridge and Arran.
Charles Lodowick, Count Palatine of the Rhine, Prince Elector of the Empire, and Duke of Bavaria.
James Steuart, Duke of Lenox, and Earl of March, afterwards Duke of Richmond.
Henry Danvers, Earl of Danby.
William Douglas, Earl of Morton.
Algernon Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
Charles, Prince of Wales, afterwards King of England, of that name the second.
Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford.
James Steuart, Duke of York, afterwards King James, of that name the second.
Rupert, Count Palatine of the Rhine, and Duke of Bavaria, afterwards Earl of Holderness, and Duke of Cumberland, second son of the King of Bohemia.
William de Nassau, Prince of Orange.
Bernard de Nogaret de Foix, Duke d'Espernon and de la Valette.

Baronets created by King CHARLES I.

- 206 Sir John Ashfield of Netherhall in Suffolk. Kt. July 27, 1626. extinct.
 207 Henry Harpur of Calk in Derbyshire, Esq; Sept. 8.
 208 Edward Seabright of Besford in Worcestershire, Esq; December 20.
 209 John Beaumont of Grace-dieu in Leicestershire, Esq; June 9. ex.
 210 Sir Edward Dering of Surrenden-Dering in Kent, Kt. February 1.
 211 George Kemp of Pentlow in Essex, Esq; — 5. ex.
 212 William Brereton of Hanford in Cheshire, Esq; March 10. ex.
 213 Patricius Curwen of Workington in Cumberland, Esq; — 12. ex.
 214 William Russel of Witley in Worcestershire, Esq; — 12. ex.

- 215 John Spencer of Offley in Hertfordshire, Esq; — 14. ex.
 216 Sir Giles Estcourt of Newton in Wiltshire, Kt. — 17. ex.
 217 Thomas Aylesbury, Esq; one of the Masters of the Requests, April 19, 1627. ex.
 218 Thomas Style of Watringbury in Kent, Esq; — 21. ex.
 219 Frederic Cornwallis of Brome in Suffolk, Esq; now an English Baron, Lord Cornwallis, May 4.
 220 Drue Drury of Riddleworth in Norfolk, Esq; — 7. ex.
 221 William Skeffington of Fisherwick in Staffordshire, since Viscount Mazarene, — 8. *Irib.*
 222 Sir Robert Crane of Chilton in Suffolk, Kt. — 17. ex.
 223 Anthony Wingfield of Goodwins in Suffolk, Esq; — 17. ex.
 224 William Colepeper of Preston-Hall in Kent, Esq; — 17. ex.
 225 Giles Bridges of Wilton in Herefordshire, Esq; Duke of Chandos. — 17. E.
 226 John Kirle of Much-Marcle in Herefordshire, Esq; — 17. ex.
 227 Sir Humphrey Stiles of Beckenham in Kent, Kt. — 20. ex.
 228 Henry Moor of Falley in Berkshire, Esq; — 21. ex.
 229 Thomas Hele of Fleet in Devonshire, Esq; — 28. ex.
 230 John Carleton of Holcomb in Oxfordshire, Esq; — 28. ex.
 231 Thomas Maples of Stow in Huntingdonshire, Esq; — 30. ex.
 232 Sir John Isham of Lamport in Northamptonshire, Kt. — 30.
 233 Hervy Bagot of Blithfield in Staffordshire, Esq; — 30.
 234 Lewis Pollard of King's-Nymph in Devonshire, Esq — 31. ex.
 235 Francis Mannock of Giffords-Hall in Stok *juxta Neyland* in Suffolk, Esq; June 1.
 236 Henry Griffith of Agnes-Burton in Yorkshire, Esq; — 1. ex.
 237 Lodowick Dyer of Staughton in Huntingtonshire, Esq; — 8. ex.
 238 Sir Hugh Stukely of Hinton in Hampshire, Kt. — 9. ex.
 239 Edward Stanley of Bickerstaffe in Lancashire, Esq; — 26.
 240 Edward Littleton of Pillaton-Hall in Staffordshire, Esq; — 28.
 241 Ambrose Brown of Beachworth Castle in Surrey, Esq; July 7. ex. 242 Sac-

- 242 Sackville Crow of Lanherne in Caermarthenshire, Esq; — 8. ex.
- 243 Michael Livesey of East-Church in the Isle of Shepey in Kent, Esq; — 11. ex.
- 244 Simon Bennet of Beauchampton in Buckinghamshire, Esq; — 17. ex.
- 245 Sir Thomas Fisher, of the parish of St. Giles's in the Fields, in Middlesex, Kt. — 19. ex.
- 246 Thomas Bowyer of Leighthorn in Sussex, Esq; — 23.
- 247 Buts Bacon of Milden-Hall in Suffolk, Esq; — 29.
- 248 John Corbet of Stoke in Shropshire, Esq; Sept. 19.
- 249 Sir Edward Tyrrel of Thorneton in Buckinghamshire, Kt. October 31.
- 250 Sir Richard Young, Kt. March 10. ex.
- 251 William Pennymān, jun. of Mask, alias Marsk, in Yorkshire, Esq; March 10. 1628. ex.
- 252 William Stonehouse of Radley in Berkshire, Esq; — 7
- 253 Sir Thomas Fowles of Islington, in Middlesex, Kt. — 21. ex.
- 254 Sir John Fenwick of Fenwick in Northumberland, Kt. June 9. ex.
- 255 Sir William Wray of Trebitch in Cornwall, Kt. — 30. ex.
- 256 John Trelawney of Trelawney in Cornwall, Esq; July 1.
- 257 John Conyers of Hordon in the Bishopric of Durham, Gent. — 14..
- 258 John Boles of Scampton in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 24. ex.
- 259 Thomas Aston of Aston in Cheshire, Esq; — 25.
- 260 Kenelme Jenoūre of Much-Dunmore in Essex, Esq; — 30.
- 261 Sir John Price of Newton in Montgomeryshire, Kt. August 15. ex.
- 262 Sir Richard Beaumont of Whitley in Yorkshire, Kt. 19. ex.
- 263 William Wiseman of Canfield-Hall in Essex, Esq; — 29.
- 264 Thomas Nightingale of Newport-Pond in Essex, Esq; September 1. ex.
- 265 John Jaques of Middlesex, Esq; one of his Majesty's Gentlemen Pensioners, — 2. ex.
- 266 Robert Dillington of Knighton in the Isle of Wight, in Southampton, Esq; — 6. ex.
- 267 Francis Pile of Compton in Berkshire, Esq; — 12.
- 268 John Pole of Shute in Devonshire, Esq; — 12.
- 269 William Lewes of Langors in Brecknockshire, Esq; — 14. ex.

- 270 William Colepepper of Wakehurst in Sussex, Esq; — 20. ex.
- 271 Peter Van-Loer of Tylehurst in Berkshire, Esq; October 3. ex.
- 272 Sir John Lawrence of Iver in Bucks, Kt. — 9. ex.
- 273 Anthony Slingsby of Scriven in Yorkshire, Esq; — 23.
- 274 Thomas Vavasour of Haslewood in Yorkshire, Esq; — 24.
- 275 Robert Wolseley of Wolseley in Staffordshire, Esq; November 24.
- 276 Rice Rudd of Aberglasney in Caermarthenshire, Esq; December 8. ex.
- 277 Richard Wiseman of Thunderley in Essex, Esq; — 18. ex.
- 278 Henry Ferrers of Skellingthorpe in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 19. ex.
- 279 John Anderson of St. Ives in Huntingdonshire, Esq; January 3. ex.
- 280 Sir William Russel of Chippenham in Cambridgeshire, Kt. — 19.
- 281 Richard Everard of Much-Waltham in Essex, Esq; --- 29.
- 282 Thomas Powell of Berkinhead in Cheshire, Esq; --- 31. ex.
- 283 William Luckin of Waltham in Essex, Esq; Mar. 2.
- 284 Richard Grahame of Eske in Cumberland, Esq; Viscount Preston, March 29, 1629. *Scots.*
- 285 George Twisleton of Barlow in Yorkshire, Esq; April 2. ex.
- 286 William Acton of the City of London, Esq; May 30. ex.
- 287 Nicholas L'Estrange of Hunstanton in Norfolk, Esq; June 1.
- 288 John Holland of Quiddenham in Norfolk, Esq; — 15.
- 289 Edward Aleyn of Hatfield in Essex, Esq; — 24. ex.
- 290 Richard Earl of Craglethorpe in Lincolnshire, Esq; July 2. ex.
- 291 Robert Ducy of the City of London, Alderman, since Viscount Downe, November 28. 1. ex.
- 292 Sir Richard Grenevile, of Kilkhampton in the County of Cornwall, Kt. April 9, 1630. ex.
- 293 Edward Moseley of Rolleston in Staffordshire, Esq; July 20. ex.
- 294 Martin Lumley of Great Bradfield in Essex, Esq; January 8.

- 295 William Dalston of Dalston in Cumberland, Esq; February 15.
- 296 Henry Fletcher of Hutton in the Forest in Cumberland, Esq; — 19. ex.
- 297 Sir Nicholas Cole of Branspath in the Bishopric of Durham, Kt. March 4. ex.
- 298 Edmund Pye of Leckhamstead in Bucks, Esq; April 27, 1641. ex.
- 299 Simon Every of Eggington in Derbyshire, Esq; May 26.
- 300 William Langley of Higham-Gobion in Bedfordshire, Esq; — 29.
- 301 William Paston of Oxnead in Norfolk, Esq; since Earl of Yarmouth, June 8. E. ex.
- 302 James Stonehouse of Amerden-Hall in Essex, Esq; — 11. ex.
- 303 John Palgrave of Norwood Barningham in Norfolk, Esq; — 24. ex.
- 304 Gerard Napper of Middle-Marsh-Hall in Dorsetshire, Esq; — 25.
- 305 Thomas Whitmore of Apley in Shropshire, Esq; — 28. ex.
- 306 John Maney of Linton in Kent, Esq; — 29. ex.
- 307 Sir Thomas Cave, of Stanford in Northamptonshire, Kt. — 30.
- 308 Sir Christopher Yelverton of Easton-Mauduit in Northamptonshire, Kt. Earl of Sussex, — 30. E.
- 309 William Boteler of Teston in Kent, Esq; July 3.
- 310 Sir Thomas Hatton of Long-Stanton in Cambridgeshire, Kt. — 5.
- 311 Thomas Abdy of Felix-Hall in Essex, Esq; — 7.
- 312 John Bampfield of Poltimore in Devonshire, Esq; July 14.
- 313 Sir John Cotton of Landwade in Cambridgeshire, Kt. — 14.
- 314 Sir Simonds d'Ewes of Stow-Hall in Suffolk, Kt. — 15.
- 315 Henry Frederic Thynn of Caus-Castle in Shropshire, Esq; since Viscount Weymouth, — 15. E.
- 316 John Burgoyne of Sutton in Bedfordshire, Esq; — 15.
- 317 John Northcote of Hayne in Devonshire, Esq; — 17.
- 318 Sir William Drake of Sherdelow in Bucks, Kt. — 17. ex.
- 319 Thomas Rouse of Rouse-Linch in Worcestershire, Esq; — 23. ex.
- 320 Ralph Hare of Stow-Bardolph in Norfolk, Esq; — 23.

- 321 Sir John Norwich of Brampton in Northamptonshire, Kt. July 24.
- 322 John Brownlow of Belton, near Grantham in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 26. ex.
- 323 William Brownlow of Humby in Lincolnshire, Esq; Viscount Tyrconnel, — 27. I.
- 324 John Sidenham of Brimpton in Somersetshire, Esq; — 28. ex.
- 325 Henry Prat of Coleshall in Berkshire, Esq; — 28. ex.
- 326 Francis Nichols of Hardwick in Northamptonshire, Esq; — 28. ex.
- 327 Sir William Strickland of Boynton in Yorkshire, Kt. — 30.
- 328 Sir Thomas Wolriche of Dudmaston in Shropshire, Kt. August 4. ex.
- 329 Thomas Maleverer of Allerton-Maleverer in Yorkshire, Esq; — 4. ex.
- 330 William Boughton of Lawford in Warwickshire, Esq; — 4.
- 331 John Chichester of Raleigh in Devonshire, — 4.
- 332 Norton Knatchbull of Mersham-Hatch in Kent, Esq; — 4.
- 333 Hugh Windham of Pilsden-Court in Dorsetshire, Esq; — 4. ex.
- 334 Richard Carew of Anthony in Cornwall, Esq; — 9.
- 335 William Castleton of St. Edmonds-Bury in Suffolk, Esq; — 10.
- 336 Richard Price of Gogarthan in Cardiganshire, Esq; — 10. ex.
- 337 Hugh Cholmley of Whitby in Yorkshire, Esq; — 10. ex.
- 338 William Spring of Pakenham in Suffolk, Esq; — 11. ex.
- 339 Thomas Trevor of Enfield in Middlesex, Esq; — 11. ex.
- 340 Sir John Curson of Kedleston in Derbyshire (a Baronet of Scotland.) — 11.
- 341 Hugh Owen of Orielston in Pembrokeshire, Esq; — 11.
- 342 Morten Brigs of Haughton in Shropshire, Esq; — 12.
- 343 Henry Heyman of Somerfield in Kent, Esq; — 12.
- 344 Thomas Sandford of Hougill Castle in Westmoreland, Esq; — 12. ex.
- 345 Sir Francis Rhodes of Barlborough in Derbyshire, Kt. — 14.

- 346 Richard Sprignell of Coppenthorp in Yorkshire, Esq; — 14. ex.
- 347 Sir John Potts of Mannington in Norfolk, Kt. — 14. ex.
- 348 Sir John Goodrick of Ribston in Yorkshire, Kt. — 14.
- 349 Robert Binlofs of Barwick in Lancashire, Esq; — 16. ex.
- 350 William Walter of Saresden in Oxfordshire, Esq; — 16. ex.
- 351 Thomas Lawley of Spoonhill in Shropshire, Esq; — 16.
- 352 William Farmer of Eston Neston in Northamptonshire, Esq; Earl of Pomfret, September 6. *E.*
- 353 John Davye of Creedy in Devonshire, Esq; — 9.
- 354 Thomas Pettus of Rockheath in Norfolk, Esq; — 22.
- 355 William Andrews of Downton, alias Dodington, in Northamptonshire, Esq; December 11.
- 356 John Meaux of Kingston in the Isle of Wight, Esq; — 11. ex.
- 357 Sir Richard Gurney, Kt. Lord Mayor of the City of London. — 14. ex.
- 358 Thomas Willys of Fen-Ditton in Cambridgeshire, Esq; — 15. ex.
- 359 Francis Armitage of Kirklees in Yorkshire, Esq; — 15.
- 360 Richard Halford of Wistow in Leicestershire, Esq; — 18.
- 361 Sir Humphry Tufton of the Mote, near Maidstone in Kent, Kt. — 25. ex.
- 362 Edward Coke of Langford in Derbyshire, Esq; — 30.
- 363 Isaac Astley of Melton-Constable in Norfolk, Esq; Jan. 21. ex.
- 364 Sir David Cunningham of London (a Baronet of Scotland.) — 21. ex.
- 365 Sir John Rayney of Wrotham in Kent (a Baronet of Scotland.) — 22. ex.
- 366 Revet Eldred of Saxham Magna in Suffolk, Esq; — 29. ex.
- 367 John Gell of Hopdon in Derbyshire, Esq; — 29. ex.
- 368 Sir Vincent Corbett of Morton-Corbett, in Shropshire, Kt. — 29. ex.
- 369 Sir John Kaye of Woodsham in Yorkshire, Kt. February 4.
- 370 Thomas Trollop of Caswick in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 5.
- 371 Edward Thomas of Michael-Town in Glamorganshire, Esq; March 3. ex.
- 372 Sir William Cowper of Ratling Court, in Kent, since created a Baron of England, Lord Cowper. — 4.
- 373 Denner Strut of Little Warley-Hall in Essex, Esq; — 5. ex.

- 374 William St. Quintin of Harpham in Yorkshire, Esq; -- 8.
 375 Sir Robert Kemp of Giffing in Norfolk, Esq; — 14.
 376 John Read of Brocket-Hall in Hertfordshire, Esq;
 — 16. ex.
 377 James Enyan of Flowre in Northamptonshire, Esq;
 April 9, 1642. ex.
 378 Sir Edmund Williams of Marnehull in Dorsetshire, Kt.
 — 19. ex.
 379 John Williams of Minster in the Isle of Thanet in
 Kent, Esq; — 22. ex.
 380 George Wintour of Huddington in Worcestershire,
 Esq; — 29. ex.
 381 John Borlace of Bockmer in Bucks, Esq; May 4. ex.
 382 Henry Knolleys of Grove-Place in Hampshire, Esq;
 May 6.
 383 John Hamilton of the City of London, Esq; — 11. ex.
 384 Edward Morgan of Llanternam in Monmouthshire, Esq;
 — 12. ex.
 385 Sir Nicholas Kemeyes of Keven-Mabley in Glamorgan-
 shire, Kt. — 13. ex.
 386 Trevor Williams of Llangibbyl in Monmouthshire,
 Esq; — 14.
 387 John Reresby of Thriberg in Yorkshire, Esq; — 16.
 388 William Ingleby of Ripley in Yorkshire, Esq; — 17.
 389 Poynings More of Lofeley in Surrey, Esq; — 18. ex.
 390 Christopher Dawney of Confick in Yorkshire, Esq;
 Viscount Downe. — 19. I.
 391 Thomas Hampson of Taplow in Bucks, Esq; June 3.
 392 Thomas Williamson of East-Markham in the County
 of Nottingham, Esq; — 3.
 393 William Denny of Gillingham in Norfolk, Esq; — 3. ex.
 394 Sir Richard Hardres of Hardres in Kent, Kt. — 3.
 395 Christopher Lowther of White-Haven in Cumberland,
 Esq; — 11.
 396 Sir Thomas Alston of Odell in Bedfordshire, Kt. — 13.
 397 Edward Corbet of Leighton in Montgomeryshire, Esq;
 — 20.
 398 George Middleton of Leighton in Lancashire, Esq;
 — 24. ex.
 399 Edward Payler of Thoralby in Yorkshire, Esq;
 — 28. ex.
 400 Sir William Widdrington of Widdrington in Northum-
 berland, Kt. (an English Baron, Lord Widdrington.)
 July 9. Attainted 2 King George I.
 401 Matthew Volckenburge of Middle-Ing in Yorkshire,
 Esq; --- 20. ex. 402 Phi-

- 402 Philip Constable of Everingham in Yorkshire, Esq; -- 20.
 403 Ralph Blackston of Gibside in the Bishopric of Durham, Esq; --- 30. ex.
 404 Edward Widdrington of Cartington in Northumberland, August 8. ex.
 405 Robert Markham of Sedgbrook in Lincolnshire, Esq;
 --- 15. ex.
 406 Philip Hungate of Saxton in Yorkshire, Esq; Aug. 15. ex.
 407 Stephen Lennard of West-Wickham in Kent, Esq;
 --- 15. ex.
 408 Sir William Thorold of Marston in Lincolnshire, Kt.
 --- 24.
 409 Walter Radston of Hayton in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 29. ex.
 410 Walter Wroteley of Wroteley in Staffordshire, Esq;
 --- 30.
 411 Thomas Bland of Kippax-Park in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 30.
 412 Robert Throckmorton of Coughton in Warwickshire,
 Esq; September 1.
 413 William Halton of Sampford in Essex, Esq; --- 10.
 414 Brocket Spencer of Offley in Hertfordshire, Esq; --- 26.
 ex.
 415 Edward Golding of Colston-Basset in Nottinghamshire,
 Esq; --- 27. ex.
 416 William Smith of Crantock in Cornwall, Esq; -- 27. ex.
 417 Henry Henn of Wingfield in Berkshire, Esq; October 1,
 1628. ex.
 418 Walter Blount of Soddington in Worcestershire, Esq;
 --- 5.
 419 Adam Littleton of Stoke-Milburgh in Shropshire, Esq;
 --- 14. ex.
 420 Thomas Lydell of Ravenholme-Castle in the Bishopric
 of Durham, Esq; November 2.
 421 Richard Lawday of Exeter in Devonshire, Esq; --- 9. ex.
 422 Thomas Chamberlain of Wickham in Oxfordshire,
 Esq; February 4.
 423 Henry Hunlock of Wingerworth in Derbyshire, Esq;
 --- 28.
 424 Thomas Badd of Cames-Oysells in Hampshire, Esq;
 --- 29. ex.
 425 Richard Crane of Wood-Rising in Norfolk, Esq;
 March 20. ex.
 426 Samuel Danvers of Culworth in Northamptonshire,
 Esq; --- 21.
 427 Henry Anderson of Penley in Hertfordshire, Esq;
 July 3, 1643.

- 428 William Vavasour of — in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 17. ex.
- 429 Sir Henry Jones of Abermarles in Caermarthenshire, Kt. --- 25. ex.
- 430 Sir Edward Walgrave of Hever-Castle in Kent, Kt. Baron Waldgrave, August 1. I. ex.
- 431 Thomas Haggerston of Haggerston in Northumberland, Esq; --- 15.
- 432 John Pate of Syfonby in Leicestershire, Esq; October 28. ex.
- 433 John Bale of Carleton-Curlew in Leicestershire, Esq; November 9. ex.
- 434 Brian O Neale in Com' Dublin' in the Kingdom of Ireland, --- 13.
- 435 Willoughby Hickman of Gainsborough in Lincolnshire, Esq; --- 16.
- 436 John Butler of Bramfield in Hertfordshire, Esq; December 7. ex.
- 437 Edward Bathurst of Lechlade in Gloucestershire, Esq; --- 9.
- 438 Edward Acton of Aldenham in Shropshire, Esq; January 17.
- 439 Sir Francis Hawley of Buckland in Somersetshire, Kt. now Baron Lord Hawley, March 14. I.
- 440 John Preston of the Mannor — in Furnesse in Lancashire, Esq; April 1, 1644. ex.
- 441 John Webb of Odstock in Wiltshire, Esq; --- 2.
- 442 Thomas Prestwick of Holme in Lancashire, Esq; --- 25. ex.
- 443 Henry Williams of Guernevet in Brecknockshire, Esq; May 4. ex.
- 444 Gervase Lucas of Fenton in Lincolnshire, Esq; -- 20. ex.
- 445 Robert Thorold of Hawley in Lincolnshire, Esq; June 14. ex.
- 446 John Scudamore of Bolingham in Herefordshire, Esq; July 23. ex.
- 447 Sir Henry Bard of Stanes in Middlesex, Kt. since Viscount Bellamont, October 8. I. ex.
- 448 Sir Richard Vivian of Treloowarren in Cornwall, Kt. February 12.
- 449 William Van-Colster of Amsterdam in Holland, Esq; — 28. ex.
- 450 William Boreel of Amsterdam aforesaid, Mar. 21. ex. Sir Hugh Ackland of Columb-John in Devonshire, Kt. with precedence before all Baronets created after 1644, created January 21, 1677.

Sir

- Sir Francis Edwards of Shrewsbury, Kt. to take place of all Baronets created after 1644, created April 22, 1672.
 451 George Carteret of Metesches in the Isle of Jersey, Esq; Lord Carteret, May 9, 1645. E.
 452 Thomas Windibanke of Haynes in Wiltshire, Esq; November 25.
 453 Benjamin Wright of Dennington in Suffolk, Esq; whose patent was superseded by the King's warrant, February 7.
 454 Edward Charleton of Hesleyfide in Northumberland, March 6. ex.
 455 Sir Richard Willis of Fen-Ditton in Cambridgeshire, June 11, 1646. ex.
 456 Sir Evan Lloyd of Yale in Denbighshire, Kt. ex.

BOOK XXII.

The COMMONWEALTH of ENGLAND.

THE House of Commons passes an act to forbid the *Ann. C.* proclaiming *Charles Steuart*, commonly called the 1648-9. Prince of *Wales*, or any other person.

The Prince of *Wales*, then at the *Hague*, takes the title *February*. of King, under the name of *Charles II*.

He is proclaimed at *Edinburgh*.

The House of Commons votes the House of Lords to be useless and dangerous, and therefore to be abolished.

The Commons alone assume the name of Parliament; and vote, that the Kingly office should be abolished, as unnecessary, burdensome, and dangerous; and take upon themselves the Supreme Authority, under the title of *Representatives of the Commonwealth*.

James, Duke of *Hamilton*, *Henry Rich*, Earl of *Holland*, Mar. 6. and *Arthur*, Lord *Capel*, are condemned to death by the new High-Court, for having appeared in arms against the Parliament, and are beheaded the 9th of *March* following.

An act is passed for abolishing Kingly Government, and turning the Monarchy into a Commonwealth. 17.

The new King gives *James Graham*, Marquis of *Montrose*, a commission to raise forces in *Germany*, and invade *Scotland*. 1649. April.

Dr. *Dorislaus*, who had been one of the Counsellors at the *May 3.*

Ann. C. the trial of King *Charles I.*, and was now the Parliament's agent at the *Hague*, is assassinated there, by 12 English and Scotch Cavaliers.

18. The Levellers rise up in arms at *Burford*, but are dispersed, by *Fairfax's* order.

Oliver Cromwell is made Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

June 21. *James Butler*, Marquis of *Ormond* (after having taken *Dundalk*, *Newry*, *Trim*, *Drogheda*, &c.) lays siege to *Dublin*; whereupon, *Cromwell* sends a reinforcement to the garrison of that City.

Aug. 2. Colonel *Jones*, Governor of *Dublin Castle*, makes a sally, and defeats the Marquis of *Ormond*.

Oliver Cromwell lands at *Dublin* with 15,000 men.

The siege of *Londonderry* is raised, by Sir *Richard Coot*.

Sept. 11. *Cromwell* takes *Drogheda* by storm, and becomes also master of *Kilkenny*.

King *Charles*, instead of going to *Ireland*, as he at first designed, retires into the Isle of *Jersey*.

October. George *Windram* comes to him there, from the Estates of *Scotland*: His Majesty receives him graciously, and names *Breda* as the properest place for treating with the *Scottish* Commissioners.

Oliver Cromwell pushes his conquests into *Ireland*.

1649-50. King *Charles* presses the Marquis of *Montross* to hasten Jan. 30. his expedition against *Scotland*, that he might not be tied, if possible, to the *Covenanters* conditions.

Mar. 11. The *Scottish* Commissioners arrive at *Breda*, and enter into negotiations with the King, which lasted till June following.

25. John *Williams*, Archbishop of *York*, dies.

1650. James *Graham*, Marquis of *Montross*, lands in *Scotland*, April. but is defeated, and taken prisoner.

29. And being tried, and condemned, is hanged and quartered at *Edinburgh*.

May 20. June. The treaty between King *Charles* and *Scotland* being concluded, his Majesty imarks at *Scheveling*, for *Scotland*, but is obliged to take the *Covenant*, before he is suffered to land.

The Parliament of *England* resolves to make war against *Scotland*, and recall *Cromwell* from *Ireland*.

21. Thomas, Lord *Fairfax*, resigns his post of General, and Oliver *Cromwell* is made General in his room.

The *Scots* raise an army of above 30,000 men, under the command of General *David Leslie*.

July 22. Cromwell enters into *Scotland*, with an army of above 19,000 men.

He

Book XXII. *The COMMONWEALTH.* 327

He meets with great difficulties in this war, and prepares, *Ann. C.*
for want of provisions, to return into *England.* *August.*

But the *Scotch* pursuing him, he engages them at *Dunbar*, *Sept. 3.*
and entirely defeats them.

Cromwell becomes master of *Edinburgh*, and besieges the
Castle.

Disturbances arise in *Scotland* upon occasion of the two *Ot.* &
parties, of the *Resolutioners* and *Protesters.* *Novemb.*

The King publishes a very extraordinary declaration to
gain the *Protesters*; but this declaration making him rather
lose the confidence of both parties, he withdraws from
St. John's-town, but is brought back thither again, and
better treated.

William-Henry, Prince of *Orange*, after King *Willim III.* *Nov. 4.*
of *England*, is born, eight days after his father's death.

The Castle of *Edinburgh* surrenders to *Cromwell.* *Decemb.*

King *Charles II.* is crowned at *Scoon*, in *Scotland.* *1650-1.*

Oliver St. John, and *Walter Strickland*, are sent to *Hol-* *Jan. 1.*
land, to negotiate an union between *England* and the *States*,
but do not succeed.

A new army is raised in *Scotland*, into which the *Hamil-* *1651.*
tonians and the King's Friends are admitted. *Mar. &*

The King puts himself at the head of the *Scots* army, *April.*
consisting of 15,000 foot, and 3000 horse, and incamps at *June.*
Torwood; where *Cromwell* advances, but dares not attack
him, as he was strongly intrenched.

Cromwell conveys his army by sea into the County of *Fife*, *July 3.*
and gets behind the King.

Whereupon his Majesty enters *England*, and comes to *31.*
Carlisle, where he is proclaimed by his army, but does not *Aug. 6.*
receive the assistance he expected.

Cromwell follows him, and leaves Major-General *George*
Monk to command in *Scotland*; where *Monk* becomes master
of *Stirling.* *1651.*

The King stops at *Worcester*, and is proclaimed there. *22.*

James Stanley, Earl of *Derby*, is defeated, near *Wiggan*,
with 1500 horse, but finds means to escape to the King. *25.*

Monk takes *Dundee*, in *Scotland*; and, the same day, *Sept. 1.*
Cromwell arrives at *Worcester.*

The battle of *Worcester* is fought, in which the King is
entirely routed by *Cromwell*: His Majesty escapes, with
great difficulty, and hides himself in the royal oak. *3.*

Cromwell returns to *London.* *21.*

James Stanley, Earl of *Derby*, having been taken prisoner *Oct. 15.*
at the battle of *Worcester*, is beheaded at *Bolton.*

- Ann. C.* The King safely arrives in *France*, after having run incredible dangers, and crossed the best part of *England*, from *Worcester* to *Brightelmstead in Sussex*, where he embarked.
20. 22. *Jersey, Barbadoes, and other Islands*, are taken for the Novemb. Parliament.
- January.* The Parliament makes an act, prohibiting the importation of all foreign commodities, except upon *English bottoms*, or such as were of the country from whence the commodities came; which gives rise to the war between *England* and *Holland*.
- Dec. 25.* The *States* send an embassy to *England* to sollicit a revocation of that act, and to try to avert the war; accordingly, negotiations are entered into at *London*, but without success.
- The *Scots* agree to an union with *England*, in one Commonwealth, without a King, or House of Lords.
- 1652.* An engagement happens between the *English* and *Dutch* May 17. fleets, near *Dover*.
- June 3.* The Ambassadors of the *States* use all their endeavours to pacify the Parliament, but in vain.
- July.* Whereupon, the *States* recall their Ambassadors; and manifesto's are published by both Nations.
- Aug. 2.* Admiral *Martin Van Trump* puts to sea, with a fleet of 70 sail, which is dispersed by a tempest.
16. An engagement happens between Admiral *de Ruyter* and Sir *George Aylough* in the Channel.
- Van Gallen* falls upon the *English* fleet in the Mediterranean, and is killed during the engagement.
- The *English* are formidable at sea, and take great numbers of *Dutch* ships.
- Nov. 29.* Admiral *Van Trump* encounters Admiral *Blake* in the Channel, and hath a sharp fight with him; but the *Dutch* get the advantage.
- 1652-3. A furious engagement happens between the two fleets, Feb. 18, which lasts three days, with great loss on both sides.
- 19, 20. The *States*, being weary of the war, sue for peace.
1653. Apr. 20. The officers of the army, by *Cromwell's* direction, petition that the Parliament might be dissolved; but the Parliament refuses to dissolve itself.
20. *Cromwell* doth, by his own authority, turn all the Members out of the House, and dissolves the Parliament.
- May.* He makes choice of 144 persons to be the representatives of the people, and to take care of the Government.

The Dutch and English fleets have an engagement, near *Ann. C.*
the Downs, in which the Dutch are worsted. June 2.

The new Parliament meets, and *Cromwell* delegates the *July 4.*
 Supreme Power to them. This Parliament is, in derision,
 called *Praisegod Barebone's* Parliament, from a famous
 Speaker in it, of that name. And, in pursuance of an
 ordinance for uniting *England* and *Scotland*, the latter sent
 30 Representatives to this Parliament. A like ordinance
 was soon after made, for the sending of 30 Members
 from *Ireland*.

Another fight happens between the *English* and *Dutch* *29.*
 fleets, in which Admiral *Van Trump* is killed.

A peace is negotiated between the two contending
 Powers at *London*.

The Parliament resigns the Sovereign Power into the *Dec. 12.*
 hands of *Cromwell*, and of the Council of Officers.

OLIVER CROMWELL PROTECTOR.

OLIVER CROMWELL is chosen, by the Council
 of Officers, Protector of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ire-*
land.

He takes an oath to observe the *Instrument of Government*, *16.*
 which was comprehended in forty-two articles : And a
 Council was therein appointed for him.

A treaty of peace between *Cromwell* and the *United Pro-*
vinces is signed. April 5.

Several conspiracies are formed against the Protector, par-
 ticularly by *John Gerard*, and *Mr. Vowel*, for which they
 are both executed.

A peace is signed between *England* and *Portugal*; and, *July 10.*
 even on the same day, *Don Pantaleon Sa*, the *Portuguese*
 Ambassador's brother, is beheaded, in *London*, for a mur-
 der.

Prince *Maurice* is lost in a hurricane in *America* : Prince
Rupert arrives at *Nantes*, with a few ships, which King
Charles sells to the King of *France*. Both King *Charles*
 and Prince *Rupert* go and reside at *Cologne*.

Lieutenant-General *Fleetwood* is made Governor of *Ire-*
land, in the room of *Henry Ireton*, who died *November 27,*
1651. *Fleetwood* had married his widow *Bridget*, *Cromwell's*
 eldest daughter.

Cromwell calls a new Parliament.

The Parliament meets.

Sept. 3.
 Such

Ann. C. Such persons as refused to sign an engagement to be faithful to the Protector, are excluded from this Parliament.

1654-5. *Cromwell* dissolves the Parliament, after they had voted *Jan. 22.* him and his successors a revenue of 200,000*l.* a year.

Towards the end of the year 1654, the Protector puts out a fleet of 30 sail, commanded by *William Penn*, having on board 9000 men and a troop of horse, under the command of *Mr. Venable*, in order to go and seize *Hispaniola*. They sail from *Portsmouth December 27.*

Febr. Conspiracies are formed against Oliver's Person and Government, by *J. Wildman, &c.*

Mar. 11. A design is laid for two insurrections, one in the North, under the conduct of *John Wilmot, Earl of Rochester*, and the other in the West, by *Sir Joseph Wagstaff*; the latter surprises *Salisbury*, but is immediately defeated, and *Colonel John Penruddock, Captain Jones, and Hugh Grove*, are taken, and executed.

1655. *Cromwell* resolves upon a war with *Spain*.

April. The *English* make an attempt upon *St. Domingo*, the chief town in the Isle of *Hispaniola*; but failing of success

May 7. there, they go and make themselves masters of *Jamaica*.

Oz. 23. The antient treaties between *England* and *France* are renewed.

The war is carried on with *Spain*.

25. Oliver divides *England* into 11 districts, and constitutes Major-Generals over each.

1656. He calls a new Parliament of the three Kingdoms.

July 26. The Parliament meets, and is well-affected to *Cromwell*.

Sept. 7. *Admiral Blake* takes, near *Cadiz*, two *Spanish* ships richly loaden.

1656-7. *Miles Sindercombe*, a Leveller, conspires to assassinate the *Jan. 19.* Protector; but being discovered by some of his accomplices, he is condemned, and found dead in prison.

Feb. 9. *Mar. 13.* A league offensive and defensive is concluded between *France* and *Cromwell*, in which it is agreed, that *Dunkirk* should be besieged. In pursuance of this league, *James, Duke of York*, and the rest of the *English*, are forced to leave *France*.

1657. Several Anabaptists engage in a plot against *Cromwell's* life, for which many are imprisoned.

Apr. 10. *Admiral Blake* burns six *Spanish* Galleons at the *Canaries*:

20. He dies in his return to *England*.

Sept. 4. King *Charles* goes to reside at *Bruges* in *Flanders*, in consequence of a league concluded by him with the King of *Spain*,

Book XXII. OLIVER CROMWELL, Protector. 331

Spain, who allows pensions to him, and his brother *Henry Ann. G.* Duke of Gloucester.

The Parliament offers *Cromwell* the title of King, but (though he much liked it) through his friends persuasions, he refuses to accept of it. April.

Whereupon he is confirmed in his Protectorship by an Act called the Humble petition and advice. May 8. 25.

Cromwell is solemnly inaugurated in his dignity of June 26. Protector.

The Parliament is prorogued.

Oliver sends 6,000 men into France to join the French Sept. 23. army.

They take fort *Mardyke* near *Dunkirk*, which is delivered to the English. Oct. 23.

Mr. *Lockhart* Ambassador to France, succeeds Sir *John Novemb.* *Reynolds* in the command of the 6000 English. 1657-8.

The Parliament meets again, with the addition of a new House, called the other House, framed by *Cromwell* to supply the place of the House of Lords. Jan. 20.

All the elected Members of the former Parliament, who had refused to sign the engagement, and been therefore excluded, are admitted into this; and they being above 100 in number, and Republicans and Presbyterians, give *Cromwell* trouble, and form designs against him.

They call the authority of the other House in question, that it might not have a negative upon them; but it is supported by the Protector.

They proceed further, to examine the validity of the humble petition and advice.

Whereupon *Cromwell* dissolves this Parliament. Feb. 4.

J. *Lambert* is turned out of his post of Lieutenant-General, for acting against *Cromwell*, and succeeded by *Fleetwood*.

The power of the Major-Generals is abridged. 1658.

Henry *Cromwell* the Protector's second son is made Lieutenant of Ireland. April.

Conspiracies are formed by the Royalists against *Cromwell*, particularly by *John Mordaunt*, Sir *Henry Slingsby* and Dr. *John Hewst*.

The former finds means to escape, but Sir *Henry Slingsby* and Dr. *Hewet* are condemned and executed, July 8.

Oftend is like to be surprized by the French and English, but they are disappointed.

Dunkirk is besieged by the French, and the 6000 English, under the command of Mr. *Lockhart* and Major-General *Morgan*. The

Ann. C. The battle of the Dunes is fought, in which the Spaniards are defeated.
June 14.

25. Dunkirk is taken and delivered to Cromwell: Mr. Lockhart is made Governor of it.

Sept. 3. Oliver Cromwell dies in the 60th year of his age.

4. His eldest son Richard Cromwell is proclaimed Protector: Whose first care is to engage General Monk into his interest.

Nov. 24. The funeral of Oliver Cromwell is solemnized.

OLIVER CROMWELL's Descent and Character.

Life of
Cromwell.
Appendix.
p. 427.
Bates.

Warwick's
Mem.
p. 247.

Cromwell's family was originally of Glamorganshire in Wales, and called Williams, one of which marrying a Sister of Cromwell Vicar-General in the Reign of Henry VIII, assumed the name of Cromwell, and transmitted it to his posterity. Oliver Cromwell was born at Hunting-ton, April 25, 1599. His education had nothing extraordinary, nor is it known how he spent his time before he arrived at the age of thirty-five years, when he began seriously to reform his manners and lead a very regular life, without indulging himself in any indecent or ill action. Probably, he then, if not sooner, engaged in the Presbyterian Party. The reputation he had acquired of an honest man and good Christian, and doubtless his principles concerning the government, were the cause of his being returned for the town of Cambridge, to the Parliament which met the 3d of November 1640. He sat two years without being distinguished, not having a genius for speaking to place him upon a level with some of the Members of that Parliament. His delivery was ungraceful, and his speeches prolix and confused. It was probably, in these two years that he was gained by the Independents, and listed in their party, though concealed under the name of rigid Presbyterians. Agreeably to the views and interests of that party, Cromwell affected an extraordinary zeal for Presbyterianism, and the liberty of the Nation against the usurpations of the Court, in which he followed the directions of the then leading Members of the House. So, when the civil war began in 1642, he had a Post in the army, as a man entirely devoted to the House of Commons, of which he was Member. He was at first a Major of Horse, and though he was two and forty years of age before he had drawn a sword, he was so distinguished by his valour in that office, that he had soon after

a regt.

a regiment given him. There was not in the army an officer that faced danger with more intrepidity, or that more ardently fought occasions to signalize himself. His reputation increased to such a degree, that he became Major-General, then Lieutenant-General under *Fairfax*, and at last his successor. His great talents for war gave him occasion to show that he had no less genius for civil affairs. He entered into the deepest designs of his party, and at last, became one of the principal leaders, advancing here with the same rapidity as in the army. It was he, who accusing the Earl of *Manchester* of not having done his duty in the second battle of *Newbury*, broke the ice, and gave occasion to the new model of the army, which was the first step to the triumph of the Independents. From that time, he was looked upon as the chief of the Independent Party, and properly as General of the army, *Fairfax* acting only as directed by *Cromwell*. I shall no farther insist upon what has been related at large, (says *Rapin*) but only observe, that the troops believed themselves invincible under his command, and that he was never once forced to turn his back. The victory gained over Prince *Rupert* at *Marston-Moor*, was chiefly ascribed to his valour. The reduction of *Ireland*, in less than a year, greatly increased his fame, and the battles of *Dunbar*, and *Worcester* carried it to the highest degree.

Let us now view him in his government after he was Protector. If his government be compared with those of the two last Kings, there will appear a very great disparity with regard to the glory and reputation of the English Nation. *James I.* and *Charles I.* seemed to have studied to disgrace the English name, whereas *Cromwell* in the space of four or five years carried the glory of his nation as far as possible, and in that respect was not inferior to *Elizabeth*. He made himself equally dreaded by *France*, and Hist. p. 814 *Spain*, and the *United-Provinces*. These three States courted his alliance and friendship with such ardor, that they may be said to cringe to him beyond what was becoming.

Charles Gustavus, King of *Sweden*, thought himself honoured in being his ally and particular friend. His greatest enemies cannot help praising him on this account.

As for his morals and conduct, as a private person, they may be said to have been very regular. He was guilty of *Welwood*, none of the vices to which men are commonly addicted. Gluttony, drunkenness, gaming, luxury, avarice, were vices with which he was never reproached. On the contrary,

trary, it is certain, he promoted virtuous men ; as, on the other hand, he was inflexible in his punishments of vice and ill actions. It is true, his own preservation obliged him sometimes to employ men of ill principles, but this is not uncommon to those, who are at the head of a Government.

Though, as to his Religion, he was an Independent, his principle was to leave every man at liberty in the Religion he had chosen, and never persecuted any person on that account. He even connived at the private meetings of those who remained attached to the Church of *England*, though he was well informed of them. If they were not favoured with the free and publick exercise of their Religion, it was because they were considered by him as Royalists, always ready to form plots in the King's favour, and from whom, consequently, he had great reason to secure himself. Though he was in the sentiments of the Independents, and therefore averse to all union with the national Church, he however considered all Protestant Churches, as part of the Protestant Church in general ; and without aiming to establish Independency and Fanaticism by force and violence, he expressed on all occasions, an extreme zeal for the Protestant Religion. Dr. Burnet, in the *History of his own Times*, says, that if *Cromwell* had accepted the title of King, he intended to establish a Council, in imitation of the congregation *de propaganda fide* at *Rome*, to have an eye to what passed all over the world, with regard to the interests of the Protestant Religion. He adds, that a fund was to have been settled upon this Council, of ten thousand pounds a year, for ordinary emergencies, besides a salary of five hundred pounds a-piece to four Secretaries.

It may also be added, to *Cromwell's* honour, that never man was better acquainted with the inward springs of human actions, though he seemed not to have made it his particular study : Never man had more address to manage people, and lead them to his ends, nor more natural capacity for affairs, which had received no assistance from learning ; for he scarce remembred the little *Latin* he had brought from school : In a word, never man chose at once his most advantagious course with more judgment, or executed a design with more vigour and readiness. Such, in short, were the virtues and shining qualities of *Cromwell* ; but we must not conceal the vices and imperfections with which he is charged.

This charge turns solely upon three points. The first, that through a boundless ambition, he seized a Government

to which he had no right. The second, that he maintained himself in his post, by an excessive dissimulation. The third, that he put to death many of his private enemies, without any regard to laws immemorially practised in England. Upon these three articles I shall offer some considerations to the Reader, to assist him in forming a just idea of *Cromwell's* character.

Upon the first, it must be considered, that though the Royalist Authors traduce *Cromwell's* memory as much as possible, and though in particular, the action by which he was possessed of the Government, is the principal foundation of all their complaints, it is certain, the King was no way interested in the change it produced. It was not *Charles II*, but a Republican Parliament, that was deprived of the supreme power by *Cromwell*. Though he had been subjected to this Parliament; though he had miscarried, and himself been ruined by his ambition, the King's affairs would have received no advantage, since the Parliament was not less his enemy than *Cromwell*. Of what therefore do they complain with respect to the King? It must be one of these two things, either that *Cromwell* was too wise, to suffer himself to be supplanted by all the efforts of the Royalists; or that, after seizing the supreme power, he did not restore it to the King, to whom alone it belonged; that is, that *Cromwell* did not at once turn Royalist, and entirely change his principles. But this charge lies no more against *Cromwell*, than against all the Independents and Presbyterians, who were at least three parts in four of the Kingdom, and who, no more than *Cromwell*, thought it proper to declare for the King.

As for the Republicans, they have not left us many writings on their side. The only *Memoirs* of that party, which I know of, are those of *Edmund Ludlow*. It appears there, that the Republicans were enraged against *Cromwell*, and deemed him the most perfidious of men. ^{T. II. Burnet, p. 65.} This is not very strange, since he had wrested from that Parliament the sovereign power, seized by these Republicans without any lawful authority. But, what was this Parliament? It was an assembly of Independents, Anabaptists, Fanatics, Enthusiasts, and others of no Religion, who, under colour of establishing a free Commonwealth, held the Nation in servitude; who, to confirm their own authority, had treated their fellow-members with unheard of violence, and dared to embrue their hands in the blood of the late King, at a time when he had almost granted every thing that

that was desired ; who, in short, were induſtrious to break the union of the Church, to subvert all Religion, or introduce the most ridiculous and extravagant one. Was it therefore more eligible for *England* to be governed by these men, than by a *Cromwell*? If, therefore, *Cromwell* be blameable, it is not for dissolving a Parliament, which certainly deserved to continue no longer, and had strangely abused the power they had assumed. But if, after the dissolution of that Parliament, *Cromwell* had restored the King, (for this, in all appearance, is what the Royalists would have) he had drawn upon himself the hatred and curses of all *England*, which, at that time, was by no means disposed to such a restoration, whatever the Royalists may say. He was, therefore, to do one of these three things ; either to restore the King, contrary both to his own principles, and to those of the Presbyterians and Independents ; or to abandon the State to a horrible Anarchy, which must have followed, if he had left things in the state they were in after the dissolution ; or to take himself the administration of the Government, unless he had intrusted it with some other person, which, in respect of the justice of the action, had been the same. Let it now be examined, which was most advantagious for *England*, considering her circumstances, and whether it was not better, he should himself take the Government, than attempt a restoration, in which he could never have succeeded ? Since his sole support was the army, which at that time was very opposite to the King, not to mention the opposition he would have met from the Republicans and Presbyterians. On supposition that he was in the right to dissolve the Parliament, was it not also better for him to assume the Government, than relinquish the State to a fatal Anarchy ? Those who pretend, he had long before projected his advancement, speak only by conjecture. They consider not, that they had never been in a condition to form such a design, before the battle of *Worcester* ; nor that this Parliament, which he dissolved, had, in seeking to ruin him, reduced him to a necessity of destroying them, for his own preservation.

But what cannot be justified in his conduct, is, his throwing himself, from the beginning of the Parliament, into a violent party, which aimed at the ruin of Church and State ; his directing afterwards that party ; and his being the chief author of the violences put upon the Parliament and the King. This, however, is slightly passed over, because it is common to him with the whole Independent

party ;

party; and yet, it is, in my opinion, the only thing he can justly be reproached with, and on which it is hardly possible to excuse him.

The second charge against him is, his excessive dissimulation; but here we are to distinguish. If it be true, as is pretended, though without proof, that he carried his dissimulation so far, as to mock God and Religion, by expressing a piety and devotion which he had not, and by making long prayers, full of seeming zeal. If it be true, that his mouth uttered what his heart never meant, no man ought to endeavour to vindicate him. But his strong bias to En-^{Welwood,} Warwick's enthusiasm is well known; and who can affirm, it was rather ^{Mem.} Burnet,
^{P. 79.} out of hypocrisy than real persuasion? We are not rashly to ascribe to men inward motives, which no mortal can know. His dissimulation practised for the better management of the several parties, all equally his enemies, has nothing that I can see very blameable in it, unless it was a crime, not to leave it in the power of his enemies to destroy him with ease. I shall just mention some of his methods, to maintain himself in his dignity, by which it may be judged, whether Cromwell's dissimulation is to be justly imputed to him as a crime.

The Parliament he dissolved, was composed of Independents, Republicans, Enthusiasts, or Fifth-Monarchy-men. If this Parliament had continued longer, things would have been carried to the last extremity. They began to talk of pulling down the Churches, [discharging the Tithes,] destroying the Clergy, and every thing that looked like the union of a national Church. The Presbyterians, who knew this, were in continual apprehensions of their executing their designs, and consequently, the dissolution of this Parliament was considered by them, as a great happiness. Cromwell to gain their confidence, positively promised, ^{Whitelock, p. 560, 681.} he would maintain their ministry on the foot of the present establishment, and kept his word, though he was far from being Presbyterian. By this means, the Presbyterians were attached to his interest, by reason of their dread to fall again under the tyranny of the Independents.

In the Republican party were two sorts of men, whom it was very difficult to govern. The one were Deists, or men very indifferent as to Religion, who acted only upon the principles of civil liberty. The others were Enthusiasts, who expected every day when Christ should appear to reign upon earth. These were the most difficult to manage, because they would not bear reason, when it con-

Id. p. 68.

Phillips,
p. 631.Burnet,
p. 68.Burnet's
Hist. p. 65.
66, 71.

tradicted their headstrong and violent zeal. *Cromwell's* accepting the Protectorship, was considered by them as a step to Kingship, to which they were such enemies, that they affirmed it to be the great Antichrist, that hindered Christ's reign upon earth. *Cromwell* found means so to divide these two parties, that all combinations betwixt them for his ruin, became impossible. To the Deists, he made himself merry with the extravagant zeal of the Fanaticks; and to these last, he talked of the others as of Heathens and Infidels. But as the Enthusiaſts were the most obstinate, he intimated to some of them, that he would rather have taken a Shepherd's staff than the Protectorship, had it not been to prevent every thing from running into confusion: That he would resign this dignity with more joy than he accepted it, as soon as things should be settled: That nothing was more contrary to his inclination, and principles, than a grandeur which obliged him to assume an outward superiority over his fellow labourers. To convince them of what he said, he frequently called them into his closet, and shutting the door, made them sit covered, familiarly talking with them as his equals. Commonly these discourses ended in a long prayer. It is not to be doubted, but there was in this much dissimulation. The question is, whether it was so criminal as it is pretended?

He had likewise Chaplains of all sorts. So, hinting sometimes to one, sometimes to another, that he was not averse to their principles; the report was spread throughout the whole party, and made each hope for an advantagious change.

He took care to have spies amongst all the parties, and was thereby fully informed of what was contriving against his person or government. Among others, he gained Sir Richard Willis, Chancellor Hyde's agent, for conveying the King's orders to his friends in England. All the Royalists confided in Willis, knowing he received the King's orders, and yet he betrayed them. But to keep the correspondence more secret, *Cromwell* assured him, that the informations from him should only be used to disconcert the plots of his enemies, that none might ever suffer for them; and if he imprisoned any of them, it should only be for a little time, and on other pretences. By that means, he defeated their designs, as by accident, in committing them to prison for supposed crimes, and releasing them when their measures were broken.

He

He sometimes intimated a willingness to treat with the King. Probably his aim was to engage the Royalists to offer propositions, which would have given him opportunity to amuse them, and prevented any conspiracies against his person; for he was informed from several parts of designs to assassinate him. Wherefore he affected to speak Burnet, publicly of assassinations with the utmost detestation, and ^{P. 65.} to declare, he would never begin them, but if an attempt was made upon his life, and miscarried, he should not scruple to use the same method, and that he did not want instruments to execute it, nor money to reward them. This declaration kept the Royalists in awe, through a fear of their own danger, or that of the King and Royal Family.

If this conduct of *Cromwell* be considered impartially, it will, doubtless, appear, that his dissimulation and artifices for his own preservation, were not so criminal as they have been represented. What has most offended those who speak of them with most passion, is, that they were proper to disconcert the projects of his enemies. The dissimulation of Queen *Elizabeth*, for the same reason, has been extolled, though she used it only for her own preservation.

The third and last charge against *Cromwell*, is, cruelty, for having, whilst Protector, put some men to death, for conspiring against his person and government. That is, according to this reproach, he should have patiently suffered the plots against him, and when one failed, liberty should have been given for a second and a third, till some one had succeeded. This deserves no confutation. But to shew, that *Cromwell* was not for an unnecessary effusion of blood, we need only recite what is owned by the Earl of *Clarendon* in his History, who assures, that when it was proposed in a council of officers that there might be a general massacre of the Royalists, *Cromwell* would never consent to it.

To finish *Cromwell's* character, I will add, that in the beginning of the Long-Parliament, he was a Presbyterian. After that, he threw himself into the Independent party, and was even one of their leaders, and affected to be of the number of the Enthusiasts. But when he had accepted the Protectorship, he was neither Presbyterian, nor Independent, nor Republican, nor Enthusiast. As he had to manage all these different Parties, who were equally opposite to him, he was not to appear an enemy to any in par-

ticular, and this management furnishes convincing proofs of his great ability.

It is nevertheless certain, that *Cromwell* was very much hated, while he lived, by all the parties then in *England*, though they could not help fearing and esteeming him. But if it be now considered, that the prejudices against him are not so strong as they were then, it will be found that the hatred of him was owing to interest, and founded chiefly upon his ability to disconcert the measures and designs of all the parties. This general hatred is solely referred to his principal action; that is to the usurpation of the Government, which equally disgusted the Royalists, Presbyterians, and Republicans. The Royalists thereby saw their hopes more desperate than ever of the King's restoration. The Presbyterians could hardly expect, by their intrigues, to render themselves once more superior in the Parliament, after the dissolution. The Republicans were enraged to see the supreme power, which they had assumed, wrested from them. It is therefore no wonder, that he has incurred so much censure, since all the people of *England*, that is, these three parties, were equally concerned to asperse him. It was not for the enormity of the action, but because by his advancement, each party despaired of acquiring the superiority over the rest. This is what has drawn from many writers, expressions so injurious to his memory. The Lord Clarendon speaks thus of him, and his usurpation. *Without doubt no man with mere wickedness ever attempted any thing, or brought to pass what he desired more wickedly, more in the face and contempt of Religion and moral honesty.* Yet wickedness as great as his, could never have accomplished those designs, without the assistance of a great spirit, an admirable circumspection and sagacity, and a most magnanimous resolution. It is easily seen, that this wickedness is referred only to his usurpation of the Government. In a word, (continues the same author) as he was guilty of many crimes, against which damnation is denounced, and for which hell-fire is prepared, so he had some good qualities which have caused the memory of some men in all ages to be celebrated, and he will be looked upon by posterity as a brave wicked man. Here the author, no doubt, has an eye to the murder of *Charles I.* In which *Cromwell* was too deeply concerned for me to pretend to excuse him. I shall only observe, that this accusation is not peculiar to him, but is common to him, with the whole independent Parliament.

To form a just and rational idea of *Cromwell's* character, his conduct and actions in themselves, must be examined, and joined to the juncture of the time, independently of the opinions of his enemies. We have no other Historians of those times than the Royalists, who have laid down certain principles, by which he is condemned. But, it must be observed, these principles were not generally received, in *England*, during his life. What can never be entirely excused in him, is the death of *Charles I.*, to which he contributed to the utmost of his power, and which will be an indelible blot upon his memory. Another principle, ^{Burnet,}
_{P. 79.} and of which he made great use, is likewise to be condemned in him: Which was, that moral laws were only binding on ordinary occasions, but might be dispensed with upon extraordinary cases, which is absolutely false. His usurpation of the Government has been already considered, and the Reader is left to his judgment. I shall only observe, that the confusion which prevailed in *England*, soon after the death of *Cromwell*, clearly shews the necessity of this usurpation.

In general, it cannot be denied, that *Cromwell* was one of the greatest men of his age, if it is considered, that without the advantages of birth or fortune, he rose so near a throne, that it was in his power to mount it. History furnishes very few instances of this kind.

Cromwell's death was followed with so many alterations in the Government, that the interval between that and the restoration, may be justly called a time of true Anarchy. *Cromwell* should have had a successor like himself, to finish what he had so ably begun. But two so great men are not commonly found so near one another, nor often in the same age.

By OLIVER CROMWELL.

Charles Howard of Gilleland, was created Baron *Gilleland*, and Viscount *Howard of Morpeth*. *Ann. C.*
1657.
20 July.

RICHARD CROMWELL, PROTECTOR.

RICHARD calls a Parliament consisting of two ^{Decemb.}
Houses.

He forms the project of rendering himself Master of the ^{1658-9.}
Council and army; but the principal officers of the army ^{January.} combine against him.

- Ann. C.* To break his measures, the Great Council of the army is formed at *London*; they present a petition to Protector *Richard*, who rejects it.
27. The Parliament meets.
- Feb.* Debates pass in the House of Commons about the other *March.* House, and the *Scotch* and *Irish* Members.
1659. The question is decided in favour of the Members of
28. the other House.
- An Act is made to recognize *Richard* for Protector of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*.
- April 6.* The officers present a petition to *Richard*, in which they demand *Charles Fleetwood* for General; but their petition is rejected.
- The House of Commons votes against the holding any Council of officers during the Session of the Parliament.
22. The officers force *Richard* to dissolve the Parliament.
- Richard*, upon that losing all his credit and authority, the officers seize the Government, and chuse *Fleetwood* for their General; and having cashiered Colonel *Ingoldsby*, *Goff*, *Whaley*, Lord *Falconberg*, and *Charles Howard*, they reinstate *J. Lambert*.
- Next they restore the long Parliament, dissolved by *Cromwell*, in 1653; which Parliament is called in derision, *The Rump*. But such Members as in the year 1648, refused to sign the engagement are excluded.
- The new Parliament sends *Thomas Clarges* to *George Monk*, who submits to the authority of the Parliament.
- May 12.* The officers present a petition to the Parliament.
13. *Richard Cromwell* submits to the Powers in being; whereupon the Parliament gives him 20,000*l.* and requires him to remove from *Whitehall*.

P A R L I A M E N T.

- Henry Cromwell* is recalled from *Ireland*, and *Edmund Ludlow* is appointed Commander of the forces there.
- June.* Differences begin to arise between the Parliament and the army.
18. The Parliament continues the monthly tax imposed upon the whole Kingdom by the Parliament which sat in 1656.
- The Royalists form a plot in favour of King *Charles II.* which the Presbyterians come into.
- The King repairs to *Calais*, and then to *St. Malo's*, to be nearer *England*, if the plot succeeded; but the Royalists are betrayed by Sir *Richard Willis*.
- Sir *George Booth* seizes *Chester*, and publishes a Manifesto against

against the Parliament; he is joined by Sir Thomas Middleton. *Ann. C.*
They are both defeated by J. Lambert. *Aug. 19.*

Sir George Booth is taken and committed to the Tower.

The army in Scotland is reformed; at which Monk is so offended, that he desires his own dismission.

The King crosses France incog. in his way to Fontarabia, *Septemb.* where he was going in order to be present at the treaty of peace negotiating at St. Jean de Luz.

The officers of the army commanded by J. Lambert *16.* meet at Derby, and draw up a petition to the Parliament, which is sent to London to the Great Council of officers: The Parliament votes against that petition.

The Great Council of officers present a petition to the *Oct. 5.* Parliament, which returns a mild answer thereto: But the officers suspect the Parliament of ill designs against the army.

General Monk promises the Parliament to stand by them.

The Parliament returns a haughty answer to the officers petition; whereupon J. Lambert comes to London, with his forces.

The Parliament having declared it High-treason to levy money upon the people without the consent of Parliament, proceeds with resolution against the officers, cashiers several, and vacates Fleetwood's commission; but Lambert hinders the Parliament from meeting. *13.*

ANARCHY.

Charles Fleetwood places a strong guard at the door of the Parliament-House, to hinder the Members from assembling.

Several officers of the army are suspended by the Council of officers.

This Council appoints General Fleetwood to be Commander in chief, and forms a Council of ten, and another of seven persons.

They send Colonel Cobbet to General Monk, to try to gain him to their party.

COMMITTEE OF SAFETY.

They erect a Committee of Safety, to whom they commit the administration of the Government.

General Monk hearing of what had passed, resolves to march into England, in order to forward the King's restoration.

Ann. C. The Committee of Safety sends *Thomas Clarges* to him, to propose an accommodation: *Monk* accepts of the proposal, in order to amuse them, and sends Commissioners to *London* to treat with the Committee.

Nov. 15. These Commissioners of his conclude and sign a treaty with the Committee of Safety, contrary to *Monk's* intention, who seeks evasions to hinder the ratification of it.

24. The Council of State sends *Monk* a Commission, constituting him General of the armies of *England, Scotland, and Ireland*.

Decemb. The Members of the Parliament are very busy in trying to restore themselves.

Colonel *Whetham* Governor of *Portsmouth*, and Vice-Admiral *Lawson*, declare for the Parliament against the army.

PARLIAMENT AGAIN.

26. The Committee of Safety is forced to give way, and *Fleetwood* resigns his usurped authority.

The Rump-Parliament is restored, and names a Committee to govern the army.

Major-General *Lambert* is put under arrest by his own soldiers and sent to the *Tower*.

1659-60. General *Monk* enters *England*: The Parliament grows jealous of him, and desires him to stop his march.

Jan. 2. He is received into *York* by the Lord *Fairfax*, who had assembled some troops, in order to stop the Committee of Safety from possessing themselves of that City.

A Council of State is formed, into which *Monk* is admitted: Every Member of it is obliged to abjure *Charles II*, and the whole Royal Family.

The Parliament sends *Thomas Scot* and *Luke Robinson*, two of their Members, to be spies upon him.

General *Monk* receives in his march several addresses from *London*, and other places, in which he is desired to restore the Members excluded from the Parliament in 1648; but he uses great dissimulation.

He desires that the regiments quartered in the City should retire at a distance, and make room for his; which is granted him.

Feb. 3. General *George Monk* enters *London*: He repairs to the Council of State, and refuses to take the Abjuration-oath.

6. He goes to the Parliament, and receives the compliments and thanks of the Speaker.

The

The City of *London* refusing to pay taxes, General *Monk* *Ann. C.*
is ordered by the Parliament to go and chaitise it : He leads
his army into the City, and takes down the gates, chains,
and portcullices belonging to it ; and then returns to *White-*
hall.

But repenting of what he had done, he writes a letter to
the Parliament full of complaints and reproaches ; and
coming back into the City of *London*, reconciles himself to
the Magistrates, which occasions great rejoicings.

General *Monk* comes to *Whitehall*, attended by the se-
cluded Members, to whom he gives a guard to introduce
them again into the Parliament ; whereupon the chief of
the Independent Members withdraw.

The Rump Parliament summons a free Parliament, com- *Mar. 16.*
posed of a House of Peers, and a House of Commons ;
and dissolves itself.

But, before their dissolution, they release Sir *George Booth*,
and all the imprisoned friends of the King ; they repeal the
oath of abjuration of *Charles Steuart*, and all the Royal
Family ; they appoint a new Council of State ; make great
changes in the Militia of *London*, and abrogate the en-
gagement to be true and faithful to the Commonwealth,
without a King or House of Peers, &c.

J. Lambert escapes out of the *Tower*, and puts himself at *April 9.*
the head of some troops.

He is defeated, and taken prisoner by *R. Ingoldsby*.

The Republicans endeavour to persuade General *Monk* *22.*
to take the Government upon himself.

Sir *John Greenvill* comes from the King to General *Monk*.

The Parliament meets, and the King's declaration being *1650.*
read, they resolve to recall his Majesty, and restore him to *April 25.*
the Throne.

General *Monk* receives a commission from the King, con-
stituting him General of the three Kingdoms.

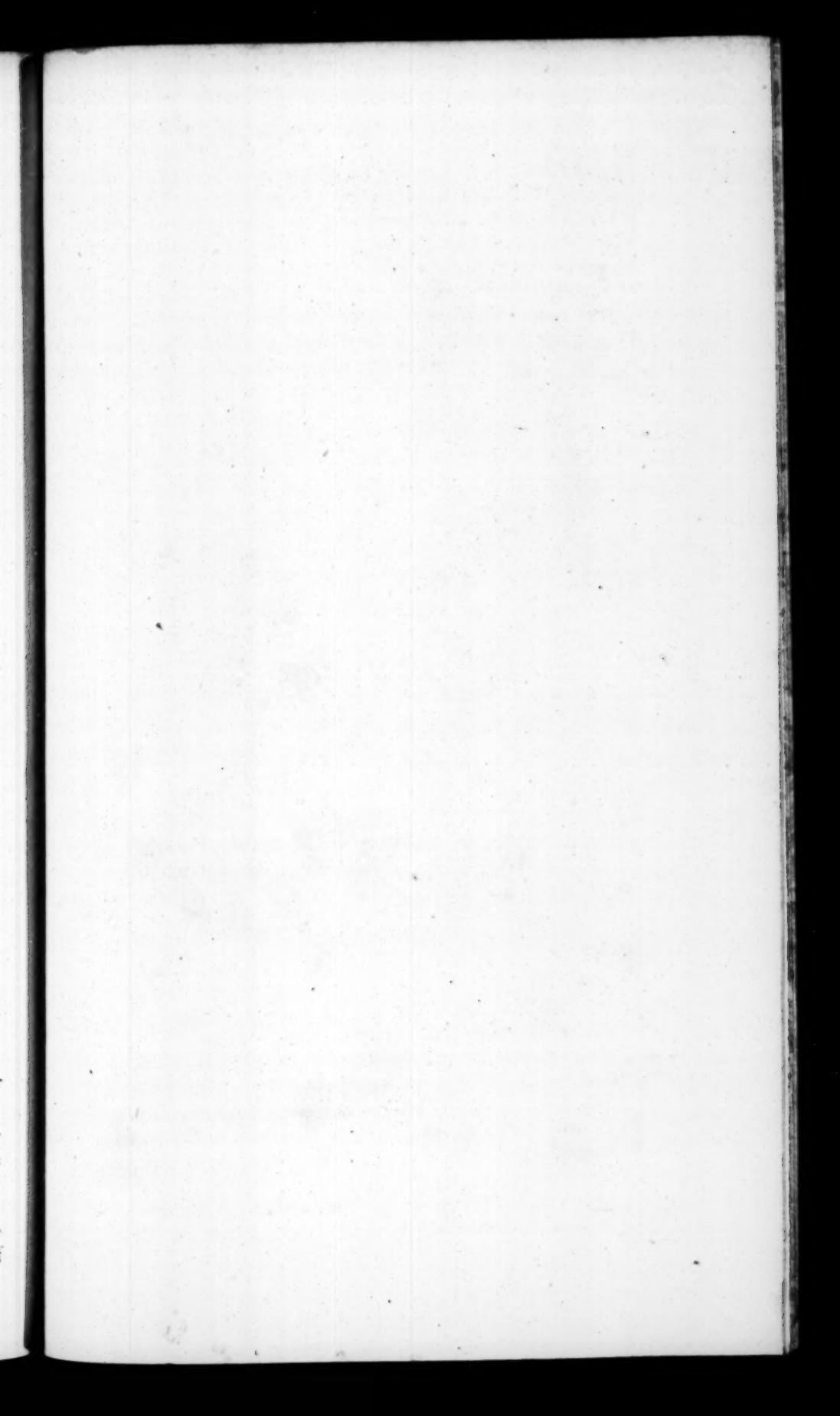
An Account of the MONEY coined under the C O M- M O N W E A L T H .

The Parliament, on *April 25*, 1649, agreed upon a new
sort of Coin, whereof there were coined, Crowns, Half-
Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Pence, and Half-pence.
The larger pieces were inscribed on one side, THE COM-
MONWEALTH OF ENGLAND, and had St. George's
cross in a shield, betwixt a palm-branch and a laurel : Re-
verse, the same shield conjoined to another, in which is a
harp

harp for *Ireland* (vulgarly called the Breeches) above which there is XII. the legend GOD WITH US. The Six-pence has VI. above the shields. The Two-pence and Pence have no inscription, only the initial figures ; and the Half-penny only the single shield, with the harp on the reverse. There were likewise coined pieces of fine Gold, of the same form and inscription as the Silver-money, XX. above the arms. The half of them have X. (Fig. 2.) The Six-pence 1651, is, strictly speaking, the first milled money, Queen *Elizabeth's* being only marked on the flat edge. The Copper Farthing has the cross under a garland, ENGLANDS FARTHING. Reverse, a harp, FOR NECESSARY CHANGE. *Oliver Cromwell's* Crown-piece is



imitably performed, and preserved as a choice medal in the cabinets of the curious, being the first milled money that has an inscription upon the rim. It has his head lauræat, OLIVAR. D. G. RP. ANG. SCO. HIB. &c. PRO. Reverse, in a shield crowned with the Imperial Crown of England, St. George's Cross in the first and fourth quarters ; St. Andrew's for Scotland in the second ; and the Harp for Ireland in the third ; and in a scutcheon of pretence his paternal coat, namely, a Lion Rampant, legend PAX QVÆRITVR BEILLO. 1658. upon the rim, HAS. NISI. PÆRITVRVS. MIHI. ADIMAT. NEMO. The dye





K. CHARLES II.

P. Lely p.

G. Vertue Sculp.

of this piece having received a flaw or crack the first stroke, leaves a mark upon the money just below the neck ; a sure token to distinguish the true Crown-pieces from the counterfeit. The Half-Crown is equally beautiful, though not so rare. The Shilling is likewise a very fair piece, milled on the edge, and very rare. (Fig. 1.)

B O O K XXIII.

26. C H A R L E S II.

CHARLES II. is proclaimed at *London*.

He comes to the *Hague*.

— Gives audience to the Parliament's Deputies.

— Embarks at *Scheveling*.

— Lands at *Dover*.

General *George Monk* is made Knight of the Garter.

King *Charles* arrives at *Whitehall*.

He forms his Council, consisting of 30 persons.

The Parliament which met the 25th of April, is owned by the King only as a Convention.

His Majesty, for removing and preventing all questions and disputes, changes, by an act, the Convention into a Parliament ; and gives his consent to two other acts ; the one for continuing the monthly tax of 70,000*l.* for three months ; and the other, for continuing all judicial proceedings.

Both Houses of Parliament accept of the pardon offered by the King in his declaration from *Breda*.

The King issues a proclamation, in which he declares, *June 6.* That such of the late King's Judges, as did not surrender themselves within 14 days, should be excluded out of the act of indemnity.

Some of the chief Republicans demand of the King particular letters of pardon, which are granted them.

The chief officers of the Crown, appointed by King Charles, were as follows ; viz. Sir *Edward Hyde*, Lord Chancellor ; *Thomas Wriothesley*, Earl of Southampton, Lord-Treasurer ; *John, Lord Roberts*, Privy-Seal ; *Mountague Bertie*, Earl of *Lindsey*, High-Chamberlain of *England* ; *James Butler*, Duke of *Ormond*, Steward of the Household ; *Edward Nicholas* and *William Morrice*, Esqrs; Secretaries of State.

The

<i>Ann. C.</i>
<i>Reg. 12.</i>
<i>May 8.</i>
16.
23.
24.
27.
29.

31.

Ann. C. The City of *London* gives a splendid entertainment to the King, the Princes his brothers, the great officers of the Crown, and both Houses of Parliament.

July 5. 27. The act of indemnity having been drawn by the Commons agreeably to the King's declaration from *Breda*, and the Lords being for having several exceptions made to it, the King earnestly desires the latter to make it conformable to his declaration from *Breda*, with some few alterations.

Aug. 17. The English Commissioners in *Scotland* are discharged from acting any longer, after the 22d of this month; and the Committee of Estates is assembled.

21. *William Cunningham*, Earl of *Glencairn*, is made High-Chancellor of that Kingdom; *John*, Earl of *Lindsey*, is restored to the office of Lord-Treasurer; *John Kenneay*, Earl of *Cassilis*, is constituted Justice-General; *John Maitland*, Earl of *Lauderdale*, Principal Secretary of State; General *Middleton*, his Majesty's Commissioner, &c.

29. The King gives his assent to the act of indemnity.

To an act for confirming all judicial proceedings, from the 1st of *May*, 1642.

To an act for provision of monies to disband and pay off the forces of this Kingdom, both by land and sea.

To an act for fixing the interest of money at 6 per cent.

To an act for a perpetual anniversary thanksgiving on the 29th of *May*.

To an act for continuing the excise.

And to an act for granting to his Majesty a subsidy of tonnage and poundage, for the guarding and defending of the seas.

The King makes a speech to the Parliament, in which he represents his wants to them.

The Parliament makes presents to the King's brothers; to the Duke of *York* 10,000*l.* and to Prince *Henry* 7000*l.*

The Commons vote to settle on the King a yearly revenue of 1,200,000*l.*

Sept. 13. The King adjourns the Parliament till the 6th of November, after having given his assent to the following acts:

To an act for raising 100,000*l.* for a supply of the King's wants, by way of land-tax.

An act to empower and direct the Commissioners how to disband the army, and pay off part of the fleet.

An act for continuing for two months longer the tax of 70,000*l.* a month.

An act for regulating the bay trade in *Colchester*.

An act for encouraging and increasing shipping and navigation. *Ann. C.*

An act for restoring some Ministers to their livings and promotions, and confirming others in vacant benefices.

Henry of Oatlands, Duke of Gloucester, dies of the small-pox: The same day, *Prince de Ligny*, Ambassador from Spain, makes his entry into London. 13.

Dr. William Juxon is translated from the See of London to the Archbispopric of Canterbury. And the rest of the vacant Sees are filled up, in this and the following month. Nine of the old Bishops were living. 20.

The Regicides are brought to their trial; but ten only *Oz. 10.*, of them are executed, viz. *Thomas Harrison, John Carew, 11, 12, John Cook, Hugh Peters, Thomas Scot, Gregory Clement, 13, 14, Alrian Scrope, John Jones, Francis Hacker, and Daniel Astl.* 19.

Mary Princess Dowager of Orange, the King's sister, arrives in England. 18.

The King publishes a declaration concerning ecclesiastical affairs, which was not favourable to the Presbyterians. *Oz. 25.*

Bishoprics and ecclesiastical benefices are offered to the most eminent Presbyterian Ministers, but they all refuse them except *Dr. Edward Reynolds*, who accepts of the Bishopric of Norwich.

The States of the United Provinces send an ambassy to the King, and a good number of excellent pictures.

Henrietta, Queen Dowager, the Princess *Henrietta* her Nov. 2. daughter, and the Prince *Palatine Edward*, arrive in London from France; and, shortly after, the Princess *Henrietta* marries *Philip Duke of Orleans*.

Sir Maurice Eustace Chancellor of Ireland, Roger Boyle Earl of Orrery, and Charles Coote Earl of Mistrath, are constituted Lords Justices of that Kingdom.

The Parliament meets again. 6.

They send a deputation to the Queen-Mother, to congratulate her on her arrival in England; and the Commons make a present of 10,000*l.* to each of the young Princesses her daughters.

The Queen-Mother is highly displeased at the marriage of *James Duke of York* with *Anne, Chancellor Hyde's eldest daughter*, which was privately solemnized the 3d of September this year.

The Parliament having granted several sums for disbanding the army, the King disbands it all, except General Monk's regiment.

Ann.

He forms for his guard two regiments, one of horse, and another of foot; which is very much disliked.

21.

William Drake, a Mercer in *London*, is impeached of High-treason by the House of Commons, for publishing a book intitled, *The Long Parliament revived*.

The first meetings of the Royal Society were about this time.

Dec. 2.

The King establishes by his letters patents a Council for trade and commerce.

The Commons confirm the resolution they had taken, of granting the King an annual revenue of 12,00000*l.*

Alexander Popham undertakes to have a perpetual revenue of about two millions settled on the King; but the Lord-Chancellor *Hyde* honestly opposes that project.

3.

The bodies of *Oliver Cromwell*, *Henry Ireton*, *John Bradshaw*, and *Thomas Pride*, are ordered by the Parliament to be dug up out of their graves, drawn upon a hurdle to *Tyburn*, and hung there almost a whole day, and then buried under the gallows; which is accordingly done the 30th of January following.

An act of Attainder is passed against these deceased persons, and against those of the King's Judges who had fled.

A pretended plot is said to be formed by several officers of the army.

Dec. 24.

Mary Princess of Orange dies of the small-pox, as was supposed.

The King gives his assent, to an act for laying certain impositions upon beer, ale, and other liquors, for the increase of his Majesty's revenue during his life. And, to another act, for taking away the Court of Wards and Liveries, and Tenures *in capite* and by Knights service, and purveyance, and for settling a revenue [*viz.* the excise] upon his Majesty in lieu thereof.

Some Scotch Ministers are imprisoned, for drawing up a remonstrance concerning their grievances; and a proclamation is published by the Committee of Estates, forbidding all sorts of unlawful assemblies, and seditious writings.

Archibald Campbell Marquis of Argyle having been arrested in *London*, and committed to the *Tower*, July 7, last, is sent to *Scotland*, Dec. 30, to be there tried on an impeachment of High-treason.

The King summons a Parliament in *Scotland*, to meet the 12th of December.

He publishes a proclamation, in which he declares, that he left it entirely to this Parliament to examine into the conduct

conduct of his subjects of *Scotland*, and that he would grant *Ann. C.* them a pardon.

He comes to the Parliament, and gives his assent to an *Dec. 29.* act for confirmation of marriages celebrated since the 1st of *May 1642.*

To an act for erecting and establishing a Post-Office.

An act for prohibiting the planting, setting, or sowing of tobacco, in *England* and *Ireland*.

An act for prohibiting the exportation of wool, wool-fells, fuller's earth, or any kind of scouring earth.

And two acts; for raising 70,000*l.* for his Majesty's further supply; and 70,000*l.* a month, for six months, for disbanding the remainder of the army, and paying off the navy.

Then King *Charles* makes a speech to the Parliament, in which he returns thanks to both Houses, expresses his affection towards them, and assures them that he will inviolably observe the act of Indemnity: The Lord-Chancellor *Hyde* makes after that a speech to both Houses.

The first Parliament of King *Charles II.* is dissolved.

Some Anabaptists, headed by *Thomas Venner*, cause an *1660-61.* insurrection in *London*.

After a stout resistance, and twenty killed on both sides, *Jan. 6.* the rest are taken.

They are arraigned and condemned, and executed two *9.* days after. *17.*

The King takes from thence occasion to issue out a proclamation, forbidding all sorts of Meetings and Conventions, and ordering the oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy to be tendered to all suspected persons.

The name of Dissenters, or Nonconformists, is applied to all the Sectaries in general.

The Parliament of *Scotland* abrogates the solemn League and Covenant; declares the power of the militia to be in the King alone; and declares the act of the 16th of *January 1647*, by which the late King was delivered into the hands of the *English*, infamous, disloyal, and contrary to all laws divine and human.

Episcopacy is restored in *Scotland*, and the Parliament of *Reg. 13.* that Kingdom restores the right of patronage, and makes several acts in favour of the King, and against the Presbyterians.

The vacant sees in *Ireland* are filled.

General *Monk's* regiment of foot, and life-guard of *Feb. 14.* horse, are paid off and disbanded: but they are immediately

- Ann. C.* ately taken into his Majesty's service, as an extraordinary guard to his royal person.
- March 6.* Archibald Campbell Marquis of Argyle is brought before *1661.* the Parliament of Scotland.
- 25.* A conference is held at the *Savoy* between some Bishops and Presbyterian Ministers, in order to an examination of the differences between the two parties.
- Apr. 20.* The conference breaks off.
Sir Edward Hyde is created Earl of Clarendon.
- 23.* King Charles II. is crowned.
- May 8.* The Second Parliament of King Charles II. meets; it is called the Pensionary Parliament, because many of the Members received Pensions from the Court.
The King makes a speech to the Parliament, in which, among other things, he acquaints them with his intended marriage with *Catharine of Portugal*.
Sir Edward Turner is chosen Speaker of the House of Commons.
The House of Commons orders all their Members to receive the Communion, according to the form prescribed in the Liturgy.
- 11.* The Marquis of Montagu's quarters, having been taken down, are buried.
- 17.* Elizabeth Queen of Bohemia arrives in London.
- 20.* The Parliament causes the writing called the solemn League and Covenant, and several other acts against the late King, to be burnt.
- 28.* Archibald Campbell, Marquis of Argyle, having been condemned for High-treason on the 24th, is beheaded at Edinburgh.
- June 7.* The bodies of Sir Charles Lucas and Sir George Lisle are honourably buried.
- July 10.* An act is passed for confirming the act of indemnity, and other acts.
And another act to empower the King to receive from his subjects a free and voluntary present for his present occasions, provided aids of this nature be not drawn into example for the time to come.
Also three other acts: Against tumults and disorders upon pretence of petitioning: — Declaring the sole right of the militia to be in the King: — For repeal of the act for disabling persons in holy orders to exercise any temporal jurisdiction: — And for restoring the jurisdiction of Archbishops and Bishops taken away, 17. Car. I.

Another act is passed for confiscating the estates of twenty-one Regicides deceased, and to punish three, who were spared as to life, *viz.* The Lord *Monson*, Sir *Henry Midway*, and *Robert Waller*. *Ann. C.*

They are ordered to be drawn, on the 30th of January following, upon sledges, with ropes about their necks, to *Tyburn*, and committed to perpetual imprisonment.

The King gives his assent to nine acts, and among the rest, to an act for the safety and preservation of his person and government, and to another, for bringing the Bishops again into the House of Peers.

30.

The Parliament is adjourned to the 20th of November.

The Convocation of the Clergy meets, and grants a benevolence to the King.

The Cavaliers, or Royalists, complain highly of the King's ingratitude.

Rumours are spread of plots and conspiracies carrying on against the King, in order, as some suppose, to render the Presbyterians odious.

Edward Montague Earl of Sandwich, returns to *Lisbon*, from his expedition against *Algiers*, without having done any thing.

James Duke of Ormond is made Lord-Lieutenant of *Nov. 4.
Ireland*. *20.*

The Parliament meets again.

The King makes a speech to both Houses, wherein he desires the Commons to settle his revenue, and provide for the expences of the navy.

The Court begins to persecute the Presbyterians.

The Parliament desires the King to order by proclamation all officers and disbanded soldiers to depart 20 miles from *London*.

The Commons grant the King 1,260,000*l.* for his present occasions.

A bill for the execution of 19 Regicides, who had voluntarily surrendered themselves, is dropped.

Edward Hyde Earl of Clarendon, and Lord-Chancellor, affirms, at a conference between the two Houses, that there was a real conspiracy; and names several persons engaged therein. Major *Wildman*, and others, are for it committed to the *Tower*.

The King gives his assent to the act which granted him *Dec. 20.
1,260,000*l.** and to an act for regulating Corporations. In this latter, there was an oath, declaring, That it is not

VOL. II. A a lawful,

Ann. C. lawful, upon any pretence whatsoever, to take arms against the King, &c.

1661-2. The Parliament is adjourned to the 10th of January.

Jan. 10. The Parliament meets again.

The Lord Chancellor Hyde makes a report to the House of Lords of the conspiracy.

Reg. 14. Elizabeth, Queen of Bohemia, dies, and was interred in *Feb. 13. Westminster-Abbey*.

Mar. 1. The King makes a speech to the Commons, in which he expresses great zeal for the Church.

1662. **Apr. 16.** Miles Corbet, John Okey, and John Barkstead, three of the Regicides, having been brought to England from Holland, are condemned and executed the 19th.

May. The King gives his assent to several acts, viz.

To an act for preventing mischiefs and dangers, that may arise by Quakers, and others, refusing to take lawful oaths.

To the act of Uniformity.

To an act for better regulating the forces in the several Counties of this Kingdom.

To an act for laying a perpetual and annual tax of 2s. on every chimney-hearth.

To an act for the relief of poor and maimed officers and soldiers, who had served his Majesty and his Father.

And to an act for preventing abuses in printing seditious and treasonable books; and for regulating printing, and printing-presses.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 18th of February.

14. Queen Catharine arrives at Portsmouth.

21. Her marriage with the King is solemnized, according to some, by Gilbert Sheldon, Bishop of London, and according to others, by a Catholic Priest.

June 6. Sir Henry Vane, and Lieutenant-General J. Lambert, are tried and condemned: Lambert is reprieved, and imprisoned in Guernsey;

But Sir Henry is beheaded.

July 28. Henrietta the Queen-mother comes to England.

From July to October. King Charles enters into negotiations with Count d'Estrades, for the sale of Dunkirk; at length the King sells Dunkirk to Lewis XIV. for 5,000,000 of livres.

Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon, had a great hand in that business.

Several pamphlets are published upon that occasion.

About this time the Royal Society is founded by King Charles's letters patents.

Above 2000 Presbyterian Ministers chuse to quit their pre-

preferments, rather than comply with the Uniformity-*Ann. C.*
act.

The Corporation-act is put in execution with rigour.

The walls of Gloucester, Coventry, Northampton, Leicester, and Taunton, are razed to the ground, because those places had distinguished themselves for the Parliament, during the war.

Vice-Admiral, Sir John Lawson, forces the Algerines to Oct. 5. make peace with England.

A conspiracy, contrived by some Fifth-monarchy-men, Decemb. is discovered : Six of the Conspirators are arraigned, but four only are executed.

The King declares Tangier a free port, and invests it with great privileges : It was part of his Queen's portion.

He puts out a declaration, in which he dispensed with 1662-3. the Presbyterians, as to their observance of some articles in January. the Act of Uniformity.

The Lord-Chancellor Hyde's credit begins to decline.

Sir Henry Bennet, afterwards Earl of Arlington, is made Reg. 15. Secretary of State, in the room of Sir Edward Nicholas, whom the King had obliged to resign in October last.

The Parliament meets again.

Feb. 18.

The King makes a speech to both Houses, in order to recommend his declaration about the Act of Uniformity, and in behalf of the Catholics.

But the House of Commons is alarmed, and presents an address to the King against that declaration ; to which his Mar. 16. Majesty returns an answer.

Both Houses petition him to order all Jesuits and Romish 1663. Priests to depart the Kingdom : The King promises to do Apr. 1. as they desired ; and accordingly publishes a proclamation 9. against them, but it is not duly observed.

The Commons grant the King four entire subsidies.

The Convocation of the Clergy does the same.

These were the last subsidies granted by the Clergy.

George Digby, Earl of Bristol, brings an impeachment July 10. of High-treason against Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon ; which is unanimously rejected by the House of Lords.

William Juxon, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies, and is June 4. succeeded by Gilbert Sheldon, Bishop of London.

The Parliament settles the revenues of the Post Office, and of the Ward-Licences, upon James, Duke of York.

The Forest acts were now made : — For the punishment of unauthorised cutting, or stealing wood, or under-

woods : A a 2

Ann. C. woods : — For regulating Select Vestries.— For draining the great Level of the Fens, called *Bedford Level*.

July 27. The King prorogues the Parliament to the 16th of *March*.

August. The King and Queen make a progress into the West.

Septemb. A plot, contrived by the Republicans and Independents, *October.* is discovered ; twenty-one are convicted, and executed.

Novemb. The Parliament meets again.

Reg. 16. The act for triennial Parliaments is repealed at the 1663-4. King's request ; and it is enacted, That the sitting and *Mar. 16.* holding of Parliaments shall not be intermitted or discontinued above three years.

21. The Parliament votes, that the injuries and insults of the *Dutch* were the greatest obstructions to the trade of *England*.

27. and agree upon an address to be presented to the King.

28. The King returns to this address an answer conformable to the Parliament's desires.

He had already taken the resolution of going to war with the *Dutch*, and the Parliament's complaints served only as a pretence for it.

1664. An act to prevent and suppress seditious Conventicles, *May 17.* is passed.

The Parliament is prorogued.

The King demands of the *Dutch* reparation of the injuries done by them to the *English* ; whereupon the *States* send Monsieur *Jan Goch* Ambassador to *England*, to offer satisfaction.

June 11. The City of *London* lends the King 100,000*l.* for fitting out the fleet.

Novemb. James Duke of *York* falls upon the *Dutch Bourdeaux* fleet, and takes 130 sail of them, laden with wine and brandy, before the war was declared.

The *States* accept of the mediation of *Louis XIV*, King of *France*, but King *Charles* rejects it, and endeavours in vain to bring the Crowns of *France* and *Spain* to a war with the *Dutch*.

Nov. 24. The Parliament meets again.

The King makes a speech to them, in which he demands a supply of money.

25. The Parliament sends Deputies to return thanks to the City of *London* for their loan to the King.

The Commons vote the King a supply of 2,477,500*l.* for the war.

Both Houses adjourn themselves to the 12th of *January*.

During this Session, the Clergy parted with the right of taxing

taxing themselves in Convocation; and have ever since *Ann. C.* been taxed in common with the rest of the people. In consideration whereof, they are admitted to vote at the elections of Parliament-men.

The King publishes a declaration for making reprisals *Dec. 21.* upon all ships belonging to the *Dutch*.

The English take a great many *Dutch* vessels.

1664-5.

Admiral *de Ruyter* retakes from the *English* most of the forts that had been taken from the *Dutch* at *Guinea* and *Cape Verd*, by Sir *Robert Holmes*, and seizes several *English* ships.

The Parliament meets again, and the Commons proceed immediately to the money-bill. *Jan. 12.*

Reg. 17.

His Majesty gives the royal assent thereto.

Feb. 15.

War is formally declared against the *States-General*.

25.

The King prorogues the Parliament, after having given his assent to a bill for returning able and sufficient Jurors.—*Mar. 2.*
To a bill for draining the fen called Deeping-fen, and other fens, &c.

James, Duke of *York*, repairs to the fleet which he was to command, consisting of 107 men of war, and 14 fire-ships. *23.*

King Charles endeavours to gain *Lewis XIV.* to his side; on the other hand, the *Dutch* press him to declare against *England*.

Lewis XIV. sends the Duke *de Virneuil* Ambassador to *Charles II.*, to try to procure a peace between *England* *April.* and *Holland*.

James, Duke of *York*, puts to sea with the *English* fleet, and sails towards the coasts of *Holland*. *21.*

He takes several *Dutch* ships, and then returns to *England*; but the *Dutch* take the *English* *Hamburg* fleet.

The plague begins to rage in *London*. *May.*

The *Dutch* fit out a fleet of 121 men of war, besides fire-ships, under the command of *Obdam di Wassenaeer*.

He is beaten by the *English* fleet, his ship is blown up; *June 3.* and about 18 more are burnt and sunk: But the Duke of *York* doth not pursue the *Dutch* fleet so briskly as he might have done.

The King appoints a Day of Thanksgiving for this victory, and orders medals to be struck in honour of the Duke of *York*.

Henrietta the Queen-Mother returns into *France*. *29.*

It not being thought proper to venture the Duke of *York* in

Ann. C. in another engagement, the command of the *English* fleet is given to *Edward Montague*, Earl of *Sandwich*.

Michael de Ruyter is made Lieutenant-Admiral-General of *Holland*.

Aug. 3. The Dutch *Smyrna* fleet and several of their *East-India* ships retire to *Berghen* in *Norway*; the Kings of *Denmark*

22. and *England* attempt to seize those ships; but miss their aim.

The command of the fleet is taken from *Edward Montague* Earl of *Sandwich*, and he is sent Ambassador to *Spain*.

Septemb. Mr. *de Ruyter* convoys the Dutch ships from *Berghen*; but his fleet is dispersed by a storm, and many of his ships are taken by the *English*.

The plague commits terrible ravages in *London*; so that in less than a year there died of it in that City 68,596 persons.

October. *Bernard Van Galen*, Bishop of *Munster*, declares war against the Dutch: He becomes master of several small places, and attempts to surprize *Groningen*, but is forced to relinquish his projects, and to think of a peace.

9. The Parliament meets at *Oxford*, on account of the plague.

The Commons grant the King 1,250,000*l.* for the war; and make a present of 120,000*l.* to the Duke of *York*.

31. The five mile act, for restraining Nonconformist Teachers from inhabiting in Corporations, is passed.

An act is also made for uniting Churches in Cities and Towns corporate.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 20th of February 1665-6.

Dec. 24. A very severe Proclamation is issued out in *Scotland* against Nonconformist Ministers, ordering them to remove twenty miles out of the parishes where they had been incumbents.

The Parliament of *Ireland* grants the King eight entire Subsidies of the Temporality of that Kingdom.

1665-6. *Lewis XIV*, King of *France*, declares war against Eng-
Reg. 18. land, at the instance of the *States-General*.

Jan. 19. Queen *Catharine* miscarries.

Feb. 10. King *Charles II.* declares war against *France*.

1666. *Frederic III*, King of *Denmark*, joins with the *States*.

April 18. *Bernard Van Galen*, Bishop of *Munster*, is forced to make a peace with them.

The King of *France* is very slow in succouring the *States*.

John

John Rathbone, and some disbanded Officers, are tried *Ann. C.* for a conspiracy against the Government, and executed. 26.

The command of the *English* fleet is given to Prince *Rupert*, May 23. and *George Monk*, Duke of *Albemarle*; they put to sea.

King *Charles* orders Prince *Rupert* to go, with part of the fleet, in quest of the Duke *de Beaufort*, and to fight the *French* fleet.

The Duke of *Albemarle* comes to an engagement with *June 1.* Admiral *de Ruyter*: The fight lasts four days, and the *English* are worsted, losing twenty-three ships, &c. The third day Sir *George Ayscough* is taken prisoner, and carried to *Holland*.

The two fleets fight another battle, in which the *Dutch*, July 24. through the ill management of *Cornelius Van Trump*, are defeated, and lost about twenty ships. But Admiral *de Ruyter* makes a brave retreat.

Cornelius Van Trump is turned out of his Post for his ill conduct.

The Duke *de Beaufort* arrives at *Rochelle* with the *French* fleet.

The *English*, improving their advantage in the last fight, *August*. burn several *Dutch* ships, near the Isle of *Wight*, and, making a descent in the Isle of *Schelling*, commit there great ravages.

After this exploit, the *English* fleet comes and anchors at St. *Hellens* near the Isle of *Wight*: And the *Dutch* fleet anchors in St. *John's Bay* near *Boulogne*, but is recalled from thence, on account of Admiral *de Ruyter's* illness.

A most dreadful fire breaks out in *London*, which consumes 13,200 dwelling-houses; and was supposed to have been caused by the Papists. Sept. 2.

The *French* fleet passes and repasses before the Isle of *Wight*, without being attacked by the *English*, and at length retires into the Ports of *Bretagne*.

The Parliament meets again.

The Commons grant the King a supply of 1,800,000*l.* 21.

The Parliament presents an address to the King against the Papists; whereupon, a proclamation is issued out for Nov. 10. banishing the Priests and Jesuits out of the Kingdom.

An insurrection breaks out in *Scotland*, but the rioters are dispersed. 15.

The King presses the Commons to dispatch the money-bill. Dec. 15.

Complaints are brought before the House of Commons against *John, Lord Viscount Mordaunt*, Governor of *Wind-*

A a 4 *for*

Ann. C. for Castle; but they do not proceed upon them on account of the Parliament's adjournment.

1666-7. The Parliament meets again.

Jan. 2. The *States* of the *United-Provinces* send a letter to King *Charles*, in which they offer to send Plenipotentiaries to *London*, to negotiate a peace, if their allies, the Kings of *France* and *Denmark*, would agree to it.

The Commons accuse the Lord Viscount *Mordaunt*, at the bar of the Lords House.

18. The Poll-bill, or Capitation-act is passed.

20. King *Charles* returns an answer to the letter from the *Reg. 19.* *States*, and names the *Hague* for the place of Conference, but neither the *French* nor *Dutch* approve of it.

Feb. 8. The Parliament is prorogued to the 10th of *Oæster*; after having passed an act for continuing for eleven months the monthly tax of 70,000*l.* two acts about rebuilding the City of *London*. — One for burying in woollen only; and several others.

Mar. 18. King *Charles* pitches upon *Breda* for the place of conference.

1667. *Thomas Wriothesley*, Earl of *Southampton*, and Lord-Treasurer, dies.

The Plenipotentiaries of *England* arrive at *Breda*.

20. The conferences there are prolonged by a misunderstanding.

King *Charles* demands, that the *Dutch* should restore the Island of *Pelorus* in the *East Indies*, and make reparation for two ships taken before the treaty in 1662.

He recedes at length from his demand of *Pelorus*, and insists only upon the two ships.

June 8. Admiral *de Ruyter* comes to the mouth of the *Thames* with fifty ships.

10. He detaches Vice-Admiral *Van Ghent* with seventeen

11. ships, who, sailing up the *Thames*, becomes master of *Sherness* fort, and, advancing towards *Chatham*, burns several ships.

This causes a great consternation in *London*, and throws the King into great perplexity.

Louis XIV, King of *France*, invades the *Netherlands*.

July. Admiral *de Ruyter*, putting to sea again, sails to *Portsmouth*, takes some ships in *Torbay*, beats the *English* before *Harwich*, and gives chase to a squadron commanded by Sir *Edward Spragg*.

The *English* Plenipotentiaries at *Breda* drop their demands of reparation for the two ships.

The peace between *England*, *France*, and *Holland* is *Ann. C.*
signed. 21.

Abraham Cowley, an excellent poet, dies. 28.

The peace is proclaimed at *London*, and at the *Hague*. Aug. 24.

The people complains, and murmurs against the Court,
which was full of vice and debauchery.

The Lord-Chancellor *Hyde* is disgraced, and Sir *Orlando Bridgman* made Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal. 31.

The King forbids, by proclamation, all his subjects, Sept. 11.
except those of the Queen's or Queen-Mother's Family,
and of foreign Ambassadors, to repair to any Chapels, to
hear Mass.

The Parliament meets again, when both Houses present Oct. 10.
an address of thanks to the King. 15.

King *Charles* lays the first stone of the foundation of the 23.
Royal Exchange.

The Commons impeach *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*, Nov. 12.
of High-treason ; but he withdraws into *France*.

He leaves an apology, or humble petition and address, Dec. 2.
behind him, addressed to the Lords, which they communicate
to the Commons.

But it is burnt by the common hangman. 12.

The Lords send to the Commons a bill for the banishment 13.
of the Earl of *Clarendon*.

The bill, having passed both Houses, obtains the Royal 18.
assent.

The Parliament is prorogued.

Matthew Wren, Bishop of *Ely*, died in the course of this
year.

King *Charles* takes a resolution to enter into a strict union 1667-8.
with the *States* of the *United Provinces*, in order to prevent Jan. 1.
the King of *France*'s becoming master of the *Low-Countries*.

The triple alliance between *England*, *Holland*, and *Sweden*, Jan. 23.
is concluded. Reg. 20.

The Parliament meets again ; and the King makes a Feb. 10.
speech to them, in which he demands money.

But, before the Commons take the King's speech into
consideration, they inquire into the mismanagements during
the late war.

Lewis XIV. makes himself master of *Franche-Comté*, in
less than a fortnight.

King *Charles* presses the Commons to go upon the 1668.
money-bill. April 24.

They desire him, in an address, to put the laws in execu-
tion against Conventicles, and all unlawful assemblies of
Papists and Nonconformists. Where-

Ann. C. Whereupon, his Majesty issues out a proclamation upon that subject.

A dispute arises between the two Houses of Parliament, about the affair of *Thomas Skinner*, who had appealed originally to the House of Lords.

May 2. A peace is concluded at *Aix la Chapelle* between *France* and *Spain*.

5. The King passes an act for raising 310,000*l.* by an imposition on wines and other liquors; and other acts; and then he adjourns the Parliament to the 11th of *August*: He adjourns it a second time, and at last prorogues it till the 19th of *October*, 1669.

The Papists have great interest at Court; and a project is formed to render the King absolute.

July, &c. This summer the King makes several progresses into the Kingdom, to view the Ports and Navy.

Aug. 8. Monsieur *Colbert* comes to reside at the Court of *England*, as Ambassador from *France*.

Sir *William Godolphin* is sent Ambassador to *Spain*.

Ralph *Montague*, Esq; is first Envoy, and then Ambassador to *France*.

Charles *Heward*, Earl of *Carlisle*, goes Ambassador to *Stockholm*.

Sir *William Temple* is sent Ambassador extraordinary to the *States-General*.

October. Sir *Thomas Allen*, coming with an English squadron before *Algiers*, obliges the *Algerines* to renew the peace with *England*.

In the course of this year, died *Algernon Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, Sir *William Davenant* and Sir *John Denham*, two eminent Poets, and Sir *William Waller*.

1668-9. King *Charles* is bribed by the Court of *France*, and comes into all her wicked measures.

January. Cosmo di Medicis, Prince of *Tuscany*, arrives in *England*.

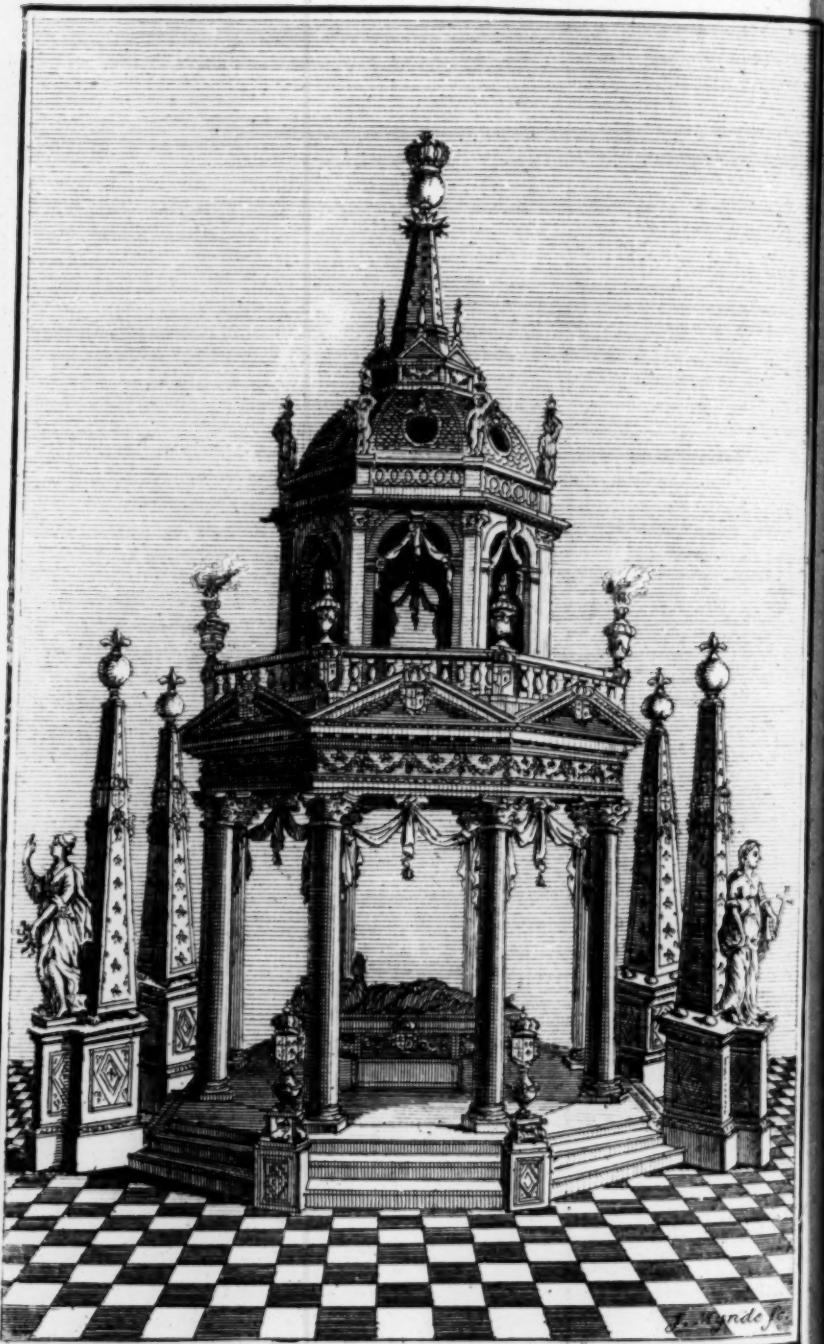
Reg. 21. Prince *George* of *Denmark* comes to *England* to visit King *Charles*.

1669. July 9. The *Sheldonian Theatre* at *Oxford* is opened.

The King forms the project of a Comprehension, or to incorporate the Presbyterians with the Church of *England*, and to procure a toleration for all the other Nonconformists.

Conferences are held upon this point at the Lord-Keeper *Bridgeman's*, between two Episcopal Divines (Dr. *Wilkins* and Dr. *Burton*) and two Presbyterian Ministers (Dr. *Manton* and *Richard Baxter*:) The two former made large concessions:

L
n
t,
l-
re
d
e
ce
ft
o
-
f-
o
o
re
-
of
-
d
it
o
l,
l-
er
is
-
e
:



The Mausoleum of MARY Wife of K. CHARLES I made
by Order of Lewis XIV in the Abbey of S^t Denis in France

concessions : And the Lord Chief-Judge *Hale* undertakes *Ann. C.* to draw up a bill against the ensuing Parliament ; but the Parliament was averse to all condescension.

Gilbert Sheldon, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, opposes also this project of a Comprehension.

The Nonconformists present a petition to the King, which is favourably received.

Henrietta Maria, the Queen-Mother, dies in *France*, in Aug. 10. the 60th year of her age.

Her body was exposed on a bed of State that day, at her house at *Columbe*, four leagues from *Paris*, and the next embalmed ; and afterwards conveyed to the Monastery of *Chalot*. The French King, *Lewis XIV*, her nephew, erected a sumptuous Mausoleum, in memory of her, in the Abbey-Church of *St. Dennis*. (The figure whereof is here represented.)

John Maitland, Earl of *Lauderdale*, is appointed his Majesty's High-Commissioner to the Parliament of *Scotland*. *Sept. 26.*

The Parliament meets again : The King demands of them money for the discharge of his debts ; and proposes the union of the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*.

The Commons examine the public accounts, and expel out of their House Sir *George Carteret*, for keeping the books, in a confused and disorderly manner.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets.

The House of Commons in *England* appoints a Committee to inquire into the behaviour of the Nonconformists.

19.

They grant the King a supply of 400,000*l.*

The Parliament of *Scotland* raises the King's Supremacy *Nov. 16.* higher than it had ever been carried before, by an act asserting his Majesty's Supremacy over all persons, and in all causes ecclesiastical.

They approve, by another act, the raising of the Militia.

The differences between the two Houses of Parliament in *England*, about the business of *Skinner*, being renewed, the King prorogues the Parliament to the 14th of *February-Dec. 11.* *ary, 1670.*

William Prynne, Esq; dies in this year.

George Monk, Duke of *Albemarle*, dies, and is succeeded 1669-70. in dignity and estate by his son *Christopher*. *Jan. 3.*

The Parliament meeting again, the King makes a speech to them, in which he demands a supply of money.

The Commons vote him a supply of about 1,700,000*l.* *Reg. 22.*

They jointly present an address to him against Nonconformists and Papists. *Feb. 14.* *Mar. 11.*

The

Ann. C. The King gives his assent to several acts, namely, To 1670. one to prevent and suppress seditious Conventicles : To an April 11. act for granting to his Majesty an imposition upon all wines and vinegar imported between June 24, 1670, and June 24, 1678, which imposition yielded 560,000*l.* To an act for advancing the sale of fee-farm, and other rents. To an additional act for rebuilding the City of *London*, uniting of parishes, and rebuilding the cathedral and parochial Churches within the said City, &c. Then his Majesty adjourns the Parliament to the 24th of October.

King *Charles* forms the design of rendering himself absolute ; and for that purpose, establishes a Secret Council, which is nick-named the Cabal.

This Council resolves upon a war with *Holland*, that they might have a pretence for keeping on foot both land and sea forces.

Moreover, for his better support, King *Charles* makes a secret alliance with *France*.

Lewis XIV. comes to *Dunkirk*.

May 15. *Henrietta*, Duchess of *Orleans*, comes to *England* under pretence of visiting the King, her brother ; but her real business was, To persuade King *Charles* to make a private alliance with *France* ; in consideration whereof *Lewis XIV.* would insure him an absolute authority over his Parliament, and help him to restore the Catholic Religion in his three Kingdoms.

June 2. She returns to *France*, and dies suddenly the 19th of the same month, not without suspicion of poison.

Septemb. The Marshal de *Cregui* invades *Lorrain*, and becomes master of it : King *Charles* refuses to intercede with *Lewis XIV.* for the restoration of that Duchy, though he was greatly obliged to the Duke of *Lorrain*.

Oct. 24. The Parliament meets again ; and the Commons vote the King a large subsidy.

Sir *William Temple* is recalled from his ambassy to *Holland*.

30. *William III*, Prince of *Orange*, comes to pay a visit to the King, his uncle.

The Parliament is adjourned.

Henry Jenkins dies in this year, 1670, aged 169 years.

1670-1. The Parliament meets again.

January. The King sends a message to both Houses to hasten the Reg. 23. money-bills.

Feb. 14. *William*, Prince of *Orange*, embarks again for *Holland*.

15. Both Houses present an address to the King against *Popery*, and the growth of it. Charles

Charles, Lord *Lucas*, makes a speech against the money-*Ann. C.* bills ; which speech is ordered to be burnt by the common hangman.

The King gives his assent to the money-bills ; being *Mar. 6.*

1. One for granting a subsidy to his Majesty ; [much the same as the present land-tax bills :]
2. Another, for an additional excise upon beer, ale, and other liquors.
3. Another, for revesting the power of granting wine-licences in his Majesty.
4. And a fourth, for laying impositions on proceedings at law.— An act is also now passed against malicious maiming and wounding, called *Coventry's act*.

A difference happens between the two Houses, on occasion of the Lords making alterations in a money-bill.

Anne Hyde, Duchess of *York*, eldest daughter of *Edward, Earl of Clarendon*, and mother to *Mary* and *Anne*, afterwards Queens of *England*, dies. *Mar. 31.*

His Majesty gives the Royal assent to several bills, and *April 22.* then prorogues the Parliament to *April 16, 1672*, and afterwards by several prorogations to the 4th of *February, 1672-3.*

James, Duke of *York*, makes a formal abjuration of the Protestant Religion.

King *Charles* forms the design of divorcing his Queen *Catharine of Portugal*.

Edward, Earl of Manchester, Lord Chamberlain, dies. *May 5.*

Thomas Blood, and four other ruffians, steal the Crown, Orb, and Scepter, out of the Tower ; but, instead of being punished, *Blood*, in particular, is pardoned, and loaded with favours by the King. *9.*

King *Charles XI*, King of *Sweden*, the Elector of *Saxony*, and *Christopher Monk*, Duke of *Albemarle*, are installed Knights of the Garter.

One of the King's yachts fires at the *Dutch* fleet, under pretence of making them strike the flag, but, in reality, to have some colour, if they returned the fire, for his designed rupture with *Holland*.

King *Charles* receives 700,000*l.* from the King of *France*.

Thomas, Lord Fairfax, the late General, died in this year *1671.*

France, *England*, the Elector of *Cologne*, and the Bishop of *Munster*, form a league against *Holland*. *1671-2.*

Though King *Charles* had received 2,500,000*l.* from his

Ann. C. His Parliament, yet, through his expensive vices, and extravagance, he is still in want of money.

Jan. 2. But Sir Thomas Clifford suggests to him a way to supply his wants, namely, by shutting up the Exchequer; for which advice Clifford is rewarded with the office of Lord-Treasurer.

15. Dr. John Cosin, Bishop of Durham, dies.

Reg. 24. William III. Prince of Orange, is made Captain-General, and Admiral, by the States of the United Provinces.

Feb. 24. King Charles orders the Dutch Smyrna fleet to be intercepted in their return home, before any declaration of war; but only about five of them are taken.

He sends out a squadron to meet four Dutch East-India ships, which are taken; and causes all the Dutch ships in his ports to be seized.

The States seize likewise all the English ships in their harbours, but release them soon after.

King Charles also releases some of the Dutch ships he had ordered to be seized.

15. He publishes a declaration for Liberty of Conscience, for which he is thanked by the chief of the Presbyterians.

England declares war against the United Provinces.

17. As doth also Lewis XIV,

1672. And the Bishop of Munster.

28. The Elector of Cologne joins likewise with France.

April. **May, &c.** Lewis XIV. takes the field: He makes himself master of several places upon the Rhine, swims that river, takes all Guelderland, and the towns upon the IJssel, and also Utrecht.

10. The King suspends by his own authority the execution of two acts of Parliament, about navigation and trade.

At the same time, the Bishop of Munster ravages the Province of Over-ijssel, and falls upon Friesland and Groningen.

28. An engagement happens near Southwold-bay, or Solebay, in Suffolk, between Admiral de Ruyter and the confederate fleets of England and France; in which three English ships were burnt, three sunk, and one taken. Edward Montague, Earl of Sandwich, with seven Captains, and several persons of quality, perished. The loss of men was nearly equal on both sides.

Holland is in a most deplorable condition.

June 22. George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, and Henry Bennet, Earl of Arlington, are sent Ambassadors extraordinary, and Plenipotentiaries to Holland: But their demands for a peace are rejected by the States.

Henry Coventry, Esq; is sworn principal Secretary of State, in the room of Sir *John Trevor*, who died May 28.

William III, Prince of Orange, is made Stadholder. *July 3.*
The two brothers *de Wits*, *Cornelius* and *John*, are torn *Aug. 10.*
to pieces by the mob.

Lewis XIV. tries in vain to gain the Prince of Orange to his side, by offering him the Sovereignty of Holland.

That King marches his army into Flanders, leaving the Duke of Luxemburgh at Utrecht, and comes himself to Paris. *August.*

Sir *Orlando Bridgeman* resigns the Great Seal, which is given, on the 17th, to *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, Earl of Shaftesbury, one of the cabal.

The Parliament is prorogued.

The King declares in Council that he would raise more forces. *Dec. 4.* *9.*

He orders that the *Exchequer* should continue shut till May 1, 1673. *11.*

The Parliament meets again.

Sir *Job Charlton* is chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, in the room of Sir *Edward Turner*, made Chief Baron of the *Exchequer*. *1672-3.* *Reg. 25.* *Feb. 4.*

The King makes a speech to the Parliament ; which is followed by another remarkable one of the Lord-Chancellor *Shaftesbury's*.

The House of Commons complains of writs issued out by the Lord-Chancellor, for electing of new Members in the room of such as were dead or removed ; and all the Members elected by virtue of those writs are expelled the House.

The Commons prepare a bill in favour of the Presbyterians, but it is rendered abortive by the prorogation of the Parliament. *Feb. 5.*

The Country-party prevails in the Parliament above the Court-party.

The Commons vote the King 1,238,750*l.*

They present to him two addresses against the Declaration for Liberty of Conscience ; his Majesty returns an evasive answer. *19.*

Sir *Job Charlton* being taken ill, *Edward Seymour*, Esq; is chosen Speaker in his room. *26.*

Both Houses present an address to the King against the Papists ; and his Majesty having thereupon issued out a proclamation against them, which was not very satisfactory ; the *March.*

Ann. C. the Commons enter upon new measures to get the declaration for Liberty of Conscience revoked.

The King is in great perplexity ; and his Council is divided about the course he should take in the present emergency :

3. At length his Majesty recalls his declaration, and so satisfies the Commons, who return him thanks for it.

But the cabal is very much displeased with the King for so doing.

9. *Anthony Ashley Cooper, Earl of Shaftesbury*, quits the King's party, and embraces that of the people.

The Test-Act is brought into the House of Commons ; and a bill to prevent intermarriages between Protestants and Papists, in order to hinder the Duke of York from marrying a Popish Princess.

The Commons present two addresses to the King concerning grievances, one relating to *England*, the other to *Ireland* ; which his Majesty promises to redress.

1673. Mar. 29. He passes the money-bill ; and an act for preventing dangers which may happen from Popish Recusants, otherwise called the Test-Act ; — An act for a general pardon ; — An act to enable the County Palatine of Durham to send Knights and Burghesses to serve in Parliament, &c.

The Parliament is adjourned to the 20th of October.

After the passing of the Test-Act, *James Duke of York*, *Thomas Lord Clifford*, and the greatest part of the Catholic Officers resign their places ; and the Lord Clifford dies soon after.

Prince *Rupert* is appointed Commander of the English fleet, in the Duke of York's room.

May 2. May 2. Admiral *de Ruyter* attempts to sink some ships in the Thames mouth, to stop the navigation in that river.

15. The English and French fleets join one another.

28. June 4. Three battles are fought between the Dutch, and English and French fleets, with no considerable advantage on Aug. 11. either side ; in the last, Sir *Edward Spragg* was drowned.

Lewis XIV. takes *Maastricht*.

Sir *Lionel Jenkins*, and Sir *Joseph Williamson* are sent as his Majesty's Ambassadors extraordinary at *Cologne*, and arrive thither, June 14.

A Congress is held at *Cologne* for a peace, but comes to nothing.

19. Sir *Thomas Osborne* is made High-Treasurer, in the Lord Clifford's room.

Septemb. William III, Prince of Orange, takes *Naarden*, and afterwards *Bonne*, which obliges the King of France to abandon all

all his conquests in the *United Provinces*, except *Maastricht Ann. C.*
and *Grave*.

A marriage is negotiated between *James Duke of York*
and *Maria d'Este Princess of Modena*.

The Parliament meeting again, the Commons present
an address to the King against the Duke of York's marriage,
but his Majesty prorogues the Parliament.

The Parliament meets again; and the Commons adjourn
themselves to the 30th.

They order a bill to be brought in for a General Test
between Protestants and Papists.

The King takes the Great Seal from *Anthony Ashley Cooper Earl of Shaftesbury*; and gives it to Sir *Heneage Finch* Nov. 9.
his Attorney-General, whom he constitutes Lord Keeper.

The Commons come to a resolution to grant no more
aid or supply of money to the King, before the act for
raising 1,238,750*l.* be expired, or the Kingdom secured
from Popery.

They present to him an address for a general fast:

And a second address against the Duke of York's mar- Nov. 1.
riage.

They vote, That the standing army is a grievance and 4.
a burden to the Nation.

They vote also, in a tumultuous manner, 1. That King Charles's alliance with France, 2. his evil Counsellors, and
3. *John Maitland, Duke of Lauderdale*, were all grievances.

The King prorogues the Parliament to the 7th day of
January, 1674.

A proclamation is issued out for the rigorous execution 14.
of the laws against the Papists.

James, Duke of York, is married, at Dover, and con- 21.
summates his marriage with *Maria d'Este*.

The Parliament meets again.

They form the design of restoring the Government to its 1673-4.
natural state.

For that purpose, the House of Lords presents an address
to the King, praying him to order all Papists to remove
out of London and Westminster, during the session of the
Parliament.

A proclamation is issued out accordingly.

Both Houses join in an address to the King for a general 14.
fast.

The Commons vote, That they would in the first place
proceed to have their grievances redressed, the Protestant
Religion, their Liberties and Properties effectually secured,

Ann. C. Popery suppressed, and all Persons and Counsellors, popishly affected, removed from the King's Person.

They address the King, That the Militia of *London* and *Middlesex* might be ready at an hour's warning, and that of all the other Counties of *England* at a day's warning.

The King returns a general answer to their address.

Then proceeding against the three remaining Members of the Cabal, they vote, first, That his Majesty should be addressed to remove *John Maitland*, Duke of *Lauderdale*, from his employments, and from his presence and Councils, for ever.

Jan. 13. Next, they examine *George Villiers*, Duke of *Buckingham*, and pass the same vote against him as against the Duke of *Lauderdale*.

In the third place, they impeach *Henry Bennet*, Earl of *Arlington*.

Then they prepare a bill for a general test.

The *States* make proposals to King *Charles* for a separate peace; and grant full powers to the Marquis *del Frene*, the Spanish Ambassador at *London*, to conclude a peace in their name.

24. The King consults the Parliament, upon this occasion, *Reg. 26.* who advise him to make peace.

The Commons continue to examine the grievances, and resolve to address the King to disband all forces raised since the year 1663.

Feb. 9. The treaty of peace between *England* and *Holland* is signed.

11. The King acquaints the Parliament with the conclusion of the peace, and desires a supply of money.

The Commons go on, notwithstanding, examining the grievances, and bring in a bill concerning the writs of *Habeas Corpus*.

24. The Parliament is prorogued till October 10.

28. The peace between *England* and *Holland* is proclaimed.

King *Charles* offers his mediation to *France*, and the *United Provinces*, which accept of it, and prevail upon their allies to do the same.

But he was not like to be an impartial Mediator, considering that he received from *France* an annual pension of 100,000*l.* sterling.

1674. The Papists importune King *Charles* to dissolve the Parliament; but he refuses to do it.

May 13. Three Ambassadors extraordinary from the *States of Holland*

Holland make their entry into *London*, and, the next day, *Ann. C.* have an audience of the King.

A proclamation is issued out, for banishing *Romish Priests* June 10. and *Jesuits*.

Henry Bennet, Earl of *Arlington*, is made Lord-Cham-Sept. 11. berlain, and Sir *Joseph Williamson*, Secretary of State. 16.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*, loses all his credit.

The celebrated Poet, *John Milton*, dies in the course of this year.

As doth also *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*, at *Roan*. Dec. 7.

The King of *France*, and the other contending Powers, 1674-5. agree to treat of a peace at *Nimeguen*; and, on the 12th of *January*. March following, King *Charles* appoints *John*, Lord Berk-Reg. 27. *ley*, of *Stratton*, Sir *William Temple*, and Sir *Lionel Jenkins*, to be his Ambassadors at that treaty.

Henry Bennet, Earl of *Arlington*, finding himself decline in the King's favour, doth, in order to ingratiate himself again, take a journey to the *Hague*, to try to engage *William III*, Prince of *Orange*, into the measures of the Court of *England*; but, not succeeding, he loses all his credit.

The Parliament meets again.

The Commons prepare a bill against Popish Priests. 1675.

They present an address to the King, desiring him to re- April 13. move *John Maitland*, Duke of *Lauderdale*, from his person May 6. and councils; but his Majesty refuseth.

Next, they examine the whole conduct of *Thomas Osborne*, Viscount *Latimer*, and Lord-Treasurer.

Moreover, they pray the King, in an address, to recall his forces out of *France*, and prevent his subjects from engaging in that service for the future: He rejects the first part of the petition, and grants the latter.

The House of Lords being afraid that the Commons were going too far, and intended to alter the Government, bring in a bill, intitled, An act to prevent the dangers which may arise from persons disaffected to the Government; which occasions long debates in the Upper House: But the bill passes at last.

The Prince of *Newburg* comes to *England*.

May.

The Commons design to grant 300,000*l.* sterling, for building of ships; and to apply the tax of tonnage and poundage to the maintenance of the navy.

A quarrel happens between the two Houses, occasioned by Dr. *Shirley*'s appealing to the House of Lords against Sir *John Fagg*, a Member of the House of Commons. 16.

Ann. C. The King prorogues the Parliament to the 13th of *Octo-*
June 9. *ber.*

The Duchess of *Mazarine* withdraws into *England*, and hath 4000*l.* a year allowed her by King *Charles*.

July 27. The Marshal *de Turenne* is killed by a cannon-ball.

Aug. 4. *Treves* is retaken by the Allies.

Oct. 13. The Parliament meets again, and the King makes a speech to them, in which he demands money.

The Commons resume the consideration of the bills left unfinished the last session:

They examine the public accounts, and vote to grant the King 300,000*l.* for building 20 ships of war; and to appropriate tonnage and poundage to the maintenance of the navy.

The Commons order a bill to be prepared about the commerce between *England* and *France*.

They come to a resolution of obliging all their Members to take an oath, that they had not received any thing from the Court since the 1st of *January*, 1672.

Complaints are laid before the House concerning the attempt of Father *St. Germain* upon Mr. *de Luzancy*, a French Priest, who had abjured Popery; and a proclamation is issued out against *St. Germain*.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*, brings in a bill into the House of Lords for the ease [or toleration] of Protestant Dissenters.

But, the quarrel between the two Houses about *Shirley* and *Fagg* being revived, the King prorogues the Parlia-

Nov. 22. ment to the 15th of *February*, 1677.

Dec. 19. *Heneage*, Lord *Finch*, having been hitherto only Lord-Keeper, is now made Lord High-Chancellor.

John Lightfoot, D. D. *Thomas Willis*, M. D. and *Bulstrode Whitlock*, Esq; die in this year.

Dec. 29. King *Charles*, being reflected upon for his affection to *Popery* and to *France*, publishes a proclamation for sup-

Jan. 7. pressing coffee-houses; and another against libels.

Reg. 28. *Lewis XIV.* King of *France*, takes *Condé* and *Bouchain*.

1676. He returns to *Paris*, leaving his army under the command of *Frederic Count de Schomberg*.

May. *William III*, Prince of *Orange*, lays siege to *Maastricht*.

July. *Frederic Count de Schomberg* takes *Aire*; and marches to the relief of *Maastricht*, of which he obliges the Prince of *Orange* to raise the siege.

King *Charles* endeavours to prevail upon the *States of Holland* to make a separate peace with *France*, without taking

taking notice of their Allies ; but the Prince of *Orange* op- *Ann. C.*
poses that project.

The French Privateers seize abundance of English ships,
which renders the people of *England* very eager for a war
with *France*.

King *Charles* forbids by a proclamation his subjects to
hear mass in the Queen's Chapel, or in the houses of Ambassadors.

This year died *George Digby*, Earl of *Bristol* ; and the
excellent Sir *Matthew Hale*, Chief Justice of the King's-Bench.

The Parliament meets again.

1676-7.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*, undertakes to prove, *Reg. 29.*
that the Parliament was dissolved by the last prorogation *Feb. 15.*
for 15 months.

He is seconded by *James Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, and *Philip Lord Wharton*.

They are all four sent to the *Tower*, where the Earl of *Shaftesbury* remains prisoner above a year.

The Commons vote the King 584,978 l. 2 s. 2 d. $\frac{1}{2}$.
for building 30 ships of war ; and continue for three years
the additional excise upon beer.

Lewis XIV. takes *Valenciennes* and *Cambray*.

Mar. 17.

The Commons present an address to the King against *1677.*
France ; to which he returns a general answer.

They present to him a second address upon the same subject,
intreating him to stop the progress of the *French*
arms in the *Spanish Netherlands*.

The King gives an answer, in which he demands money, *April 9.*
to enable him to make suitable preparations.

William III., Prince of *Orange*, is defeated by the Duke *11.*
of *Orleans* at *Montcassel*.

The Commons inform the King in a third address, that
they intended to grant him 200,000 l. but he asks 600,000 l.

He passes several acts ; namely, one for taking away the
writ *de Hæretico comburendo*. — Another, for erecting a
judicature to determine differences touching houses burnt and
demolished by the late dreadful fire in *Southwark*. — An
act for the better observation of the Lord's-day, &c.

The Parliament is adjourned to the 21st of *May*.

The Citadels of *Cambray*, and *St. Omer*, surrender by *20.*
capitulation.

Though King *Charles* had no design to make war against

Ann. C. France, he makes use of that pretence, to get money from the Parliament.

May 21. The Parliament meeting again, the King hastens the money-bill.

The Commons distrust the King, and the King pretends to fear, that the Commons would engage him in a war with France, and then leave him to extricate himself as well as he could.

He makes to them an obscure speech, which occasions warm debates in the House of Commons.

May 26. The Commons present an address to the King, in which they earnestly desire him to make a league offensive and defensive with the Dutch; and to go to war with France.

28. His Majesty sends for the Commons to Whitehall, and after having sharply reproved them for invading his prerogative, orders them to adjourn themselves to the 16th of July.

He endeavours to bring the Prince of Orange and the States, to make a separate peace with France.

Sir William Temple having refused that Commission, Laurence Hyde, Esq; is sent to the Hague, to try to prevail upon the Prince of Orange to comply with those terms.

Oct. 9. William III, Prince of Orange, comes to England to demand in marriage the Princess Mary, eldest daughter to the Duke of York.

The King was for agreeing with the Prince of Orange upon the terms of a general peace, before the conclusion of the marriage; but the Prince absolutely refused to do so. King Charles yields at last, and the marriage is concluded.

29. The City of London invites the Court to an entertainment upon account of this marriage.

Nov. 4. The marriage is consummated.

9. Gilbert Sheldon, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies, and is succeeded by William Sancroft.

King Charles and the Prince of Orange agree upon a plan for a general peace, which is communicated to the King of France, but it is not followed.

21. The Prince and Princess of Orange embark for Holland.

Dec. 3. The adjournment of the Parliament is prolonged to the 4th of April.

King Charles suffers himself to be corrupted by France; forsakes the plan he had agreed on for a peace; and enters into secret negotiations with France.

1677-8. The Parliament is assembled the 15th of January, and Jan. 15. adjourned to the 28th of the same month.

King

King Charles concludes a defensive league with Holland. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament meets again.

16.

The King makes a speech to the Parliament, in which he insinuates, that his being engaged in a war with France was a consequence of the league with Holland; and demands money for carrying it on.

28.

The Commons present an address to him, in which they Reg. 30. give him to understand, that they would see him actually 31. engaged in a war with France, before they granted him any supplies; but the King returns an evasive answer. *Feb. 4.*

The Commons vote that the King's treaty with Holland was not pursuant to their desires signified to his Majesty.

They resolve to grant him a supply, but with strict limitations.

Anthony-Ashley Cooper, Earl of Shaftesbury, is released out of the Tower.

Lewis XIV. takes Ghent and Ipres.

March.

The Commons prepare a bill for raising money by way of poll-tax, and otherwise; to enable his Majesty to enter into an actual war against the French King, and for prohibiting French commodities.

14.

20.

They pray the King in an address to declare war against France: But, before an answer was given, the King gives his assent to the poll-bill, and adjourns the Parliament to the 11th of April.

He raised 30,000 men, who were compleated in six weeks.

The Parliament meets, and is adjourned to the 19th.

1678.

The Parliament meets again.

April 11.

The King acquaints both Houses that the Dutch were thinking to make a separate peace, and desires their advice upon that affair.

19.

The Commons advise him to act vigorously against France; and vote that the league concluded with Holland was not consistent with the good and safety of the Kingdom.

The King is displeased with that vote: However, the May. Commons, not discouraged thereby, complain of the King's answers to their late addresses, and desire him to remove those Counsellors that advised him to give those answers, particularly the Duke of Lauderdale.

The King returns them an angry answer, and prorogues the Parliament to the 23d of May.

The States-General send Mr. Van Lewen to King Charles,

B b 4

to

Ann. C. to let him know, that unless he would declare war against *France*, they were disposed to a peace.

King *Charles* resolves to take the money offered to him by *France*, for his consent to a separate peace with *Holland*.

A treaty is negotiated at *London* between him and *Lewis XIV*; but *Lewis* insisting, He should never keep above 8000 men, standing troops, in his three Kingdoms, *Charles* is thereby put into a great rage, as he could not expect of becoming absolute master in his Dominions, with so small a force.

May 23. The Parliament meets again; and the King makes a speech to them, about the army, and a supply of money.

27. The Commons offer to maintain the army, if the King would go to war with *France*; but, if otherwise, that they would provide for the speedy disbanding of the army.

June 2. They vote 200,000*l.* for the disbanding of it, by the end of the month; but the King was against the disbanding of it, till the peace was concluded.

The Commons extend the time of doing it, as to the forces in *Flanders*, to the 27th day of *July*.

15. They vote, that after the 18th of *June*, no motions should be made for any new supplies of money, till after the next recess.

18. The King acquaints both Houses with the peace between *France*, *Spain*, and *Holland*, being almost concluded: And demands, at the same time, money for protecting *Flanders* against *France*; and a new fund of 300,000*l.* per ann.

30. A difficulty is started, relating to the evacuation of the towns of *Ghent*, *Aeth*, *Charleroy*, *Oudenard*, *Courtray*, and *Limburg*, by the *French*; which retards the signing of the peace at *Nimeguen*.

July 15. The Royal assent is given to the following acts: 1—For granting a supply to his Majesty of 619,388*l.* 11*s.* and 9*d.* for disbanding the army, and other uses.—2. For granting an additional duty upon wines, for three years.—3. For repealing an act made in the 18th of his Majesty's Reign, and making a new act for burying in woollen, &c.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 1st of *August*.

26. King *Charles* concludes a league with the *States* for obliging the *French* to surrender the six towns above-mentioned; but he soon repents of it, and breaks the measures of the *States*.

Mons is blocked up by the Duke of *Luxemburgh*.

Aug. 11. The peace is signed at *Nimeguen*.

Dr.

Dr. *Ezerel Tonge* makes the first discovery to the King of *Ann. C.*
the Popish-plot.

12.

14.

The battle of *St. Dennis* is fought, and the Duke of *Lux-*
embourg forced by the Prince of *Orange* to quit the siege
of *Mons*.

King *Charles* will not suffer honest *William* [alias *John*
Groves] and *Thomas Pickering*, to be apprehended, nor the
conspiracy to be spoken of.

12.

14.

Bedingfield receives some letters relating to the plot,
which he carries to the Duke of *York*, who causes those
letters to be examined by the Council, and so the affair is
made public.

Titus Oates appears as a witness in the conspiracy, and *Sept. 6.*
gives a narrative of it; but the Council pays no regard to
his discovery.

Whereupon, *Tonge* and *Oates* take measures to bring the
affair before the Parliament; for that purpose, they apply
to Sir *Edmonbury Godfrey*, a Justice of Peace; and *Oates*
swears before him to the truth of his narrative.

27.

Thomas *Osborne*, Earl of *Danby*, and Lord-Treasurer,
communicates the plot to the Council, which resolves to
examine that business to the bottom.

28.

Dr. *Ezerel Tonge*, *Titus Oates*, and *Christopher Kirkby*,
are accordingly examined by the Council, and the two first
have lodgings assigned them in *Whitehall*, with a guard,
and a weekly salary.

Several Jesuits, and others, of the Conspirators, are ap-
prehended.

Sir *Edmonbury Godfrey* is found murdered; and the *Oct. 17.*
Papists are accused of having done it.

20, 24.

Two proclamations are issued out for discovering the au-
thors of it.

The King endeavours to keep the plot concealed from
the Parliament.

21.

The Parliament meeting again, the King makes a speech
to both Houses, wherein he demands money.

The Lord-Treasurer, *Danby*, communicates *Oates's*
narrative to the Commons, contrary to the King's order;
and the Commons communicate it to the House of Lords.

22.

23.

24.

Both Houses present three addresses to the King; the
first, To desire him to appoint a fast; the second, To re-
quire the removal of all Popish Recusants out of *London*;
the third, To pray the King's order to the Lord-Chamber-
lain, that no unknown person might have access to his
Majesty.

Titus

Ann. C. *Titus Oates* is examined in the House of Commons, for several hours.

24. Six and twenty of the Conspirators are apprehended ; and, among the rest, *William Herbert*, Earl of Powis, *William Howard*, Lord Viscount Stafford, *Henry, Lord Arundel, of Wardour*, *William, Lord Petre*, *Thomas, Lord Bellasis*, and *Sir Henry Tichbourne*, Bart. all Papists.

Oz. 31. The Commons vote, That there is, and hath been a damnable and hellish plot contrived and carried on by Popish Recusants for assassinating the King, for subverting the Government, and for rooting out the Protestant Religion. The House of Lords concurs with the Commons in this vote.

The King issues out a proclamation, ordering the Papists to depart the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*.

Nov. 2. And another, for discovering any of his guards that should embrace the *Romish Religion*.

4. A debate arises in the House of Commons for an address to the King, that he would be pleased to remove the Duke of York from his Person and Councils ; but it is put off till another day.

6. *William Bedloe*, another evidence for the plot, is brought up to *London*.

7 & 12. He is examined twice by the Lords.

9. The King makes a speech to both Houses, to divert the Commons from their designs against the Duke of York.

12. A proclamation is issued out, forbidding the Papists to remove above five miles out of their Houses.

The Commons present an address to the King, to desire him, That the oaths of allegiance and supremacy might be tendered to all his servants, and all other persons residing within his Palaces, and the Inns of Courts.

The King grants their request, with exception of the menial servants of the Queen and Duchess of York ; but the Commons insist upon their demand.

18. Sir *Joseph Williamson*, Secretary of State, is sent to the *Tower*, by the Commons, for counter-signing commissions for Popish officers : King *Charles* releases him.

The Commons present an address to the King, to justify their proceedings ; whereupon, the King promises to recall all his commissions granted to Popish officers.

The bill for disabling Papists from fitting in Parliament, passes both Houses.

20. A proclamation is issued out against *Romish Priests* and *Jesuits*.

William

William Stayley, a Goldsmith, is tried and condemned for *Ann. C.* treasonable words, and executed the 26th following. 21.

The King desires the Commons, either to grant him money to keep up his forces in *Flanders*, or to disband them. 25.

The Commons resolve, That all the forces raised since the 29th of September, 1677, should be disbanded; and address the King for that purpose.

Edward Coleman, Secretary to *James*, Duke of *York*, is tried for being concerned in the Popish plot, and brought in guilty of High-treason. 27.

The King publishes a proclamation to encourage further discoveries about the plot.

He gives the Royal assent to the bill for disabling Papists from sitting in Parliament, and for disbanding the forces; but absolutely rejects the bill for raising the third part of the Militia. 30.

Edward Coleman is executed, without making any confession. Dec. 3.

Titus Oates, and *William Bedloe*, accuse Queen *Catharine* of being concerned in the plot; but the King stops this accusation, by his authority.

However, the Commons address the King to remove the Queen and her Family from the Court at *Whitehall*.

They impeach of High-treason the five Lords in the Tower. 6.

William Ireland, *Thomas Pickering*, and *John Grove*, all three Jesuits, are brought to their trials, for the Popish plot, and found guilty; but *Thomas Whitebread*, and *John Fenwick*, are acquitted. 17.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, is brought into troubles by means of *Ralph Mountague*, Esq; and accused of High-treason by the Commons.

Miles Prance is taken up for the murder of Sir *Edmond-bury Godfrey*, and being examined before a Committee of the Lords, he denies all, and is sent to *Newgate*; but, upon his second examination, he confesses every thing. 21.

However, he retracts all, in his second examination, before the King and Council. He retracted once more, and then confessed all he knew. 29.

The King prorogues the Parliament to the 4th of February. 30.

Miles Prance delivers in writing a full account of what 1678-9. he had deposed before, concerning Sir *Edmond-bury Godfrey's* Jan. 2. murder.

The

- Ann. C.* The King issues out several proclamations against the Papists, and one, for recalling all his subjects from the foreign seminaries.
3. *William Ireland*, and *John Grove*, are executed, protesting their innocence to the last.
14. A College of Jesuits is discovered at *Lower-Come*, in *Herefordshire*.
- Stephen Dugdale accuses five Jesuits and one Priest, of being concerned in the plot.
24. The King dissolves his second Parliament, after it had continued almost 18 years, and calls a new one, to meet the 6th of *March*.
- Jan. 25.* Writs are issued out for the elections for a new Parliament.
- Reg. 31.*
- Feb. 10.* *Robert Green*, *Henry Berry*, and *Laurence Hill* are brought to their trials for being concerned in the murder of Sir *Edmondbury Godfrey*, and condemned.
35. *Robert Earl of Sunderland* is made principal Secretary of State in the room of Sir *Joseph Williamson*.
21. *Robert Green* and *Laurence Hill* are executed, without confessing any thing; *Berry* is reprieved till *May 28*.
28. The King writes to the Duke of *York*, to desire him to leave the Kingdom; whereupon, the Duke embarks for *Holland*, and thence withdraws to *Brussels*.
- Mar. 3.* The new Parliament meets; it being the 3d of King *Charles II.*
6. His Majesty makes a speech to both Houses, in which he assures them of his affection to the laws of the land, and the Protestant Religion, and demands money.
- 6—13. A dispute happens between the King and the Commons, about chusing *Edward Seymour*, Esq; for their Speaker.
13. The King prorogues the Parliament from the 13th to the 15th.
- Thomas Earl of Danby* is dismissed from his office of Lord-Treasurer; and rewarded with a pension of 5000*l. per ann.* and, on the 26th, the Treasury is put in commission.
15. The Parliament meets again.
- William Gregory*, Esq; is chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, and approved by the King.
20. A Committee of Secrecy is appointed.
- The Commons resume the impeachment of *Thomas Earl of Danby*, and desire the Lords that he may be committed to custody. He resolves to adhere to the benefit of a pardon granted him by the King.

They

They examine Dr. Tonge, Titus Oates, William Bedloe, Ann. C. and Edmund Everard, a new discoverer. 21.

The Commons present addresses to the King, in behalf of Bedloe.

They pass some votes relating to the conspiracy, which the Lords concur with.

Both Houses petition for a fast-day on the 11th of April, which is granted.

The Commons order a bill to be brought in for securing the King and Kingdom against the danger and growth of Popery. 22.

The King makes a speech to the Parliament in favour of the Earl of Danby : But the Commons desire the Lords, that he might be committed, and examine the Chancellor about his pardon.

Anthony-Ashley Cooper, Earl of Shaftesbury makes a remarkable speech against Popery. 1679. 25.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of Danby, withdraws ; whereupon the Commons bring in a bill, to summon him to render himself by a day, or else to be attainted. After several conferences, this bill is passed by the Lords.

Articles of impeachment against the five Lords in the Tower, are carried up to the House of Lords by the Commons. April 3.

The Earl of Danby renders himself, and is sent to the Tower. 16.

The King forms a new Privy-Council, into which Arthur Capel Earl of Essex, Sir William Temple, and Anthony-Ashley Cooper, Earl of Shaftesbury, are admitted ; the latter being made President of the same. 20.

The King acquaints the Parliament with it, and great rejoicings are every where on that occasion ; but the House of Commons receives the news of it with great coldness.

A design formed by the Papists to burn London is discovered.

The Commons pass a vote against James Duke of York concerning his Religion ; and bring in a bill for banishing all Papists, &c. twenty miles from London and Westminster.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of Danby, being brought to the bar of the House of Lords, produces the King's pardon, and is remanded to the Tower. 25.

The King justifies his granting that pardon, and recommends to the Parliament the prosecution of the plot ; the disbanding of the army ; and the providing a fleet. 30.

He causes the Lord-Chancellor Finch to make some very important

- Auⁿ. C.* important offers, about the succession of *James Duke of York*; but the Commons are not satisfied with them.
- May 2.* *John Sharp*, Archbishop of St. *Andrews* in *Scotland* is affainted.
5. The Commons go up to the bar of the House of Lords, and demand judgment against *Thomas Osborne*, Earl of *Danby*; having voted his pardon illegal and void.
They also present an address to the King against *John Maitland Duke of Lauderdale*.
9. *Thomas Pickering* is executed.
The Commons grant the King 206,462 l. 17 s. and 3 d. for paying off, and disbanding the army.
A difference arises between the two Houses, about the Earl of *Danby's* affair.
10. The Commons petition the King to cause the militia of *London, Westminster, Southwark, Middlesex, and Surrey*, to be immediately raised, and put in a posture of defence.
A bill is brought into the House, to disable the Duke of *York* from inheriting the Imperial Crown of *England*.
Disputes arise between the two Houses, about the Bishops voting in cases of blood, and at the trial of the five impeached Lords.
15. The exclusion-bill is read, for the first time, in the House of Commons.
21. It is read a second time, and committed.
The Commons examine what Members of the last Parliament received pensions from the Court.
27. The King passes the *Habeas Corpus* act, for better securing the liberty of the subject; and then prorogues the Parliament to the 14th of *August*.
28. *Henry Berry* is executed.
- June 1.* About 1500 Presbyterians rise up in arms in *Scotland*, and seize *Glasgow*, and some other towns.
13. *Thomas Whitebread, William Harcourt, John Fenwick, John Gawan, and Anthony Turner*, Jesuits, are brought to their trials, and found guilty of High-treason.
14. *Richard Langhorn*, a Counsellor at law, of the *Temple*, and a Papist, is brought to his trial, and also found guilty.
20. The five Jesuits are executed, protesting, to the last, their innocence.
22. *James Scot, Duke of Monmouth*, defeats the Rebels at *Bothwell-Bridge*, in *Scotland*.
- July 10.* The King dissolves his third Parliament, and calls a new one, to meet the 17th of *October*.

Richard

Richard Langborn is executed.

Ann. C.

Sir George Wakeman, William Marshall, James Corker,
and William Rumley, are brought to their trials, and ac- 14.
quitted. 18.

The King falls ill of an intermitting fever; whereupon, *August.*
James, Duke of York, being sent for, by advice of the *Sept. 2.*
Earls of Essex and Hallifax, returns to Court. 29.

The Duke of Monmouth is disgraced, and sent away to
Holland; and *Anthony-Ashley Cooper*, Earl of Shaftesbury,
turned out from being President of the Council.

The King, contrary to the advice of his Council, pro- *Oct. 15.*
rogues the Parliament; whereupon, many of the Privy-
Councillors surrender their commissions, particularly *Arthur*
Capel, Earl of Essex, and others retire into the country. 27.

James, Duke of York, goes and resides in Scotland, where
he governs in an arbitrary manner.

The meal-tub plot, contrived by the Papists, and ma-
naged by *Thomas Dangerfield*, is discovered: He is ex-
amined before the King and Council, and being committed
to Newgate, discovers the whole fraud, and has his pardon, *Nov. 2.*
November 9.

The Countess of Powis, one of the chief contrivers of
this pretended plot, and accused of conspiring to kill the
King, is sent to the Tower. 4.

Thomas Hobbes dies in this year, 1679, 91 years old.

Petitions are presented to the King from most parts in 1679-80.
the Kingdom, desiring, that the Parliament might sit the *January*.
26th of *January*.

The fourth Parliament of King *Charles II.* meets, and 26.
is prorogued to the 15th of April. *Reg. 32.*

Sir *Lionel Jenkins* is made Secretary of State, in the *Feb. 15.*
room of *Henry Coventry*, Esq;

James, Duke of York, returns to Court. 24.

On occasion of the petitions above-mentioned, two par-
ties are formed in the Kingdom, called, the Abhorrers, and
Addressers, or Tories and Whigs:

And several libels are published against the Court.

Anthony-Ashley Cooper, Earl of Shaftesbury, spreads a re- 1680.
port of the Duke of Monmouth's legitimacy: But the King, *April.*
calling an extraordinary Council, solemnly declares, that 26.
report to be false; and afterwards has a memorandum en-
tered in the Council-books, That he never was married
to Mrs. Barlow, alias Walters, the Duke of Monmouth's
mother.

Elizabeth

Ann. C. *Elizabeth Cellier*, the chief contriver of the meal-tub *June 11.* plot, is tried, and acquitted.

23. A defensive alliance is concluded between *England* and *Spain*.

Roger Palmer, Earl of *Castlemain*, is tried, and acquitted.

Slingsby Bethel, and *Henry Cornish*, both Dissenters, are chosen Sheriffs of *London*.

Aug. 20. *William Bedloe* dies, having, upon his death-bed, charged *James*, Duke of *York*, with being concerned in the Popish conspiracy; but he clears him, and the Queen, of having had any design of attempting upon the King's life.

James Scot, Duke of *Monmouth*, returns to *England*, without leave, and endeavours to gain a party in the Kingdom; for which end, he takes progresses in several parts.

October. *James*, Duke of *York*, is presented in *Westminster-Hall* as a Popish Recusant, by the Earl of *Shaftesbury*, attended by 12 Lords, and Gentlemen of note.

20. The King sends him back into *Scotland*.

21. The Parliament meets.

The Commons chuse *William Williams*, Esq; for their Speaker, and expel some of their Members that had been among the Abhorers.

26. They present an address to the King against Sir *George Jeffries*, Recorder of *London*, and one of the Abhorers, and resume the business of the Popish plot.

William, Lord Ruffel, opens the debates in the House of Commons, about the exclusion of the Duke of *York*.

Dr. Ezrel Tonge dies.

Nov. 2. The Commons vote, That the Duke of *York*'s being a Papist, and the hopes of his coming such to the Crown, hath given the greatest encouragement to the present conspiracies; and resolve to stand by his Majesty with their lives and fortunes.

The exclusion-bill is read the first time.

4. It is read a second time.

6. The King sends two messages to the Commons, to interrupt their debates about the exclusion.

10, 17. They present addresses to his Majesty, in answer to his two messages.

The exclusion-bill passes the House of Commons.

13. The Commons present an address, or kind of remonstrance, to the King, in which they set forth the danger the Kingdom was in, on account of Popery.

The bill of exclusion is sent up to the House of Lords, *Ann. C.*
who throw it out.

William Howard Viscount Stafford, is brought to his trial ^{15.} Nov. 30.
and condemned.

The King makes a speech to the Parliament, relating *Dec. 15.*
to his Alliances with *Spain* and *Holland*, and concerning
Tangier, his affection for the Protestant Religion, and the
Right of Succession.

The Commons enter into some resolves against Popery
and arbitrary Power, and among the rest, to bring in bills
— To banish all the considerable Papists out of the
Kingdom. — For the more effectual securing the meet-
ings and sittings of frequent Parliaments. — That the
Judges may hold their places and salaries *quamdiu se bene
gesserint*. — And to make illegal exactation of money upon
the people to be High-treason.

They also agree to come into an association.

They present an address to the King, in answer to his ^{20.}
speech of *December 15.*

The Papists endeavour to sow dissensions amongst the
Protestants.

But the House of Commons takes care to screen the
Presbyterians; accordingly, a bill passes both Houses for
uniting his Majesty's Protestant subjects; but when it
should have been offered to the King for the Royal assent,
it was unaccountably lost.

William Howard Lord Viscount Stafford is beheaded, ^{29.}
without making any confession.

The Commons vote, that no Member of their House
should accept of any office or place of profit, nor any pro-
mise of any such place from the Crown without leave of
the House.

The King returns an answer to the address of the ^{1680-1.}
Commons. ^{Jan. 4.}

The Lords vote, that there is, and for divers years past
has been, a horrid plot contrived and carried on by the Pa-
pists in *Ireland*, for massacring the *English*, and subverting
the Protestant Religion: Which vote is approved by the
Commons, and they add, that the plot was countenanced by
the Duke of *York*'s being a Papist.

Upon receiving the King's answer to their address, they
resolve, that the King's person and Protestant Religion
cannot be secured any way, without the exclusion-bill:
and that, until they had that bill, they could give no money

VOL. II. ^{C e} without

Ann. C. without endangering the King's person and Protestant Religion.

They petition his Majesty to remove from his Person and Council, *George Savil Earl of Hallifax, Laurence Hyde Esq; Henry Somerset Earl of Worcester, Henry Hyde Earl of Clarendon, and Lewis Duras Earl of Feversham.*

The Commons vote, that whosoever should lend any money by way of advance upon the branches of the King's revenue, should be responsible for the same in Parliament.

The King is pressed in vain to forsake the Duke of York.

10. The Commons pass some votes against the prorogation of the Parliament, and in favour of the Protestant Dissenters.

An additional act is passed for burying in woollen.

18. The Parliament is prorogued, the same day.

Reg. 30. And dissolved.

The King summons another to meet at Oxford the 21st of March.

In the mean time, he puts *Robert Spencer Earl of Sunderland* out of his office of Secretary of State, which he gives to *Edward Earl of Conway*. He also makes alterations among the Judges: And dismisses the Earls of Essex, Salisbury, and Sunderland, and Sir William Temple, from his Privy-Council.

The City of London chuses their old Representatives, and most of the Boroughs in the Kingdom do the same.

Arthur Capel Earl of Essex, attended by fifteen other Lords, presents a petition to the King, to desire him to let the Parliament sit at Westminster, but the King returns no answer.

Edward Fitz-Harris persuades *Edmund Everard* to write a Libel against the King, for which *Fitz-Harris* is sent to Newgate; but the King removes him from thence to the Tower.

Mar. 14. King Charles repairs to Oxford seven or eight days before the meeting of the Parliament.

21. The 5th Parliament of King Charles II. meets at Oxford.

His Majesty makes a speech at the opening of it, wherein he recommends some expedient, instead of the exclusion.

24. The Commons come to a resolution of printing their votes, which did not use to be made public before, and to bring in a bill for excluding *James Duke of York*.

They examine the affair of *Fitz-Harris*, and impeach him of High-treason.

The

The expedients, proposed instead of the bill of exclusion, *Ann. C.*
are taken into consideration by the House of Commons. 26.
But they reject them, and order the exclusion-bill to be
brought in.

A difference arises between the two Houses about the
Lord's throwing out the impeachment of *Fitz-Harris*.

The bill of exclusion is read in the House of Commons.

The King dissolves his fifth Parliament, and governs
thenceforth in an absolute and arbitrary manner.

He publishes a declaration containing his reasons for dis-
solving the two last Parliaments, and orders it to be read
in Churches. Addresses are presented to him upon that
occasion.

Charles Lenox Duke of Richmond, is made Knight of the *Garter*. April 7.

Edward Fitz-Harris, and *Oliver Plunket*, titular Arch-
bishop of *Dublin*, are tried and condemned for High-trea-
son; and executed the 1st of *July*. June.

Anthony-Ashley Cooper, Earl of *Shaftesbury* is committed to the *Tower*, as are also *John Rouse*, *Bryan Haynes*,—
White, and *Stephen Colledge* the Protestant Joiner. July 2.

Stephen Colledge is indicted of High-treason, but the Jury
throw out the bill with an *Ignoramus*; for which *John Wil-*
more the fore-man, is committed to the *Tower*.

Colledge's ruin being determined, he is removed to *Oxford*, and there tried and brought in guilty of High-treason.

He is executed.

31.

Titus Oates is turned out of *Whitehall*.

James Duke of York, the King's High Commissioner,
convenes a Parliament in *Scotland*.

In this Parliament several acts are passed in favour of the
King, and Royalty, and a new oath or test is imposed.

Archibald Campbell Earl of *Argyle*, refusing to take it, is
imprisoned and condemned to die; but he makes his es-
cape into *Holland*.

Sir John Moor, one of the Court-Party, is chosen Lord-Sept. 29.
Mayor of *London*, but *Thomas Pilkington*, and *Samuel Shute*,
both Whigs, are elected Sheriffs.

Anthony-Ashley Cooper Earl of *Shaftesbury* is tried for an Nov. 24.
association found among his papers, and acquitted by the
Grand-Jury; upon which occasion, bonfires and other re-
joicings are made in *London*.

The Dissenters are prosecuted.

1681-2.

The doctrine of passive obedience is preached up every Reg. 34.
where.

- Ann. C.* An Ambassador from the King of *Fez* and *Morocco* makes
Jan. 5. his entrance into *London*.
- 12.* *Thomas Thynne*, Esq; is assassinated in *Pall-Mall* by
Count Coningsmark, and other russians.
- March.* Eight Ambassadors from *Bantam* come to *England*.
- 1682.* *James Duke of York* returns to *England*.
- May 5.* He goes back to *Scotland* by sea, and is, in his voyage
thither, ship-wrecked, and very nigh being lost.
- June.* He returns soon after to *England*, and hath a great influence over the counsels of the King his brother.
- July.* *Dudley North* and *Peter Rich*, both of the Court-party, are elected Sheriffs: And the two Sheriffs, *Thomas Pilkington* and *Samuel Shute*, are committed to the Tower, for continuing the poll, after it had been adjourned by the Lord-Mayor.
- Aug. 24.* *John Maitland Duke of Lauderdale* dies.
- Nov. 17.* The Lord-Mayor and Sheriffs of *London* forbid the burning the figure of the Pope.
- 24.* Alderman *Thomas Pilkington* having an action of *scandalum magnatum* brought against him by the Duke of *York*, is fined 100,000*l.* to the Duke's use.
- 29.* Prince *Rupert* dies.
- Dec. 18.* *Heneage Finch*, Earl of *Nottingham*, and Lord-Chancellor, dies; and is succeeded by *Sir Francis North*, Lord-Keeper.
- 1682-3.* *Robert Spencer Earl of Sunderland* is restored to the office of Secretary of State.
- Reg. 35.* The King goes to *Newmarket*.
- Mar. 3.* A fire there obliges him to return to *London* sooner than
22. he intended.
- 1683.* Fourteen Aldermen and Citizens of *London* are tried for
May 8. a pretended riot, at the last election of Sheriffs, and condemned in great fines.
- The Court comes to a resolution of resuming the Charters of the Corporations, and granting them others new-modelled. For that purpose, they begin with *London*, and a *Quo-Warranto* is brought by the King against the Charter of that City.
- June 12.* This affair being solemnly argued in the *King's-Bench*, the Court gave judgment, "That the franchises and liberties of the City of *London* be seized into the King's hands."
- 18.* The Lord-Mayor, Aldermen, &c. upon that, implore the King's mercy: But they are told, they must expect none,

none, unless they submitted to some regulations, which put *Ann. C* the nomination of Officers, and the Government of the City into the King's power.

They submit to those hard terms, and obtain a new 21. Charter.

The Protestant, or *Rye-House* plot, is discovered by *Josias and John Keeling*, two brothers.

The King puts out a proclamation for apprehending Colonel *John Ramsey*, *Richard Rumbald*, *Richard Kneller*, *Edward Wade*, *Richard Goodenough*, Captain *Thomas Walcot*, *William Thompson*, *James Burton*, and *William Hone*, who were informed against.

A second proclamation comes out, for apprehending James *Scot Duke of Monmouth*, *Ford Lord Grey of Werk*, *Sir Thomas Armstrong*, and *Robert Ferguson* a Minister.

Arthur Capel Earl of Essex, *William Lord Russel*, and some others, are also taken up.

Vienna is besieged by the Grand-Vizier *Kara Mustapha*. July 9.

Captain *Thomas Walcot* is brought to his trial, and condemned for high-treason.

William Lord Russel is also tried at the *Old Bailey*, and brought in guilty of high-treason; as are likewise *William Hone*, and *John Rouse*.

Arthur Capel Earl of Essex is found dead in the *Tower*, with his throat cut: The King and the Duke of *York* are suspected of being the authors of that murder.

The University of *Oxford* publishes a notable decree 21. about the power of Kings, &c.

Captain *Thomas Walcot*, *William Hone*, and *John Rouse*, 22. are executed.

William Lord Russel is beheaded in *Lincoln's Inn-Fields*.

The Princess *Anne*, second daughter to *James Duke of York*, is married to Prince *George of Denmark*.

John III, King of Poland, and the Duke of *Lorraine*, Sept. 2, raises the siege of *Vienna*.

Sir *George Jeffries* is made Chief-Justice of the King's- 28. Bench.

King *Charles* orders the judgment given upon the *Quo Oet. 6. Warrant* against the City of *London* to be entered; and names a Lord-Mayor, and other Magistrates.

Colonel *Algernon Sidney* is tried, and brought in guilty Nov. 21. of high-treason, for the late conspiracy.

James Scot Duke of Monmouth, reconciles himself with the King his Father, who grants him a pardon.

But he requires him to write a letter, to justify the con- Decemb.

demnation,

Ann. C. damnation of the Lord *Russel* and Colonel *Sidney*: The Duke writes it, but soon repenting thereof, and demanding it back, the King banishes him from his presence at Court.

A violent frost happens this year, which lasts from the beginning of *December* to the 5th of *February*.

7. Colonel *Algernon Sidney* is beheaded.

Tangier is demolished this year by the King's order.

1683-4. *John Hampden*, Esq; who was accused of being concerned in the late Protestant plot, is tried, and fined Reg. 36. *Feb. 6.* 40,000*l.*

Laurence Braddon and *Hugh Speke*, are tried, and fined, the first 2000*l.* and the latter 1000*l.* for inquiring into the Earl of *Essex*'s murder, *April 21.*

12. *Thomas Osborne*, Earl of *Danby*, and the four Popish Lords in the *Tower* (the Lord *Petre* being dead some time before) are admitted to bail.

Sir *Samuel Barnardiston* is fined 10,000*l.* for writing letters about the plot.—And *Samuel Johnson*, M. A. 500 marks, for writing *Julian the Apostate*.

1684. *John Dutton Colt*, Esq; having an action of *scandalum magnatum* brought against him by the Duke of *York*, is fined May 3. 100,000*l.* to the Duke's use.

May 18. *Titus Oates* is fined in the same sum, for having called the Duke of *York* a traitor, &c.

He is indicted likewise for perjury.

June 20. *James Holloway*, and Sir *Thomas Armstrong*, who had fled, and been outlawed, are brought over, and executed for the late plot.

King *Charles* gets the Charters of the principal Corporations in the Kingdom surrendered to him.

Oct. 1. He musters his army, which consisted of 4000 men;

Decemb. And dissolves the commission granted by him in 1681, for the disposal of ecclesiastical preferments.

The *Hamburgh* Company erects a statue to King *Charles II*, in the middle of the *Royal Exchange*.

1684-5. His Majesty publishes a declaration, in which he thanks Reg. 37. the Corporations for surrendering their Charters to him.

Shortly after, he resolves to alter his measures, and to break with his brother.

Feb. 6. King *Charles II.* dies, aged 54 years, 8 months, and 8 days; after having reigned (since the Restoration) 24 years, 8 month, and 9 days; and was buried, *February 14*, in *Westminster-Abbey*.

The Character of CHARLES II.

It is not very strange that the Historians or others, should disagree in their character of *Charles II.*, when it is considered, that he was the head and protector of one of the two parties, and the persecutor of the other. This must have necessarily produced a diversity of characters, according as they are given by Tories or Whigs. When we read successively the writers of the two parties, who have spoken of this Prince in general, or given his character, we are almost apt to think, they speak of two different Kings of the same name. The one by several omissions endeavour to cover all his faults, or if they are mentioned, 'tis very slightly, and always with some addition or insinuation tending to justify them. The others insist chiefly upon what may blacken his character, and show, that he acted upon very ill motives, and upon principles directly contrary to the good of the Kingdom. If they speak of his good qualities, it is only to render him more faulty, and demonstrate that he transgressed not through ignorance, but with premeditation. Which ever way I take to draw the character of this Prince, (*says Rapin*) I cannot avoid the censure of one or the other party, if I speak as from myself, and I should not gain much in going upon the testimony of either party. However, as the reader, doubtless, expects to know something more of the character of this King than could be learnt from the history of his reign, I chuse to insert Dr. Burnet's account in the *History of his own Times*. I own this, of all the characters of *Charles II.* seems to me, in the whole, to be most like, and most agreeable to the history of his life. I could wish however, this illustrious Prelate had omitted, or at least softened some strokes, which appear to me a little overcharged, and seem to discover some passion in the author. However that be, he concludes the history of this Prince in the following manner:

T. I. p 611.

" Thus lived and died King *Charles the second*. He
" was the greatest instance in History of the various revo-
" lutions of which any one man seemed capable. He was
" bred up the first twelve years of his life with the splen-
" dour that became the heir of so great a Crown. After
" that he passed through eighteen years in great inequali-
" ties, unhappy in the war, in the loss of his father, and
" of the Crown of *England*. *Scotland* did not only re-

“ceive him, though upon terms hard of digestion, but
“made an attempt upon *England* for him, though a feeble
“one. He lost the battle of *Worcester* with too much
“indifference: and then he shewed more care of his per-
“son than became one, who had so much at stake. He
“wandered about *England* for ten weeks after that, hi-
“ding from place to place. But under all the apprehen-
“sions he had then upon him, he shewed a temper so
“careless, and so much turned to levity, that he was
“then diverting himself with little household sports, in as
“unconcerned a manner as if he had made no loss, and
“had been in no danger at all. He got at last out of
“*England*. But he had been obliged to so many, who
“had been faithful to him and careful of him, that he
“seemed afterwards to resolve to make an equal return to
“them all. And finding it not easy to reward them all
“as they deserved, he forgot them all alike. Most
“Princes seem to have this pretty deep in them; and to
“think that they ought never to remember past services,
“but that their acceptance of them is a full reward. He
“of all in our age, exerted this piece of prerogative in
“the amplest manner: for he never seemed to charge his
“memory, or to trouble his thoughts with the sense
“of any of the services that had been done him. While
“he was abroad at *Paris*, *Colen*, or *Bruffels*, he never seem-
“ed to lay any thing to heart. He pursued all his di-
“versions and irregular pleasures in a free career;
“and seemed to be as serene under the loss of a Crown
“as the greatest Philosopher could have been. Nor did he
“willingly hearken to any of those projects, with which
“he often complained that his Chancellor persecuted
“him. That in which he seemed most concerned was,
“to find money for supporting his expence. And it was
“often said, that if *Gromwell* would have compounded the
“matter, and have given him a good round pension,
“that he might have been induced to resign his title to
“him. During his exile he delivered himself so entirely
“up to his pleasures, that he became incapable of appli-
“cation. He spent little of his time in reading or study,
“and yet less in thinking. And in the state his affairs
“were then in, he accustomed himself to say to every
“person, and upon all occasions, that which he thought
“would please most: so that words or promises went very
“easily from him. And he had so ill an opinion of man-
“kind, that he thought the great art of living and go-

“verning

" verner was to manage all things and all persons with
" a depth of craft and dissimulation. And in that, few
" men in the world could put on the appearances of since-
" rity better than he could: Under which so much arti-
" fice was usually hid, that in conclusion he could deceive
" none, for all were become mistrustful of him. He had
" great vices, but scarce any virtues to correct them. He
" had in him some vices that were less hurtful, which cor-
" rected his more hurtful ones. He was, during the ac-
" tive part of life, given up to sloth and lewdness to such a
" degree, that he hated business, and could not bear the
" engaging in any thing that gave him much trouble, or
" put him under any constraint. And though he desired
" to become absolute, and to overturn both our Religion
" and our laws, yet he would neither run the risk, nor
" give himself the trouble, which so great a design requi-
" red. He had an appearance of gentleness in his outward
" deportment: but he seemed to have no bowels nor ten-
" derness in his nature: and in the end of his life he be-
" came cruel. He was apt to forgive all crimes even blood
" itself: Yet he never forgave any thing that was done
" against himself, after his first and general Act of In-
" demnity, which was to be reckoned as done rather upon
" maxims of State, than inclinations of mercy. He delivered
" himself up to a most enormous course of vice, without any
" sort of restraint, even from the consideration of the near-
" est relations; the most studied extravagancies that way
" seemed to the very last to be much delighted in, and
" pursued by him. He had the art of making all people
" grow fond of him at first, by a softnes in his whole
" way of conversation, as he was certainly the best bred
" man of the age. But when it appeared how little could
" be built on his promise, they were cured of the fondness
" that he was apt to raise in them. When he saw young
" men of quality, who had something more than ordinary
" in them, he drew them about him, and set himself to
" corrupt them both in Religion and morality; in which
" he proved so unhappily successful, that he left *England*
" much changed at his death, from what he had found it
" at his Restoration. He loved to talk over all the sto-
" ries of his life to every new man that came about him.
" His stay in *Scotland*, and the share he had in the war
" of *Paris*, in carrying messages from the one side to the
" other, were his common topicks. He went over these
" in a very graceful manner: but so often and copiously

" that

“ that all those who had been long accustomed to them
 “ grew weary of them : And when he entered on those
 “ stories they usually withdrew : So that he often began
 “ them in a full audience, and before he had done, there
 “ were not above four or five left about him ; which drew
 “ a severe jest from Willmot Earl of Rochester. He said,
 “ *He wondered to see a man have so good a memory, as to*
 “ *repeat the same story without losing the least circumstance*
 “ *and yet not remember that he had told it to the same per-*
 “ *sons the very day before.* This made him fond of stran-
 “ gers ; for they hearkened to all his often-repeated stories,
 “ and went away as in a rapture, at such an uncommon
 “ condescension in a King.

“ His person and temper, his vices as well as his for-
 “ tune resemble the character that we have given us of
 “ *Tiberius*, so much, that it were easy to draw a parallel
 “ between them. *Tiberius*'s banishment, and his coming
 “ afterwards to reign, makes the comparison in that re-
 “ spect come pretty near. His hating of busines, and
 “ his love of pleasures, his raising of Favorites and trusting
 “ them entirely, and his pulling them down, and hating
 “ them excessively ; his art of covering deep designs, par-
 “ ticularly of revenge, with an appearance of softnes,
 “ brings them so near a likeness, that I did not wonder
 “ much to observe the resemblance of their face and person.
 “ At *Rome* I saw one of the last statues made for *Tiberius*
 “ after he had lost his teeth. But bating the alteration
 “ which that made, it was so like King *Charles* that Prince
 “ *Borghese* and *Signior Dominica* to whom it belonged, did
 “ agree with me in thinking that it looked like a statue
 “ made for him.

“ Few things ever went near his heart ; the Duke of
 “ *Gloucester*'s death seemed to touch him much. But those
 “ who knew him best thought it was, because he had lost
 “ him, by whom only he could have balanced the survi-
 “ ving Brother, whom he hated, and yet embroiled all his
 “ affairs to preserve the succession to him.

“ His ill conduct in the first *Dutch* war, and those ter-
 “ rible calamities of the Plague and Fire of *London*, with
 “ that los and reproach which he suffered by the insult at
 “ *Chatham*, made all people conclude, there was a curse
 “ upon his Government. His throwing the publick hatred
 “ at that time upon Lord *Clarendon*, was both unjust and
 “ ungrateful. And when his People had brought him
 “ out of all his difficulties, upon his entering into the Tri-

“ ple-

“ ple-alliance, his selling that to *France*, and his entring
“ on the second *Dutch* war with as little colour, as he had
“ for the first; his beginning it with the attempt on the
“ *Dutch Smyrna* fleet; the shutting up the *Exchequer*;
“ and his declaration for toleration, which was a step for
“ the introduction of Popery; makes such a chain of black
“ actions flowing from blacker designs, that it amazed
“ those who had known all this, to see with what impu-
“ dent strains of flattery addressses were penned during his
“ life, and yet more grossly after his death. His contri-
“ buting so much to the raising the greatness of *France*,
“ chiefly at sea, was such an error, that it could not flow
“ from want of thought or of true sense. *Rouvigny* told
“ me, he desired that all the methods the *French* took in
“ the increase and conduct of their naval force might be
“ sent him. And, he said, he seemed to study them with
“ concern and zeal. He shewed what errors they com-
“ mitted, and how they ought to be corrected, as if he
“ had been a Viceroy to *France*, rather than a King that
“ ought to have watched over, and prevented the progress
“ they made, as the greatest of all the mischiefs that could
“ happen to him or to his people. They that judged the
“ most favourable of this, thought it was done out of re-
“ venge to the *Dutch*, that, with the assistance of so great
“ a fleet as *France* could join to his own, he might be able
“ to destroy them. But others put a worse construction
“ on it; and thought, that seeing he could not quite master
“ or deceive his subjects by his own strength, and manage-
“ ment, he was willing to help forward the greatness of
“ the *French* at sea, that by their assistance he might more
“ certainly subdue his own people; according to what was
“ generally believed to have fallen from Lord *Clifford*,
“ That if the King must be in a dependence, it was better
“ to pay it to a great and generous King, than to five hun-
“ dred of his own insolent Subjects. No part of his cha-
“ racter looked wickeder as well as meaner, than that he,
“ all the while that he was professing to be of the Church
“ of *England*, expressing both zeal and affection to it,
“ was yet secretly reconciled to the Church of *Rome*:
“ Thus mocking God, and deceiving the world with so
“ gross a prevarication. And his not having the honesty
“ or courage to own it at the last: His not shedding any
“ sign of the least remorse for his ill led life, or any ten-
“ derness either for his subjects in general, or for the Queen
“ and his servants: And his recommending only his Mis-

" tresses and their children to his brother's care, would
" have been a strange conclusion to any other life, but
" was well enough suited to all the other parts of his.

" The two papers found in his strong box concerning
" Religion, and afterwards published by his brother, looked
" like study and reasoning. *Tennison* told me, he saw the
" original in *Pepy's* hand, to whom King *James* trusted
" them for some time. They were interlined in several
" places. And the interlinings seemed to be writ in a
" hand different from that in which the papers were writ.
" But he was not so well acquainted with the King's hand,
" as to make any judgment in the matter, whether they
" were writ by him or not. All that knew him when
" they read them, did, without any sort of doubting, con-
" clude, that he never composed them: For he never read
" the scriptures, nor laid things together, further than to
" turn them to a jest, or for some lively expression. These
" papers were probably writ either by *Lord Bristol*, or by
" *Lord Aubigny*, who knew the secret of his Religion,
" and gave him those papers, as abstracts of some discourses
" they had with him on those heads, to keep him fixed to
" them. And it is very probable, that they, apprehend-
" ing their danger, if any such papers had been found a-
" bout him writ in their hand, might prevail with him to
" copy them out himself, though his laziness that way
" made it certainly no easy thing to bring him to give
" himself so much trouble. He had talked over a great
" part of them to myself: So that as soon as I saw them,
" I remembered his expressions, and perceived that he had
" made himself master of the argument, as far as those
" papers could carry him. But the publishing them shewed
" a want of judgment, or of regard to his memory in those
" who did it: For the greatest kindness that could be shewn
" to his memory, would have been, to let both his papers
" and himself be forgotten."

After seeing in this character, all that can be said to the disadvantage of *Charles II*, the Reader doubtless will not be displeased to behold the picture of the same Prince, drawn a little differently by a very able hand, I mean [*John Sheffield*] Earl of *Mulgrave*, who was no enemy to the King, or the Royal Family. He has laboured this description with all possible care. I omit a short introduction concerning the Author, to come at once to the character of the King.

Bucking-
ham's
Works,

T. II. p. 75.

" As to the King's Religion, it was more Deism than
" Popery; which he owed more to the liveliness of his
" parts,

II.
uld
but
ing
ized
he
ted
ral
a
it.
d,
ey
en
nd
to
se
y,
s
o
—
2
—
2
—
2

Book XXIII. 26. C H A R L E S II.

397

" parts, and carelessness of his temper, than either to " reading, or much consideration; for his quickness of ap- " prehension, at first view, could discern through the se- " veral cheats of pious pretences; and his natural laziness " confirmed him in an equal mistrust of them all, for fear " he should be troubled with examining which Religion was " best. If in his early travels, and late administration, he " seemed a little biased to one sort of Religion; the first " is only to be imputed to a certain easiness of temper, and " a complaisance for that company he then was forced to " keep; and the last was no more than his being tired, " (which he soon was in any difficulty,) with those bold " oppositions in Parliament, which made him almost throw " himself into the arms of a *Roman Catholick* party, so " remarkable in *England* for their loyalty, who embraced " him gladly, and lulled him asleep with those enchanting " songs of absolute Sovereignty, which the best and wisest " of Princes are often unable to resist. And though he en- " gaged himself on that side more fully, at a time when " it is in vain, and too late to dissemble, we ought less to " wonder at it, than to consider that our very judgments " are apt to grow in time as partial as our affections: And " thus, by accident only, he became of their opinion in " his weakness, who had so much endeavoured always to " contribute to his power. He loved ease and quiet; to " which his unnecessary wars are so far from being a con- " tradiction, that they are rather a proof of it, since they " were made chiefly to comply with those persons, whose " dissatisfaction would have proved more uneasy to one of " his humour, than all that distant noise of cannon, which " he would often listen to with a great deal of tranquillity. " Besides, the great and almost only pleasure of mind he " appeared addicted to, was shipping and sea-affairs; which " seemed to be so much his talent both for knowledge as " well as inclination, that a war of that kind was rather an " entertainment, than any disturbance to his thoughts. If " he did not go himself at the head of so magnificent a " fleet, it is only to be imputed to that eagerness of mili- " tary glory in his brother; who, under the shew of a " decent care for preserving the royal person from danger, " engrossed all that sort of honour to himself, with as much " jealousy of any other's interposing in it, as a King of " another temper would have had of his, though without " reason.—It is certain, no Prince was ever more fit- " ted by nature for his Country's interest, than he was in

" a.l

“ all his maritime inclinations ; which might have proved
“ of sufficient advantage to this nation, if he had been as
“ careful in depressing all such improvements in France,
“ as of advancing and encouraging our own : But it seems
“ he wanted jealousy in all his inclinations, which leads us
“ to consider him in his pleasures : Where he was rather
“ abandoned than luxurious ; and like our female Liber-
“ tines, apter to be debauched for the satisfaction of others,
“ than to seek with choice, where most to please himself.
“ I am of opinion also, that in his latter time, there was as
“ much of laziness as of love, in all those hours he passed
“ among his mistresses ; who, after all, served only to fill
“ up his Seraglio, while a bewitching kind of pleasure,
“ called *Santering*, and talking without any constraint, was
“ the true Sultana Queen he delighted in.

“ He was surely inclined to justice ; for nothing else
“ would have retained him so fast to the succession of a
“ brother, against a son he was so fond of, and the hu-
“ mour of a party which he so much feared. I am wil-
“ ling also to impute to his justice, whatever seems in some
“ measure to contradict the general opinion of his cle-
“ nency ; as his suffering always the rigour of the law
“ to proceed, not only against all Highwaymen, but also
“ several others, in whose cases the Lawyers (according
“ to their wonted custom) had used sometimes a great
“ deal of hardship and severity. His understanding was
“ quick and lively in little things, and sometimes would
“ soar high enough in great ones, but unable to keep it
“ up with any long attention or application. Witty in
“ all sorts of conversation ; and telling a story so well, that
“ not out of flattery, but for the pleasure of hearing it,
“ we used to seem ignorant of what he had repeated to
“ us ten times before, as a good comedy will bear the be-
“ ing seen often. Of a wonderful mixture ; losing all his
“ time, and till of late, setting his whole heart on the fair
“ sex, yet neither angry with rivals, nor in the least nice
“ as to their being beloved ; and while he sacrificed all
“ things to his Mistresses, he would use to grudge and be
“ uneasy at their losing a little of it again at play, though
“ never so necessary for their diversion : Nor would he
“ venture five pounds at *Tennis* to those servants, who
“ might obtain as many thousands, either before he came
“ thither, or as soon as he left off. Not false to his word,
“ but full of dissimulation, and very adroit at it, yet no
“ man easier to be imposed on ; for his great dexterity was

“ in

" in cozening himself, by gaining a little one way, while
" it cost him ten times as much another ; and by caressing
" those persons most, who had deluded him the ostenest ;
" and yet the quickest in the world at spying such a ridi-
" cule in another. Familiar, easy, and good-natured ;
" but for great offences severe and inflexible : Also in one
" week's absence, quite forgetting those servants, to whose
" faces he could hardly deny any thing. In the midst of
" all his remissness, so industrious and indefatigable on some
" particular occasions, that no man would either toil longer,
" or be able to manage it better.

" He was so liberal as to ruin his affairs by it ; for
" want in a King of *England*, turns things just upside
" down, and exposes a Prince to his people's mercy. It
" did yet worse in him, for it forced him also to depend
" on his great neighbour of *France* ; who played the bro-
" ther with him sufficiently in all those times of extremity.
" Yet this profuseness of his did not so much proceed from
" his over-valuing those he favoured, as from his under-
" valuing any sums of money which he did not see ;
" though he found his error in this, but I confess a little
" of the lateft. He had so natural an aversion to all for-
" mality, that with as much wit as most Kings ever had,
" and with as majestick a mein, yet he could not on pre-
" meditation act the part of a King for a moment, either
" at Parliament, or at Council, either in words or gesture ;
" which carried him into the other extreme, more incon-
" venient of the two, of letting all distinction and cere-
" mony fall to the ground, as useless and foppish. His
" temper both of body and mind, was admirable, which
" made him an easy generous lover, a civil obliging hus-
" band, a friendly brother, an indulgent father, and a
" good-natured master. If he had been as follicitous about
" improving the faculties of his mind, as he was in the
" management of his bodily health ; though, alas ! the
" one proved unable to make his life long, the other had
" not failed to have made it famous. He was an illustrious
" exception to all the common rules of Physiognomy : For,
" with a most *Saturnine* harsh sort of countenance, he
" was both of a merry and merciful disposition ; and in the
" last thirty years of his life, as fortunate, as those of his
" Father had been dismal and tumultuous.

" If his death has been by some suspected of being
" untimely, it may be partly imputed to his extreme healthy
" constitution, which made the world as much surprized

" at his dying before threescore, as if nothing but an ill
 " accident could have killed him. I would not say any
 " thing on so sad a subject, if I did not think silence itself
 " would in such a case signify too much; and therefore,
 " as an impartial writer, I am obliged to observe, that the
 " most knowing, and most discerning of his Physicians
 " [Doctor Short] did not only believe him poisoned, but
 " thought himself so too not long after, for having declar-
 " ed his opinion a little too boldly. But here I must needs
 " take notice of an unusual piece of justice, which yet all
 " the world has almost unanimously agreed in; I mean,
 " in not suspecting his successor of the least connivance in
 " so horrid a villany; and perhaps there was never a more
 " remarkable instance of the wonderful power of truth and
 " innocence: For it is next to a miracle, that so unfor-
 " tunate a Prince, in the midst of all those disadvantages
 " he lies under, should be yet cleared of this, even by his
 " greatest enemies; notwithstanding all those circumstances
 " that used to give a suspicion, and that extreme malice
 " which has of late attended him in all his other actions."

After giving these different characters of King *Charles II.*, drawn by such able hands, (continues *Rapin*) I think myself obliged to make a sort of parallel, in order to assist the reader in the discovery of the truth. Dr. *Burnet* Bishop of *Salisbury* was a *Scotchman*. He had been educated amongst the *Episcopilians*, but however, was always accused of preserving a tincture of *Presbyterianism*, the Religion of his Country, when free to pursue its inclination. He is likewise accused of having been entirely in the *Whig-party*. In short, he had no reason to be pleased with either *Charles II.*, or *James II.*, and therefore we must read with caution, whatever he says, not reconcileable with the known actions of *Charles II.*, or expressly contradicted by others.

It is not difficult to discover, that *Burnet's* picture of *Charles II.* is very much charged. The painter has strongly drawn all the lines which he thought might beget a likeness between the picture and the original, without any regard to the reputation of this Prince. It is even seen, that possibly he spoke with prejudice, and by this prejudice was led to credit too lightly what he had received upon hearsay to the King's disadvantage. For instance, what he affirms, that *Charles* after the battle of *Worcester*, showed a temper so careless, that he was then diverting himself with trifles in as unconcerned a manner, as if he had sustained

no loss, and been in no danger at all, appears to me a little aggravated. It is not even probable, that the Bishop could be informed of the King's actions at that time, by eye-witnesses. When he says, the King had great vices, but scarce any virtues to correct them, this plainly appears to be the language of passion and prejudice. When he says again, the King never forgave any thing that was done against himself, this must be aggravated. For if he was merciless to the Lord *Russel*, Colonel *Sidney*, Sir *Thomas Armstrong*, and some others, it cannot from thence be inferred, that he never forgave. Such expressions excepted, which discover some passion in the author, the rest of *Charles II's* character is true in general. This I believe, because I find it agreeable to the history of his reign, and because the Earl of *Mulgrave* has in his picture drawn the same lines with *Dr. Burnet*, to express his likeness. All the difference between these two authors, is, that in the Bishop's picture, the principal lines are strongly expressed; and much softened in the Earl's.

The Earl of *Mulgrave*, afterwards Marquis of *Normandy*, and then Duke of *Buckinghamshire*, was intirely in the Tory-party, and if common report may be credited, his Religion, like that of *Charles II*, was deism. In his description of this Prince, he denies not the general suspicion of his being poisoned. *Burnet* says also the same thing. The Earl insists that the Duke of *York* was not suspected of the least connivance at so horrid a villany. The same is likewise to be found in *Burnet*. If the last says, King *Charles* was a Papist, this is not denied by the Earl. He only imputes it to two causes, first, to a complaisance for the company he was forced to keep in his exile; and secondly, to the opposition he met with in Parliament, which threw him into the arms of the Papists. If the first of these causes be true, the second cannot be so, since the King was not twice a Papist. Besides, the oppositions in Parliament were partly owing to a belief, that he designed to introduce Popery.

Burnet says, *Charles* was incapable of any application. The Earl says the same. The Bishop says the King was for rendering himself absolute. If the Earl says it not in express terms, he sufficiently intimates it, by saying, *That the Roman Catholick party lulled him asleep with the enchanting songs of Sovereignty and Prerogative.* *Burnet* says, the King was apt to forgive all crimes, but never forgave any thing that was done against himself. The Earl praises

his clemency, and says, *he was easy and good-natured in trifles, but in great affairs severe and inflexible.* This may be the Bishop's meaning expressed in other words.

The stories which the King loved to talk over, are in both characters. The only difference is, that *Burnet* says the company grew weary of them, and the Earl says, the hearers were pleased with the repetition. But the raillery of the Earl of *Rochester* turns the balance for the Bishop.

Burnet says, *Charles* engaged in two wars against *Holland*, without any colour, and the Earl calls these wars unnecessary.

Burnet says, he contributed to the raising of the greatness of *France* at sea, and the Earl says, he was not sufficiently careful to depress the maritime improvements of *France*, and that here he wanted jealousy. Is not this much the same thing?

In short, let these two pictures be compared with all possible exactness, and they will both be found very like; but that the two painters had different views, and pursued different methods. The one proposed to express strongly the lines which might most contribute to a resemblance with the original, without regarding the beauty of the picture in itself. The other, without omitting the same lines, which could not be done and the likeness preserved, has taken all possible care to soften them, in order to hide, as much as lay in his power, the deformities of the original.

In a word, the one has given us an ugly, and the other a beautiful likeness. This doubtless, induced the Earl to suppress several strokes of his pencil, which might have improved the resemblance, but would have been prejudicial to the end he proposed in his work.

King *Charles II.*, left no issue by his Queen, *Donna Catharina*, daughter of *John IV.* King of *Portugal*. But by his several Mistresses, he had the following children.

1. By Mrs. *Lucy Walters*, daughter of *Richard Walters*, Esq; *James Duke of Monmouth*, born at *Rotterdam*, April 9, 1649. beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, July 15, 1685. He married in 1665, *Anne Scot*, daughter of *Francis, Earl of Buckleugh* in *Scotland*.

2. By Mrs. *Elizabeth Killigrew*, Viscountess *Shannon*, daughter of Sir *William Killigrew*, *Charlot-Jemima-Henrietta-Maria-Fitz-roy*, who died in 1684. Her husbands were, *James Howard*, and Sir *William Paston* Earl of *Yarmouth*.

3. By

3. By Mrs. Catharine Peg, daughter of Thomas Peg, Esq; Charles Fitz-Charles Earl of Plymouth, commonly called *Don Carlos*, born 1658, killed October 17, 1680, at Tangier. He married Bridget, daughter of Sir Thomas Osborne Duke of Leeds, who married afterwards Dr. Biss Bishop of Hereford.

4. By Mrs. Barbara Villiers, heiress of William Viscount Grandison in Ireland, and wife of Roger Palmer Earl of Castlemain, created Lady Nonnuch, Countess of Southampton, and Duchess of Cleveland, who died in 1709, he had three sons, and three daughters. 1. Charles Fitz-Roy, born 1662, created 1675, Duke of Southampton, and after his mother's death Duke of Cleveland. His wives were, Mary daughter of Sir Henry Wood, and Alice daughter of Sir William Poultney. 2. Henry Fitz-Roy Duke of Grafton, born September 20, 1663, and killed October 9, 1690, at the siege of Cork in Ireland. His wife was Isabella daughter of Henry Bennet Earl of Arlington, married after his death to Sir Thomas Hanmer Bart. 3. George Fitz-Roy Duke of Northumberland, born December 28, 1665, who died July 8, 1716, without children. 4. Anne Fitz-Roy born February 29, 1661, married in 1674, to Thomas Lennard Earl of Sussex. 5. Charlotte Fitz-Roy, born September 5, 1664, married February 20, 1676-7, to Sir Edward Henry Lee Earl of Lichfield. 6. Barbara born July 16, 1672, who became a Nun at Pontoise in France.

5. By Mrs. Eleanor Gwin, 1. Charles Beauclerk Duke of St. Albans, born May 8, 1670, who married Diana Vere, eldest daughter and coheiress of Aubrey de Vere, the 20th and last Earl of Oxford. 2. James Beauclerk born December 25, 1671. He died in 1680 in France.

6. By Louise de Querouaille Duches of Portsmouth, Charles Lenos Duke of Richmond and Lenox, born July 29, 1672, who died May 27, 1723. His wife was Anne, eldest daughter of Francis Lord Brudenel.

7. By Mrs. Mary Davis, Mary Tudor, born October 16, 1673, married in August 1687, to Francis Lord Ratcliff Earl of Derwentwater.

An Account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture in the 12th of Charles II, Gold and Silver monies were coined into the same pieces, and at the same rates, as in the 2d of Charles I. See above, p. 307.

—By another Indenture in the twenty-second of King

Charles II., Crown Gold, twenty-two carats fine, and two carats alloy, was coined into 44*l.* 10*s.* by tale; namely, into pieces to go for Ten Shillings, Twenty Shillings, Forty Shillings, or Five Pounds a-piece; and a pound of silver of the old standard into three Pounds two Shillings by tale; namely, into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Half-shillings, Groats, Half-groats, Half-sixpences, Half-groats, and Pence.

The money of King *Charles II.* was of three sorts: The hammered, which was the only current Coin, till 1663: The milled upon the side: And that with the graining or letters upon the edge—The first money that bore the name of this King, was coined at *Pontfract-Castle*; round which is inscribed CAROLVS. SECUNDUS. 1648. on



2

each side of the middle Tower is P C. reverse, a Crown, with C.R. DUM. SPIRO. SPERO. A Crown hath CAROLVS II. D. G. MAG. B. F. ET. H. REX. In the field, HANC. DEV. DEDIT. 1648. reverse, P.C. Above the Castle, POST. MORTEM. PATRIS. PRO. FILIO.

FILIO. Upon the hammered money in general, he is represented with the Half-Face, Crown and Band, &c. CAROLVS. II. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FR. ET. HIB. REX. Reverse, the arms in one shield, not crowned, with his Father's motto, CHRISTO. AUSPICE. REGNO. —

The Gold Coins have, on one side, the King's head laureat, with a youthful countenance. Reverse, the arms in a single shield, crowned between C. R. FLORENT CONCORDIA REGNA. Another has XX behind the head. On the money called Cutters, the legend goes quite round the head; which, it does not in a very neat cutter, called by some the un-milled Guinea, the King's head extending to the rim, without the initial figures behind the head, and the titles abbreviated to CAR. D. G. M. BR. FR. ET. HI. REX. Reverse as the former 1662. The Five Pounds, Three Pounds, and Forty Shilling pieces, have the King's Head laureat, CAROLUS II. DEI. GRATIA. Reverse, the arms of the four Kingdoms, single in four separate shields crowned, a scepter in each of the vacancies, with a Rose, Fleur-de-lis, Thistle, and Harp at the points, and the C's interlinked in the center. MAG. BR. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. 1673. Upon the rim, DECUS. ET. TUTAMEN. ANNO. REGNI. VICESIMO. QUINTO. This King was the first that coined GUINEAS and Half-Guineas, which he did in his 22d year. The Guineas were ordered to go at twenty shillings, the Half-guineas at ten shillings. As they are in every body's hands, there is no need of giving a further description of them. Of the hammered Silver-money, the Shilling is very fair, and has a Crown for the Mint-mark. Of these there are two sorts, one with XII. behind the head, which the other wants; as also the inner circle (Fig. 1.) The Six-pences are like the Shillings, but have VI. instead of XII. The lesser pieces from the Groat to the Penny, are marked with the initial figures, IIII. III. II. I. behind the head; except upon some of the Two-pences, which want the figures. This hammered money continued current till 1663, when the milled money came to be in use. Of this there is a very fair Crown, having a Rose under the King's head laureat, from thence called the Rose-Crown, CAROLVS II. DEI GRA. Reverse, MAG. BR. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. 1662. The arms of the four Kingdoms in four shields, France and England quartered together in the first and fourth: Each shield is crowned; between them are C's interlinked, and St. George's cross radiant in the center; upon the rim, DECVS. ET. TUTAMEN (Fig. 2.) The

Half-Crowns are like the Crowns ; only one has the year in figures upon the rim, ANNO REGNI. XVIII. The milled Shillings are neatly struck, having the C's between the four shields crowned, with the arms single, and inscribed as the Crown. Upon some is an Elephant ; upon others the Prince's Feathers ; and a third has the Scepters. The Six-pence is like the Shilling. The Groat has four C's interlinked, with a Rose, Thistle, Fleur-de-lis, and Harp in the vacancies. The Three-pence, Two-pence and Penny, have as many C's thereon crowned. — In 1672, the King coined copper Half-pence and Farthings. They have, on one side, the King's head laureat, CAROLUS, A. CAROLO. Reverse, Britannia, and round her BRITANNIA, with the year in the exergue. There was another Farthing coined, of rare copper, having on the reverse QVATUOR. MARIA. VINDICO. Exergue, BRITANNIA. But these were called in to please the French King,

The NOBILITY created by King CHARLES II,
was as follows :

Ann. C.

- | | |
|----------|--|
| 1650. | Charles-Henry Kirkhaven, Baron Wotton. |
| 13 Aug. | |
| 1652. | Henry Wilmot, Earl of Rochester. |
| 13 Dec. | |
| 1657-8. | Marmaduke Langdale, Baron Langdale, of Holme, |
| 4 Febr. | |
| 1658. | William Crofts, Baron Crofts. |
| 18 May. | |
| 19 May. | John Berkley, Baron Berkley of Stratton. |
| 1659. | Henry Steuart, Earl of Cambridge, and Duke of Gloucester. |
| 13 May. | |
| 10 July. | John Mordaunt, Baron Mordaunt, of Rygate, and Viscount Mordaunt of Avalon. |
| 1660. | Catharine Wotton (widow of Henry Lord Stanhope, eldest son to Philip Earl of Chesterfield) Countess of Chesterfield. |
| 27 Apr. | Henry Baron Jermyn, — Earl of St. Albans. |
| 16 June. | Thomas Windsor Hickman, Baron Windsor, of Bradenham. |
| 1682. | — Earl of Plymouth. |
| 6 Dec. | |
| 26 June. | Heneage Finch (Earl of Winchelsea) — Baron Fitz-Herbert of Eastwell. |

George

Ann. C.

<i>George Monk, Baron Monk of Potheridge, Earl of Tor-</i>	<i>7 July.</i>
<i>rington, and Duke of Albemarle.</i>	
<i>Edward Montague, Baron Montague, of St. Neots, Vis-</i>	<i>12 July.</i>
<i>count Hinchinbrooke, and Earl of Sandwich.</i>	
<i>Elizabeth Fielding (wife of —— Boyle, Viscount Kenel-</i>	<i>14 July.</i>
<i>meaky) —— Countess of Guilford.</i>	
<i>James Butler (Earl of Ormond in Ireland) Baron Butler</i>	<i>20 July.</i>
<i>of Lanthony, Earl of Brecknock.</i>	
—— Duke of Ormond.	1682.
9 Nov.	
<i>Edward Hyde, Baron Hyde of Hindon.</i>	3 Nov.
—— Viscount Cornbury, and Earl of Clarendon.	1661.
20 April.	
<i>Arthur Baron Capel —— Viscount Malden, and Earl of</i>	<i>1661.</i>
<i>Essex.</i>	<i>20 April.</i>
<i>Robert Baron Brudenel —— Earl of Cardigan.</i>	
<i>Arthur Annesley (Viscount Valentia in Ireland) Baron</i>	
<i>Annesley of Newport-Panel, and Earl of Anglesey.</i>	
<i>John Greenville, or Granville, Baron Greenville of Kilk-</i>	
<i>hampton and Biddeford, Viscount Lansdown, and Earl of</i>	
<i>Bath: With a warrant, three days after, to use the titles of</i>	
<i>Earl of Carboil, Thorigny, and Granville.</i>	
<i>Charles Howard, Baron Dacre of Gillefland, Viscount</i>	
<i>Howard of Morpeth, and Earl of Carlisle.</i>	
<i>Denzil Holles, Baron Holles of Ifield.</i>	
<i>Thomas Cornwallis, Baron Cornwallis of Eye.</i>	
<i>George Booth, Baron Delamere, of Dunham-Maffey.</i>	
<i>Horace Townshend, Baron Townshend, of Lynn-Regis.</i>	
—— Viscount Townshend of Raynham.	1682.
	2 Dec.
<i>Anthony Ashley Cooper, Baron Ashley of Winborne St. Giles.</i>	
—— Earl of Shaftesbury.	1672.
	13 April.
—— Baron Cooper of Pawlet.	23 April.
<i>John Crew, Baron Crew, of Stene.</i>	13 June.
<i>Charles Steuart, Duke of Cambridge.</i>	
<i>James Fitz-Roy (afterwards Scot) Baron Tindale, Vis-</i>	<i>1662-3.</i>
<i>count and Earl of Doncaster, and Duke of Monmouth.</i>	
<i>Mary Lucas (daughter and heir of John Lord Lucas, and</i>	<i>1663.</i>
<i>wife to Anthony de Grey) Baroness Lucas of Crudwell.</i>	<i>7 May.</i>
<i>Basil Fielding (Earl of Denbigh) —— Baron St. Liz.</i>	<i>1663-4.</i>
	<i>2 Febr.</i>

Ann. C.

6 Mar. John Frescheville, Baron Frescheville, of Stavely.

14 Mar. Henry Bennet, Baron Arlington.

1672.

22 April. — Viscount Thetford, and Earl of Arlington.

16 Mar.

William Craven, Baron Craven, of Hampsted, Marshal, Viscount Craven of Uffington, and Earl of Craven.

17 Mar.

Charles Berkley (Viscount Fitz-Harding in Ireland) Baron Botetort of Langport.

1624-5.

— Earl of Falmouth.

16 Mar.

Robert Bruce (Baron Bruce of Wharlington) — Baron Bruce, of Skelton; Viscount Bruce, of Ampthill; and Earl of Ailesbury.

20 Mar.

Richard Boyle, Earl of Burlington.

1664.

23 May. Richard Arundel, Baron Arundel of Trerice.

Henry Steuart, Duke of Kendal.

1664-5.

William Cavendish (Earl of Newcastle) — Earl of Ogle,

16 Mar. and Duke of Newcastle.

1666.

Thomas Butler (Earl of Offory, and Earl of Brecknock)

14 Sept.

— Baron Butler, of Moor-Park, by summ.

1667.

Edgar Steuart, Duke of Cambridge.

1667-8.

George Saville, Baron Saville, of Eyland, Viscount Hal-

13 Jan. fax.

1679.

— Earl of Halifax.

16 July.

— Marquis of Halifax.

1682.

— Henry Howard, Baron Howard, of Castle-Rising.

27 Mar.

— Earl of Norwich.

1670.

Barbara Villiers, Baroness Nonesuch, Countess of South-

3 Aug.

ampton, and Duchess of Cleveland. She was wife to Roger Palmer, Earl of Castlemain.

Palmer, Earl of Castlemain.

1672.

Thomas Clifford, Baron Clifford of Chudleigh.

22 April.

Henry Fitz-Roy, Baron Sudbury, Viscount Ipswich, Earl

16 Aug.

of Euston.

1675.

— Duke of Grafton.

11 Sept.

Lewis de Duras, Baron Duras, of Holdenby.

1672-3.

— Viscount

19 Jan.

Ann. C.

— Viscount Sondes, and Earl of Feversham.	1677.
Richard Butler (Earl of Arran in Ireland) Baron Butler of Weston.	16 April 1673.
Thomas Osborne, Baron Osborne, of Kiveton, and Viscount Latimer.	7 Aug. 15 Aug.
— Earl of Danby.	1674. 27 June.
Louise de Querouaille, Baroness Petersfield, Countess of Fareham, and Duches of Portsmouth.	19 Aug.
William Paston, Baron Paston, and Viscount Yarmouth.	
Heneage Finch, Baron Finch, of Daventre.	1673-4. 10 Jan.
— Earl of Nottingham.	1681.
Anne Bayning, Viscountess Bayning, of Foxley.	12 May.
Susan Airmine, Baroness Bellafuse, of Osgodby.	17 Mar.
William Herbert, Baron Powis — Earl of Powis.	25 Mar.
Edward-Henry Lee, Baron Lee, of Ditchley, or Spelsbury, Viscount Quarendon, and Earl of Lichfield.	4 April. 16 May.
John Maitland (Duke of Lauderdale in Scotland) Baron Peterham, and Earl of Guilford.	5 June. 25 June.
George Fitz-Roy, Baron Pontefract, Viscount Falmouth, and Earl of Northumberland.	1 Oct.
— Duke of Northumberland.	1683. 6 April.
Thomas Lennard, Earl of Sussex.	5 Oct.
Francis Newport, Viscount Newport of Bradford.	1674-5. 11 Mar.
Charles Sackville, son and heir to the Earl of Dorset, — Earl of Middlesex.	1675. 4 April.
— Baron Cranfield.	7 April.
Charles Fitz-Charles, Baron Dartmouth, Viscount Totnes, and Earl of Plymouth.	29 July.
Charles Lenos, Baron Settrington, Earl of March, and Duke of Richmond.	9 August.
Charles Fitz-Roy, Baron Newbury, Earl of Chichester, and Duke of Southampton.	10 Sept.
George Sondes, Baron Sondes, of Throughley, Viscount Sondes of Lees-Court, and Earl of Feversham. Entailed on Lewis de Duras.	1676.
Charles Beauclair, Baron Hedington, and Earl of Burford.	27 Dec.
— Duke of St. Albans.	1683. Charles 10 Jan.

Ann. C.

1677. *Charles Steuart, Duke of Cambridge.*
- 7 Nov. *John Baron Roberts, — Viscount Bodmin, and Earl of Radnor.*
1679. *Charles Baron Gerard, Viscount Brandon, and Earl of Macclesfield.*
- 23 July. *George Berkley, Viscount Dursley, and Earl of Berkley.*
- 23 Oct. *Sarah [Monson] (relict of Sir Vincent Corbet, Baronet) Viscountess Corbet of Lynchdale.*
- 3 Dec. *Edward Viscount Conway — Earl of Conway.*
1680. *Elizabeth Bayning (widow of Francis Lennard, Baron Dares of the South) Countess of Shepey.*
- 6 Sept. *Edward Noel (son, and heir apparent, to Baptist Viscount Campden) Baron Noel, and Baron Wriothesley, of Tichfield.*
- 1680-81. *Edward Noel (son, and heir apparent, to Baptist Viscount Campden) Baron Noel, and Baron Wriothesley, of Tichfield.*
1682. *— Earl of Gainsborough.*
- 1 Dec. *Laurence Hyde, Baron Hyde, of Wotton-Basset, and Vis-*
- 23 April. count Hyde, of Kenelworth.*
1682. *— Earl of Rochester.*
- 29 Nov. *Richard Lumley (Viscount Lumley, of Waterford in Ire-*
- 31 May. land) — Baron Lumley.*
1682. *George Carteret, Baron Carteret, of Hawnes.*
1682. *Charles Bennet, Baron Ossulston.*
- 24 Nov. *James Bertie (Baron Norris of Rycot, by descent and*
- summons) — Earl of Abingdon.*
- 2 Dec. *Henry Somerset, Marquis of Worcester — Duke of Beau-*
- fort.*
- William Legge, Baron of Dartmouth.*
- 5 Dec. *Conyers Darcy, Baron Conyers, &c. — Earl of Holders-*
- ness.*
- Alington (Baron Alington of Killard in Ireland)*
- Baron Alington, of Wymondley.*
- 11 Dec. *Thomas Thynne, Baron Thynne, of Warminster, and Vis-*
- count Weymouth.*
- 37 Dec. *Christopher Baron Hatton — Viscount Hatton, of Gret-*
- ton.*
1683. *Francis North, Baron Guilford.*
- 27 Sept. *Ralph Stawell, Baron Stawell, of Somerton.*
- 15 Jan. *—*

Ann. C.
1684.
8 Sept.

Sidney Godolphin, Baron Godolphin, of Rialton.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King
CHARLES II.

Maurice, Count Palatine of the Rhine, and Duke of Bavaria, third son to the King of Bohemia.

James Butler, Marquis of Ormond, afterwards Earl of Brecknock, and Duke of Ormond, in Ireland and England.

Edward, Count Palatine of the Rhine, and Duke of Bavaria, fifth son to the King of Bohemia.

George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham.

William-Hamilton Douglas, Duke of Hamilton.

Thomas Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton.

William Cavendish, Marquis of Newcastle, afterwards Duke of Newcastle.

James Graham, Marquis of Montrose.

James Stanley, Earl of Derby.

George Digby, Earl of Bristol.

Henry Steuart, Duke of Gloucester, third son to King Charles I.

Henry-Charles de la Tremouille, Prince de Tarente.

William de Nassau, Prince of Orange, afterwards King of England, of that name the Third.

Frederic-William, Prince Elector of the Empire, Marquis of Brandenburg.

John-Gaspar Ferdinand de Marchin, Count de Graville.

Sir George Monk, Knight, afterwards Duke of Albemarle.

Sir Edward Mountague, Knight, afterwards Earl of Sandwich.

William Seymour, Marquis of Hertford, afterwards Duke of Somerset.

Aubrey de Vere, Earl of Oxford.

Charles Steuart, Duke of Richmond and Lenox.

Montague Bertie, Earl of Lindsey.

Edward Mountague, Earl of Manchester.

William Wentworth, Earl of Strafford.

Christian, Prince of Denmark, afterwards King of Denmark.

James Scot, Duke of Monmouth and Buccleugh.

James Steuart, Duke of Cambridge, Son of James, Duke of York.

Charles IX, King of Sweden, Goths, and Vandals.

John

John George II, Duke of Saxony, Juliers, Cleves, and Mentz, Prince Elector of the Empire.
Christopher Monk, Duke of Albemarle.
John Maitland, Duke of Lauderdale.
Henry Somerset, Marquis of Worcester, afterwards Duke of Beaufort.
Henry Germyn, Earl of St. Albans.
William Russel, Earl of Bedford, afterwards Duke of Bedford.
Henry Bennet, Earl of Arlington.
Thomas Butler, Earl of Offory.
Charles Fitzroy, Earl of Southampton, afterwards Duke of Southampton and Cleveland.
John, Earl of Mulgrave, afterwards Duke of Buckingham and Normanby.
William Cavendish, Duke of Newcastle.
Thomas Osborne, Earl of Danby, afterwards Duke of Leeds.
Henry Fitzroy, Duke of Grafton.
William Cecil, Earl of Salisbury.
Charles Count Palatine of the Rhine.
Charles, Duke of Richmond and Lenox.
George, Prince of Denmark.
Charles Seymour, Duke of Somerset.
George Fitzroy, Duke of Northumberland.

Baronets created by King CHARLES II.

- 457 Richard Brown of Deptford in Kent, Esq; Sept. 1,
 1649. extinct.
- 458 Henry de Vic, of the Isle of Guernsey, Esq; —8. ex.
- 459 Richard Forester of Stokefley in Yorkshire, Esq;
 —18. ex.
- 460 Richard Fanshaw, Esq; Sept. 3, 1650. ex.
- 461 William Curtius, Esq; April 2, 1652. ex.
- 462 William Scot of Kew-Green in Surrey, August 9,
 1653.
- 463 Sir Arthur Slingsby near Canterbury in Kent, October 9, 1657. ex.
- 464 Thomas Orby of Lincolnshire, Esq; ---9. ex.
- 465 Thomas Bond, Esq; of Wales, —9. ex.
- 466 Arthur Marigny Carpentier, Esq; a Frenchman at
 Brussels, August. ex.
- 467 Henry Browne of Kiddington in Oxfordshire, Esq;
 July 1, 1659.

- 468 Jeremy Whichcot of the Inner-Temple, Esq; in London, April 2, 1660.
- 469 Sir Anthony de Merces (a Frenchman) ex.
- 470 Sir John Evelin of Godston in Surrey, Kt. May 29. ex.
- 471 Sir Gualter de Raed of the United Netherlands, Holland, — 30. ex.
- 472 Sir Orlando Bridgeman of Great Lever in Lancashire, Kt. June 7.
- 473 Sir Geoffrey Palmer of Carleton in Northamptonshire, Kt. — 7.
- 474 Sir Heneage Finch of Raunston in Buckinghamshire, Kt. since Earl of Nottingham, — 7. *English.*
- 475 Sir John Langham of Cotsbrook in Northamptonshire, Kt. and Alderman of London, — 7.
- 476 Humphrey Winch of Haunes in Bedfordshire, Esq; — 9. ex.
- 477 Sir Robert Abdy of Albins in Essex, Kt. — 9.
- 478 Thomas Draper of Sunninghill-Park in Berkshire, Esq; — 12. ex.
- 479 Henry Wright of Dagenham in Essex, Esq; --- 12. ex.
- 480 Jonathan Keate of the Hoo in Hertfordshire, Esq; --- 12. ex.
- 481 Sir Hugh Speke of Hasilbury in Wiltshire, Kt. --- 12. ex.
- 482 Nicholas Gould of the City of London, Esq; --- 13. ex.
- 483 Sir Thomas Adams, Kt. and Alderman of London, --- 13.
- 484 Richard Atkins of Clapham in Surrey, Esq; --- 13.
- 485 Thomas Allen of the City of London, Esq; --- 14. ex.
- 486 Henry North of Milden-Hall in Suffolk, Esq; ex.
- 487 Sir William Wiseman of Riven-Hall in Essex, Kt. --- 15. ex.
- 488 Thomas Cullum of Haftede in Suffolk, Esq; --- 8.
- 489 Basil Dixwell of Broom-house in Kent, Esq; --- 19.
- 490 Thomas Darcy of St. Cleres-Hall in St Oliths in Essex, Esq; --- 20. ex.
- 491 George Grubham How of Cold Barwick in Wiltshire, Esq; — 20.
- 492 John Cutts of Childerley in Cambridgeshire, Esq; --- 21. ex.
- 493 Solomon Swale of Swale-Hall in Yorkshire, Esq; June 21. 1660.
- 494 William Humble of the City of London, Esq; --- 21,
- 495 Henry Stapleton of Mytan in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 22.
- 496 Gervase Elweys of Stoke near Clare in Suffolk, Esq; --- 22.

26. CHARLES H. Vol. II.

- 497 Robert Cordell of Melford in Suffolk, Esq; --- 22. ex.
 498 Sir John Robinson, Kt. Lieutenant of the Tower of London, --- 22.
 499 Sir John Abdy of Moores in Essex, Kt. --- 22. ex.
 500 Sir Robert Hildiard of Patrington in Yorkshire, Kt. --- 25.
 501 Jacob Astley of Hill-Morton in Warwickshire, Esq; --- 25.
 502 Sir William Bowyer of Denham in Buckinghamshire, Kt. --- 25.
 503 Thomas Stanley of Aldersey in Cheshire, Esq; --- 25.
 504 John Shuckburgh of Shuckburgh in Warwickshire, Esq; --- 26.
 505 William Wray of Ashby in Lincolnshire, Esq; --- 27. ex.
 506 Nicholas Stuart of Hartly-Mauduit in Hampshire, Esq; --- 27.
 507 George Warburton of Areley in Cheshire, Esq; --- 27.
 508 Sir Francis Holles of Winterburne St. Martin in Dorsetshire, Kt. --- 27. ex.
 509 Oliver St. John of Woodford in Northamptonshire, Esq; Baron St. John of Bletsho. --- 28. E.
 510 Ralph De la Vall of Seyton, De la Vall in Northumberland, Esq; --- 29. ex.
 511 Andrew Henley of Henley in Somersetshire, Esq; --- 30.
 512 Thomas Ellis of Wyham in Lincolnshire, Esq; --- 30.
 513 John Covert of Slaugham in Sussex, Esq; July 2. ex.
 514 Peter Lear of London, Gent. --- 2. ex.
 515 Maurice Berkley of Bruton in Somersetshire, Esq; --- 2. ex.
 516 Henry Hudson of Melton-Mowbray in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 3. ex.
 517 Thomas Herbert of Tinterne in Monmouthshire, Esq; --- 3. ex.
 518 Thomas Middleton of Chirk in Denbighshire, Esq; --- 4. ex.
 519 Verney Noell of Kirkby in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 6.
 520 George Buswell of Clifton in Northamptonshire, Esq; --- 7. ex.
 521 Robert Austen of Bexley in Kent, Esq; --- 10.
 522 Robert Hales of Beaksbourn in Kent, Esq; --- 12.
 523 Sir William Boothby of Bradley-Ash in Derbyshire, Kt. --- 13.
 524 Wolstan Dixey of Market-Bosworth in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 14.
 525 John Bright of Badsworth in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 16. ex.
 526 John

- 526 John Warner of Parham, Esq; — 16. ex.
 527 Sir Job Harby of Aldenham in Hertfordshire, Kt.
 — 17. ex.
 528 Samuel Morland of Southamptede-Banester in Berkshire, Esq; — 18. ex.
 529 Sir Thomas Hewyt of Pishobury in Hertfordshire, Kt. since Viscount Hewyt, — 19. *Irisb.* ex.
 530 Edward Honywood of Lavington in Kent, Esq; — 19.
 531 Richard Browne of London, Alderman, — 22.
 532 Henry Vernon of Hodnet in Shropshire, Esq; — 23.
 ex.
 533 Sir John Aubrey of Llantrilhed in Glamorganshire, Kt. — 23.
 534 William Thomas of Folkington in Sussex, Esq;
 — 23. ex.
 535 Thomas Slater of Cambridge in Cambridgeshire, Esq;
 — 25. ex.
 536 Henry Conway of Bolritham in Flintshire, Esq;
 — 25. ex.
 537 Edward Green of Sonpford in Essex, Esq; — 26. ex.
 538 John Stapeley of Patcham in Sussex, Esq; — 28. ex.
 539 Metcalf Robinson of Newby in Yorkshire, Esq;
 — 30. ex.
 540 Marmaduke Gresham of Limpsfield in Sussex, Esq;
 — 31.
 541 William Dudley of Clapton in Northamptonshire, Esq; August 1.
 542 Hugh Smithson of Stanwick in Yorkshire, Esq; — 2.
 543 Sir Roger Mostyn of Mostyn in Flintshire, Kt. — 3.
 544 William Willoughby of Wellaton in Nottinghamshire, Esq; — 4. ex.
 545 Anthony Oldfield of Spalding in Lincolnshire, Esq;
 — 6. ex.
 546 Peter Leicester of Tabley in Cheshire, Esq; — 10.
 547 Sir William Wheeler of the City of Westminster, Kt.
 — 11.
 548 John Newton of Barscote in Gloucestershire, Esq;
 — 16.
 549 Thomas Lee of Hartwell in Buckinghamshire, Esq;
 — 16.
 550 Thomas Smith of Hatherton in Cheshire, Esq; — 16.
 ex.
 551 Ralph Ashton of Middleton in Lancashire, Esq; — 17.
 552 John Rous of Henham in Suffolk, Esq; — 17.

- 553 Henry Massingbeard of Bratofts-Hall in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 22. ex.
- 554 John Hales of Coventry in Warwickshire, Esq; — 28.
- 555 Ralph Bovey of Hill-Fields in Warwickshire, Esq; — 30. ex.
- 556 John Knightley of Off-Church in Warwickshire, Esq; — 30. ex.
- 557 Sir John Drake of Ash in Devonshire, Kt. — 31. ex.
- 558 Oliver St. George of Carickermick in Trim in Ireland, Esq; September 5.
- 559 Sir John Bowyer of Knipersley in Staffordshire, Kt. — 11. ex.
- 560 Sir William Wild, Kt. Recorder of the City of London, — 13. ex.
- 561 Joseph Ash of Twittenham in Middlesex, Esq; — 19.
- 562 John How of Compton in Gloucestershire, Esq; Viscount How, — 22. I.
- 563 John Swinburne of Capheaton in Northumberland, Esq; — 26.
- 564 John Trott of Laverstoke in Hampshire, Esq; October 12. ex.
- 565 Humphry Miller of Oxenhoath in Kent, Esq; — 13. ex.
- 566 Sir John Lewes of Ledston in Yorkshire, Kt. — 15. ex.
- 567 John Beale of Maidston in Kent, Esq; — 16. ex.
- 568 Sir Richard Franklin of Moore-Park in Hertfordshire, Kt. — 16. ex.
- 569 William Russel of Langhorne in Caernarthenshire, Esq; November 8. ex.
- 570 Thomas Boothby of Friday-Hill in Chingford in Essex, Esq; — 9. ex.
- 571 William Backhouse of London, Esq; — 9. ex.
- 572 Sir John Cutler of London, Kt. — 12. ex.
- 573 Giles Mottet of Leige in —————— — 16. ex.
- 574 Henry Gifford of Burstall in Leicestershire, Esq; — 21. ex.
- 575 Sir Thomas Foot of London, Kt. and Alderman, — 21. ex.
- 576 Thomas Manwaring of Over-Pever in Cheshire, Esq; — 22.
- 577 Thomas Bennet of Baberham in Cambridgeshire, Esq; — 22. ex.
- 578 John Wroth of Blenden-Hall in Kent, Esq; — 29. ex.

- 579 George Wynne of Nostell in Yorkshire, Esq; December 3.
- 580 Heneage Featherstone of Blakesware in Hertfordshire, Esq; — 4.
- 581 Humphry Monoux of Wotton in Bedfordshire, Esq; — 4.
- 582 John Peyton of Doddington in the Isle of Ely in Cambridgeshire, Esq; — 10. ex.
- 583 Edmond Anderson of Broughton in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 11.
- 584 John Fagg of Wiston in Sussex, Esq; — 11.
- 585 Matthew Herbert of Bromfield in Shropshire, Esq; — 18. ex.
- 586 Edward Ward of Bexley in Norfolk, Esq; --- 19.
- 587 John Keyt of Ebrington in Gloucestershire, Esq; --- 22.
- 588 William Killegrew of Arwynick in Cornwall, Esq; --- 22. ex.
- 589 John Buck of Humby-Grange in Lincolnshire, Esq; --- 22.
- 590 William Frankland of Thirkelby in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 24.
- 591 Richard Stedolph of Norbury in Surrey, Esq; -- 24. ex.
- 592 William Gardiner of the City of London, Esq; -- 24.
- 593 William Juxon of Albourne in Sussex, Esq; --- 28.
- 594 John Legard of Ganton in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 29.
- 595 George Marwood of Little Buskby in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 31.
- 596 John Jackson of Hickleton in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 31.
- 597 Sir Henry Pickering of Whaddon in Cambridgeshire, Kt. January 2. ex.
- 598 Henry Bedingfield of Oxbrough in Norfolk, Esq; --- 2.
- 599 Walter Plomer of the Inner Temple, London, Esq; --- 4. ex.
- 600 Herbert Springet of Broyle in Sussex, Esq; --- 8. ex.
- 601 William Powell, alias Hinson, of Pengethley in Herefordshire, Esq; 23. ex.
- 602 Robert Newton of the City of London, Esq; --- 25. ex.
- 603 Nicholas Staughton of Staughton in Surrey, Esq; --- 29. ex.
- 604 William Rokeby of Skyers in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 29. ex.
- 605 Walter Ernley of New-Sarum in Wiltshire, Esq; February 2, 1660.

- 606 John Husband of Ipsley in Warwickshire, Esq; --- 2.
 607 Thomas Morgan of Llangahock in Monmouthshire, Esq; --- 7.
 608 Richard Lane of Tulfse in Roscommon in Ireland, Esq; Viscount Lanesborough. --- 9. I. ex.
 609 John Osborne of Chickland in Buckinghamshire, Esq; --- 11.
 610 George Wakeman of Beckford in Gloucestershire, Esq; The Patent never sealed. --- 15.
 611 Benjamin Wright of Cranham-Hall in Essex, Esq; --- 15.
 612 John Colleton of the City of London, Esq; ---- 18.
 613 Sir James Modyford of London, Kt. --- 18. ex.
 614 Thomas Beaumont of Steoughton-Grange in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 21.
 615 Edward Smith of Eshe in the Bishopric of Durham, Esq; --- 23.
 616 John Napier, alias Sandy, in Bedfordshire, Esq; March 4. ex.
 617 Thomas Gifford, Esq; of Castle-Sordan in Meath, in Ireland. --- 4. ex.
 618 Thomas Clifton of Clifton in Lancashire, Esq; --- 4. ex.
 619 William Wilson of Eastborne in Sussex, Esq; --- 4.
 620 Compton Reade of Burton in Berkshire, Esq; --- 4.
 621 Sir Brian Broughton of Broughton in Staffordshire, Kt. --- 10.
 622 Robert Slingsby of Newcelle in Hertfordshire, Esq; --- 16. ex.
 623 John Crofts of Stow in Suffolk, Esq; --- 16. ex.
 624 Ralph Verney of Middle-Claydon in Bucks, Esq; Viscount Fermanagh. --- 16. I.
 625 Robert Dicer of Uphall in Hertfordshire, Esq; March 18. ex.
 626 John Bromfield of Southwark in Surrey, Esq; --- 20.
 627 Thomas Rich of Sunning in Berkshire, Esq; 20.
 628 Edward Smith of Edmonthorpe in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 20.
 629 Walter Long of Whaddon in Wiltshire, Esq; March 26. 1661. ex.
 630 John Fettiplace of Childrey in Berkshire, Esq; --- 30.
 631 Walter Hendley of Cuckfield in Sussex, Esq; April 8. ex.
 632 William Parsons of Langley in Buckinghamshire, Esq; 9.
 633 John Cambell of Woodford in Essex, Esq; --- 9. ex.
 634 William Morrice of Werrington in Devonshire, Esq; --- 20.

635 Sir

- 635 Sir Charles Gawdey of Crowshall in Suffolk, Kt. --- 20.
ex.
- 636 William Godolphin of Godolphin in Cornwall, Esq;
--- 29. ex.
- 637 William Caley of Brumpton in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 29.
- 638 Thomas Curion of Water-Perry in Oxfordshire, Esq;
--- 30.
- 639 Edmund Fowel of Fowel in Devonshire, Esq; May 1.
ex.
- 640 John Cropley of Clerkenwell in Middlesex, Esq; --- 7.
ex.
- 641 William Smith of Redcliff in Buckinghamshire, Esq;
--- 10.
- 642 George Cooke of Wheatley in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 10.
- 643 Charles Lloyd of Garth in Montgomeryshire, Esq;
--- 10.
- 644 Nathaniel Powel of Ewhurst in Essex, Esq; --- 10.
- 645 Denney Ashburnham of Bromhall in Sussex, Esq;
--- 15.
- 646 Hugh Smith of Long-Ashton in Somersetshire, Esq;
--- 16.
- 647 Robert Jenkinson of Walcott in Oxfordshire, Esq;
--- 18.
- 648 William Glynn of Biffister in Oxfordshire, Esq; --- 20.
- 649 John Charnock of Holcot in Bedfordshire, Esq; --- 21.
- 650 Robert Brook of Nacton in Suffolk, Esq; --- 21. ex.
- 651 Thomas Nevill of Holt in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 25.
ex.
- 652 Henry Andrews of Lathbury in Buckinghamshire,
Esq; --- 27. ex.
- 653 Anthony Craven of Sopersholt in Berkshire, Esq; June 4.
ex.
- 654 John Clavering of Axwell in Durham, Esq; --- 5.
- 655 Thomas Derham of West-Derham in Norfolk, Esq;
--- 8.
- 656 William Stanley of Hooton in Cheshire, Esq; --- 17.
- 657 Abraham Cullen of East-Shene in Surrey, Esq; --- 17.
- 658 James Rushout of Miluft-maylards in Essex, Esq;
--- 17.
- 659 Godfrey Copley of Sprethborough in Yorkshire, Esq;
--- 17. ex.
- 660 Griffith Williams of Penthryn in Caernarvonshire,
Esq; --- 17.
- 661 Henry Winchcumbe of Buckebury in Bedfordshire,
Esq; --- 18. ex.

- 662 Clement Clarke of Lande-Abbey in Leicestershire, Esq; --- 18.
 663 Thomas Vyner of the City of London, Esq; --- 18. ex.
 664 John Sylyard of Delaware in Kent, Esq; --- 18. ex.
 665 Christopher Guise of Elmore in Gloucestershire, Esq; July 10.
 666 Reginald Forster of East-Greenwich in Kent, Esq; — 11. ex.
 667 Philip Parker of Arwarton in Suffolk, Esq; --- 16. ex.
 668 Sir Edward Duke of Benhall in Suffolk, Esq; --- 16.
 669 Charles Hussey of Caythorp in Lincolnshire, Esq; --- 21. ex.
 670 Edward Barkham of Waynfleet in Lincolnshire, Esq; --- 21. ex.
 671 Thomas Norton of Coventry in Warwickshire, Esq; --- 23. ex.
 672 John Dormer of the Grange in Buckinghamshire, Esq; --- 23. ex.
 673 Thomas Carew of Haccombe in Devonshire, Esq; August 2.
 674 Mark Milbank of Halnaby in Yorkshire, Esq; — 7.
 675 Richard Rothwell of Ewerby and Stapleford in Lincolnshire, Esq; — 16. ex.
 676 John Banks of London, Esq; — 22. ex.
 677 John Ingoldsby of Letherborough in Buckinghamshire, Esq; — 30. ex.
 678 Francis Bickley of Attleborough in Norfolk, Esq; — September 3.
 679 Robert Jason of Broad Somerford in Wiltshire, Esq; — 5.
 680 Sir John Young of Culliton in Devonshire, Kt. — 26.
 681 John Frederic Van Freifendorf of Herdick, Lord of Kymp. October 4. ex.
 682 William Roberts of Willesden in Middlesex, Esq; — November 8. ex.
 683 William Luckin of Waltham in Essex, Esq; — 15. ex.
 684 Thomas Smith of Hill-Hall in Essex, Esq; — 28.
 685 Edwin Sadler of Temple-Daneley in Hertfordshire, Esq; December 3. ex.
 686 Sir William Wyndham of Orchard in Somersetshire, Kt. — 9.
 687 George Southcote of Eliborough in Lincolnshire, Esq; January 24. ex.

688 George

- 688 George Trevillian of Nettlecombe in Somersetshire, Esq; — 24.
- 689 Francis Duncombe of Tangley in Surrey, Esq; Feb. 4. ex.
- 690 Nicholas Bacon of Gillingham in Norfolk, Esq; — 7. ex.
- 691 Richard Cocks of Dumbleton in Gloucestershire, Esq; --- 7.
- 692 John Coriton of Newton in Cornwall, Esq; --- 27.
- 693 John Lloyd of Woking in Surrey, Esq; --- 28. ex.
- 694 Thomas Proby of Elton-Hall in Huntingdonshire, Esq; March 7. ex.
- 695 Miles Stapleton of Carleton in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 20. ex.
- 696 Sir Richard Braham of New-Windsor in Berkshire, Kt. April 16, 1662. ex.
- 697 Sir John Wittewrong of Stantonbury in Buckinghamshire, Kt. May 2.
- 698 Philip Matthews of Great-Gobins near Rumford in Essex, Esq; June 13. ex.
- 699 Robert Bernard of Huntingdon in Huntingdonshire, Serjeant at law, July 1.
- 700 Roger Lort of Stock-Poole in Pembrokeshire, Esq; --- 15. ex.
- 701 Edward Gage of Hengrave in Suffolk, Esq; --- 15.
- 702 Thomas Hooke of Franchford in Surrey, Esq; --- 22. ex.
- 703 John Savile of Copley in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 24. ex.
- 704 Christopher Wandesford of Kirklington in Yorkshire, Viscount Castlecomer, August 5. I.
- 705 Richard Astley of Patohull in Staffordshire, Esq; --- 13.
- 706 Sir Jacob Gerrard of Langford in Norfolk, Kt. --- 16.
- 707 Edward Fust of Hill in Gloucestershire, Esq; --- 21.
- 708 Robert Long of Westminster in Middlesex, Esq; September 1.
- 709 Sir Robert Can of Compton-Greenfield in Gloucestershire, Esq; --- 13.
- 710 William Middleton of Belsey-Castle in Northumberland, Esq; October 24.
- 711 Richard Graham of Norton-Coniers in Yorkshire, Esq; November 17.
- 712 Thomas Tancred of Boroughbridge in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 17.

- 713 Cuthbert Heron of Chipchase in Northumberland, Esq; Nov. 20, 1662.
- 714 Sir Francis Wenman of Caswell in Oxfordshire, Kt. Viscount Tuam, --- 29. I.
- 715 Henry Purefoy of Wadley in Berkshire, Esq; Dec. 4. ex.
- 716 Thomas Cob of Adderbury in Oxfordshire, Esq; --- 9.
- 717 Henry Brook of Norton in Cheshire, Esq; --- 12.
- 718 Peter Pindar of Edinshaw in Cheshire, Esq; --- 22. ex.
- 719 Sir Nicholas Slaning of Moriston in Devonshire, Knight of the Bath, January 19. ex.
- 720 Sir George Reeve of Thwayte in Suffolk, Kt. --- 21. ex.
- 721 Thomas Brograve of Harnmels in Hertfordshire, Esq; March 18. ex.
- 722 Sir Thomas Barnardiston of Ketton in Suffolk, Kt. April 7, 1663.
- 723 Sir Samuel Barnardiston of Brightwell-Hall in Suffolk, Kt. May 11. ex.
- 724 Sir John Dawes of Putney in Middlesex, Kt. June 1.
- 725 Sir John Holeman of Banbury in Oxfordshire, Kt. --- 4. ex.
- 726 William Cooke of Bromehall in Norfolk, Esq; --- 29. ex.
- 727 John Bellot of Moreton in Cheshire, Esq; --- 30. ex.
- 728 Sir George Downing of East-Hatley in Cambridgeshire, Kt. July 1.
- 729 William Gaudey of West-Herting in Norfolk, Esq; --- 13. ex.
- 730 Sir Charles Pym of Brymmore in Somersetshire, Kt. --- 14. ex.
- 731 Sir William d'Oyley of Shottesham in Norfolk, Kt. --- 29.
- 732 Sir John Marsham of Cuckston, in Kent, August 12.
- 733 Robert Burnham of Boughton-Monchelsea in Kent, Esq; --- 15. ex.
- 734 Francis Leeke of Newark in Nottinghamshire, Esq; December 15. ex.
- 735 John St. Barbe of Broadlands in Hampshire, Esq; --- 30. ex.
- 736 Thomas Cambell of Clay-Hall in Essex, Esq; Feb. 12. ex.
- 737 James Pennyman of Ormesby, in Cleveland in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 22.

- 738 Thomas Moddiford of Lincoln's-Inn in Middlesex, Esq; March 1. ex.
- 739 George Selby of Whitehouse in Durham, Esq; --- 3. ex.
- 740 Sir Edmond Fortescue of Tallowpit in Devonshire, Kt. Mar. 31, 1664. ex.
- 741 Samuel Tuke of Cressing-Temple in Essex, Esq; --- 31. ex.
- 742 John Tempest of Tong in Yorkshire, Esq; May 25.
- 743 Littleton Osbaldeston of Chadlington in Oxfordshire, Esq; June 25.
- 744 Giles Tooker of Moddington in Wiltshire, Esq; July 1. ex.
- 745 Stephen Anderton of Eyworth in Bedfordshire, Esq; --- 23.
- 746 Thomas Bateman of How-Hall in Norfolk, Esq; August 31. ex.
- 747 Thomas Lorrayne of Kirk-Hall in Northumberland, Esq; September 26.
- 748 Thomas Wentworth of Bretton in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 27.
- 749 Sir Theophilus Biddulph of Westcombe in Kent, Kt. November 2.
- 750 William Green of Micham in Surrey, Esq; --- 2. ex.
- 751 William Cookes of Norgrave in Worcestershire, Esq; December 24. ex.
- 752 Sir John Wolfstenholm of London. Kt. Jan. 10. ex.
- 753 Sir John Jacob of Bromley in Middlesex, Kt. --- 11.
- 754 John Yeomans of the City of Bristol, Esq; January 12. ex.
- 755 John Pye of How in Derbyshire, Esq; --- 13. ex.
- 756 Thomas Taylor of the Park-House in Maidstone in Kent, Esq; --- 18. ex.
- 757 William Leman of Northall, in Hertfordshire, Esq; March 3.
- 758 Sir Robert Smith of Upton in Essex, Kt. March 30, 1665.
- 759 Sir Nicholas Crisp of Hammersmith in Middlesex, Kt. April 14.
- 760 Sir John Shaw of London. Kt. --- 15.
- 761 John Brown of Caversham in Oxfordshire, Esq; May 10.
- 762 George Rawden of Moria, in the County of Downe in Ireland, Esq; June 2.

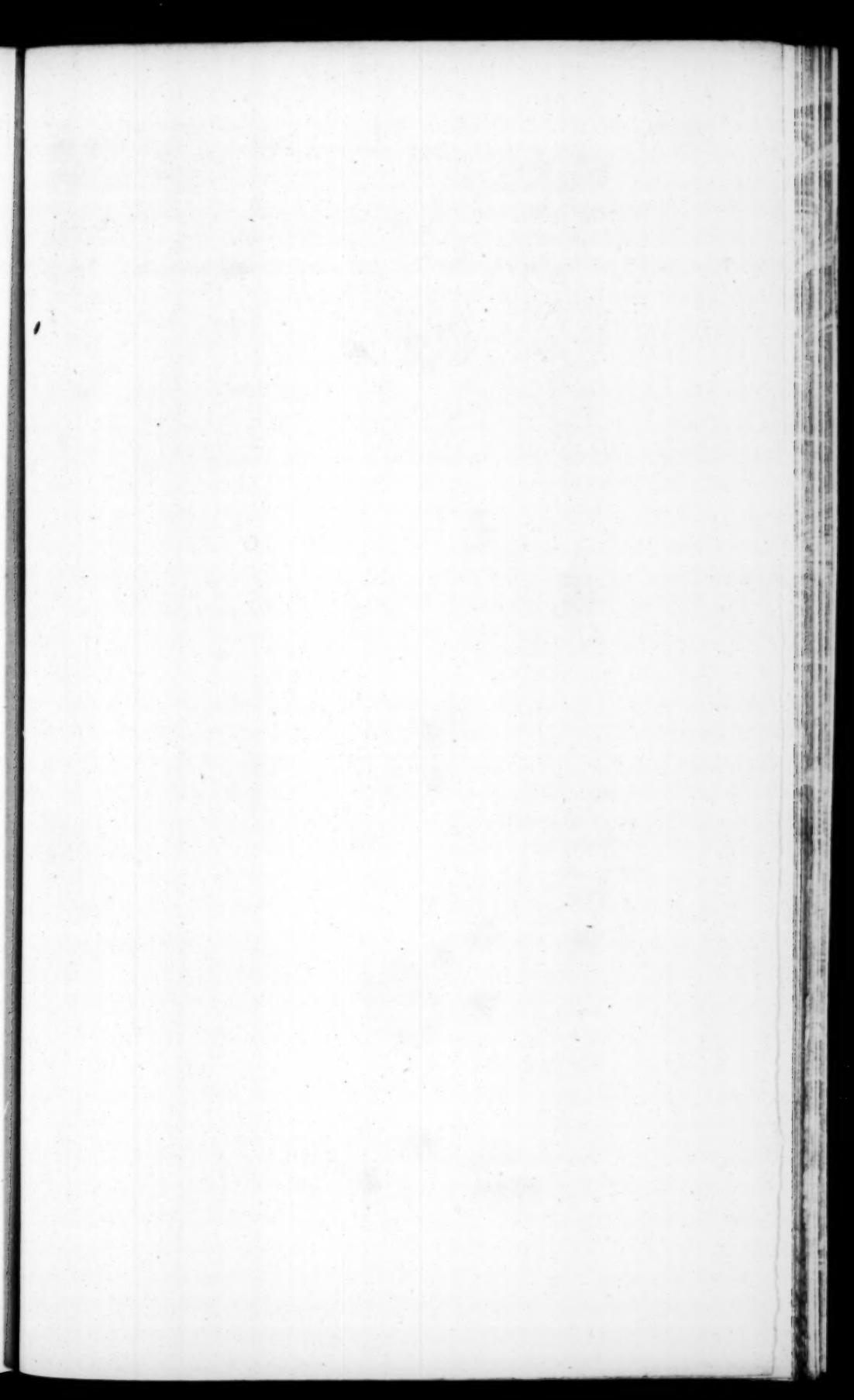
- 763 Robert Jocelyn of Hyde-Hall in Hertfordshire, Esq; --- 8.
 764 Robert Duckenfield of Duckenfield-Hall in Cheshire, Esq; --- 16.
 765 John Lawson of Broughton in Yorkshire, Esq; July 6.
 766 Philip Tyrrell of Hanslap and Castlethorpe in Buckinghamshire, Esq; --- 20.
 767 Francis Burdet of Burdet in Yorkshire, Esq; --- 25.
 768 George Moore of Maids-Morton in Buckinghamshire, Esq; --- 26. ex.
 769 Abel Barker of Hambleton in Rutlandshire, Esq; September 9. ex.
 770 Sir William Oglander of Nunwell in the Isle of Wight, Kt. December 12.
 771 William Temple of Sheene in Surrey, Esq; January 31. ex.
 772 William Swan of Southfleet in Kent, Esq; Mar. 1. ex.
 773 Anthony Shirley of Preston in Sussex, Esq; --- 6. ex.
 774 Maurice Diggs of Chilhem-Castle in Kent, Esq; — 6. ex.
 775 Peter Glean of Hardwick in Norfolk, Esq; — 6.
 776 John Nelthorpe of Grays-Inn in Middlesex, Esq; May 10, 1666.
 777 Sir Robert Vyner of London, Kt. — 10. ex.
 778 Sir Thomas Twisden of Bradburn in Kent, Kt. June 13.
 779 Sir Anthony Aucher of Bishops-bourne in Kent, Kt. July 4. ex.
 780 John D'Oyly of Chiselhampton in Oxfordshire, Esq; — 7.
 781 Edward Hoby of Bisham in Berkshire, Esq; — 12.
 782 Thomas Put of Combe in Devonshire, Esq; — 12. ex.
 783 John Tyrrell of Springfield in Essex, Esq; Oct. 22.
 784 Gilbert Gerard of Friskerton in Lincolnshire, Esq; November 17. ex.
 785 Sir Robert Yeomans of Red-lands in Gloucestershire, Kt. December 31.
 786 Carr Scrope of Cockerington in Lincolnshire, Esq; January 16. ex.
 787 Peter Fortescue of Woon in Devonshire, Esq; — 29. ex.
 788 Sir Richard Bettenson of Wimbleton in Surrey, Kt. February 7.

- 789 Algernon Peyton of Doddington in the Isle of Ely, Esq; March 21.
- 790 Roger Martin of Long-Melford in Suffolk, Esq; — 28, 1667.
- 791 Richard Hastings of Redlench in Somersetshire, Esq; May 7. ex.
- 792 William Hanham of Winburn in Dorsetshire, Esq; — 20.
- 793 Francis Topp of Tormarton in Gloucestershire, Esq; July 25, 1668. ex.
- 794 William Langhorn of the Inner-Temple, London, Esq; August 28, 1670. ex.
- 795 Edward Mostyn of Talacre in Flintshire, Esq; April 28, 1670.
- 796 Sir George Stonehouse, Kt. May 5. ex.
- 797 Philip Carteret of St. Owen in Jersey, Esq; June 4. ex.
- 798 Fulwar Skipwith of Newbold-Hall in Warwickshire, Esq; October 25.
- 799 John Sabin of Eyne in Bedfordshire, Esq; March 22. ex.
- 800 William Chaitor of Croft-Hall in Yorkshire, Esq; June 28, 1671. ex.
- 801 Herbert Croft of Croft-Castle in Hereford, Esq; November 18.
- 802 John St. Aubyn of Clowence in Cornwall, Esq; March 11.
- 803 Robert Eden of West-Stauckland in Durham, Esq; Nov. 13, 1672.
- 804 John Werden of Chester, Esq; — 28.
- 805 Thomas Allen of Blundeston in Suffolk, Esq; — 28. ex.
- 806 Francis Warr of Hestercombe in Somersetshire, Esq; June 2, 1673. ex.
- 807 Orlando Bridgman of Ridley in Cheshire, Esq; Oct. 12.
- 808 Francis Wyndham of Trent in Somersetshire, Esq; November 18.
- 809 Arthur Harris of Stowford in Devonshire, Esq; December 1. ex.
- 810 William Blacket of Newcastle in Northumberland, Esq; — 12.
- 811 John Thompson of Haverham in Buckinghamshire, Esq; Baron, Lord Haverham, — 12. E. ex.
- 812 Halfwell Tynte of Halfwell in Somersetshire, Esq; January 7.

- 813 Cornelius Martin Tromp, Vice-Admiral of Holland and West-Friesland, March 25, 1674. ex.
- 814 Robert Parker of Ratton in Sussex, Esq; May 22.
- 815 John Sherard of Lobthorpe in Lincolnshire, Esq;—25.
- 816 Arthur Onslow of West-Clandon in Surrey, Esq; now Lord Onslow, — 25.
- 817 Walter Clarges of St. Martin's in the Fields, in Middlesex, Esq; October 30.
- 818 Thomas Williams of Eltham in Kent, Esq; November 2, 1674. ex.
- 819 Robert Filmer of East-Sutton in Kent, Esq; December 24.
- 820 Sir Edward Nevill of Grove in Nottinghamshire, Kt. February 24. ex.
- 821 Richard Tulpe of Amsterdam, Esq; April 23, 1675. ex.
- 822 Edward More of Morehall in Lancashire, Esq; November 22.
- 823 Thomas Samwell of Upton in Northamptonshire, Esq; December 12.
- 824 Charles Rich of the City of London, Esq; Jan. 24.
- 825 Benjamin Maddox of Wormley in Hertfordshire, Esq; March 11. ex.
- 826 William Barker of Bockinghall in Essex, Esq;—29, 1676.
- 827 John Brookes of York City, Esq; June 13.
- 828 William Pennington of Moncaster in Cumberland, — 21.
- 829 Richard Head of Rochester in Kent, Esq; Aug. 19.
- 830 Bennet Hoskins of Harwood in Herefordshire, Esq; December 19.
- 831 Richard Standish of Duxbury in Lancashire, Esq; February 8.
- 832 Alexander Robertson, alias Collier of Holland, Esq; since Earl of Portmore, — 26. *Scots.*
- 833 Thomas Dyke of Horsham in Sussex, Esq; Mar. 3.
- 834 Sir Robert Cotton of Cumbermere in Cheshire, Kt. — 29, 1677.
- 835 Francis Willoughby of Wollaton in Nottinghamshire, Esq; Lord Middleton, April 7. *E.*
- 836 Ignatius Vitus, alias White of Limerick in Ireland, June 29. ex.
- 837 John Barlow of Sleberge in Pembrokeshire, Esq; July 13.
- 838 Richard Newdigate, Serjeant at Law, — 24.

- 839 Richard Cust of Stamford in Lincolnshire, Esq; September 29.
- 840 Francis Anderton of Laftock in Lancashire, Esq; October 8.
- 841 James Simeon of Chilworth in Oxfordshire, Esq; — 18.
- 842 James Poole of Poole in Worrell in Cheshire, Esq; [with remainder to William his brother] — 25.
- 843 George Wharton of Kirkby-Kendal in Westmoreland, Esq; December 19.
- 844 Sir Hugh Ackland of Cullum-John in Devonshire, Kt. January 21.
- 845 Sir Francis Edwards of Shrewsbury in Shropshire, Kt. April 22, 1678.
- 846 Sir Henry Oxenden of Dean in Kent, Kt. May 8.
- 847 James Bowyer of Leightborne in Sussex, Esq; — 18.
- 848 Ralph Dutton of Sherborn in Gloucestershire, Esq; June 20.
- 849 Walter Curle of Suberton in Huntingdonshire, Esq; — 22. ex.
- 850 William Dyer of Tottenham in Middlesex, Esq; July 6.
- 851 Josias Child of Wanstead in Essex, Esq; since Lord Tilny, — 18. I.
- 852 Sir Thomas Skipwith of Methringham in Lincolnshire, Kt. — 27.
- 853 Walter Hawksworth of Hawksworth in Yorkshire, Esq; December 6.
- 854 Jeremiah Snow of Salisbury in Hertfordshire, Esq; January 25. ex.
- 855 William Kenrick of Whitley in Berkshire, Esq; March 29, 1679. ex.
- 856 Sir Samuel Marrow of Berkswell in Warwickshire, Kt. July 16. ex.
- 857 Sir Roger Bradshaw of Haigh in Lancashire, Kt. November 17.
- 858 William Stapleton, Esq; Governor of the Leeward-Islands in America, December 20.
- 859 Thomas-Pope Blount of Tittenhanger in Hertfordshire, Esq; January 6.
- 860 Sir George Walker of Bushey-Hall in Hertfordshire, Kt. — 18. ex.
- 861 Sir Gellibrand Sas van Bosch of Holland, Kt. Oct. 22, 1680. ex.
- 862 John Roberts of Bow in Essex, Esq; February 2. ex.
- 863 Roger

- 863 Roger Beckwith of Aldborough in Yorkshire, Esq; April 15, 1681.
- 864 Thomas Parkings of Bunney in Nottinghamshire, Esq; May 18.
- 865 Thomas Bunbury of Bunbury and Stanney in Cheshire, Esq; June 29.
- 866 Hugh Parker of the City of London, Esq; July 1.
- 867 Henry Seymour, Esq; --- 4. ex.
- 868 Sir George Jefferies of Bulstrode, Kt. Nov. 7. ex.
- 869 Hugh Middleton of Hackney in Middlesex, Esq; Dec. 6.
- 870 Joseph Alston the Elder, of Chelsea in Middlesex, Esq; January 20.
- 871 Thomas Robinson of Kentwell-Hall in Suffolk, Esq; — 26.
- 872 William Maynard of Walthamstow in Essex, Esq; Feb. 1.
- 873 Sir Robert Napier of Punknol in Dorsetshire, Kt.— 25.
- 874 Robert Davers of Rowham in Norfolk, Esq; May 12, 1682.
- 875 Cane James of Crishall in Essex, Esq; June 28.
- 876 Cornelius Gans of the Netherlands. — 29.
- 877 Timothy Thornhill of Barbadoes, and of Kent. December 24. ex.
- 878 Sir Edward Evelyn of Long-Ditton in Surrey, Kt. February 17. ex.
- 879 Thomas Lear of Lindridge in Devonshire, Esq; Aug. 2. 1683.
- 880 John Wytham of Goldsborough in Yorkshire, Esq; December 13.
- 881 James Richards of Bramley-House in Suffolk, Esq; February 22.
- 882 George Chute of Hauxfull-Place in Kent, Esq; September 16, 1684. ex.
- 883 Sir Robert Dashwood of Northwood in Oxfordshire, Kt. — 16.
- 884 Sir George Sheers of Slyfield-House in Surrey, Kt. October 16. ex.
- 885 Richard Sands of Northborne in Kent, Esq; December 15. ex.
- 886 Sir William Blacket of Newcastle upon Tyne in Northumberland, Kt. January 23.
- 887 Sir John Child of Surat in the East-Indies, Feb. 5.
- 888 Sir William Soame of Thurlow in Suffolk, Kt. February 5.



Face the Title Vol. XV.



Knieller p.

Vertue Sculp

BOOK XXIV.

The Reign of King JAMES II, from his Accession to the Throne, to the Establishment of King WILLIAM and Queen MARY; Containing the space of four years and seven days.

27. JAMES II.

JAMES Duke of York is proclaimed King, by the *Ann. C.* name of James II. His design and endeavours from *Reg. 1.* the first, were to establish Popery and arbitrary Power in these Kingdoms.

He assembles his Privy-Council, to whom he makes a speech full of fair promises.

A proclamation is issued out for continuing all persons in *Feb. 7.* office in their employments, and for obeying all orders and directions given by the late King.

King James goes publicly to Mass.

He orders by a proclamation, that the customs and other duties, which had been granted to the King his brother only for life, should continue to be collected.

He publishes, and causes it to be attested, by Father Huddleston, that the late King his brother died a Papist.

Laurence Hyde Earl of Rochester, is made Lord High-Treasurer; Henry Hyde Earl of Clarendon, Lord Privy-Seal; George Savil Marquis of Halifax, President of the Council; Henry Bennet Earl of Arlington, Lord-Chamberlain; James Butler Duke of Ormond, Lord-Steward; Francis Lord Viscount Newport, Treasurer of the Household; William Lord Maynard, Comptroller; Henry Savil, Vice-Chamberlain; Sidney Lord Godolphin, Lord-Chamberlain to the Queen, &c.

Remarkable addresses are presented to the King by the Barristers and Students of the Middle-Temple, by the Inhabitants of Suffolk, and by the Quakers, &c.

James Butler Duke of Ormond, is recalled from being Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, and two Lords Justices are appointed to govern that Kingdom *1685. April.*

The King forms a new Privy-Council in Ireland, and fills it mostly with Catholics.

I

That

Ann. C. That Council imprisons abundance of Protestants accused of having held intelligence with the Duke of *Monmouth*.
 23. The King and Queen are crowned.

The Crown happened to be too little for the King's head, and the King's Arms painted in a glass window in one of the Churches of *London*, fall down of their own accord, and are broken to pieces; the rest remaining standing and unhurt.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets at *Edinburgh*, and passes some acts about Religion, the laws of the Kingdom, and the Excise, &c.

James Douglas Duke of Queensbury, was the King's High-Commissioner in this Parliament of *Scotland*.

Archibald Campbell Earl of Argyle, persuades *James Scot Duke of Monmouth* to invade *England*.

May 5. The Earl sails from *Holland*, and appears before the Isle of *Orkney*, where being ill received, he sails from thence round to the West *High-Lands*, and lands near *Dunstaffnage*, *May 20*.

He publishes two Declarations.

The Parliament of *Scotland* passes an act for obliging all the Subjects of that Kingdom to take the oath of Allegiance a-new.

8. *Titus Oates* is tried for perjury.

16. He is condemned to a large fine; to be stripped of his Canonical habits; to be twice whipped within three days; to stand in the pillory five times every year as long as he lived; and to be kept close prisoner during the rest of his life.

The whipping part of the sentence is executed upon him with the utmost severity.

19. The Parliament meets; and the Commons chuse Sir *John Trevor* for their Speaker.

22. The King makes a speech to both Houses, in which he promises to preserve the Government both in Church and State, as by Law established, and to preserve the liberties of the Nation; after which he speaks of his revenue, and of the Earl of *Argyle's* descent in *Scotland*.

Both Houses present addresses of thanks to the King for his speech, and the Commons grant him during life all the revenue enjoyed by the late King at his death.

24. *James Scot Duke of Monmouth* fails out of the *Texel*.

Thomas Osborne Earl of Danby, and the four Popish Lords that had been bailed out of the *Tower*, are discharged.

The

The House of Lords passes a bill for reversing the attainder of *William Howard* Lord Viscount Stafford, in 1680, *Ann. C.* but some Lords protest against it.

The Parliament of *Scotland* grants the King a yearly revenue of 260,000*l.* passes an act against the Covenant in 1638; and two other acts in favour of the Royal authority.

The Parliament of *England* votes that they would assist the King with their lives and fortunes against the Earl of *Argyle*, and his adherents.

The Committee of Religion draw up some votes against the Presbyterians, which are rejected by the House of Commons. *27.*

Sir *John Trevor* the Speaker makes a speech to the King, *May 30.* in presenting to him the revenue-bill; and the King makes a speech to both Houses, after having passed the revenue-bill, wherein he discovers his designs.

Thomas Dangerfield, who discovered the meal-tub-plot, is tried for his Narrative; condemned to a 500*l.* fine, and to be whipped two days together. After his first day's whipping, *Robert Francis* thrusts a cane into one of his eyes, of which he dies, and for which *Francis* is hanged.

Richard Baxter is also tried for his Notes on the New Testament, and fined 500 marks.

The Earl of *Argyle* gathers about 3,000 men together, and incamps in the Isle of *Bute*: But being pursued he passes into the County of *Argyle*, and from thence into *Dumbartonshire*.

The King's forces take the castle of *Ellengreg*, which the Earl had fortified, and had left therein his cannon, arms, and ammunition.

Thereupon he is forced to fly, and to hide himself in the water; but is discovered by a country fellow, and carried to *Edinburgh*, where he is beheaded *June 30.* *June 17.*

In the mean time, *James Scot* Duke of *Monmouth* lands at *Lyme* in *Dorsetshire*, with about fourscore persons: And publishes a Declaration or Manifesto against the King. *11.*

He gathers together an army of about 2000 men;

And marches to *Axminster* in *Devonshire*. *14.*

An act of attainder is passed against him. *15.*

He arrives at *Taunton* in *Somersetshire*, where his army increases considerably.

He suffers himself to be proclaimed King at *Taunton*, by the name of *James II*, and publishes three proclamations against *20.*

Ann. C. against the King, the Parliament, and *Christopher Monk Duke of Albemarle.*

21. He advances to *Bridgewater*, where he is proclaimed King.

Next he marches towards *Bristol*, but retreats back towards *Bridgewater*, upon news of the approach of the King's army, and beats one of the King's quarters at *Philip's-Norton*.

At *Frome* he hears of the Earl of *Argyle*'s defeat, which throws him into great consternation.

William III. Prince of *Orange*, offers to come in person and head King *James*'s army : But his offer is rejected by the King : And *Lewis Duras Earl of Feverham* is made General of the King's forces.

He encamps at *Sedgemore* near *Bridgewater*.

27. Several acts are passed particularly one for granting the King a supply of 400,000*l.* for his present extraordinary occasions.

July 2. The Parliament is adjourned to the 14th of *August*.

6. *James Duke of Monmouth*, attacks the King's army, and being defeated is forced to fly on foot.

8. He hides himself in a ditch, where he is found, and carried to *London*; and on the 13th, he and the Lord *Grey* are committed to the *Tower*.

He writes a letter to the King, and obtains leave to speak to him ; but the King refuses to grant him his life

15. Dr. *Thomas Tennison*, and Dr. *George Hooper*, get him to declare in writing, that the late King told him he was never married to his mother.

James Scot Duke of Monmouth is beheaded.

The King disarms the Protestants in *Ireland*; and fills the army in that Kingdom with Popish officers and soldiers.

Colonel *Richard Talbot* is employed to new-model that army.

26. *Thomas Grey Earl of Stamford*, *Charles Gerard Lord Brandon*, and *Henry Booth Lord Delamere*, are committed to the *Tower* for treason.

28. *Henry Bennet Earl of Arlington* dies.

August. The Lord Chief-Judge *George Jeffries* is sent by the King into the West of *England*, with a special commission of *Oyer and Terminer*, to try the persons concerned in the late Rebellion with the Duke of *Monmouth*; and is attended with a considerable body of troops commanded by Colonel

Ionel Kirk: They execute their commission with a barbarous cruelty. *Ann. C.*

Alicia Lisle is executed at *Winchester*, for harbouring *Sept. 2.*
John Hicks, one of the late Duke of *Monmouth's* adherents.

Francis North Baron of *Guildford*, and Lord-Keeper, dies. *5.*
He is succeeded by *Sir George Jefferies* Lord-Chancellor.

Sir Leoline Jenkins dies.

Henry Cornish Esq; is tried, and brought in guilty of *Oct. 19.*
High-treason, for the Protestant-plot in King *Charles II's* Reign.

The same day *William Ring*, *John Fernley*, and *Elizabeth Gaunt*, are also tried and condemned, for concealing and relieving some of the late Duke of *Monmouth's* confederates.

Henry Cornish is executed in *Cheapside*, and *Elizabeth Gaunt* burnt at *Tyburn*. *23.*

John Sheffield Earl of *Mulgrave*, is made Lord-Chamberlain.

The King undertakes to render himself absolute, and to establish the *Romish* Religion in *England*.

The Parliament meets again; and the King makes a *Nov. 9.* speech to both Houses, to justify the augmenting of his standing forces, and his admitting Popish officers in the army.

The Lords thank the King for his speech; but the Commons adjourn the debate, and take the speech into consideration. *12.*

They vote the King 700,000*l.*

But they present an address to him against the admitting Popish officers in the army.

To which address the King returns an angry answer.

The Commons offer a bill to indemnify the Roman-Catholic officers in the army from the penalties they had already incurred; and another bill to qualify such a number of those officers as the King should give a list of.

Henry Booth Lord *de la Mere*, and *Thomas Grey* Earl of *Stamford*, prisoners in the *Tower*, present petitions to the House of Lords. *9.* *11.*

The King prorogues the Parliament to the 10th of *February*. *20.*

Charles Gerard Lord *Brandon*, is tried for treason, and condemned, but pardoned afterwards. *26.*

Robert Spencer Earl of *Sunderland*, is made President of *Dec. 4.* the Council and Prime Minister.

Charles Bateman, Chirurgeon, is tried and condemned for High-treason, and executed at *Tyburn*, the 18th. *9.*

- Ann. C.* Colonel Richard Talbot is made Earl of Tyrconnel, and Lieutenant-General of the army in Ireland.
- 30.* Henry Hyde Earl of Clarendon is constituted Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, and goes thither.
- John 14.* John Hampden is tried for High-treason. He pleads guilty, and is condemned, but afterwards obtains a pardon. The learned Sir John Masham died this year.
- Jan. 14.* Henry Booth, Lord Delamere, is tried for high-treason, 1686. and acquitted.
- April 3.* Thomas, Earl of Stamford, is pardoned.
- Reg. 2.* The Parliament of Scotland meets; and the King recommends to them his Catholic subjects, in order to bring about the repeal of the penal laws and test. A bill is brought into that Parliament in favour of the Papists in Scotland, but does not pass; whereupon, the Parliament of Scotland is prorogued.
- Richard Talbot,* Earl of Tyrconnel, continues to fill the army in Ireland with Catholics. His violent proceedings compel several English Protestants to leave Ireland, and the English Merchants to withdraw their effects from thence.
- April.* The King, being resolved to assert and establish his pretended prerogative of dispensing with the penal Laws and Test, closets the Judges about it, and removes such of them as would not assert this dispensing power; namely, Sir Thomas Jones and Sir Job Charlton of the Common-Pleas, and William Mountague, Esq; and Sir Edward Nevil Barons of the Exchequer.
- The Judges put into their rooms, and the rest too compliant, decide, That the King has the power of dispensing with the penal laws and test.
- May 14.* Miles Prance, having an information of perjury brought against him, for his depositions about Sir Edmundbury Godfrey's murder, pleads guilty, and obtains, upon that account, a mitigation of his fine.
- The Roman Catholics make public and open profession of their Religion all over the Kingdom.
- Four Popish Bishops are consecrated in the King's Chapel, and sent to their respective Dioceses, under the title of Apostolical Vicars.
- Great numbers of Priests and Monks flock into England. All places and preferments are given to Papists, or to those who were thought popishly inclined.
- Mar. 5.* The King puts out an order (dated March 5. this year) prohibiting the inferior Clergy from preaching upon controverted

verted points in Divinity ; but soine, particularly Dr. *John Ann. C. Sharp*, Rector of *St. Giles's, London*, do not regard this *June*. order.

The Earl of *Pembroke*, and the Lords *Bellasis, Dover, and Arundel of Wardour*, all Papists, are admitted into the Privy-Council.

Thomas Cartwright, who countenanced the King's proceedings, is appointed Bishop of *Chester*, and *Samuel Parker* of *Oxford*.

A commission for ecclesiastical affairs having (in *April* this year) been erected by the King, into which several Papists were admitted, *Henry Compton*, Bishop of *London*, is cited before the Commissioners, for not suspending Dr. & 9. *John Sharp*, as the King had ordered.

The Bishop appears several times before the Commissioners, and, notwithstanding his plea, is suspended. Aug. 9, 15, 24,

Mr. *Samuel Johnson* writes an address to the English Protestants in King James's army, wherein he exhorts them, Sept. 6. not to be aiding and assisting in destroying the Protestant Religion, and overturning the Government.

He is degraded for it, set three times in the pillory, Nov. 16. whipped, and condemned to a 500 marks fine. 20, &c.

King James labours to gain Profelytes to Popery.

Robert Spencer, Earl of *Sunderland*, turns Papist :

But *Laurence* and *Henry Hyde*, Earls of *Rochedale* and *Clarendon*, refusing to embrace Popery, are both turned out of their places.

Roger Palmer, Earl of *Castlemain*, is sent Ambassador to Pope *Innocent XI*, who gives that Ambassador but a cold reception.

The King removes Protestants out of all their employment, and bestows them upon Roman Catholics.

The Parliament which was to meet the 15th of February, 1686-7. is prorogued till April 28. Jan. 7.

Richard Talbot, Earl of *Tyrconnel*, is appointed Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*. Reg. 3.

The King sends into *Scotland* a declaration for liberty of conscience ; which the Council of that Kingdom causes to be published.

One of the same nature is published in *England*, by the King's order ; for which many of the Dissenters return April 4. him thanks in fulsome addresses.

However, the bulk of the Protestants do not fall into the snares laid for them by the King, in order to set them

Ann. C. at variance, but, on the contrary, unite together for their common interest.

Feb. 9, *24.* *Nathaniel Crew*, Bishop of Durham, *Thomas Barlow*, of Lincoln, *Thomas Cartwright*, of Chester, *Thomas Wood*, of Lichfield and Coventry, *Thomas Watson*, of St. Davids, and *Samuel Parker*, of Oxford, countenance the King's arbitrary and illegal proceedings, and prevail upon some of their Clergy to send up addresses of thanks.

The King sends two mandates to the University of Cambridge, to admit *Alban Francis*, a Benedictine Monk, Master of Arts, without taking the oaths; but the University refuses to comply, because it was contrary to their statutes.

However, Dr. *Peachell*, Vice-Chancellor of that University, is deprived of his office and preferments, and suspended, *May 7.*

The King tries to get *Anthony Farmer* chosen President of *Magdalen College* in *Oxford*.

April 15, The Fellows of that College elect Dr. *John Hough*, notwithstanding the King's mandate in behalf of *Farmer*.

June 6. *16.* They are cited to appear before the Ecclesiastical Commissioners. Dr. *Hough* is turned out from being President, and the Vice-President, with another of the Fellows, are suspended.

From June, to vember. *Farmer* insists no longer on his mandate to *Farmer*, and grants a second in behalf of *Samuel Parker*, the latter Bishop of Oxford. The Fellows refuse likewise to comply with this mandate. The King appoints Commissioners to visit the Colleges, of which most of the Fellows are expelled, and ill used, and Roman Catholics are put in their places.

April. The King continues to promote the Popish Religion, by endeavouring to gain Profelytes, and by conferring all offices on Papists.

16. George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, dies,

The Parliament, that was to meet the 28th of April, is prorogued to the 22d of November.

June 11. A flattering address is presented to the King from several Members of the Middle-Temple, about the Toleration, and his Prerogatives.

July 2. The Parliament is dissolved.

3. Ferdinand Dadda, the Pope's Nuncio, makes his public entry.

The King orders *Quo Warranto's* to be brought against several Corporations.

He uses his utmost endeavours to get a new Parliament at *Ann. C.*
his devotion, and closets people for that purpose.

In order to influence the elections of Parliament-men, *Augt.*
he takes a progress into several parts of the Kingdom. *Septemb.*

He sounds the inclinations of the Prince and Princess of *October.*
Orange, about repealing the test and penal laws against the *Novemb.*
Papists: Some letters pass between *James Steuart* and Pen-
sionary *Fagel* upon that subject.

Father *Edward Petre* the King's Confessor, and a Jesuit, *11.*
is sworn of the King's Privy-Council.

King *James* acts with great beneficence and generosity
towards the *French Protestant Refugees*.

The ingenious Sir *William Petty* died this year.

The King issues out a proclamation, to give notice of 1687-8.
the Queen's being with child, and orders a Thanksgiving *Jan. 2.*
for it; but many people questioned, whether it was not a
cheat. However, many congratulatory addresses are pre-
sented to him upon that occasion.

The Jesuits give out, That the Queen would certainly
be brought to bed of a son, and that her conception was mi-
raculous.

King *James* sends to demand the six *English* and *Scotch* *17.*
regiments that were in the service of the *Dutch*; but the
States excuse themselves from sending them.

The King restrains the printing of books in defence of *Reg. 4.*
the Reformed Religion. *Feb. 10.*

He gives out commissions for raising new troops, and for
augmenting his fleet.

The King having over and over demanded in vain the
six regiments that were in the service of the *Dutch*, issues
out a proclamation, commanding the return of all his sub-
jects that were in the service of the *States-General*: About
forty of them comply with that order.

He puts out another proclamation forbidding his subjects *Mar. 2.*
to list themselves in the service of any foreign Prince.

There comes out a new declaration for liberty of con- *1688.*
science; which the King orders the Bishops to cause to be *Apr. 27.*
read in all Churches. *May 4.*

Some of the Bishops meet, and debate about the King's
order; and seven of them present a petition to the King,
desiring to be excused from sending it about to the Clergy. *May 18.*

His Majesty, being highly offended at that petition, causes
the seven Bishops to be summoned before the Council.

They make their appearance, and are sent to the *Tower*. *June 8.*

The Queen is reported to be brought to bed of a Prince, *10.*
but

Ann. C. but great suspicions arise about that matter, and it was so managed as to give but too much room for suspicions.

Some believe, that the Queen was not with child, and that there was a pretended heir of the Crown put upon the Nation; others imagine, that she was really with child, but that having miscarried, she supposed a child, who happening to die, as well as a second, she took a third, and made it pass for her own; others pretend that she was actually with child, and that the child was her own.

The King sends for troops from *Ireland*, and places abundance of *Irish* and *Pepish* officers in the *English* regiments.

The City of *Carlisle* sends up a flattering address to his Majesty.

15. The seven Bishops appear at the Court of *King's-Bench*, and, where offering their plea, they obtain a delay of 14 days, and are admitted to bail.

June 29, They appear the second time, and, after a long trial, are acquitted.

Great rejoicings are made upon that occasion at *London*, in the army, and all over the Kingdom.

The Earl of *Lichfield*'s regiment refuses to contribute to the abrogating of the penal laws and test, and almost all the officers and soldiers lay down their arms.

The King cashiering many Protestant officers and soldiers, and puts *Irish* Papists in their room; but, not without meeting with opposition from this quarter, as well as from his fleet, where he caused mass to be said.

Nathaniel Crew, Bishop of *Durham*, *Thomas Cartwright*, of *Chester*, and *Thomas Sprat*, of *Rochester*, cause the declaration for liberty of conscience to be read in their Dioceses.

Nine Ministers in *Chester* Diocese send an address to the King upon that occasion.

July 12. The Ecclesiastical Commission sends orders to all Chancellors, &c. to enquire in what Churches the declaration was read, and in which not; but they are not much minded.

Thomas Sprat, Bishop of *Rochester*, withdraws from the Ecclesiastical Commission, and gives his reasons for it in a letter to his Colleagues.

Most persons depart from the absurd doctrine of Passive Obedience and Non-resistance; and, both Churchmen and Presbyterians, Tories and Whigs, join, in order to oppose

pose the King's designs, and form a strict union for their *Am. C.* common security.

The leading men of both parties take the resolution of inviting over *William III*, Prince of *Orange*.

Several of the English Nobility and Gentry repair to him, and apply to the *States-General*, who return them a favourable answer.

The Prince of *Orange* prepares for his expedition into *England*, with a good body of troops.

King James gives no heed to the informations that were sent him from *France*, of the Prince's preparations.

However, he orders the Marquis of *Albyville*, his Am- Aug. 23.
bassador, to demand of the *States*, what they meant by their warlike preparations ; but they return no satisfactory answer.

He declares in Council, that he intended to call a Parliament. 24.

France offers him a fleet, and an army of 30,000 men ; but the Earl of *Sunderland* prevents that offer from being accepted. 25.

King James enters into a private league with that Court, and uses some means to put himself in a posture of defence.

He disowns the memorial presented, on the 9th of Sep-
tember, to the *States*, by Count *d'Avaux*, in which they were threatened with an invasion from *France*.

Moreover, his Majesty publishes a proclamation, in Sept. 21.
which he promises to endeavour a legal establishment of an universal liberty of conscience, inviolably to preserve the Church of *England*, and to be willing the Roman Catholics should remain incapable to be Members of the House of Commons.

He rejects a proposal made to him by Monsieur *Barillon*, to desire *Lewis XIV.* to carry the war into *Holland*.

Lewis Duras, Earl of *Feverham*, is appointed General of *King James*'s army.

The Prince of *Orange* having discovered his designs, *King James* is in a great consternation, and consults the Bishops, to know what course he should take. They give him excellent advice.

He issues out a proclamation, to give notice of the ap- 28.
proaching invasion.

The Prince of *Orange* publishes a declaration, or mani- Oct. 1.
festo.

The *States-General* publish a resolution, containing the

Ann. C. reasons that had obliged them to assist the Prince of *Orange* with ships, men, and ammunition.

2. The King takes off the suspension of *Henry Compton*, Bishop of *London*, appoints a new Lord-Mayor, and promises to restore the Charter of that City.

He publishes a general pardon, with some exceptions.

Orders his Ambassador at the *Hague* to assure the *States*, that there was no treaty of league between *England* and *France*.

3. The Bishops present to the King the result of their conferences, upon the points wherein his Majesty had desired their advice.

In pursuance of them, the King gives orders,

5. For dissolving the commission for causes ecclesiastical.

6. For restoring the Charter, &c. of *London*, which was accordingly done, this day.

10. For inquiring into the abuses committed in the late regulations of the Corporations.

12. For reinstating the President and Fellows of *Magdalen College*.

17. He publishes a proclamation, for restoring Corporations to their antient charters, liberties, &c.

And orders all the Popish Chapels to be shut up.

But his unsteady proceedings, with regard to *Magdalen College*, give rise to fresh suspicions.

He augments the number of his forces, and takes some precautions against the threatened invasion.

15. The pretended Prince of *Wales* is baptized, and named *James-Francis-Edward*.

A pamphlet is published in *Holland* about the birth of that Prince, entitled, *A Memorial of the English Protestants*, presented to their Highnesses the Prince and Princess of *Orange*.

19. The Prince of *Orange* puts to sea with his fleet : It is dispersed by a tempest.

22. King *James*, upon occasion of the aforesaid memorial, assembles an extraordinary Council to prove the birth of the Prince of *Wales* : Several witnesses are examined about that matter, and their depositions enrolled in *Chancery*.

28. *Robert Spencer*, Earl of *Sunderland*, is removed from his places of President of the Council, and Secretary of State, and *Richard Grahme*, Lord Viscount *Preston*, is made Secretary in his room.

Upon a false rumour of the great damages sustained by the *Dutch* fleet, King *James* revokes some of his late acts of grace.

The

The Prince of *Orange* alledging in his declaration, That *Ann. C.*
he was invited by divers of the Lords, both Spiritual and
Temporal, the King calls upon the Bishops to express, un-
der their hands, an abhorrence of the invasion ; but they
excuse themselves.

The King publishes that declaration, with animadver-
sions.

The Prince of *Orange* writes to King *James*'s army, and
Admiral *Arthur Herbert* to the fleet, to dissuade them
from adhering to King *James*.

The fleet was ill-affected to the King, and would not
have fought heartily against the Prince of *Orange*.

King *James* grants particular pardons to several persons.

William, Prince of *Orange*, puts to sea again.

Nov. 1.

He stops between *Dover* and *Calais*, and holds there a
Council of war.

3.

He arrives at *Torbay*, where he lands his forces, being
about 15,000 men.

5.

From thence he marches towards *Exeter*.

6.

King *James* orders his army to rendezvous on *Salisbury-*
Plane.

He discovers some resolution, upon the news of the
Prince of *Orange*'s landing, and publicly declares, That
he would look upon all those as his enemies, who should
advise him to treat with that Prince.

9.

The Prince arrives at *Exeter*, and stays there nine days,
before any person of note comes in to him.

19.

On the 10th day, considerable numbers of the Gentry
of the adjacent parts wait upon him, and draw up an
Affociation, which is signed in several places of the King-
dom, by multitudes of people.

The Prince of *Orange* marches towards *Salisbury*.

Great numbers desert in the King's army.

Edward Hyde, Lord Viscount *Cornbury*, goes over to the
Prince of *Orange*, and carries with him some regiments.

Several Lords appear in arms in divers places, and de-
clare for the Prince.

17.

A petition is presented to the King by several Lords,
both Spiritual and Temporal, in *London*, to desire him to
call a free Parliament.

He is afraid of being delivered up to the Prince of
Orange, if he should put himself at the head of his army.

17.

At length, he is advised to go to the army at *Salisbury* ;
which he doth, leaving in *London* a Council consisting
mostly of Papists.

King

Ann. C. King James arrives at *Salisbury*: The day after his coming thither, he is taken with a bleeding at the nose, which returns upon him the next day.

19. 20. 21. Most of the chief officers of his army declare to him, that they could not in conscience fight against the Prince of *Orange*.

Henry Fitz-Roy, Duke of *Grafton*, Colonel *Berkley*, and other considerable officers desert him.

Particularly, *John*, Lord *Churchill* (afterwards Duke of *Marlborough*) and one of the King's Favourites, forsakes him, and writes a letter to him to excuse his defection.

George, Prince of *Denmark*, leaves him also, and goes over to the Prince.

The Prince of *Orange* comes to *Sherborn* in *Dorsetshire*.

He makes a public entry into *Salisbury*.

John Granville, Earl of *Bath*, secures *Plymouth* for the Prince of *Orange*; and the Dutch fleet is conveyed into that safe port.

Charles Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and Sir *John Guise*, seize *Bristol* for the Prince.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, makes himself master of *York*; and Colonel *Copley* surprizes *Hull*.

Henry Booth, Lord *Delamere*, doth also good service in the North.

William Cavendish, Earl of *Devonshire*, with several other Lords and Gentlemen, assembled at *Derby*, declare for a free Parliament.

The City and County of *York*, the Town of *Berwick*, and the Nobility, and other inhabitants of *Nottinghamshire*, follow their example.

Other declarations are published in favour of the Prince.

Five Commissioners from *Scotland* come to him to demand a free Parliament in that Kingdom.

22. The King publishes a proclamation, promising a free pardon to all his subjects, who had taken up arms, and joined with the Prince of *Orange*, provided they quitted him within 20 days.

23. *Anne*, Princess of *Denmark*, leaves the King, her Father, and goes to Prince *George*, her Husband: She writes a letter to the Queen, to justify her conduct.

24. King James returns to *London*; and finding himself forsaken by all, assembles the few Protestant Lords, Spiritual and Temporal, that were then in *London*, to assist him with their advice.

25. In pursuance of it, he orders the Lord-Chancellor, to issue

issue out writs for summoning a Parliament to meet the *Ann. C.*
15th of *January* next.

Two days after, he puts out a proclamation for the speedy calling of a Parliament.

In the mean time, a declaration is published under the name of the Prince of *Orange*, but without his knowledge, relating to the Papists, which puts them into a great consternation.

The King sends the Marquis of *Halifax*, the Earl of *Nottingham*, and the Lord *Godolphin*, to the Prince then at *Ambresbury*, to treat with him.

The Prince comes to *Salisbury*: On the 7th to *Hungerford*, and, the next day, to *Lidcot*.

The King finds the Prince's proposals very reasonable and moderate, and calls a Council of the Lords that were in town, to deliberate about them; but puts off the passing his final judgment upon them till the next day.

In the mean while the counsels of his Popish friends and of the Queen prevail upon him; and the Queen being resolved to withdraw out of the Kingdom, he promises to follow her into *France*.

Queen *Maria of Modena* departs from *London*, and withdraws into *France*, to *Versailles*.

The King departs also from *Whitchall* in disguise, in order to fly out of the Kingdom, having first ordered the broad Seal to be thrown into the *Thames*.

The Lords in and about *London*, and the Magistrates of that City, signify to the Prince their intentions of assisting him, with their utmost endeavours, in obtaining such a Parliament, wherein our laws, liberties, and properties may be secured, &c.

The Common-Council of *London* invites the Prince of *Orange* to come into the City.

The *London* mob pulls down the Mass-houses.

George Jeffreys, Lord Chancellor, and Baron of *Wem*, is apprehended as he was preparing to go out of the Kingdom; and being roughly handled by the populace is carried to the *Tower*, where he dies, shortly after.

Lewis Duras, Earl of *Feveringham*, disbands the army by the King's order; of which there were then but 4000 men together, at *Uxbridge*.

Some outrages committed by the *Irish* disbanded soldiers, cause in *London* a pannic fright, which spreads all over the Kingdom.

The Prince of *Orange*, and the Peers and Privy-Council

28.

4.

10.

10.

11.

12.

13.

Ann. C. cil, order the King's disbanded forces to repair to their several regiments, for fear they should commit any disorder.

King James having embarked on board a smack, and been forced to put into *East-Swale* in the Isle of *Shepey*, is there seized by some sailors, and carried to *Feverham*; whither some Lords are sent to intreat his return to *Whitehall*.

15. The Prince comes from *Henley* to *Windfor*, and sends Mr. *Zuylestein* to desire the King to stay at *Rochester*; but *Zuylestein* going one way, and the King another;

16. The latter returns to *London*, where he is received with great acclamations; and issues out an order to forbid the plundering of Papists houses.

The Earl of *Feverham* being sent by the King to invite the Prince of *Orange* to *St. James's*, is committed to *Windfor Castle*.

17. The Prince of *Orange*'s guards take possession of *St. James's* and *Whitehall*.

He sends to desire the King to remove to *Ham*, a house belonging to the Duchess of *Lauderdale*.

The King obtains the permission to retire to *Rochester*, and accordingly goes in the night to *Gravesend*.

18. The Prince of *Orange* arrives at *St. James's*; and, two days after, a Committee of the Common-Council of *London* congratulate him, upon that occasion.

The *London* mob rifies the houses of the Papists, and the Spanish Ambassador's, &c.

21. The Prince of *Orange* assembles the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in *London*, to consider of the best methods for calling a free Parliament.

These Lords return him thanks for his coming over.

All the Bishops (except that of *London*) refuse to sign the Association.

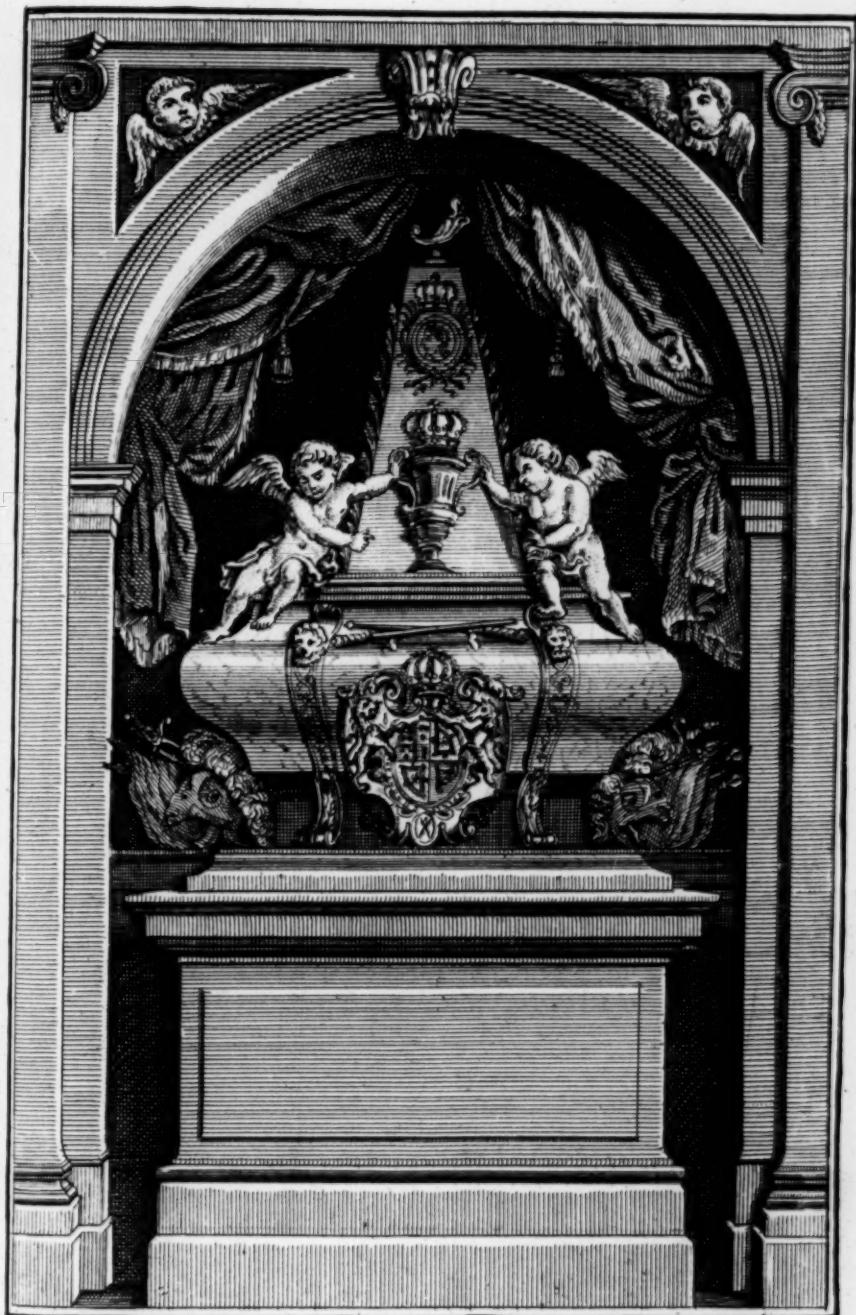
23. King *James II.* embarks at *Dover*, and goes over into *France*.

He leaves a paper behind him, upon a table at *Rochester*.

I N T E R R E G N U M.

1688. Dec. 25. **T**HE Lords take upon themselves the Administration of the Government.

They desire the Prince of *Orange* to take upon him the administration of public affairs both civil and military, and the disposal of the public revenue, and to take care of *Ireland*,



*The Monument of K.JAMES II Erected in y' Chappel
of the Scotch College at Paris in the Year 1703.*

J. Mynde sc.

Bo

lan

him

dor

tha

wi

mo

up

ve

ba

in

to

ve

an

to

re

fl

an

th

e

fo

f

a

th

o

land, till the meeting of the Convention. They desire *Ann. C.* him, moreover, to call a Convention.

The Papists are ordered to depart ten miles from *London.*

William III, Prince of *Orange*, summons the Members that had served in any of the Parliaments of King *Charles II*, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and fifty of the Common-Council of *London*, and asks their advice. 26.

They concur with the Lords, in desiring him to take upon him the administration of affairs, and to call a Convention for the 22d of *January*.

The Prince sends orders to Mr. *Barillon* the French Ambassador to depart the Kingdom in 24 hours.

William Prince of Orange receives the Sacrament according to the form appointed by the Church of *England*. 30.

He publishes a declaration authorizing all Persons in office to act in their respective places, till the meeting of the Convention. 31.

His Highness pays a visit to *Catharine Queen-Dowager*, and orders her Chamberlain *Lewis Duras Earl of Feverham* to be set at liberty.

The Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, *James Earl of Perth*, 1688-9. resigns the Great-Seal, and retires from *Edinburgh*. January.

The *Scottish* Bishops and Episcopal Clergy are forced to fly, and the Presbyterians get the upper-hand in *Scotland*.

The Prince of *Orange* assembles all the *Scotch* Nobility and Gentry that were in *London*, and asks their advice.

They desire him to take upon him the administration of the Government of *Scotland*, and to call a general meeting of the *States* for the 14th of *March*.

A declaration is published by him, against quartering soldiers on private Houses.

The Prince writes a letter to *Richard Talbot, Earl of Tyrconnel*, Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*, to summon him to submit to the present administration in *England*.

His Highness borrows 200,000*l.* of the City of *London*, and discharges the arrears due to the *English* forces. 10.

After which, he makes a reform in the army, and fills it with Protestants, having turned out both Popish officers and soldiers.

William Sancroft, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and seven or eight Bishops, pay their compliments to the Prince, and subscribe the Association.

About ninety Dissenting Ministers wait also upon the Prince, who gives them a favourable answer.

The

Ann. C. The elections for a Convention are carried on with the utmost liberty.

22. The Convention meets ; and the Prince writes a letter to them. They appoint a day to take into consideration the state of the Nation.

Both Houses acknowledge in an address, That the preservation of the Kingdom was, next under God, owing to his Highness ; they approve of his administration, and desire him to continue it.

They appoint a day of Thanksgiving, on *January 13*, in *London* and *Westminster*, and ten miles round, and *February 14*, throughout the whole Kingdom ; and the Lords order, that there should be a particular Prayer drawn up for the Prince of *Orange*.

King *James* sends letters to the Privy-Council, and to the Convention, who take no notice of them.

28. After having considered the state of the Nation, they resolve, That King *James II.* having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of this Kingdom, by breaking the original contract between King and People, and by the advice of Jesuits and other wicked persons, having violated the fundamental laws, and having withdrawn himself out of this Kingdom, hath abdicated the Government, and that the Throne is thereby vacant.

The next day, they vote, That it hath been found by experience, to be inconsistent with this Protestant Kingdom, to be governed by a Popish Prince.

29. The House of Lords takes into consideration the vote of the House of Commons ; and some of them propose a Regency, but that is rejected.

30. The Lords examine this question, Whether or no there is an original contract between King and People ? It is carried in the affirmative.

31. They reject the word Abdicated, and agree upon that of Deserted.

Next, they examine the word Vacant, and put this question, Whether, King *James* having broken the original contract between him and his people, and deserted the Government, the Throne was thereby vacant ? Which is carried in the negative. But forty Lords protest against it.

Feb. 1. The Proposal of placing the Prince and Princess of *Orange* upon the Throne is rejected by the Lords.

The Prince stops a petition from being presented to the Lords, in which they were desired to settle the Prince of *Orange* and his Royal Consort the Princess, in the Throne.

The

The Lords communicate to the Commons two amendments they had made to their vote. *Ann. C.*

The Commons disagree to those amendments; whereupon, a conference passes between the two Houses about that matter; but the Commons still persist in disagreeing with those amendments.

A second free conference is held between them, which ends in the Lords concurring with the Commons vote, That King *James* had abdicated the Government, and that the Throne was thereby vacant.

Debates pass between the two Houses about the manner of filling the vacant Throne.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, sends a messenger to the Princess of *Orange*, to propose to her, Whether she would accept of the Crown alone? But she rejects that offer.

Both houses vote severally, that the Prince and Princess of *Orange* should be King and Queen of *England*, but that the sole and full regal power should be in the Prince only, in the name of both.

Two oaths are appointed instead of those of Allegiance and Supremacy.

Mary Princess of *Orange* arrives at *London*.

Both Houses of the Convention makes a solemn offer of the Crown to the Prince and Princess, after the reading of a declaration.

William III. Prince of *Orange* accepts the Crown for himself, and for his Consort the Princess *Mary*.

They are proclaimed King and Queen, by the name of *William and Mary*.

King James II. had several children, by his first wife, *Anne*, eldest daughter of *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*; namely, four sons, and four daughters: But none of them arrived to any maturity, except *Mary* and *Anne*, afterwards Queens of *England*. By his second wife, *Maria of Este*, daughter of *Alfonso of Este*, Duke of *Modena*, he had two sons, and four daughters.

His natural issue was as follows:

1. By Mrs. *Arabella Churchill*, sister of *John Duke of Marlborough*, afterwards married to Colonel *Godfrey*, he had (1.) *James Fitz-James*, Grandee of *Spain*, Mareschal of *France*, Knight of the *Golden Fleece*, commonly called Duke of *Berwick*: Outlawed in 1695. (2.) *Henry Fitz-James*, commonly called the *Grand-Prior*, born 1673: Outlawed

2.

4.

7.

12.

13.

Outlawed in 1695. Lieutenant-General and Admiral of the French Gallies. He died in France, December 7, 1702. (3.) *Henrietta*, born 1670, who married *Henry Lord Waldgrave*, 1683. Father of *James* the present Lord *Waldgrave*, born in 1684.

2. By Mrs. *Catharine Sedley*, daughter of Sir *Charles Sedley*, Baronet, created Baroness of *Darlington*, and Countess of *Dorchester*, afterwards married to Sir *David Collier*, the late Earl of *Portmore*, he had *Catharine Darnly*, late Duchess of *Buckingham*, born 1681. She married (1.) *James Annesley*, Earl of *Anglesey*, in October 1699. By whom she had *Catharine Annesley*, January 7, 1701, who married *William Phips*, Esq; son of Sir *Constantine Phips*. (2.) *John Sheffield*, Duke of *Buckinghamshire* and *Normandy*, March 1, 1705. By whom she had *Edmund*, the late Duke of *Buckinghamshire*, born January 11, 1716.

The Character of King JAMES II.

Burnet.

James II. was a Prince that seemed made for greater things, than will be found in the course of his life, more particularly of his Reign: He was esteemed in the former parts of his life, a man of great courage, as he was quite through it a man of great application to business: He had no vivacity of thought, invention, or expression: But he had a good judgment, where his religion and his education gave him not a bias, which it did very often: He was bred with strange notions of the obedience due to Princes, and came to take up as strange ones, of the submission due to Priests: He was naturally a man of truth, fidelity, and justice: But his Religion was so infused in him, and he was so managed in it by his Priests, that the principles, which nature had laid in him, had little power over him, when the concerns of his Church stood in the way: He was a gentle master, and was very easy to all who came near him: Yet he was not so apt to pardon, as one ought to be, that is the Vicegerent of that God, who is slow to anger, and ready to forgive: He had no personal vices but of one sort: He was still wandering from one amour to another, yet he had a real sense of sin, and was ashamed of it: But Priests know how to engage Princes more intirely into their interests, by making them compound for their sins, by a great zeal for Holy Church, as they call it. In a word, if it had not been for his Popery, he would have been, if not a great, yet a good Prince. *Burnet* says, that, by what he once

once knew of him, and by what he saw him afterwards carried to, he grew more confirmed in the very bad opinion, which he was always apt to have, of the intrigues of the Popish Clergy, and of the Confessors of Kings. King James was undone by them, and was their Martyr, so that they ought to bear the chief load of all the errors of his inglorious reign, and of its fatal catastrophe. As he was dying, he said nothing concerning the legitimacy of his son, on which some made severe remarks; while others thought, that, having spoke so often of it before, he might not reflect on the fitness of saying any thing concerning it in his last extremity. He recommended to him firmness in his Religion, and justice in his Government, if ever he should come to reign. He said, that, by his practice, he recommended Christian forgiveness to him, for he heartily forgave both the Prince of Orange, and the Emperor. The naming of the Emperor, it was believed, had been suggested to him by the French, in order to render the Emperor odious to all those of his Religion.

A Description of the Monument of King JAMES II.

This Monument was erected in the chapel of the Scotch College at Paris, in the year 1703. The principal parts of it are an obelisk, in the front of which is an urn crowned with an Imperial Crown, and supported by two Angels. Under it upon the Base are the Royal Arms of England with trophies on each side. Near the top is that Prince's head in Basso Relievo within a circular verge, adorned with palms, and crowned with an Imperial Crown. The materials are white and veined marble.

An account of the MONEY coined in this Reign.

By an Indenture in the first of James II, a pound weight of Gold, twenty-two carats fine, and two carats alloy, was coined into 44*l.* 10*s.* by tale, namely, into Ten Shillings, Twenty Shillings, Forty Shillings, and Five Pounds, pieces; and a pound weight of Silver of the old Standard into 62 Shillings by tale, namely, into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Groats, Two-pences, and Pence; which standard both for Gold and Silver hath continued ever since.

The Gold Coins have on one side the King's Head laureat, IACOBVS II. DEI. GRATIA. Reverse MAG. BR. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. the arms single in separate shields crowned, with the scepters, but nothing in the center. Some have an elephant under the King's head, being of African Gold. (Fig.) The Five-pound-piece is like the Guinea, but has DECVS, &c. upon the rim. — Of the Silver Monies, the Crown has the King's head laureat; the arms on the reverse in four separate shields crowned; the



inscription as on the Gold Coins; and upon the rim DECVS. ET. TVTAMEN, &c. the Half-Crown is the same, and the Shilling and Six-pence the like, except the inscription upon the rim. The lesser pieces, from the Groat to the Penny, have as many initial letters of his name crowned, as they contain Pence, but the same inscription as the Crown-piece. The Tin-farthing and Half-penny have the King's Head, IACOBUS. SECUNDVS. Reverse Britannia, BRITANNIA, upon the rim 1685. NVM-MORVM FAMVLVS.

The NOBILITY, created by King JAMES II, was as follows:

Ann. C.

- 1685. Henry Jermyn, Baron of Dover.
- 13 May. John Churchill (Baron of Aymouth in Scotland) Baron Churchill of Sandridge.
- 14. George Jeffreys, Baron of Wem.
- 1685-6. Catharine Sidney, Baroness of Darlington, and Countess of Dorchester.
- 20 Jan. James Waldegrave, Baron of Cheuton.
- 1686-7. James Fitz-James, Baron Bosworth, Earl of Tinmouth, and Duke of Berwick.

William

*William Herbert, Earl of Powis, — Viscount Montgo-^{24.}
mery, and Marquis of Powis.*

*Francis Ratcliffe, Baron of Tindale, Viscount Ratcliffe^{1687-8.}
and Langley, and Earl of Derwentwater.* ^{7 Mar.}

*Mary Stafford (widow of William Howard, Baron and^{5 Octob.}
Viscount Stafford) Baroness and Countess of Stafford.*

Henry-Stafford Howard, her son, Earl of Stafford.

Edward Griffin, Baron Griffin, of Braybrook.

^{30 Nov.}

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King

J A M E S II.

Henry Howard, Duke of Norfolk.

Henry Mordaunt, Earl of Peterborough.

Laurence Hyde, Earl of Rochester.

Louis de Duras, Earl of Fetherstonha.

Robert Spencer, Earl of Sunderland.

Baronets created by King J A M E S II.

889 Sir John Sudbury of Eldon in Durham, Kt. June 25,
1685. ex.

890 Paul Jenkinson of Walton in Derbyshire, Esq; De-
cember 17. ex.

891 George Davies, Consul and Agent at Naples, Janu-
ary 11. ex.

892 Nicholas Sherborne of Stonyhurst in Lancashire, Esq;
February 4.

893 Robert Guldeford of Hempsted-Place in Kent, Esq;
— 4.

894 Charles Bloys of Grundsburgh in Suffolk, Esq; April
15, 1686.

895 Sir William Compton of Harpley in Gloucestershire,
Kt. May 6.

896 Sir Robert Charleton of Ludford in Herefordshire,
Kt. — 12.

897 Cornelius Speelman of the United Provinces, Septem-
ber 9. ex.

898 Sir William Humble of Kensington, Kt. March 17. ex.

899 John Duck of Hafwell on the Hill in Durham, Esq;
--- 19. ex.

900 James-Chapman Fuller of the Inner-Temple, Esq;
August 1, 1687. ex.

901 William Pinfent of Erthfort in Wiltshire, Esq; Sep-
tember 13.

- 902 William Stych of Newbury in Essex, Esq; October 8.
ex.
- 903 Wilfred Lawson of Isell in Cumberland, Esq; Mar. 31.
1688.
- 904 Sir William Williams of Gray's-Inn, Kt. July 6.
- 905 Sir Henry Ashurst of Waterstoke in Oxfordshire, Kt.
--- 21.
- 906 Sir Thomas Fitch of Eltham in Kent, Kt. Sept. 7.
- 907 John Morden of Blackheath, Esq; --- 20. ex.
- 908 John Narborough of Knolton in Kent, Esq; No-
vember 5. ex.

A LIST

A LIST of the Peers daily present in the Convention, from January 22, to February 13, 1688-9.

N. B. This Mark—denotes Present and Assents,
D. Dissents, M. Managers, A. Absent.

Lords and their Qualities.	January.					February.				
	22	29	31	4	6	8	9	11	12	13
Abington, Earl					D	A				
Ailesbury, Earl				M	M.D					A
Anglesey, Earl	A	A	A		A	A	A	A	A	A
Arundel, of Tr. Lord		A			D		A	A	A	A
Astley, Lord		A	A	A		A				A
Bath, Earl	A	A	A							A
Bath, and Wells, Bishop					D					A
Beaufort, Duke		A	A		D	A	A	A	A	A
Bedford, Earl		D	D							A
Berkley, Earl		D	D	D		A				A
Berkley, of Str. Lord										A
Bridgewater, Earl		D	D					M		
Bristol, Earl			D			A				
Bristol, Bishop					D					
Brook, Lord	A			D		A				
Bullingbrook, Earl	A	D	D			A				A
Burlington, Earl				A	A	A				A
Byron, Lord	A	D	D							
Carlisle, Earl	A	A			A	A	A			A
Carnarvon, Earl										
Carteret, Lord		D	D				A	A	A	
Chamberlain (L. G.) Earl					A					A
Chandois, Lord					D	A				A
Chesterfield, Earl		M	M							A
Chichester, Bishop				D		A	A			A
Churchill, Lord	A									A
Clare, Earl	A		D			A				A
Clarendon, Earl		M	M.D					A	A	

Colepeper,

Lords and their Qualities.	January.						February.				
	22	29	31	4	6	8	9	11	12	13	
<i>Colpeper</i> , Lord.	A	A	D	L							
<i>Cornwallis</i> , Lord			D	D							A
<i>Coventry</i> , Lord	A							A			A
<i>Craven</i> , Earl				D							
<i>Crew</i> , Lord			A								A
<i>Danby</i> , Earl											A
<i>Dartmouth</i> , Lord				D	D		A				A
<i>De-la-mere</i> , Lord					D			M	A		
<i>De-la-warr</i> , Lord					D				A		
<i>Derby</i> , Earl			D	D							A
<i>Devon</i> , Earl			D	D							
<i>Dorset</i> , Earl			D								A
<i>Durham</i> , Bishop	A	A	A	A					A		
<i>Ely</i> , Bishop			M	M.D.							A
<i>Eure</i> , Lord			D	D					A		
<i>Exeter</i> , Earl			M	D		A		A	A		
<i>Franconberg</i> , Viscount			M	M							A
<i>Ferrers</i> , Lord					A	A	A	A	A		
<i>Feveringham</i> , Earl				D		A	A	A			
<i>Glocester</i> , Bishop				D							A
<i>Godolphin</i> , Lord											
<i>Grafton</i> , Duke	A			D			A				A
<i>Grey, de Ru.</i> Lord			D	D							
<i>Grey, de W.</i> Lord			D								A
<i>Griffin</i> , Lord				D							A
<i>Hallifax</i> , Marquis			D	D							
<i>Hatton</i> , Viscount	A			A		A					A
<i>Herbert, of Ch.</i> Lord			D	D							
<i>Howard, of Escr.</i> Lord	A										A
<i>Huntington</i> , Earl			A								
<i>Jermin</i> , Lord			A		D		A				A
<i>Kent</i> , Earl											
<i>Kingston</i> , Earl			D	D					M		
<i>Landaff</i> , Bishop				D							A
<i>Lee</i> , Lord	A			D							A
<i>Lexington</i> , Lord	A	A	A								A
<i>Lincoln</i> , Earl	A	A	A	A		A	A	A	A		A
<i>Lincoln</i> , Bishop			M	D							A
<i>Litchfield</i> , Earl				D		A		A	A		
<i>London</i> , Bishop									M	A	

Lords and their Qualities.	January.				February.					
	22	29	31	4	6	8	9	11	12	13
Lovelace, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	-	-
Lucas, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Lumley, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	-	-
Macclesfield, Earl	-	-	D	-	-	-	M	-	-	-
Manchester, Earl	-	-	D	D	-	-	A	-	A	-
Maynard, Lord	-	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	-	-
Mordaunt, Viscount	-	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Morley, Lord	A	A	A	-	-	-	-	-	A	-
Montague, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	M	-	A	-
Newport, Viscount	-	-	M	-	-	-	M	-	A	-
Norfolk, Duke	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
North and Grey, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	-	-
Northampton, Earl	-	-	-	-	-	-	M	-	A	-
Northumberland, Duke	-	-	-	-	D	A	A	A	A	-
Norwich, Bishop	-	-	-	-	D	-	-	-	A	-
Nottingham, Earl	-	-	M	M.D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Ormond, Duke	-	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Oxford, Earl	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	-	A	-
Oxford, Bishop	-	A	A	A	-	A	A	A	A	-
Padgett, Lord	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
Pembroke, Earl	-	-	M	M.D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Peterborough, Bishop	-	-	M	M.D	-	-	A	A	A	-
Radnor, Earl	A	-	D	D	-	-	A	A	A	-
Rivers, Earl	-	-	D	D	-	-	M	-	-	-
Rochester, Earl	-	-	M	M.D	-	A	A	A	A	-
Rochester, Bishop	-	-	M	M.D	-	A	A	A	A	-
Rutland, Earl	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
St. Asaph, Bishop	-	A	A	-	-	-	A	-	A	-
St. David, Bishop	-	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Scarsdale, Earl	-	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Shrewsbury, Earl	-	-	D	-	-	-	-	-	A	-
Somerset, Duke	A	-	M	M.D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Southampton, Duke	A	-	A	-	A	A	A	A	A	-
Stamford, Earl	-	-	D	D	-	-	M	-	-	-
Suffolk, Earl	A	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Sussex, Earl	-	-	D	D	-	-	-	-	A	-
Thanet, Earl	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	A	-
Vaughan, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	M	A	-	-
Ward, Lord	-	-	D	D	-	-	M	A	-	-
Westmoreland, Earl	-	-	M	M	-	-	-	-	A	-

Weymouth,

Lords and their Qualities.	January.					February.				
	22	29	31	4	6	8	9	11	12	13
Weymouth, Viscount					A					
Wharton, Lord										
Winchelsea, Earl		D	D							A
Winchester, Marquis		D	D							A
Winchester, Bishop		M	M.D							
Yarmouth, Earl		M	M.D		A	A	A	A	A	
York, Arch-Bishop										A

N. B. All these Dissents mentioned in this table were concerning the Vacancy of the Throne. For no Lords entered their dissents to the vote on February 6, for declaring the Prince and Princess King and Queen.



End of V O L. II.